Silent Stardust
of the
Moon

Silent Stardust of the Moon by Ladywhite12

Category: Fanfiction
Genre: adventure, fanfiction, jjba, jjbapart3, jojosbizarreadventure, jotarokujo, jotarokujoxoc, ocs, romance, stardustcrusaders, texttospeech, wattys2019
Language: English
Status: Completed
Published: 2017-07-23
Updated: 2025-03-04
Packaged: 2026-08-15 18:55:17
Chapters: 60
Words: 272,102
Publisher: www.wattpad.com
Summary: The story follows Jotaro Kujo and his team of Crusaders as they travel to Egypt in the hopes of finding and killing an evil, immortal vampire named Dio. Among the Crusaders is a gentle Stand user named Chiara 'Hikari' Dorotéa, Jotaro's childhood friend. The journey is harsh and very dangerous. Enemies lurking within the shadows around every corner waiting to kill them. The Crusaders will stop at nothing until Dio is gone for good. No longer being able to hurt anyone ever again. They can't let anything get in their way. But...does that include...love? * I do not own any of the JJBA franchise and no profit of any kind is being made *Jojo's Bizarre Adventure belongs to Hirohiko Araki
Read Count: 218,115

Chapter 1: Memories of more innocent times.

Tokyo, Japan. One of the world's popular location and home of the Tokyo Tower. The shining lights. The ever busy Streets. And the rising of new buildings beyond belief and yet, even with all the modernization continuation on in years, people still appreciate the quiet and serene nature, like a park. One of these people include a little girl with golden hair tied in pigtails and piercing blue eyes. She was new in the neighborhood as she and her family had just moved to Japan from Italy a few years ago because of her father's change in occupation. It was all so sudden, but she understood his position and grew to love Japan, as her mother was born and raised here.

Though upon starting school and her given appearance, she had difficulty making friends. She'd always been very meek, so that was obvious. But hoped she would build some confidence during the move. She had tried so hard to make friends with the other kids. She'd been kind, made cookies and other treats, tried to make conversations...however, it wasn't enough. The child was half-Italian and half-Japanese, she takes after her father rather strongly so her Japanese genes were weak, so the kids who bully her call her a "fake Japanese." Right now, she was making a cute little sandcastle when she heard footsteps coming towards her. She turned and saw *them* . The five who bully her constantly. She quickly turned away, pretending not to notice them. She'd hoped that they might leave her alone this time. Did it work?

What do you think?

One of the kids ran up and shoved her into the sand. Luckily, she shut her eyes and mouth in time. The group stood above her and laughed, and teased her. "Oops! Sorry about that Little Ms. Fake, I didn't see you there." The leader who shoved her, taunted. The golden haired girl picked herself up and dusted the sand off her face and dress. She was aware that his apology meant nothing, so she didn't respond. Rather, she instead walked away. Not giving them a

second glance. Then one of the girls grabbed her pigtails and pulled her back. Once she was in arms length, the three boys came and knocked her back down. They laughed and teased her. Called her a wimp and a fake. When she tried to get up and run, they would dragged her back. Kicking her to the dirt. They wanted to see her cry, beg, and hear her whimper. The child, however, did her best to remain strong and not give them what they wanted. They began kicking her much harder and started punching her to get some sort of sound from her. She couldn't keep quiet for long.

She was on the verge from crying. Before anything could go any further, the leader was suddenly hit in the face by a ball. The girl gasped in shock as she turned to see who is was that threw it. She soon finds a young boy, who looked to be several years older, with black hair and green eyes running towards them. "What are you guys think your doing?! Knock it off!"

"It's none of your business, get lost." The leader told him, rubbing his sore cheek.

"I'm not going anywhere until you jerks leave her alone." He said as he got in between them. He stood in front of the girl with his arms outstretched. The group looked at him before laughing. "Oooh...look at this, we got a tough guy. What are you gonna do about it, huh?"

The girl stood up and tugged at the boy's shirt. She told him to just forget her and walk away. She didn't want him to get involved with this. It was her problem, not his. The boy looked at her like she as crazy and refused to leave. "Please. I-I-I don't want to c-cause you any t-trouble." She says.

"Shut up blondie!" The leader yelled as he shoved her again. This time she fell with a cry. The young hero saw her knee was cut and bleeding. Now enough was enough. The boys tackled the leader to the ground. He quickly pinned him down and started punching him repeatedly. The girl watched in shock as the others tried to gang up on him, but he managed to push them away. The leader kicked him off, while holding his bleeding nose, and told his friends to get out of there. Very soon, they all ran away, leaving the two alone. The golden haired girl ran up to her hero with the look of concern. She checked to see if he had any injuries. " Are you alright? You're not

hurt are you?" She asked him.

"No, no. I'm fine." He told her as he got up and dusted himself off. "What about you? Are *you* alright?" He looked at her wounded knee. She noticed and tried to hide it. "Oh, uh...yes, I'm f-fine." He didn't believe her. He took her hand and lead her to a drinking fountain. He had her sit on a nearby bench while he took out his handkerchief and soaked it. He walked back to her and cleaned her wound. After he was done wrapping his handkerchief around her knee, he sat down next to her and asked, "So, why were they picking on you like that?"

"Um...well..." She turned her gaze away. "They mostly do it because of my appearance...but i-it's okay. I'm used to it."

"There's no way anybody could get used to *that*." He said, bewildered on how she was used to such treatment. Deciding on changing the subject for now, he asked, "What's your name anyway?"

"My name's Chiara 'Hikari' Dorotea. But you can call me Hikari, and I'm eight years old." She said with smile.

"I'm Jotaro Kujo, and I'm ten. Why 'Hikari'? You don't look Asian. Uh...no offense." He said. He took note of her golden locks, her blue orbs, and white skin. He thought that maybe she was like his mother. Chiara laughed softly. "None taken. My Japanese genes is fairly weak. But my mama's Japanese while my papa's Italian, so I take after him."

"Oh, that makes sense. I'm kind of the same way."

"Really? Compared to me, you actually look Asian. Well, except for your eyes."

"Yeah, i get them from my mom. She told me once that she's from British descent." Jotaro says.

"Wow, that's amazing." She smiled before bursting into laughter. Making Jotaro confused. "W-what? What's so funny?" He asked.

"Your name."

"What about my name?" He asked. Feeling a bit insulted and felt that he's being made fun of. Chiara notice this and says, "Oh no, no, no!

I'm not being mean, I just thought it sounded cute."

"Cute?!"

"Mmm-hmm. Jotaro KuJo...JoJo sounds cute that's all."

"Saying it like that does NOT suit me at all!" Jotaro shouted. A faint dust of pink colored his cheeks. Chiara couldn't help but keep laughing at his expression. He was a funny boy. She stopped laughing and asked, "Um...do you have any friends?" Jotaro shook his head. "No. Not much."

"Oh." Chiara thought about for a moment before looking up to Jotaro, saying, "Why don't you and I be friends? It'll be nice since neither of us won't be lonely. I-if you want."

Jotaro stared at her and pretended to think about it. He gave her a bright smile. "Yeah, you bet!" The girl spread a big smile and gave him a loving hug. "In that case, I'll call you JoJo and you can call me Hikari."

From that day forward, Jotaro and Hikari have been inseparable. Every day they would go out together and play various games. They'd go to the park, aquariums, go around town, and go to each other's house for sleepovers. When Jotaro brought her to his house for the first time, she was blown away on how big it was. It wasn't like a mansion or anything like that, but it was bigger than normal traditional Japanese houses. She also had the privilege to meet Jotaro's mother, Holly Kujo. A fair-headed woman who has shoulder-long hair she keeps in a chignon and green eyes like Jotaro. From the moment they met, Hikari could tell Mrs. Kujo is one of the most caring and loving person in the world.

Every time they would see each other, Holly would always have a smile on her face. She saw how much Holly cherished her son. Wanting only the best for him. Jotaro was lucky to have a mother like her. The past few times Hikari came over, Holly treated her like her own, and often teased her son about having such a cute girl for a friend. Though, it kind of embarrassed them both. Throughout most of their lives, Jotaro made it his personal job to be Hikari's bodyguard in order to protect her from the bullies who kept

harassing her. Nowadays those who want to pick on her had to go through him first. And that was a very bad idea unless you lived near a hospital. It was bit excessive, but she greatly appreciated his efforts. As the two grew older, Jotaro still remained to be that brave and compassionate boy Hikari first met when she was young.

What she had always admired about him was that he tough as he was gentle. He was always so strong, both physically and emotionally. He wasn't afraid to speak his mind. All her life, she'd been told how she was too nice and very meek. How she's been used as a 'doormat'. Hikari made it her goal to be just as firm and more assertive as Jotaro was. *He* was her goal. As they grew older, Hikari began noticing things from Jotaro. Before, she can admit/agree that he can be cute...but now he was so very handsome. It only took getting into high school to realize *that*! He had grown from a boy to a man. A tall(195cm/6'4 ft."), attractive and well-built man, even as a teenager. Dark hair, a strong jaw, bold eyebrows and those green eyes of his, basically every girls' dream boy. He towered over her 5'6" figure. He'd made jokes their height difference and she'd go red in the face from it, telling him to stop being mean. He would just laugh about it. She could never be mad or angry with him, and laughed along with him. Everything was perfect for them. Then things started to change.

Whether or not it was for the best, things changed. It first began when her determination to improve herself and her admiration began to take a physical/spiritual form. When *she* first appeared before her, Hikari somehow knew she was a part of her. And that only she can see her. At first, Hikari thought she was beautiful.

She had long very light azure hair with long bangs, falling to her chin. Her hair flowed gracefully down her feet like a waterfall tied in a low ponytail. Moderate cyan eyes. Skin paler than the moon itself. Light sapphire blue eye-shadow. Wore a beautiful kimono dress. A three part outfit. The short jacket is a traditional kimono sleeves that are accented with black lace. The double circle skirts are also lined with black lace. The dark blue obi at the waist has a white vinyl crescent moon and is tied in the back. The skirt featured a crescent moon on a dark purple background while the back of the jacket also features a white vinyl crescent moon. she's barefoot and wrapped

around on each of her legs were long, dark blue ribbons. She thought about giving her a name. she come up with several ideas, but in the end, she decided on Soundless Voice.

At first, Hikari didn't think that much about her and believed she was friendly. Until one day, she was confronted by three of her former bullies. They'd grown tired of picking on her for her appearance and now they don't bother her anymore. But some still do because of how close she was to Jotaro, despite them being friends. All the girls have developed a crush on him, wanting to gain his attention, and for him to notice them. They claimed to be in love with him. They hated Hikari for being so close to him so easily, while they have to struggle just to talk to him. They're even jealous of how pretty she was compared to them. With her golden, wavy waist-length hair, her flawless milky white skin and sapphire eyes. They refused to hand over Jotaro to her.

They confronted her near a staircase and angrily told her to stay away from *their* Jotaro and to quit being friends with him. The leader grabbed her by her uniform collar and shoved her down the stairs. Hikari became frantic and tried to save herself, when Soundless Voice suddenly showed up. Her arm shot out and grabbed the girl who pushed her and forcefully pulled her down. Not just her, but also her two friends. Thanks to Soundless Voice, Hikari made it out just fine. However, the three girls were badly injured and had to go to the hospital. It made Hikari's heart ache. This spirit had hurt those poor girls with no hesitation at all. Is she that dangerous to others? Could she do more than that?

After it was over, Jotaro ran over to her and asked if she was okay. He was worried that something might had happened. Hikari mustered up a small, sad smile and told him that she was fine and had no idea what happened. It wasn't a total lie. Jotaro let out a relieved sigh and gave her a comforting hug. She couldn't tell anyone. Hikari didn't want to risk anyone else getting hurt so decided to keep Soundless Voice a secret and swore to not tell anyone about her. Not her parents. Not Mrs. Kujo. Not even her best friend. Keeping things from him was always hard for her to do. Yet she managed keep it to herself.

What also changed, was Jotaro himself. Not even Hikari nor his

mother understood why. It just happened so suddenly. One minute he was just like any other guy, the next he had turned into a brash, intimidating delinquent. Instead of a simple uniform, Jotaro now wears a modified trenchcoat-length gakuran/tsume-eri with a tall, stiff collar, pierced on the left with a golden chain. Underneath he wears a fitted sleeveless shirt and a pair of slim-fitting ¥20,000 pants of very short, sharp flares held up by two thin belts, differently colored, patterned in a row of alternately colored tessellated triangles. He also wears a pair of leather shoes presumably without socks. Jotaro's cap is adorned near the center with a golden button and, on its left, a rectangular golden plate with a design of a flattened hand. It is torn at the back, appearing to merge with his hair.

Now he's gone into fist fights, beating people in the streets. Disrespecting his teachers. Dining and dashing if the food is bad. Though lately, she'd noticed that Jotaro has been hiding something from her. Whenever she would asked...he'd change the subject or find something else to do. Hikari didn't know what had changed him into a delinquent, but that didn't matter. Jotaro is still her best friend and he'd never raised a hand at her nor has he ever yelled at her. She knows that he has his gentle heart somewhere underneath that brash exterior. It might sound crazy...but this new wild behavior has strengthen her goal to improve herself and be stronger like him.

As sudden as it was, Hikari grew accustomed to his new behavior and learned how to deal with it. Everything was going great and getting better. Then...she heard the news that Jotaro was in prison.

Chapter 2: Possessed? There's an evil spirit among us.

It all started in the year of 1987, when Jotaro hadn't come to school for two days. At the time, Hikari didn't think too much about it as it was somewhat common for him to ditch school every now and then. She'd gone to visit his house to see if he was there. Holly was the one who answered the door. After they greeted each other, Hikari asked her if Jotaro was home or if she had seen him anywhere lately. Holly shook her head no and told her that Jotaro had left the house and simply wandered off. She was worried but she had high hopes that he will come home soon. Hikari nodded and agreed with her.

Jotaro was probably out doing his own thing...or whatever it is that delinquents do in their spare time, who knows? They said goodbye as Hikari left and walked back to her house. Then she received the news on the third day. Hikari was getting herself ready for school. She put on her sailor fuku uniform, white thigh high socks, and dark brown loafers. She placed the finishing touches on tying a white daisy headband. Hikari gave herself a small smile, thinking that she might see her best friend JoJo today this time. She grabbed her school bag and was halfway out the door when she heard the phone ring. Hikari went to go answer it and heard Holly's voice on the other end.

"Hikari!" Holly shouted, she sounded so agitated.

"Mrs. Kujo?" Hikari asked. Concern filling her heart. "What is it? Is something wrong?"

"It's Jotaro! The police just called me, they have him locked up!"

"What?! W-why, what happened?"

"They said they would explain it to me at the station. I don't know what happened but I'm going to go to find out."

"W-w-wait, please. Let me go with you Mrs. Kujo." Hikari said.

"Are you sure sweetie?"

"Y-yes. JoJo is my best friend and now I'm getting worried. P-please let me go with you."

"Alright. I'll be taking a cab so I'll see you soon." Holly said.

When the two hung up, Hikari waited outside her house for Holly. Luckily, she only lived two blocks away from the Kujo household so Holly arrived quickly. Once she was in the cab, Holly immediately told the driver to head down straight to the police station. On the way there, Holly was deeply worried about her son. Almost to the brink of crying, saying things like, "My poor little boy. Please be okay. I'll be there soon." Hikari wrapped her arms around the woman's shoulders, doing her best to comfort the mother. Though, she herself was just worried about Jotaro. What exactly happened to him? What landed him in prison to begin with? Hikari wasn't sure if she wanted to know, but she has to.

They arrived at the station where they quickly went to the front desk and asked about Jotaro. The woman at the front desk called in two officers. The ones who arrested Jotaro in the first place. One was short and chubby, the other was tall and lean. The woman gave them Jotaro's file and The cops pulled the two woman off to the side to discuss about the teen's situation. "Jotaro Kujo. Seventeen years old and a 195 cm tall. His father is a Japanese jazz musician, currently on tour. His mother is an American of British descent." The short cop read.

"Yes, all of that is correct. And Jotaro is definitely my son." Holly said.

"Seems like all his friends call him JoJo." The taller cop commented as he read more of the file. "Guess they decided to take the Jo from his first name and the Jo from his last name, and combine them. Oh man, that's really lame." Hikari took offense to that comment. She was the one gave him that nickname...and she loves it. "It's not lame. It's cute." She mumbled. The cops took notice of her presence and asked, "And who are you, young lady?"

"Huh? oh, I'm Chiara 'Hikari' Dorotea. I'm a close friend of Jotaro Kujo."

"A friend, huh?"

Holly's shoulders began to shake. She looked like she going to cry this time. "I...I have to know...exactly how many people did Jotaro kill?!"

"Kill?! No, no, no, no! There must be a mistake!" Hikari cried out. No way! JoJo would never kill anyone! Would he? Holly quickly covered ears and shook her head. "No! I take it back, I don't wanna know! Please don't leave him in there, he's still my baby."

"Settle down. Nobody said anything about him killing people." The short one told them.

"He'd got into a fight, that's all."

The two women breathed a sigh of relief. Oh thank goodness, they thought. The cop then explained what went on in that fight that occurred three days ago. "The truth is the thugs he tangled with were all armed with nunchucks and knives. He fought four punks, one being an ex-boxer and he broke fifteen of their bones. And he busted their balls." He said. Hikari gasped and went pale. Just thinking about it almost made her want to faint. She didn't think Jotaro could be so brutal. "I'm sorry if that was crude. He put all of them in the hospital." He said as he walked away. The taller one walked up to Holly and scolded her. "Things could've gone a lot worse. He's got to be shown the severities of his actions."

Holly gave him a bright smile and said, "Okay!"

"The real issue is what happen afterward." The short cop briefly gave his attention to his co-worker and told her to take the file, copy and pass it around. He turned to Holly and said to her, "I got to tell you, that son of yours is a strange one." Both women were a little confuse to what he meant by that. Strange how? The cops led them down the hall where it holds the custody cells. "Okay, follow me. I'll show you the way."

"Thank you for everything." Holly said.

"Look, you can thank me by taking your kid home."

"So...does mean your releasing him?" Hikari asked them.

"Well, we can't keep him in here forever." He said.

"Okay."

"Thank goodness."

"By the way ma'am, I have to tell you your Japanese is really quite good. Just how long have you been living in Japan?" The short cop asked Holly.

"For twenty years now." She explained.

"Well, that explains it. This place has been overrun lately. We got entire backlog of criminals who we aren't even able to find cells for." He said.

"We're almost there ma'am, your son's just up ahead." Holly gasped and started running down the hall to see her beloved child. Calling out for him. Hikari was right behind her. So many things were running through her head all at once. What was happening? She was already worried over him, but the feeling was becoming overwhelming.

Jotaro...

Why has things been getting so crazy, so bizarre in a short time? She could handle it. She could handle Jotaro's bad boy attitude and what came with it. She can probably handle him being in prison. Yet, something felt wrong. Something felt unnatural. And that it involves them, it was similar to what Hikari felt when Soundless Voice appeared. But why?

Jotaro...

Why wouldn't this horrid feeling just leave them alone?! What does it have to do with them? They were just normal teenagers, right?

Jotaro...

"Jotaro!" Holly cried out as they reached his cell. They both smiled as they see that he was alright. Hikari felt so much better now that she's found her best friend safe and sound. Finally, they can all go home together and- "SHUT UP!! GET OUT OF MY FACE, YOU BITCH!!" Jotaro shouted. Holly gave him a sweet smile and said, "Okay!"

Hikari and Holly turned back to the officers, and Hikari tells them, "I

promise he's actually very sweet, and he's not capable of doing something so appalling." As she was saying this, Jotaro turned away and laid down on his bed. One of the officers notice that and kicked at the metal bars. "Hey! On your feet Kujo! You're being released what part of "Go home" don't you understand?!" He yelled. Jotaro slowly turned to gaze at them with an intense glare. The cops actually felt scared and took a step back. Jotaro sat back up and focus his attention to his mother.

"Listen mom, you can leave. I'll be staying here for a while." What? Jotaro turned his gaze to Hikari, who looked at him with concern. He could tell what she was thinking. Prior to his arrest, he had been keeping something from her. Sure, she was curious and she has asked about it, and he would change the subject. He'd been trying to keep *it* to himself for a long while. If she had found out about *it*...she would be afraid of him. And the last thing he wanted was for his only friend he had to be scared of him. "Seems I've been possessed by an evil spirit and I have no idea what it'll make me do next." He explained. "During that fight, it took all I had just to stop it. So do everyone a favor and leave me in this cage." He said as he laid back down on the bed.

The cops groaned at this and told Holly, "Geez. For crying out loud, do you see what I'm taking about. We're trying to release him but he refuses to go. I'm sorry to have to ask you this, but are you sure everything's all right with your boy upstairs?"

"This isn't a hotel you know ma'am." The other said. Almost immediately, the three inmates sharing the cell with Jotaro suddenly ran up to them and begged the officers to give them a different cell. They were terrified. "Come on, let us change cells please!"

"He's not lying about the whole evil spirit thing!"

"Let us out! This will be the last time you see my face." The cop pulled out his nightstick and banged at the metal bars telling them to shut up. They all turned back to Jotaro when he stabbed the bottom of a beer can with a pen. That wasn't the main issue, the issue was him having a beer can to begin with. He opened up the can and drank from the hole he made. "What are you doing with a beer can in a jail cell?! How'd you even get that in there?!" The policeman yelled.

"I told you; I got an evil spirit. And sometimes it likes to bring me things." Jotaro said as he tossed away the can. Now suddenly he has a boom box radio, which suddenly turned on by itself, and is now reading a Shonen Jump manga. "What the hell?! He's reading Shonen Jump while listening to a radio!"

"Sir, I-I mean how is this even possible? We have a major problem on our here!" The cop said as he was just about to go get back up when Jotaro slammed his foot down, shouting hold it. He stood up and took of his cap. "This might not be enough to make you guys keep me locked up in here, but I'll show you how evil the spirit is anyway." He said as he started walking towards them. He stretched out his hand. "Maybe then you'll see why letting me out of here is a bad idea." Before anything else could be said or done, a purple transparent arm appeared and reached out. Holly and Hikari watched in silent shock as they saw the arm grabbed one of policeman's gun, yanking it out of its holster. The arm retracted back and vanished, the gun, now in Jotaro's hand. The cops were flabbergasted when this happened, but did not see the transparent arm at all. "That's my gun he has in his hand! But how'd he-!"

"That's really bad!"

"You didn't see it just now?" Jotaro asked. "Well if you guys didn't see my evil spirit...then watch this." He placed the barrel of the gun next to his head and cocked the hammer, making it very clear that he was going to shoot himself. Holly and Hikari attempted to stop him, but failed. "No, Jotaro!" Holly cried out.

"Please don't!!" Hikari begged. Without warning, Jotaro pulled the trigger and shot himself, scaring everyone in the room and causing Hikari to scream. When the smoke cleared, the two women saw the same transparent hand again beside Jotaro. This time, it has holding on to the bullet, that was mere inches from his head, preventing him from killing himself. Jotaro breathed heavily as he glanced at the bullet. He calmed down and then glared at the unseen figure next to him. "It's like there's someone behind me. It bound itself to me not long ago." Jotaro told them as he handed back the gun, the spirit dropped the bullet onto the floor. Hikari collapsed on to her knees, not knowing how to process this all at once. Holly stared wide-eyed at her child and thought, *'Jotaro's grandfather Joseph has strange*

powers...but what's happening to my son?'

Chapter 3: Stands unleashed. The return of Dio.

After that whole fiasco, Holly and Hikari left the station and went back home, but not before promising Jotaro they would come back for him the next day. Since Hikari was currently living alone as her father went on a business trip and her mother went to visit family members in Okinawa, she asked Holly if it would be alright if she could stay with them for a while. Holly smiled at her and offered her a place. Holly told her on the way that she'd planned on calling her father Joseph from New York for help as he had similar powers as Jotaro's. Hikari nodded, thinking that it made sense. However, with what happened in that cell, Hikari knew at that point that she couldn't hide it anymore. She felt that the evil spirit Jotaro had was almost like hers, and should've told him about hers years ago. Maybe then he wouldn't have to deal with it alone. *'I'm a horrible friend!'* Hikari thought. It was time to make Soundless Voice known.

When they got back to the house, after Holly finished her call with her father explaining the situation, Hikari sat her down in the living room and confessed to her about her own spirit. Hikari told her that the spirit bounded herself to her around her first year of high school, but kept quiet about it as she was scared and had no idea what to do. She told her that she should've told at least Jotaro about it and might've had a sense of closure. Holly gave her a comforting smile and reassured her that things will turn out fine. Hikari smiled back and nodded. The next day, Holly went to the airport while Hikari went back to the police station to see Jotaro. She was planning to confess her spirit to him, but first she was going to do vaguely to see if he was going to be upset or not that she kept it from him.

Hikari walked down the hall to Jotaro's cell while she thought about the right words to say to him. Jotaro was smart, so playing dumb wasn't going to work. She could leave subtle hints here and there and then say it. Or maybe she could have Soundless Voice do something and reveal her...then again, it's been a while since that incident and she's afraid that she might hurt him. Oh, what was she going to do?

Hikari reached his cell and was surprise to find a coffee table, a couple of books about the supernatural and the occult, a electric guitar, and what looks like a motorcycle helmet on the floor. Whatever this spirit was...where does it get all these things? "What are you doing back here Hikari?" Jotaro asked, breaking her train of thought. She jumped back slightly before responding, "U-um...w-well, Mrs. Kujo and I did p-promised to come back. A-and I-I just wanted check up on you. With what happened yesterday...it's been a lot for us to take in. For you to take in."

"Hmph." Jotaro grunted. "Are you just here to try and get me to come home?"

"That would be a nice thought...but I understand why you would want to stay here. I would've done the same thing actually." She said.

"Yeah." He then chuckled a bit. "Though, you would've locked yourself up in your room and not in a jail cell." Hikari laughed with him. He's right, she would do that. Then her smile dropped. She took a deep breath and asked, "I-if I had an evil spirit like yours...where I felt so scared and alone...w-would you be there to help me, as I am doing now?"

Jotaro stared at her and sighed. "Of course I would, you're my friend."

"Even if...even if I had kept it a secret from you?"

"Hikari. I know you. You're a nice person, a little too nice, and you'd only keep things a secret for a good reason. If you did have a evil spirit as well but kept it from me...I'd still be there to help. I wouldn't hold it against you." He told her with full honesty. The weight was lifted of her heart and Hikari gave a thankful smile. "Jojo."

"I know you want to help me, but don't bother. Just go home and leave me here. The last thing I want is for you to get hurt." Jotaro told her as he settled down on his bed. Hikari stared at him for a few moments before she sat down near the corner of the bars, hugging her knees. *'Jotaro. You're my friend too and I will do whatever I can to help you. I won't ever abandon you.'* Hikari didn't know how long she'd been sitting there, but recalled her eyes feeling droopy. When Jotaro looked up and noticed her asleep against the bars, he sighed 'Yare

Yare Daze' and had his evil spirit discreetly fetch and wrap a blanket around her. Jotaro pulled his cap over his eyes. Hikari woke up with a jolt when something slammed against the bars. She looked and found a remote control toy car. She saw even more stuff in his cell, bringing her back last thought; Where does it keep getting these things? Hikari noticed the blanket wrapped around her. *'Huh? Where'd this come from?'* She stood up and noticed one of the officers from yesterday cowering on the other side of room. "It's getting spookier. He's got more stuff in his cell now, and he's violent. If something is possessing him, it's definitely not something nice. If word of this gets out to my superiors, I'll lose my job in a heartbeat for sure."

Just then an older looking man, rather muscular for his age, with short gray hair and sporting a thick well-trimmed beard. Hikari took note that he had the same green eyes as Jotaro and Holly. "He's no longer your problem." He told the officer. "I'll be taking my grandson home now."

"Your grandson?"

"You're JoJo's grandfather?" Hikari gasped. This was Joseph whom Holly mentioned? The officers tried to stop the older man from getting closer to the young delinquent for the fear that he might get strike down. The man didn't seem to care as he easily picked up and tosses them aside as the young teen got up and walked towards them. Holly came in and told her son, "Jotaro, this is your grandfather. Whatever's happen he'll be able to help you. Please come out and talk to him." Jotaro and his grandfather stared each other down face-to-face. The cell door opened on its own. "Come out. It's time to go home." Joseph said.

"Get lost. I didn't ask you to come here." Jotaro told him. "You really think you can help me? An old man like yourself? Sorry you came all the way from New York, but no one can help me gramps." He suddenly pulled out a metallic finger out of nowhere. The man gasped as he looked at his left hand. Sure enough, one of his fingers was missing. *'Wait. That's the pinkie from my prosthetic left hand. When was he able to take it?'*

"So did you see it? Or even feel it? *That's* the evil spirit." Jotaro said

as flicked the fake finger back to his grandfather. "Stay away from me. Or you'll lose what's left of your life." An unseen force shut the cell door as Jotaro began to walk away. His grandfather could only stared in shock at his retreating form. He'd never experience something like this before. *'I've never seen anything like this. He was able to deceive me right of the bat. That's unbelievable. I'm afraid I know exactly what Jotaro's evil spirit is. But I don't think explaining it to him would do any good. He'll understand his situation much better if he sees it with his own eyes. Actually, in order for him to truly know the danger he faces, he needs to experience it physically.'* Holly grabbed Hikari's arm and gently pulled her off to the side next to her. Joseph snapped his figures and a man emerged from the shadows.

"Alright Avdol. It's your turn now." Out from the shadows came a man of above-average height and medium to heavy build. His attire consists of a heavy overcoat with sleeves of elbow length, a scarf, and pants. He has two identical scars on his chin, and on his head he wears a headband, underneath which he has hair that is tied upwards. Attached to his ears is a metallic necklace composed of several Egyptian symbols extended in the middle by a large tassel, and two bracelets on both of his wrists, and Arabian shoes. "I like you to meet an Egyptian friend I met a few years ago. Say 'Hello' to Avdol." The elder man said. Jotaro seemed uninterested at the man. "Do what you need to. Just get my grandson to leave this damn cell." As Avdol began to step forward, Jotaro snapped at him. "Back off! You look strong enough, but do you really think I'd let something chase me outta here just 'cause you told them to do it? I don't work like that. In fact, all you've done now is made me what to stay here even more."

"I'm afraid this may get a little rough." Avdol told the others. "But in a few minutes, he'll be riddled with so much pain, that he'll be begging you to let him out of here."

"Just do what you got to do." Hikari's heart dropped down to her stomach. She couldn't believe what she was hearing. Were they seriously intending to hurt Jotaro? No way they could mean that. "Papa!" Holly cried out. "You can't be serious!"

"Please sir, don't hurt him!" Hikari begged him.

"W-wait a sec! We can't let you just-!" The officer tried to interfere with this but quickly shut up.

"Zip it pig!!" Joseph shouted.

"Yes sir!"

Soon Avdol was engulfed by a red-orange glow. The Egyptian man seem to be in deep concentration as it swirled and shifted around him. Avdol shot out his hands, and with a cry, bursts of flames erupted from him. Out from the fire, a humanoid figure emerged. It had a bird-like head, a heavily muscular upper body and its feathered legs are covered in the burning flames. Its arms have claws instead of nails and it wears dark bracelets on both of its wrists as well as Arabian shoes. The figure let out a bird-like screech, ready for battle. Jotaro was taken by surprise when he gazed at the fiery beast before him. "But this is-." He started. Holly and Hikari were shocked at the sight while Joseph merely smirked. "That's right. Avdol also has what you call an 'evil spirit'. An evil spirit under the complete command of Avdol's will."

Avdol's...will? He...controls it?

"And his name is...Magician's Red!!" The fire spirit easily slips through the bars. He launches a projectile of flames, picking up and slamming Jotaro against the back wall of the jail cell. Pinning him down as the flames appeared to be burrowing into his arms, legs, and blocking the oxygen from his mouth and nose. "It's hot. I feel like I'm fire. My arms...they're burning." He could barely speak. His voice going hoarse from the intense heat. "What...are these evil spirits?" The cops were both confused and scared at what the hell's even going on. Unlike the five people they couldn't see Magician's Red or even the flames. All they *can* see is Jotaro pressed up against the wall and feel the intense heat-wave based on the wall thermometer. Magician's Red grabbed Jotaro's shoulders, intending to bring him even more harm. Jotaro didn't have no other choice now. He unleashed his own spirit.

This one looked more human in comparison to Magician's Red and similar to Soundless Voice. This one resembling a tall, well-built man of similar proportions to Jotaro, if not more muscular. Its skin is

purple, has long flowing hair with a darker shade above its eyes and on the front plane of its nose, blurring the distinction between its hair and head. The spaces under its eyes and on its cheeks and chin are a darker color than, and divided clearly from, the space around its nose and mouth. It wears a cap on its chin, and a metallic headband in three pieces, the central piece of which is shaped as a vertical ellipse. Its facial features are very similar to Jotaro's, even having those same green eyes. A wavy line runs from each arm to the front of its torso, continuing down its legs. It has a minimal range of clothing and armor, including a short, circular red scarf, shoulder pads with a spiral design, long, black fingerless gloves with studs on the back, knee and elbow guards, a loincloth, and short black boots.

With great force, Jotaro spirit pushed Magician's Red off him. Joseph's eyes widened and exclaimed, "Ah ha! There it is! It's finally shown itself, and the fact that it's so clearly visible, means that it's incredibly strong!"

"Let's do this." Jotaro told Avdol. He had his spirit attack the Egyptian man head on. With inhuman speed, the spirit rushed forward and grabbed Magician's Red by the throat in a tight grip. Avdol staggered back and was in great pain. Grip marks, along with a visible handprint, were shown on his own neck. "I can't believe he's able to make it manifest so distinctly, well done." Avdol said.

"Your evil spirit is impressive too. So tell me grandpa, you know about these evil spirits?" Jotaro asked.

"Of course I do." Joseph answered.

"Mr. Joestar. When you asked me to help get your grandson out of this jail cell, I had planned on going easy on the boy." Avdol told him. "But enlighten of his tremendous power, I'm reconsidering that. Just one misstep could put us all in danger. Tell me if you want me to stop. If not, I'll resort to use a force that could land your grandson in the hospital."

"Like I said; Do what you go to do."

"Yes, sir!" He yelled. "Red Bind!!" The fire swirled around Jotaro like a snake. It wrapped around him and forcefully slammed him against

the metal bars. Once again, the fire cutting off the oxygen from his lungs. "Papa! That's enough, what are you doing to Jotaro?!" Holly shouted to her father. She didn't want to see her beloved son getting hurt any longer. Hikari couldn't agree with her more. She was shaking with fear. Joseph turned to Holly with all loving smile. "Holly. Be a good girl and let papa finish what he started."

Jotaro was struggling to keep fighting. As proof of this, the evil spirit of Jotaro's was beginning to fade from existence. "I can't breath..."

"The evil spirit is withdrawing..." Hikari said.

"The heat is restricting his breathing. Which cause the evil spirit to weaken." Joseph explained. "And now for the truth. This may seem like an evil spirit, but it's far from it. Jotaro, this thing you believe has possessed you is actually a powerful vision. Creating by your own life energy." Hikari stared at the elder man with wide eyes. Wait. These strange spirits are something that they themselves created. Sure, she felt that Soundless Voice was a part of her, but she had no idea that it was because she made her. "This vision will always appear standing by your side. And because of that...we call it...A STAND!!"

"A...Stand?" Jotaro asked confused.

"Remember Aesop's fable, the cold wind made the travel pull his coat tighter, but the heat force him to admit defeat." Avdol smirked at the young delinquent. "Ready to leave your cage now, JoJo?" Despite the intense heat blocking the air from his lungs and the fire locking him in place, Jotaro glared daggers at the man. He used whatever strength he had left to try and break free. "I said it before, I'm staying. I keep hurting other people without even knowing I'm doing it. Until that stops, I'm staying here. It's nice to meet someone like me...but if you keep this up...you'll die." Without warning, Jotaro kicked the coffee table so hard that it slammed back and broke the toilet. The pressure gave out and quickly extinguished the fire. Jotaro was done playing around. It's time he got serious. "You had your chance." He said as his spirit...uh, Stand reappeared with a roar and gripped at the bars. "Alright bastard, don't say I didn't warn you!" The Stand used it's God-like strength to rip the bars wide open as it grabbed one and used it as a weapon. It let out a yell as it proceeded

to stab the Egyptian man.

The latter however, halts the fight as he turned around, the flames and Magician's Red both vanishing. This annoyed Jotaro as he did so. "What the hell?! Why'd you suddenly turn your back on me? We're not done!" Avdol ignored him for the time being and sat down against the wall. He says to Joseph, "Mr. Joestar. He's left his jail cell, I've accomplished what you asked me to do, right?" Joseph nodded and turned to face his grandson. It was as Avdol said. Jotaro was standing outside of his cell, they've done what they came here to do. Hikari want to go give JoJo a big hug, but held back as she didn't want to embarrass him...and because it wasn't the right time. Jotaro's Stand disappeared and he took hold of the steel rod himself. "So what now, you got me, huh?" Jotaro said.

"Not exactly."Avdol smirked. "I did have every intention of sending you to the hospital. But you're stronger than I had expected."

"And if I kept going with this steel rod...just what would you have done?"

"Do not underestimate my Stand Magician's Red. It could have easily melted that rod mid air into a worthless puddle."

"The power of Avdol has is exactly the same as yours." Joseph told Jotaro as the teen tossed away the rod. "If you want to know more about this 'evil spirit', you'll need to leave this jail." Soon after, the group left the prison ignoring the baffled cops on the way. They decided to go to a local café to talk more about Stands and what's going on. On the way, Joseph and Avdol used the time to properly introduce themselves to Hikari. She smiled at them and made her introduction. Hikari told them that it's their choice to either call her by her Japanese name or Italian name. When she mention that she was Jotaro's childhood friend, Joseph was greatly surprise and questions how someone as brash and arrogant as Jotaro could have a friend as sweet and kind as her. When he did asked, Jotaro simply told him to shut it. When they got to the café, and made their orders, Holly took this moment of peace to happily hug Jotaro's arm. She was so relieved that her only child was finally free from prison. "Thank you. Thank you Jotaro. I'm glad you finally left that awful jail cell." Holly smiled brightly. While she's certainly happy about it,

Jotaro was annoyed by her motherly affections. "Why are you such an annoying bitch?"

"Okay! I don't know." Holly said, still smiling. Hikari couldn't help but giggled at them. Yes, this seems to be rude and unjustifiably mean...but she knows that Jotaro doesn't truly mean it. Holly knows this all too well herself since she *is* his mother. Joseph, however, doesn't see it that way. "Hey, how dare you address your own mother that way?! And what kind of language is that?!" He scolded. "And stop smiling Holly, you'll only encourage it!"

"Okay!"

"Hey grandpa. One question, there's something that I can't quite wrap my brain around. You seem to know all about this...evil spirit, the Stand, whatever you want to call it...but *how* do you know this?" Jotaro asked.

"How do I know? I guess I did come all the way from New York to explain it to you." Joseph said. "But in order for you to fully understand the whole history of it, I must start from the beginning. This is the legacy of the Joestar Family." Joseph reached into his coat and pulled out four photographs. He tossed them one-by-one over to his grandson. The four photos each held different images. The first showed an abandoned cruiser boat, the second; a black coffin covered in barnacles, the third; the same coffin now open with two compartments, and finally a golden plated name that reads 'Dio'. Hikari looked over the photos and was confused about what these pictures have to do with their Stands. "What are these about?" Jotaro asked.

"That coffin is a hundred years old and four years ago, it was pulled out of the Atlantic, off the coast of Africa." Joseph told him.

"Okay, so?"

"I did a little research. My grandfather Jonathan Joestar, your great-grandfather, died while at sea. Turns out this exact same coffin was on that boat with him when he died." He explained. "When they discovered it four years ago, it was empty. But I knew exactly what was inside it. Avdol and I are trying to locate him as we speak." The

teens looked at him with skepticism. Was he trying to say that a human being was inside a locked coffin and has been alive for a century? That's highly impossible.

"Huh? Um...excuse me, but you did say 'him', right?" Hikari asked.

"Are you suggesting there was a person inside that thing?" Jotaro questioned. "Come on, how can a human being stay buried underwater for a hundred years?" Joseph slammed his hand against the table. He rose to his feet and firmly stated to him, "Because that person is evil incarnate and his name is Dio! And now that he has been awaken from his hundred year slumber, it is our fate to fight that man!" Even when Joseph made that dramatic speech about fate and destiny, the teenage delinquent didn't buy into it. Thinking that it was just a load of bull. He let out a sigh and turned away. Receiving that type of response irritated the older man.

"What the hell does that face mean?! And don't you turn your back on me like this has nothing to do with you!" He yelled.

"Look you old man. This face means your story is so lame, I don't know what to say." Jotaro told him.

"What? 'Old man'?"

The teen ignored him for a moment and turned his attention to the Egyptian man. "Avdol, was it? I don't know you, but you are one arrogant bastard. And as for you old man," He said as he looked at him. "Did you really expect me to fall for an unbelievable story like that?"

Avdol let out a small laugh. "I know the story sounds farfetched. But wouldn't you also say our 'evil spirits' are equally unbelievable?" Hikari thought about Joseph's story and their spirits-uh, Stands are both strange and impossible to believe that all this is true. She gazed at Jotaro and said, "He does make a good point JoJo." The teen refused to answer to that. Joseph sat back down in his seat and continued where he left off. "Hmph. Think what you want. But soon you'll have no choice but to believe it." He smiled. He held out his hand and Avdol gave him a camera. By the looks of it, it was pretty expensive. "If you want me to tell you how I know that Dio exist, and

why I've chosen to go after him, the best way to explain it is to show you. See the truth of it is, I myself, had a startling revelation that prompted all of this; about a year ago I suddenly obtain a Stand of my own." He said, his smile still plastered on his face. This new piece of information shocked the three.

"What did you say?!" Holly exclaimed.

"Gramps, what did you-?"

Joseph set the camera on table, rose to his feet, and held up his hand above his head. He was positioned like a martial arts student, ready to chop a board in half. His hand was engulfed by a golden orange glow. "Get ready! Let me introduce, my Stand!" As he completely demolished the camera, purple thorn-covered vines spawned from Joseph's hand. Even though it was broken beyond repair, the camera somehow still worked long enough to produce a single photo. Joseph swiped out the photo and presented it to the group. "Did you see it? The thorns that came out of my hand? This is my Stand, it can reveal far away visions and place them on film. The only downside is I have to bust a ¥30,000 camera every time I use it!" A waiter came by and asked if everything was alright. Avdol reassured him that all was fine and shooed him away. "In a matter of seconds, a vision will appear in this photograph Jotaro. And it will reveal your very destiny." He told his grandson.

"What are you talking about?"

Joseph sat back down and gave his relatives a serious look. He asked them, "Jotaro. Holly. Have either of you ever taken the time to look carefully at the back of your necks?"

They were confused at the question. What is he going on about now? What does the back of their necks have to do with anything? "What does that mean?" Jotaro asked.

"You each have it, but you probably never thought much about it. A birthmark shaped like a star, it turns out that we all have it." Joseph pulled down his coat and shirt down slightly to reveal his mark. As he said, on the back of his neck was a star shaped birthmark. Holly brushed her hair to the side and gasped when she looked her own

mark. Jotaro didn't have to look as he was well-aware of it. When they were much younger and went swimming, Hikari once commented on how pretty the mark was. Still, it didn't change anything that these markings have some sort of meaning behind them. "I'll say it again; What the hell does all this mean?" Jotaro said. He starting to get impatient.

"My father died when I was young, so I asked my mother about it and she said he had one too. It seems that everyone from the Joestar bloodline is born with this exact same birthmark."

"Alright, and just what the hell is going to turn up in that photograph?"

"It's our destiny, a path that, until now, has been unknown."

"Papa..."

"I'm losing my patience, just show me the damn photo already!" Jotaro stood from his chair and took the photo from his grandfather's hand. When he set his eyes upon the picture, they slightly widened as it showed a topless man with shoulder-length blonde hair. Not much is shown as the mysterious man was literally shrouded in darkness. Wait. This man! It couldn't possibly be-

"Dio! He shows up in all of my spirit photos. And look what's just above his shoulder." This man...Dio has the same star birthmark as they do. But why...how?! From how Joseph talked about him, he's clearly not from the Joestar family. "From the neck of this bastard on down...is Jonathan Joestar, my grandfather! THIS SON OF A BITCH TOOK OVER HIS BODY!!" Hikari gasped. No, this can't be true. A hundred years ago, this Dio person stole the body of Joseph's grandfather and has been alive since? Dio is not a normal human being, that much is certain. "A hundred years ago, there was an incident in the Atlantic ocean. All I know is what I've learned from my grandmother, Viola. Somehow Dio took over the body of my grandfather and survived. And this much I know is certain, this bastard is currently hiding somewhere on the globe, plotting something. It's four years since he's revived, and the reason my spirit photography and your evil spirit have manifested since is most likely connected to Dio." He explained.

"To society in general, our gifts are considered a kind of psychic power." Avdol added. "I've had my Stand since the day I was born, and since Ms. Hikari could also see our Stands, it's quite possible she obtain her own Stand sometime prior to this. However, your power seem bound to Dio's body, or rather Jonathan Joestar's body. There's some sort of invisible string that connects you all to him, his rebirth is also your own, awakening your sleeping powers."

"Avdol. Does this photograph give you any indication to where he might be now?" Joseph asked his friend as he passed down the picture to him. Avdol gazed at it, but he closed his eyes in defeat. "No, nothing. There's hardly anything of known in the photo at all."

"I see."

"I'll take a closer look later."

"Thank you." Joseph took notice of the two women concerned expressions. Not that he blames them, this is a lot to take in just one day. He crouched down to their eye level and tried to comfort them. "Holly. Chiara. I'm sorry I sprang this all out on you two out of the blue. Let's head home now." Holly managed to smile and stood up. "Alright." Hikari took a few moments to calm her fast pacing heart before standing up as well. Jotaro placed a hand on her shoulder and she gave him a smile, telling him she was okay. "I think I'll be sticking around for quite some time. You mind if I stay at your place while I'm here?" Joseph asked.

"No, of course not papa. Let's go Jotaro." The teen delinquent touched his mark before he and Hikari followed the others out of the café. Things were peaceful and quiet now...however, this was only the calm before the storm. Unbeknownst to them, Dio lies in the shadows on his luxurious bed. He let out a sigh of annoyance as he felt the body tingled. "Again. Just now...a most intense feeling, like someone somewhere is watching me. " He said as he got up and walked across the bedroom out to the hall, knowing which way to go, despite it being shrouded in cold darkness. He nonchalantly walked passed the dead body of young woman. Drained of her blood. "It is Jonathan's descendants. This body is sending out some kind of spiritual signal to his offspring. Fine...it must be my fate, but fate must be purged. It's all set, I've taken the first step."

Chapter 4: Enter Noriaki Kakyoin. The first enemy. Part 1

At the Kujo household, Hikari was currently helping Holly make dinner for everyone. As nice as it was to make dinner, she knew this was just something to distract them both from thinking back on what Joseph had explained to them. Still, Hikari loved to help out her friends anyway she can. As long as Holly's able to smile at the end of the day, then all is good. Even with these Stands around them. Wait, speaking of Stands. "Mrs. Kujo? May I ask you something?" She said.

"Of course, what is it dear?"

"Well...you know how we're able to see these Stands, right?"

"Yes?"

"Well, the others and I are able to see them because we have our own. But then again, why don't you have a Stand of your own?" Hikari asked. Holly thought about it for a moment. Joseph told them that because of Dio's revival, it awaken their powers through Johnathan's body. Not coming up with much of answer, Holly told her, "I'm not entirely sure, I guess that power skipped me."

Hikari nodded. It was good of answer as anyone else would give. Besides, this was all new territory and they're just learning about this now. Oh well, it's probably not much to worry about. Holly later told her that she could handle the rest here and go set the table, which she complied. When it was all set up, Hikari walked over to Jotaro's room to tell him that dinner was just about ready. She knocked on his door and said, "JoJo? Dinner's ready. Are you hungry?"

Jotaro didn't open the door, but he told her, "I'm not in the mood." Hikari was a bit disappointed, but she understood. Jotaro need more time to process what's been going on these past few days. Especially, since he just left his jail cell that same day. Hikari told him through the door that she was going to bring food for him anyway just in case

he needed it. She went back to the kitchen, picked up a tray, and prepared a meal for him. Before she left, she asked Holly if she could tell Joseph and Avdol that she'll be staying with Jotaro for a while. Holly nodded, confirming that she will. Hikari made her way back to his room and knocked before she let herself in. "JoJo?" She found him lying in his bed on his side. With his back facing her. Hikari closed the door behind her and said, "I know you said you weren't in the mood, but you're going to be hungry eventually, so I'll leave here for you." She placed the tray on top of his desk and waiting for him to respond. He didn't. He didn't turn to look at her either. Hikari felt sadden by this, but she still tried. She sat down beside him and told him, "I understand that this is a lot to take in one day. No one can really take it in stride...but JoJo, please know you're not alone in this. I'm sure things are going to be fine. "

"Hmph." Was all he said. Hikari smiled. At least he spoke to her. Kind of. Though she hoped she wasn't being to pushy, just to get him to talk to her. Deciding to leave with his thoughts, she got up and began to walk away. "Have a good night's sleep dear." Hikari told him. She was about to turn the doorknob when she heard, "Show me your Stand." Hikari turned and found him looking at her with an unreadable expression. She was slightly surprise at his request, but then again, it was only fair. She'd seen his, Joseph, and Avdol's Stands, so it's only natural he'd be curious about hers. Jotaro got up and walked over to her. "I want you to show me your Stand."

She did what he asked and summoned her Stand before him. Something she hadn't done in a long time. Jotaro took in the sight of Soundless Voice. She looked beautiful and had some potential. Yet, he had a feeling that this one wasn't fully capable of combat. "What's the reason why you kept it secret?" He asked. Hikari hung her head in shame. "I didn't want to. I wanted to tell you, but...I accidently hurt a few people. Badly. And well..." She trailed off.

"You were scared of it." Jotaro finished.

"Yes."

"Hmph. Well, that doesn't matter anyway." He said as he placed his hand on top of her head. "Try not to be scared anymore, alright?" Hikari looked him in the eyes. She gave him a bright smile and

nodded. "Alright." Yeah, things are going just fine for sure. The next day, the two teens got up early and got ready for school. Hikari was the first to step out of the house, as she looked up at the sky. "It's a beautiful morning, isn't it JoJo?" She said.

"Hmph." He said. They were about to leave when they heard Jotaro's mother call out, "Jotaro. Don't leave yet, you forgot something important!" Holly had a cheery smile as she ran up to her son. "Silly boy. Here is your goodbye kiss." Holly said as she placed a kiss on his cheek. It was a sweet gesture for a mother to do, but Jotaro was annoyed by it and brushed her away. "You're such a bitch. Stop clinging to me like I'm still a little kid." He snapped at her as he walked away. Holly, as always, held her cheery smile, and waved at the teens. "Okay! Have a nice day!"

"Thank you Mrs. Kujo." Hikari said to her.

"Jotaro pulled down his cap over his eyes and said, "What a giant pain in my ass." Hikari giggled at him and held his hand. "Now don't be like that sweetie. Come on, let's go." She laughed as she pulled him down the path to their high school. As they walked, they made sure to take their time being together as wouldn't last long. Just being at each other's sides and enjoying each others company, it was one of their favorite moments. Pretty soon, Hikari had to keep her distance from Jotaro much farther than normal as the other girls form school would come and crowed around him. They wanted to have his attention all on them. Only a handful of girls have accepted her being friends with him so long as they stayed that way.

"JoJo? Do you think that after school we should test out our Stands to see what they can do." Hikari told him.

"Probably. If were stuck with these things, it's best to know what kind of Stands they are as well." Hikari nodded. She was about to say something else when she was cut off by, "Hey look, it's JoJo!"

"What, JoJo?"

"You're right, it is JoJo!"

"JoJo!" Right on cue, was Jotaro's groupie. Everyday, these girls

would come to swoon and cling all over him. Hikari was roughly pushed to the side as one of the girls hugged his arm. "So tell me JoJo, where've you been? You haven't been to school for days." She said. Jotaro glanced at Hikari's crestfallen face, before glaring down at the girl hugging him. He hated to see his friend's sad face every time these girls show up. They make her feel like it was a crime for her be close to him, let alone friends. The girl blushed under his gaze. A second girl came in and shoved her off of him. "Hey! Who do you think you are grabbing on to JoJo like that?! I don't like how friendly you're getting with him, stay away! One's bad enough!" That stung a bit.

"What the hell, ugly?!"

"I'd be careful there, no-boobs." While they were too busy fighting with each other, Jotaro took the opportunity to walk away from them. He caught up with Hikari and placed a hand on her shoulder, hoping she was alright. She reassured him and gave a sad smile. It didn't help when the two girls kept insulting each other back and forth. Calling the other 'ugly' and 'no-boobs' over and over again. Jotaro got fed up with it and yelled, "Shut up! You're freaking annoying!" They actually got real quiet after that...for about two seconds before they all started squealing like fan girls. "He totally said that to me!"

"No me!"

Jotaro grunted and continued walking. Wanting to get away from them as possible. Hikari followed close behind him with the other girls, begging him to talk to them again. While they were walking to school, they were unaware that they were being watched from a far. A young man of seventeen-years was watching them from a few feet away with a paint canvas in front of him. It had a full body painting of Jotaro. He glanced at the delinquent as he was going down a flight of stone steps. He glared at him, and at the painting. He held out a paint brush with red paint on it and held it in front of the canvas. He waited. Waited for the perfect moment. Then quickly swiped the brush against the picture, leaving a streak of red across his leg. As soon as it happened, Jotaro's knee was suddenly cut, blood gushed out. "What the hell!?" He shouted as he fell down the stairs. Hikari and the other girls screamed and she tried to save but he was out of

her reach. "JoJo!"

He looked at the tree branches above him. Thinking that they might save his life, Jotaro used his Stand to grab one of the branches and had it swing him down to the bottom of the steps, where he landed on the bushes and soft dirt. In a heartbeat, Hikari ran down to him in a panic. What in the world just happened? Why did Jotaro got hurt all of a sudden? Jotaro grit his teeth as he held his injured knee. *'Did a branch slash open my leg? No, wait a sec. That's not what caused me to fall down those stairs. This cut is what came first, but how?'* He managed to stand back and looked around for any suspicious activity. So far, none. Looking down from the top of stairs, the mysterious student was slightly impressed that Jotaro managed to save himself from that. He was glad though. If it had been that easy to kill him, it wouldn't be any fun.

"I see. Looks like he's able to summon a pretty fierce Stand. I get it now." The student said to himself as he tossed the canvas to a nearby tree. "Impressive, no wonder he wants me to get rid of him. But still," He eyed at the painting before an invisible force tore it to shreds. "He is no match for the power of my Stand." He then set his sights on the golden haired girl beside his primary target. He gave a sinister smirked. "That girl seems to be rather important to him...she might actually be some of use to me."

Back at the bottom of the steps, Hikari was going through her school bag in search of her first-aid kit. Wanting to take care of that injury before an infection sets in. "Are you sure you're okay JoJo? That looks really painful."

"Yeah, it's fine. Stop worrying about it." He told her.

"I'm sorry...but I still think I should take a look at it. Oh, here it-." Hikari had pulled out the first-aid kit when she was, once again, roughly pushed to side as the girls surrounded Jotaro around. They were concerned and fretted over him. Normally, Jotaro completely ignored them. The sapphire eyed girl sighed, put away her kit for now and stayed in the background. "You really scared me." One of them said. "Are you okay JoJo?"

"You think you're hurt anywhere?"

"You're lucky, if you had landed a few inches off, you've cracked your head right on the flat stone."

"Nasty accidents happen on those steps all time."

"Tomorrow when you go down these steps, you really should hold my hand." The others sent hateful glances at her from that comment. The girl in question gave an awkward laugh. It was worth a shot. Soon footsteps could be heard behind them. Jotaro and Hikari turned and faced the mysterious student. He had an unreadable expression as he gazed at them. He looked to be the same age as Jotaro and looked to have an average to above-average height and fit to slender build. He wore a green slim-fitting long gakuran/tsume-eri and brown leather shoes. He had medium-length dark reddish hair, characterized by a large, twisting noodle hanging before his face, and purple eyes. He also wore cherry shaped earrings: each is a long, fine arch, tipped by small spheres.

Hikari felt uncomfortable under his gaze and tried to hide behind Jotaro's back. He noticed her discomfort and moved till she was out of his sight. He walked next to the tall delinquent and handed him a light green handkerchief. "Here. Your leg seems to be cut. You might want to wrap it with handkerchief to help stop the bleeding." Jotaro held an intense stare at the purple-eyed man and took the cloth from his hand. "You going to be okay?" He asked.

"Yeah, I'm fine. It's just a scratch." Jotaro answered. Without a another word, the student turned and walk away from the scene. Hopefully, he didn't seem to suspicious. It's best that he keeps his distance for now, before he strikes. He didn't get far as Jotaro called out, "Hold it." The student looked over his shoulder and at the taller male. He hadn't figure it out already, had he? "I forgot to say thanks. Haven't seen you before, you go to our school?"

"I'm Noriaki Kakyoin. And yes, I just transferred here yesterday. See you around."

As he left, Jotaro instinctively touched his mark. He couldn't help but get a bad feeling from that guy. He just didn't know why. Jotaro decided to put that thought aside for now and continued his way to school with Hikari close behind.

Inside the dark, bleak room of his domain, Dio gripped on the mark of his old enemy's body. He felt the body tingled again. He hated it. It only served as a reminder that the Joestar family bloodline is still alive. "At that time...I was very weak." He could still remember the ferocity of the flames and the hard wooded floors of that ship. His head being cradled in the arms of Johnathan Joestar as he was more than ready to die along with him, to put an end to him. "Lacking a body made me vulnerable." Damn him. "If I had not taken Johnathan Joestar's body...if it hadn't been for his energy to augment my own limited source, I couldn't have survived at the bottom of that ocean for a hundred years. But still...this body has like a bond between a parent and a child. It ties me to his kin." Dio wasn't alone. With him were silhouettes a tall, muscular man and a short wrinkly old woman. Watching him as he climb up the stairs. "They seem to know of my existence. And of this power I've gain from taking Johnathan's body, the Stand. It is the Stand that reaches out to the bodies of his descendant, there are always advantages and disadvantages to every situation. I will eliminate them all...the Joestar clan must be destroyed soon."

He could hardly wait. He could not wait to feel and drink the blood of the Joestar family running down his body and throat. To see their cold, lifeless eyes staring off into nothingness. To step all over their rotten corpses. Only then will he feel complete. With his enemies being reduced to ash and forever out of his way, will he be able to take control of the world.

Chapter 5: Noriaki Kakyoin. The first enemy. Hierophant Green. Part 2

"Ma'am? Where are the bandages and the rubbing alcohol, I thought they were here." Hikari asked the nurse.

"They're in the bottom cabinet. Sorry, I did some rearranging for the new supplies I received yesterday." She told her.

"Thank you."

When they arrived at school, Hikari insisted that Jotaro go see the school nurse to get his wound check out. Or at least get it cleaned. Who knows if it's already infected or something. The nurse was a bit happy to see them, since they got her attention away from two male students trying to ditch school by pretending to be sick. Hikari found what she needed and placed them on top of the desk. "That's a horrible cut JoJo, how'd you get it." She asked the tall teen as he sat down on the office chair. "Let me guess, you got into another fight, didn't you? Show some respect and take off that hat. It's poor manners." She scolded. The nurse tried to take his cap off herself, but he ducked out of her reach. "Would you stop that?" She said.

"Seriously, has JoJo ever been hurt in a fight before? That's not what caught him, I'm sure." One of the boys said.

"No way." The other laughed.

"Well, you two have a point." The nurse said. She laughed a bit as she picked up a pair of scissors. "Then I'll assume you were being clumsy, you big klutz. Wouldn't you agree Ms. Dorotea?"

"Huh? Uh, well u-um...maybe?" Hikari stammered out. It's probably best that she believed that other than to explain what really happened. Jotaro getting a cut on his leg out of nowhere is kind of hard to believe. The nurse took the scissors and went to cut Jotaro's uniform pants. The tall teen moved slightly away. "Hey, hold on.

What are you going to do?"

"Cut your pants, of course."

"Like hell you are!" Jotaro sprang from his seat when she said that. No way she's going to ruin his outfit. She looked at him and sternly told him. "Well, if I'm going to treat that wound, I must."
"You'll ruin them. I'll take them off." He told her. The nurse laughed again. "Didn't know you were so thrifty. So, while JoJo's taking off his pants, I'm going to take your temperature and prove you're nothing but a bunch of fakers." She says to the two boys laying in bed.

"Come on, we really caught a cold."

"Totally. "

"Now just let us go home already."

"Hahahaha, not gonna happen."

Hikari giggled at them as she prepared the supplies to treat Jotaro's wound while he was about to take off his coat. She was cutting the bandage wrap when she heard Jotaro yell, "What the hell is this!?" She jumped a bit before going to him. "JoJo? What's wrong?" She asked. He didn't respond. He was focus on the handkerchief that Kakyoin gave him. In it was a deadly message. Jotaro didn't know what was going on. All he does is that he and Hikari were in danger. The message read, *'Jotaro Kujo, I will kill you and your friend today with my Stand! Noriaki Kakyoin.'* Wait...his Stand?

"K...Kakyoin?"

"JoJo? What is it?" Hikari asked again.

"Hey, doctor...what are you trying to do?"

Jotaro and Hikari turned and saw that the nurse had suddenly gone into a mad frenzy. She was foaming at the mouth. Her eyes were crossed and appeared to have no control over herself. Hikari shook with fear and hid behind Jotaro's back. The other two boys backed away from her as she shook a pen all over the place. "What does it

look like? I'm just shaking out the thermometer to reset it!"

"Th-that's not a thermometer you got in your hand!"

"Yeah, that's a pen!"

"Oh come on, did you just say pen? You think I'm dumb, does this look like a pen to you!"

The two young Stand user looked down and were shocked to find a lightly green colored tentacle crawling up the nurse's leg. What is that thing? Does that have to do with Kakyoin's creepy message? "Tell me something! Just how stupid are you two boys, if you honestly think this thermometer I'm holding looks like a pen to you...then maybe. You need to. Take a. CLOSER LOOK!!" without any warning, the nurse lunged forward and stabbed one of boys' eyes out. A scream ripped out from his throat from the sheer agony as the woman laughed like a maniac at his pain and moved the pen inside his injury to cause him more pain. "My eye! M-my eye!" When she finally released him, the boys didn't waste any time on running like hell out of the office as quickly as they can.

"J-JoJo, what's wrong with her?"

"I don't know but stay behind me, got it."

"You little punks...what do you two have to say...? You're not going to stand there and tell me this thermometer looks like a pen too are you?!" She sprinted forward. She managed to grab Hikari by her hair and stabbed her in the shoulder. Tackling her to the ground. "AHH!" She screamed as she tried to push her off. "Hikari!" Jotaro grabbed the nurse and tried to pry her off of her, but with all their strength combined, they couldn't. The nurse was far too strong and wasn't planning to let go just yet. She pushed the pen even deeper into her shoulder. "What the hell is going on? Such strength, this no mere woman."

"There was something weird crawling on the floor earlier, no one else saw but us! Was that a Stand?" Hikari asked.

"Noriaki Kakyoin. Was he the one who started this? Did he cut my leg

on the stone steps?!" Jotaro questioned.

"Yes, it was me." The latter told them. The teens looked over and found the man in question sitting on the window sill with a smirk on his face. He was holding onto a marionette by the strings.

"So it *is* you!" Jotaro yelled.

"Hey, long time no see." Kakyoin said, so nonchalantly. "So my Stand is currently possessing in controlling the doctor. If you attack my Stand, you'll hurt her too...JoJo." He laughed. "Looks like I was right, from how you reacted, that little girl there is rather close to you."

"You bastard! Who are you!"

"I told you; I'm Noriaki Kakyoin. And the name of my Stand here is Hierophant Green. I am human, but I have pledged loyalty to him, that's why I'm gonna kill you." The nurse screeched and jumped off Hikari, going after Jotaro next. He tried to hold her back but she got him by stabbing his cheek. Her mouth was gaped open and he could see something at the back of her throat. It was staring back at him with its glowing yellow eyes. Thinking quickly, Jotaro managed to push her off, grab the nurse by her head and locked his lips with hers. Kakyoin's eyes widened. Jotaro used his Stand to successfully drag Hierophant Green out of the woman's body. Now that is revealed, they could see what it looks like. Hierophant Green appears humanoid with golden yellow eyes, but has robotic features and light-color armor textured similarly to that of a cantaloupe. Jotaro's Stand held tight by its head with his teeth. Causing Kakyoin pain.

"I have zero intention of hurting her. Now that I've dragged it out, I see it for what it is. Just a sleazy Stand whose only ability is to posses people." His Stand let go and grabbed Hierophant by its head in a tight grip. "So this is your Stand, Kakyoin? This green stripy thing looks like a shiny melon."

"You're going to regret doing that. Dragging that out of her was a mistake, JoJo. GAH!" Kakyoin told him before shutting up from pain coming from his head. He could feel it. He could feel the fingers of his hand gripping on to his skull. It gripped hard enough to cave it in a bit. Jotaro placed the now unconscious nurse on the floor before

turning to his opponent. "Don't act tough, I can see my fingermarks on your forehead." He said. "if I decide to crush your Stand's head like the melon it is, then I'm guessing your head will be crushed too." To prove his point, Jotaro's Stand gripped even harder, making Kakyoin cry out. Hikari got up, holding her wounded shoulder. "What are you going to do with him now?"

"I'm gonna keep a tight on him for now. We're gonna pay my gramps a little visit, I'm sure he love to meet him. And I like to know more about Dio myself."

"That does seem to be the better option." Hikari agreed. "You're right. We should get out of here before anyone else gets hurt." As she said this, a creepy chill ran down their backs. Something was else was going on. It didn't feel right. A green tentacle wrapped itself around Hikari's neck and held her up. In Hierophant Green hands, a strange green liquid overflowed from his hands to the floor below. "What the hell? What's that green liquid coming out his Stand's hands." Jotaro glared at the reddish haired teen. "You bastard, let Hikari go now!!" His demand fell on deaf ears. Kakyoin gave a hard stare and said, "You should have listened JoJo. I told you, you're going to regret this, didn't I? This is the attack of my Stand, Hierophant Green." The liquid took from between his Stand's hands. Whatever it was doing, it was going to do it and quick. Jotaro had to get Hikari to safety. "No weird moves, Kakyoin!" He moved in to punch him, but he used his Stand to pull Hikari in front of him as a human shield. Causing Jotaro to jump back. It was the opening he wanted. Kakyoin shouted, "**Emerald Splash**!"

Hierophant Green fired off large amounts of energy that takes the form of emeralds. The blast's range and shotgun-like dispersion fired at high speed. Hikari struggled against Heirophant's hold while reaching out to her dear friend. All she could think about was wanting to protect him. When she shot out her hand, for a split second Soundless Voice appeared in front of Jotaro with her arms outstretched. Jotaro's stand tried to block it, but it broke through and hit it squared in its chest, ripping it open. It send Jotaro flying across the room. Breaking and crashing through the doors and walls. He coughed up blood and had the wind knocked out of him. "J-J...JoJo..." Kakyoin released her. Dropping her to the floor and

gasping for air. He walked towards Jotaro with a triumphant smirk, thinking he has already won with the tall delinquent struggling to get back up. "So what do you think, did you like **Emerald Splash**? That fluid you saw in Hierophant Green is actually a serge of destructive energy. It tore straight through your Stand's chest and your insides have now been torn to shreds. And as for that doctor over there,"

Choking and gasping for air can be heard, and all eyes turned to the nurse, who was resting on her knees, suddenly collapsed in a pool in her own blood. She had received harsh internal injuries. Jotaro and Hikari's eyes widened. Why? She was supposed to be okay when Hierophant was taken out from her body. "Why? I know I took that Stand out of her. So how?" Jotaro questioned. "I told you already. But let me reiterate, I try to warn you that by attacking my Hierophant Green it would hurt her as well." Kakyoin says. "My Stand can travel farther yours, but it dislikes open spaces, without exception. It prefers to hide within something. If you drag it out, it gets angry. That's why when you rip it out of her throat, it hurt her along the way. You're the one who did this to her, this is entirely your fault, JoJo. You must be held responsible, look at what you've done. All you had to do was let me kill you and the doctor would've walked away unharmed."

"That's not true!" Hikari cried out. She ran up to him, grabbed his arm, and began hitting him with little to no effect. "JoJo's not the one to blame, you're the one who came here in the first place, didn't you? Just to kill him? JoJo hasn't done anything, please don't hurt him!" She begged him. Kakyoin gave her a hard look and said, "Hasn't done anything? Don't make me laugh. If he had only let me kill him, none of this would've happened. That fact you can see our Stands means that you have one as well, but I can tell it must be a very weak one if you haven't brought it out yet." Kakyoin wrest his arm back and delivered a stinging backhanded slap across her face. Sending her stumbling back to the ground. "Pathetic. You're not even worth killing."

Jotaro held onto the broken wall and struggled to get back up on his feet. Kakyoin took a glance at him when he did. The young delinquent had enough. He wasn't allow Kakyoin to have his way. He wasn't going to stand there and place all of the blame on him. He was not going to be the judge. "Still, you get up. You are so pathetic,

you're nothing more than a sandbag about to be pummeled by a skilled boxer. Why even bother standing up, I'm just gonna knock you down again."

He gave a piercing glare and told him, "Look, no one ever said Jotaro Kujo was a nice guy. I beat the crap out people, more than I have too. Some are even still in the hospital. I've had idiot teachers who like to talk big, so I taught them a lesson and they never can back to class. If I go to a restaurant and the food's bad, then they get a policy to stiff it with the bill. But," He clecthed his fist. "Even a bastard like me, can spot true evil when he sees it! True evil are those who use the weak for their own gain and crush them under their foot when they're through! Especially an innocent woman! And that's exactly what you've done, isn't it?! And your Stand gets to hide from the victim, the law, and the consequences! That's why I will judge you myself!"

"I'm evil? See that's where you're wrong, evil is always the loser. It's the victor who has justice, the victor being the last man standing. And how you win in battle is irrelevant!" Out from Hierophant Green's back and from its armor, numerous tentacles shot out after him. Jotaro moved quickly to avoid them. He grabbed Hikari from the floor, jumping across the room as he carried her in his arms. Jotaro whispered something in her ear. With his Stand's help, he kicked a nearby table at him. Kakyoin expected something like that and used its tentacles to break it apart before it touched him. More of them came and quickly trapped the teens in its vice-like grasp. "See the loser is always the evil one. Time to finish you off!"

"Really? The loser's evil?" Jotaro asked.

"**Emerald Splash**!"

"Then let us show you," He smirked as Hikari brought out Soundless Voice. It brought its arms together and created a shield in front of them. The shield was a navy blue color with a white crescent moon. The emeralds made contact, and blasted right back at him! Kakyoin brought up his hands to defend himself, shocked at what happened. How did she just do that?! That was his most powerful move! "What? There's no way, no one can just deflect the **Emerald Splash**!"

"Just how evil you are!" Jotaro's Stand rushed forward grabbed

Hierophant Green's neck. Strangling it with one hand, shouting, "**ORAORAORAORAORAORAORAORA**!" Kakyoin coughed up blood, but it wasn't finished yet! It pulled a fist, and began to brutally pummel him into submission. "I'll teach you justice, with my Stand!!" It finished it off a sky uppercut. It held enough force to break through the ceiling and destroy almost all the windows of the school. Causing everyone inside to panic. Kakyoin felt his bones break from every impact that dealt and blood poured from his wounds. "Your Stand has incredible power..." He managed to say as he fell unconscious. With that done, Hikari turned to Jotaro and asked, "How did you know I was able to that?"

"What?"

"During that fight, you mentioned for me to create a shield as soon as he made that attack."

"That's because it was the same one you used to protect me. I saw it for a second before vanishing, giving me time bring out my Stand,he caught me by surprised and scratched its chest a little. I'm glad my Stand isn't weak, but sometimes it feel like it get more savage than I am. That was a close call, thanks Hikari." Jotaro said.

"Oh no, you don't need to thank me. I was only trying to help that's all." She smiled before remembering something important. She gasped, "The doctor!" Hikari ran over to the unconscious doctor. Praying that she was still alive. She didn't deserve this, it's not fair. Hikari thought. To her eyes only, Soundless Voice hands covered hers and a gentle blue energy spread from her hands to the nurse's body. Hikari could faintly hear the woman's breathing and heart beat. It was slight, but it was still there. Jotaro walked over to them and kneeled down to check for a pulse. He did. "She'll be fine once her wounds are treated." He told her. Jotaro looked at her when she didn't respond. She was deep in her own thoughts that he had to nudged her shoulder to bring her back to reality. "Huh?" Then the fire alarm went off and they could hear the other students and facility outside.

"Did a gas pipe just burst?!"

"It came from the doctor's office!"

"Everyone, stay in your classrooms!"

"Let's leave the clean-up to them, I've had enough school for one day." Jotaro said as he picked up Kakyoin and flung him over his shoulder.

"Uh, r-right." Hikari said as she followed him out.

"This guy needs to talk. I want to hear everything he knows about Dio." They jumped out from the window. Ditching the remainder of school and back home to the Kujo residence. On the way home, Hikari couldn't help but wonder. Kakyoin said that he plead loyalty to Dio, but what she wanted to know was why? How could anyone swear their allegiance with a man like him?Hopefully Kakyoin would give them the answers they need. If he wakes up that is.

Chapter 6: Dio's curse! The journey begins!

Meanwhile back at the Kujo Estate, Holly was outside hanging some of the laundry to dry, singing to herself when she had felt a rush through her. Holly looked back to a photograph of Jotaro. She ran back inside and hug the framed picture close to her heart. With a bright smile she said, "I just had the most amazing connection with my son right now! Jotaro must be thinking about me at school this very second!"

"I'm not thinking about you." Jotaro bluntly said as he and Hikari appeared at the door frame. Holly cried out in shock and dropped the picture. "Jotaro! Hikari! Why aren't you two at school and who is that boy on your shoulder? Is that blood that he's covered in? Wait a sec, please don't tell me you did that."

"Mrs. Kujo, it's a little hard to explain-" Hikari started.

"It's none of your business. I need to find the old man." Jotaro said as he walked on ahead. "Finding someone in this big house really sucks."

"I think you can find him with Avdol right now. They're both in the tea room." Holly told him. Hikari looked at Jotaro with concern. That's just like him. He always keeps what's necessary to himself. He hardly ever tells anyone what's on his mind. Including her. Hikari had always, and always will, trust Jotaro with anything. She trusts him without a shadow of a doubt. Yet, she wishes that he would share his thoughts with her sometimes. It makes her worry about him, more than she does already. "I know what you're thinking."

Hikari was pulled from her daze when Holly spoke. "Huh?" She asked, confused. "Let me guess, Jotaro never tells us anything. All that does is make us worry about him all the time. Isn't that right?" Holly said with a gentle smile. Hikari didn't say anything for a moment before she smiled back. "Yes."

"But still I know that deep down he means well. He's a very sweet little boy at heart."

Hikari nodded. "Yes, I believe that too. I know that JoJo is still that same brave, yet compassionate boy I met so long ago." Holly smiled at her statement. She was about to say something else when, "Hey!" They quickly turned to face Jotaro, who was on the other side of the house. He then asked his mother, "You're looking a little bit pale this morning. You alright?" Jotaro actually sounded concern. Holly lit up like a Christmas tree and held up a victory sign. "Yay! I'm fine, thank you!" She said. Jotaro immediately went back to being a grump and continued on walking. Hikari smiled as she and Holly both thought the same thing. *'I knew it.'* Hikari then told Holly, "I should probably go with him to see if anything happens."

"Alright, I stop by later with the first aid kit."

"That would helpful. Thank you Mrs. Kujo." Before she could go anywhere, Holly asked to wait as she had something to tell her. "What is it Mrs. Kujo?"

"Hikari. I know you have good friends with Jotaro for a very long time. And I know that he really cares a lot about you...so,"

"Yes?"

"Hikari, please promise me that you'll take care of him." Holly told her. Hikari was speechless for a moment. She wondered why Holly would ask her to promise something like that. Especially since the two have together since childhood. Nevertheless, Hikari swore that she would, indeed, take care of him. Hikari walked through the house in search of the tea room. When she did, she could hear bits of the men's conversation. When she arrived at the tea room, she heard Joseph say this, "It's too late for him. There's no way he'll make it. He's got a few days before he dies at most." Hikari placed a hand over her mouth. She didn't think she heard him right? She didn't want to believe it at first. He was going to die? Are they responsible for this? Yeah, he attacked them first but...there's nothing worse than a loss of life. "Jotaro, this is not your fault. Trust me, do you want to know why this man swore his allegiance to Dio and came to your school to kill you? Look here, and I will show you!" He placed a his hand on top of Kakyoin's head, and brushed his bangs up. He revealed a disgusting piece of live flesh on Kakyoin's forehead. It looked like a spider and it was moving. Squirming around inside. "What the hell is

that? Looks like a spider or a piece of flesh." Jotaro said.

"It's horrifying. I-is that attached to him?"

"That's it? Is that what made him swear allegiance to Dio?"

"Yes. It's a flesh bud made formed Dio's cells, it connects directly to the boy's brain." Avdol explains. "Flesh buds are small, but they have the power to influence a person's thoughts into actions."

"Simply put; that bud stirs him and awakens a certain feeling far beyond his control." Joseph continued. The teens now knew, because of that flesh bud, Kakyoin carried out the task of locating Jotaro and to kill him without a second thought. "Charisma! The sheer emotive power that drives a soldier to follow a dictator or a believer to put his faith in a corrupt cult! This young man revered Dio and that's why he swore allegiance to him. Dio knows how to wield the power of charisma, which means there others he will try to influence. He ordered this young man, Kakyoin here, to kill us and he won't stop until he has." So Dio found this young man and had use force to make him swear allegiance. Did Kakyoin had a choice in the matter? Was there even a choice at all? It wasn't fair, Hikari thought to herself. Why would anyone force others to do cruel and horrible things against their will. Surely, Kakyoin wouldn't dream of hurting anyone if he could help it, would he? Hikari thought of it that way. After hearing all of this, Hikari began to believe that there has to be some good in him somewhere.

"So removed the bud." Jotaro suggested, like it was the most obvious thing in the world. Joseph shook his head and disregarded it. "No, the brain is very delicate. If he even twitches while we extract it, it could cause brain damage."

"JoJo. Ms. Hikari. I need to tell you both something. Four months ago, while I was still there in Cairo," Avdol hesitated for a moment, but he quickly man up and said, "I encountered Dio!" Their eyes widened.

In Cairo, Egypt it was late at night. The full moon was the only source of light to shine his way back home. Avdol was walking back to his shop after doing a few errands. On his way back, he met up his friend Joseph

Joestar. The old man had given him a warning; to be on the look out for a blonde-haired man with alabaster skin, and a noticeable scar around his neck. And, no matter the reason, to NEVER engage in a fight with him. As he will be greeted with a deadly fate. He walked down the quiet roads, but he held his guard up for whatever comes next.

"I am a Fortune Teller by trade, I have a shop in a souk called, Khan Khalili. It was a full moon that night."

Avdol walked though a building that held his shop inside, and walked up the steps to the front door his shop. He stopped in his tracks as soon he saw someone standing near the entrance to his shop. As soon as he saw him. *He had shoulder-length blonde hair, alabaster skin, and gold eyes. He couldn't exactly see his eyes, but he knew that this man was staring right at him. Avdol never met this man before in his life but at the same time he did know him...and was terrified of him.*

"And there he was. Just stood at the top of the stairs outside my shop, silently. With eyes so cold, it felt like he was invading my heart. Golden hair and translucent alabaster skin, but most of all, a dubious sensuality. The kind you wouldn't expect from a man. Because Mr. Joestar had warned me about him, I knew exactly who he was. Dio, resurrected from the depths of the Atlantic!"

"I hear you have a special ability beyond that of ordinary person. This true? It would please me if you grant me a small demonstration." Dio smirked at the Egyptian fortune teller as he licked his lips. Avdol didn't dare say anything back. His voice sounded so calm. As if he wasn't trying to scare him. He was obviously terrified of him, but the way he spoke was calming his fast-pacing heart. And that just made him even more scared. He looked up in horror as his began to grow and come alive. The ends began to take some sort of form, pieces of flesh were exposed and started advancing towards him.

"It was then that I found him to be truly terrifying. Every word he spoke calmed my heart. The dangerous sweetness of his voice is precisely makes him so terrifying!"

"Avdol. Come here." Without another word, the hair like tentacles shot out at him. Avdol screamed at the top of his lungs and quickly escape by jumping out of a window leading to a different alleyway. He ran for his

life. Faster than he'd ever ran before. He didn't look back. He didn't dare to. Avdol was lucky and grateful for the information that Joseph had given him. He barely managed to escape with his life that night.

"I ran for my life, I didn't dare think of fighting him. I was very fortunate, because I had prior knowledge of Dio, I was able to realize who he was. I immediately jumped out the window, that souk is like a labyrinth, but I knew it like the back of my hand, and thanks to that I was able to escape. Otherwise, I would've ended up like this young man. Another follower controlled by a flesh bud."

"You would've died a few years later with your brain completely devoured." Joseph said.

Hikari walked over and kneeled before Kakyoin's unconscious form with a sympathetic expression. "What should we do? We can't let him die like this...it's not fair for him."

"You're right about one thing. Let's not jump the gun." Jotaro said. His summond Stand right beside him. "Kakyoin's not in great shape...but he's not dead yet!" He bent down in one knee and held on to red-haired teen. "I'll pull it out with my Stand." He sent a look at Hikari. She looked at his eyes and nodded. She stood up and took a few steps back, giving Jotaro space to do what he had to. Joseph and Avdol quickly rose to their feet and tried to stop the delinquent teen. "No, Jotaro! Stop!"

"Old man, just back off. I can remove this thing without damaging his brain. If my Stand has precision to catch a speeding bullet than it can also do this." His Stand moved its hand closer towards the piece of flesh, didn't grab it straight away, instead it wanted to get a good grip on it before doing anything else.

"Listen, that flesh bud is alive! Can't you see part of that flesh bud lives outside his body for a reason! Even a skilled surgeon can't remove it without serious damage!" Jotaro's Stand gripped the flash bud. As soon as it did, the bud reacted and used one of its tentacles to sink into Jotaro's hand, burrowing in and searching for his brain. "It just sunk itself into his flesh, this is bad! You have to let go, JoJo!" Avdol told him.

"It can infiltrate anyone's brain who dare tries to remove it." But Jotaro didn't listen. He was determined to get that disgusting thing out of Kakyoin's head and saving his life. The bud worked it's up Jotaro's arm. Then Kakyoin snapped his eyes open. He stared wide eyed. He didn't know if he should be confused or shocked. Why? Why was he trying to save him? He had just tried to kill him and had attacked his friend. The latter carefully kneeled before him and said, "Please, try not to move. Stay still. JoJo's going to make sure you'll be okay." Kakyoin stared at the golden haired maiden with wide eyes.

"Why are you-?" He tried to say.

"Like the girl said; I would try not to move. If I mess up, you're brain if fried." Jotaro told. As he continued to pull off the bud, the thing still moved around his body. It became a lot more serious when the tentacle showed up on his neck. Avdol couldn't let the teen risk his life like this and tried to stop him. "No JoJo! It's already reached your neck, you have to let go!" Joseph shot his arm out and stopped Avdol from getting close to his grandson. Joseph said to him, "Hold on Avdol. My grandson is very impressive, that thing's made it half-way through his body and yet he's still completely calm. Not even a tremble from either him or his Stand. He can move with more precision and strength than I ever anticipated." Just as the flush bud was about to infiltrate Jotaro's brain, his Stand quickly removed the disgusting bud from Kakyoin's head and rip it out from his own body. His Stand held it in its hands and rip its tentacles off, sending it flying. Joseph finished it off with an old technique he hadn't used in a long time. The Ripple. Joseph karate chopped away at it with golden-orange electricity like energy. Saying, "Overdrive" as the bud dissolve into dust.

"There. Are you alright?" Hikari asked Kakyoin as she helped him sit up. Kakyoin rubbed the wound on his forehead and look at Jotaro. He still didn't understand. Why? Why would he put himself at risk just to save him. "Tell me, why did you risk your life to save me?" At first, Jotaro didn't answer him. Instead he step out of the room and look outside. He then told him, "Don't know. I don't really have an answer for that." Kakyoin didn't know what to say now. At the time, Holly was just coming in with a first-aid when she overheard that bit. But she smiled. She and Hikari were thinking the same thing. *'Jotaro.*

I see right through you.' Holly made herself known and walked into the room with the others. She was just about to treat Kakyoin's wounds but Hikari politely stopped her, saying that she had just discovered a special power from her Stand. She moved closer to Kakyoin and cupped his face. "Wh-what are you-."

"Please, stay still. You've suffered some serious wounds, so I'm going to have Soundless Voice heal you." She told him. Soundless Voice appeared before him. She placed her hands over Hikari's and a familiar blue energy spread from them. The energy flowed throughout his entire body. Kakyoin's eyes widened. Whatever pain he felt was slowly fading away. His injuries were healing and he felt refresh. Hikari pulled away. "How do you feel now, Kakyoin? All better?"

"Y-yes...I feel so much better than I did before." Kakyoin gave her a small smile and said, "Thank you. For everything."

"No thanks are needed."

"So you're Stand has the power to heal. That's quiet a rare ability amongst Stands." Joseph commented.

"Indeed. Though, it is hardly a surprise. A Stand that able to heal others generally comes from a gentle soul." Avdol said.

"So, it's Kakyoin, was it?" Holly asked the Purple-eyed teen. "You need to rest for awhile, why don't you stay here tonight?"

"Mrs.Kujo's right. Even though you feel alright, it might be best if you rest up for a bit. Besides, this house has plenty of rooms." Hikari said.

"Huh, no I-."

"Papa. Go and get his futon ready." Holly told her father.

"Hmm? Why do I have to do it? I never even liked the idea of sleeping on the damn floor. In fact, that futon in my room, replace it with a real bed." Joseph said.

"No way. You're in Japan now, papa. And here in Japan, we sleep on the floor. And I prefer if you call me 'Seiko' here."

"What?!"

"The Japanese also have a word for 'Holy'. Here the word for it is 'Seinaru'. So, that's why all my friends call me Seiko here." Holly giggled.

"What the hell is that? Holly's a beautiful name, I gave it to you myself-!"

"If you don't refer to me as Seiko, I won't answer."

"Holly!"

"Please go prepare a room for Kakyoin." Holly told Hikari, completely ignoring Joseph. Hikari nodded and walked out of the room. Jotaro pulled down his cap and said, "Give me a break." He followed his friend, wanting to get of that annoying display as quickly as possible.

"Holly!"

"Did I hear something?"

"AARGH!"

The next morning, Hikari and Jotaro woke up as usual to get ready for school. Hikari woke up early than normal as she wanted to make Kakyoin something to eat before they left. With happened yesterday, he probably won't show up for school. Hikari told Jotaro to go on ahead, saying she was going to check on Kakyoin for a bit before heading out. Jotaro nodded and walked ahead. As he did so, he stopped. He quickly took notice that something...someone was missing. He looked back inside the house. Where was his mother. *'Here is your goodbye kiss.'* That's usually how his mornings play out. No matter how many times Jotaro would tell her to quit it, she'd still comes every morning to say goodbye to him. So why now? Did something happen? He wasn't the only one. While Hikari was bringing the tray of food for Kakyoin, she noticed that house was strangely quiet. She hadn't seen Holly that morning, but she was sure she would've seen her around somewhere.

She went to one of the guest rooms and slowly opened the door. She didn't want to disturbed Kakyoin's sleep. She quietly stepped inside

and closed the door behind her. Just as she turned around, Hikari nearly jumped when she found Kakyoin staring at her. "I-I'm sorry. Did I wake you?"

"No, no, you didn't. I'm just surprise to see you here." He saw the tray of food in her hands. "Is that for me?" He asked.

"Yes. I thought I'd make you something to eat before I leave for school. I also wanted to make sure you were okay." She told him. She walked over, kneeled beside him, and placed the tray to the side. Even now, Kakyoin didn't quite understand. He didn't understand them. He had just tried to kill them. He wasn't hesitating either. His main target was Jotaro and he used this girl as a tool as a means to get to him. And then suddenly, Jotaro risked to save his life and Hikari graciously healed him from all of his injuries. "I don't understand. Why would you two help me the way you did?"

"What do you mean?" She asked.

Kakyoin sat up from his bed and looked at her. "I tried to kill Jotaro. I attacked you. And yet, you've removed that flesh bud from me and healed me...so, why?" He asked.

Hikari thought it over for awhile. Then she gave a smile and said, "Well, that's because I didn't want you to die that way. You weren't in control over yourself, you were being forced to commit such a violent act by Dio. When I heard that from Mr. Joestar, it dawned on me. I believed that there was some good in you. I was sure that you would never do something like that if you could've help it. It wouldn't be fair for you to die in such a horrible way for someone else's actions. And I think JoJo felt the same way. I forgive you for what happened. It's over and done with."

Kakyoin stared at her in shock. He couldn't believe what he had heard from this girl. She believed in him, the goodness inside of him. She was willing to forgive him so easily. With everything he had done yesterday, she forgave him. Maybe Jotaro did too. Kakyoin did feel like crap though. Her kindness was wasted on him. Her's and Mrs. Kujo's kindness were wasted on someone like him. "I...I don't know what to say."

Hikari held out her hand and told him, "Let's start out like this; My name's Chiara Dorotea, But I like for all my friends to call me, Hikari. It's nice to meet you Noriaki Kakyoin."

A friend. She actually considers him a friend. All his life he'd never had anyone to call that. Or had someone call him that. He smiled back and shook her hand. "It's nice to meet you too, Hikari." Hikari thought he should get back to sleep and left him on his own. As Hikari walked through the house, she still hadn't seen Holly. Normally, she was awake at this time to say goodbye to Jotaro. There hasn't been a day when she doesn't. Hikari was nearing the kitchen, where she found Jotaro and Joseph standing by the doorway. As she walked closer to them, she heard Avdol say, "That's just what we wanted to believe. It's impossible for her to escape that. As long as she has Joestar blood in her veins, there will inevitably be an affected from Dio." Hikari's breath was caught in her throat. She picked up the pace and joined the two men at their side. She found Avdol kneeling as he held Holly in his arms. Holly was having trouble breathing, was sweating profusely, and looked like she had a serious fever. Just behind her shoulder, Hikari saw Holly's Stand. It was barely noticeable, nearly invisible, but is was there. It has the form of raspberries and thorns, similar to Joseph's Hermit Purple. The Stand...is threating the life of its own user? Can some Stands actually do that? And it's because of Dio?

"But still, a Stand is controlled by an individual's own mental strength and they move according to that person's fighting instincts. Mrs. Kujo is a kind and peaceful woman, who doesn't have the power to resist Dio's curse. She doesn't have the strength she needs to control her Stand. This is has to be why her Stand is making her so ill, it's acting against her, not with her. It's only getting worse. This is very bad, at this rate, she'll die! She'll be overcome!" Avdol said to himself. He looked like he was going to retrieve the others but stopped when he noticed them by the door. They heard everything. They knew about Holly's condition. "Mrs. Kujo?" Hikari called out and she ran to the woman's side.

"She has a Stand? Holly..." Joseph's eyes were filled with sorrow and pain. His only daughter was suffering under the curse of a demon in human form. Jotaro bit his bottom lip. He felt rage building up inside

of him. He may not be showing it completely, but he was just as upset seeing his mother in such a state. That bastard was to blame for all this. His mother didn't do anything wrong to anybody. She didn't deserve this. "NOOOOOO!!" Joseph screamed in distraught as he grabbed Jotaro by his uniform and slammed him against the wall. "This is the one thing I feared the most. This is the very last thing I ever wanted to happen. My daughter has developed a Stand as well. I've always known, she's too weak...she can't withstand it. I knew if this day came, it would destroy her. She doesn't have the strength needed to repel Dio's curse."

Jotaro gripped on his grandfather's hand, pried him off of him, pushed him away. "Tell me, what can we do?" He asked in a very serious tone.

Joseph took a deep breath before explaininng what needs to be done. "Okay. To start, we must find Dio. The only way to break this curse is to find Dio and kill him!" Everyone moved to Holly's room and carefully placed her in bed. Hikari went back to the kitchen to fetch a couple of small towels, filled a dish pan with water and brought them to Holly's room. She soaked one of the towels and placed it on top of the woman's head, hoping it would help in bringing down the fever. Joseph pulled out various photos of Dio as he explains that finding him was easier said then done. Each one of the photos of Dio always has the background engulfed with darkness. "Finding him is the problem. No matter how many times I try, he's always hiding in the darkness. In every spirit photo I take, the background is black. We won't be able to locate him using my photographs."

"We've used various methods to try and analyze them, but with this darkness, we always come up with nothing." Avdol said.

"Hey. You should've mention this to me sooner." Jotaro said as walked over to the them. Avdol handed him one of the photos and told them, "Let me look. I might be able to find out." His mighty Stand appeared above him, ready to follow its master's orders. "What's hiding in that darkness?" Jotaro placed the photo in his Stand's hand as its eyes began to act like a camera lens. Adjusting the sight to find something...anything lurking within the never ending blackness of the background. Jotaro sensed that his Stand has succeeded in locating something and went over to Holly's desk,

pulling out a notepad and pencil. "My Stand can move accurately enough to pull a flesh bud from someone's brain and catch a bullet. Let's have it sketch what it sees." He gave his Stand the pencil, and within seconds with such details, drew exactly what it saw through the darkness.

Joseph, Avdol, and Hikari walked over and looked at the notepad as it was done. They were in shock at the end results. They couldn't believe that it managed to find something to small in that photograph. A fly. "No way! It saw a fly through all that!" Avdol exclaimed.

"Yeah, but how in the hell is going help us-" Joseph began to ask.

"Wait a second. I've seen this fly before." Avdol said.

"What?"

"Do you have an encyclopedia?" He asked Jotaro.

"We do have a library."

"Let me have the sketch. I'll do some research." Advol took the picture and ran out the room. As soon as he left, Holly began to regain consciousness. She looked a bit groggy, but other then that she appeared to be fine. Joseph bent down to her level. He was happy to see that she actually woken up. "Papa...I" She called out.

"You just rest. Jotaro, get some water. Hikari go get some fruit." He told the two teens. He didn't seem to noticed, but Hikari did. For a brief moment, Jotaro smiled but it quickly disappeared. She knew that he was just a relieved to see his beloved mother was doing okay for now. She smiled to herself as they began walking back to the kitchen. They didn't know that Kakyoin was standing right around the corner. He already knew exactly what was going on with Holly, but didn't know why. He decided to go to Avdol to confirm it, so he made his way to the Kujo family's library. He found Avdol standing in one of the isle. Using his Stand's fire as a light source and had already gone through three books. Kakyoin thought he was being quiet, but then, "You seem to be doing well." The Egyptian man said. The purple-eyed man's breath was caught in his throat. "Sorry, but I'm a

little busy right now."

"Can your own Stand really do that to you? Kill you?" Kakyoin asked. He had his Stand since the very day he was born, but he had no idea that there were Stand that can kill their own users.

"Yes. I have seen far to many people suffer exactly that same fate."

"Really?"

"It's limited to her back right now, but that Stand will grow like a fiendish vine and it won't stop until her whole body is overtaken and bound. Her fever will rise and her illness will worsen, she'll fall into a coma and never wake up. And then...She'll die." Avdol explained. "Your average person would see this as some rare and unknown disease that no doctor in the world would be able to treat. And normally, neither you nor I could do anything about it. Not even the healing ability from Soundless Voice is enough to help her."

Kakyoin felt such deep concern and worry for Holly's situation. She was so kind to him. She was just fine yesterday...but now her life was at stake. Was there really nothing *they* could do to save her? Is she doomed to horrible fate. His concerns were slightly diminished when Avdol says, "But there is still hope. It would take fifty days for her body to reach that state. We just have to find and defeat Dio before that. If we can sever the link her Stand has with Dio, we can save her." Kakyoin felt a little bit better, but he couldn't help but wonder about something. It wasn't a big deal, but it bugged him for awhile.

"Hikari. She's clearly a kind and gentle person. Forgiving, caring and sweet. She has a Stand, but she's not the type a person who would enjoy conflicts. How is it that she has a Stand, but hasn't suffered the same illness as Jotaro's mother?"

"A Stand is controlled by an individual's fighting instincts and mental strength. For a kind soul like Hikari to possesses a Stand, could only mean one thing: She has a hidden strength deep within her. A strength that not even she aware she has."

Back with the Joestar family, Holly was sitting up straight. Looking much better than she did before. Hikari gave her a fruit salad as she

finished the glass of water Jotaro gave her. "Thank you for this you two. I wonder what it was that came over me today. I can't believe I had a fever and passed out like that." She smiled brightly. Did not know what happened? Jotaro eyed the raspberry vines growing steadily just behind her shoulder. *'Because it's on her back, she can't see it. She has no idea what's happened.'*

"Mrs. Kujo? How do feel? Is anything hurting?" Hikari asked carefully.

"Oh no. I'm fine, just a little fever. Don't worry so much, okay?" She smiled still. She placed the fruit salad to the side, and was about to get up. "Alright then, what do you want for dinner Jotaro-?"

"Don't move! You just stay in bed!" Jotaro shouted at her. Catching everyone of guard. The vines began to move. Jotaro noticed it and took a step back. He pulled down his cap over his eyes, calmly saying, "I...just meant you should stay put, at least until your fever breaks. Now be quiet and get better." Hikari smiled at her delinquent friend. He may act cool, but he truly does care and love his mother no matter what he says. Joseph agreed with his grandson and tucked Holly back into bed. She smiled and complied. Holly, with loving eyes, looked at the people in the room with her. She felt so loved. Her father, her son, and the girl she thought of as her own. "I kind of like this. Everyone is so nice when I get sick..." Her voice was beginning to trail off. On no, she thought she'd be able to contain it. It was a lot stronger than she thought it was. "Having a little cold...isn't so bad from time to time..." Holly managed to say before she collapsed on her pillow. She had lost consciousness once again.

"What? Holly!" Joseph cried out. "Say something. She...she lost consciousness again. Come on." Joseph touched her forehead and realized she was burning up this whole time. He then knew. Holly, the whole time, was fully aware of her Stand. She knew. But she still try to hide it from everyone else. The last thing she wanted, was for her family to worry. She didn't want to scare them with all this. "She was acting fine but this fever is so bad...it spiked. She was just putting on good front. I know she didn't say anything, but my daughter is definitely aware of her Stand. She was doing her best just now to try and hide it from us. My guess, is that she didn't want us to worry about her. My daughter has always been like that."

"Mr. Joestar, I found it. I know where that fly is from." Avdol said as he appeared through the door. The others turned to him and he showed them the encyclopedia. The page held the information about the same fly Jotaro's Stand found.

The Nile Ue Ue Fly. Native to the banks of the Nile. The striped-legged variety is known as the Aswan Ue Ue Fly.

"Egypt?" Joseph questioned.

"And we've narrowed it down to the Aswan region, Dio is there." Avdol told them.

"So he is in Egypt after all." Kakyoin said as he suddenly shown up out of nowhere. Hikari's eyes widened as she ran up to him. Worried as she didn't think he should be walking around. "Kakyoin, are you okay to standing up right now?"

"What do you mean by that?" Joseph asked him. Kakyoin didn't answer him right away as he took time to smile at Hikari, telling her he was more than okay, before saying, "The flesh bud was planted into my brain three months ago. That's when I met Dio. I was on a trip with my family in Egypt, we were there touring the Nile."

"You were in Egypt too. It seems for some reason, Dio wants to remain in that area." Avdol concluded.

Kakyoin step up and firmly stated, "So when are we leaving? Because I'll be going with you." The word surprised was an understatement. The former servant of Dio, who had previously swore loyalty to, had decided to travel with them and fight against him. In honesty, Hikari wasn't sure if she should be proud of him or terrified for his sake. "Seriously? Why would you wanna do that?" Jotaro asked him.

"To be completely honest, I have no idea why I want to either. It's just something I feel complied to do." Kakyoin told him and gestured an 'I don't know' look while throwing his own words back at him. Jotaro scoffed at him and turned away. Kakyoin closed his eyes and tapped his forehead. "Let's just say that you've opened my eyes. It's that simple." The two older men smiled at him as they were grateful for the extra help. Joseph walked over and kneeled at his daughter's

side. Giving her a sad smile as he cupped her cheek. "Holly. We're gonna save you no matter what, you have my word. There's nothing for you to worry about. We are going to make you better I promise. Just take it easy and rest."

Hikari walked over to them and asked, "U-um, I know it's not going to be much, but maybe I can use Soundless Voice to try and heal her little bit?"

Joseph nodded. "Please. Perhaps with your ability it can help Holly to try and hold out a bit longer." He said. As Hikari began to do her magic, Kakyoin said, "JoJo's mother, Holly, has the ability to calm a person's soul and put their minds at ease. People feel relaxed just by being near her. This may sound strange but, if I ever fall in love...I want it to be with someone like her. I feel the need to protect her. I'd do anything...to see her feeling better and smiling."

"Indeed." Avdol said. He understood what Kakyoin meant. Hikari smiled at him. She didn't know about strange, but she thought it was very sweet when he said that. It reminded her how Jotaro was like when they were younger. Whenever she was sad and almost cried, Jotaro was always there to cheer her up and vise versa.

"There's no time! We leave immediately!" Joseph shouted. It all happened in a flash. Joseph rushed over to the nearest phone and made a call. Soon the three teens were outside as they watched cars pulled up and several men in suites and medical uniforms rushed into the estate.

"We can trust them. They're doctors from the Speedwagon Foundation." Joseph tells them as he and Avdol met up with them. "They're going to stay with her and take care of Holly around the clock."

"JoJo, since I am a Fortune Teller by trade, I'd like to name your Stand before we go." Avdol said. He smiled and pulled out a deck of Tarot Cards.

"Huh? Name it?"

"With the Tarot, the Cards of Fate. Do not look, but let chance guide

your choice. It will, not only suggest to us your destiny, but also the abilities of your Stand." Jotaro went through the deck. Picking out one card after the other. He pulled out the one card he chose and reveled it to the Egyptian man.

"The Star Card. I shall name your Stand...Star Platinum." The team was complete and ready.

Jotaro Kujo. Stand name: Star Platinum. Abilities: Precision in movement and extreme strength

Joseph Joestar. Stand name: Hermit Purple. Abilities: Spirit photography

Muhammad Avdol. Stand name: Magician's Red. Abilities: Fire and heat

Noriaki Kakyoin. Stand name: Hierophant Green. Abilities: Long-distance possession and ***Emerald Splash***

Hikari Dorotea. Stand name: Soundless Voice. Abilities: Shield proficiency and healing

"Alright, we're off! Let's hit the road!" Joseph said. The journey was now beginning. But for those who wish to fight off the evil that lurks with the shadows. The evil will do and go any means necessary to kill them. While the team was taking time to rest onboard the plane to Egypt, somewhere Dio used a power similar to Hermit Purple and took a photograph. The picture developed and revealed Jotaro and Joseph asleep in their seats. "As I thought. They found out where I am. So then, will you come to Egypt...Joseph and Jotaro?" The elder Joestar woke up with a gasp and looked highly concerned. He felt it right in his bones. "He saw us. I definitely felt Dio looking at us just now."

"Yeah." Jotaro was wide awake, he had felt it too.

"Be careful. A new Stand user...could already be on this plane." He warned.

He couldn't have been more right, unbeknownst to them during the time, a small insect flies into the open.

Chapter 7: The Tower of Gray and Silver Chariot

It was quiet. Silent. Not a sound could be heard aside for the plane's engine. Joseph had warned his team that a new Stand user might be on this plane, ready to attacking them when they least expected. They all remained silent and still. Everyone else's on the plane was already in a deep sleep. Waiting for their enemy to make their move. That's when they could hear it. It was faint, but it was there. A slight buzzing. Buzzing. From either a fly or a bee. The group searched around. Trying to locate the source of the sound. Jotaro found it. It was some kind of large beetle, but he couldn't tell what it was at first. Jotaro got up from his seat to try and get a better look. "A rhino beetle? No, it's a stag beetle."

"Hey, Avdol. Is that a Stand? Are encountering another Stand user?"

"It's possible. This could be a Stand that takes the shape if an insect." Avdol replied. Before they could even blink, the beetle had vanished in a flash with the seats of the others passengers. Joseph got up and was confused how, even for an insect, could move so quickly. "What the-? It hide in the shadows of the seats."

"Damn, it could be anywhere." Avdol said.

Hikari was uneasy. She really didn't expect to encounter the enemy so soon. What's more chilling is that they chose to attack them on a plane of innocent people. Are they willing to go that far? Just to get to them? Jotaro stepped onto the isle and tried to find the damn bug. But considering on how dark is was, it was going to be difficult. They could still hear the buzzing sound swirling around them. They can't seemed to pinpoint its location. That's when Kakyoin looked at the corner of his eye and he saw the beetle only inches from Jotaro. "JoJo! It's next to your head, look to your right!" He shouted to warn him.

Jotaro turned and the others discovered that the beetle was much more larger than a normal insect. It was about the size of a human's head. As far as insects go, none are even remotely that large. "Whoa,

it's so huge! That thing has to be a Stand! No doubt, it's here for us." Kakyoin said. The bug-like Stand started foaming at the mouth. It's sickly yellow saliva dripped on to the floor as it opened up to reveal its mouth-like stinger. Stand or not, the thing was repulsive. "That's disgusting." Jotaro said.

Hikari eyed the bug-like Stand's wings. Considering how quick it went to disappear like that, must mean it prefers speed over any physical strength. Maybe she could use Soundless Voice to trap it somehow. "It was pretty fast, maybe I can-." Hikari said as she was about to get up from her seat. Jotaro placed a hand on her shoulder and kept her in place. "Just sit tight, I'll take care of it."

"Are you sure, JoJo?" Hikari asked, very concern.

"Be extremely careful. I've heard there is a user of an insect Stand that likes to rip out the tongues of its victims before they die." Avdol explained. The delinquent summoned out Star Platinum in all its glory. It was more than ready to follow it master's orders. "Star Platinum!" With it's own speed, Star Platinum rushed forward to grab and crush the filthy bug to bits in its hand. But in a flash, the beetle disappeared before it can even touch the thing. The team were shocked by its speed. It was a whole lot faster than Star Platinum itself. "It dodged you. I...I can't believe it, it's faster than Star Platinum, a Stand that has the speed and precision to catch a speeding bullet." Avdol said.

"Then there's no doubt about it, that bug can only be Stand. Where is he, where is he hiding? Where is the one who's controlling it, we need to find him!" Shouted Kakyoin.

"But there's so many people here, they could be anyone on this flight." Hikari told him. This is really an inconvenience for them. So far above the ground, practically trap in a plane with a user and they had no idea who it could be. The Stand opened its mouth wider, keeping its beady little eyes locked on its targets. Kakyoin pushed Hikari behind him as he yelled, "It's getting ready to attack!" The beetle shot out its sharp stinger at Jotaro. Star Platinum tried to block it but it went through its hand, it was going to rip out its tongue. "No, damn it!" Jotaro yelled. Its stinger shot into his Stand's mouth. Blood trickled down his chin. Did it get him!? "Jotaro!" They yelled.

Fortunately, it didn't get his tongue. He barely managed to catch the damn thing between his teeth. If he even missed for a second, he was sure he'd be dead.

"Star Platinum stopped it with its teeth just in the nick of time." Joseph said.

"Just as I feared, its going after Jotaro's Stand's tongue." Avdol said as he finally knew what kind of Stand they were dealing with. "It's him! Represented by the tower card of the tarot, symbolizing calamity and the interruption of a journey, the Stand is called Tower of Gray! Tower of Gray is responsible for countless mass murders, which he made to look like unfortunate accidents. The plane crash last year in England, that caused over 300 deaths, was likely his work and how many more had there been over the years. I've heard rumors...but to think that he teamed up with Dio!"

"**ORA**!" Jotaro/Star Platinum yelled. It delivered a barrage of fists at its opponent. "**ORAORAORAORAORAORA**!!" He managed to destroy its stinger, but the bug was still way too fast and it avoided everything he literally threw at him. It was perfectly fine as it flew above his head.

"It dodge that attack too?! Not just from a single hand, but it also dodged a true fisted barrage of blows! It's...it's so fast!" Avdol shouted in disbelief.

A old, hollow and raspy voice chuckled at them. Taunting them. It was coming from that repulsive bug. "Even if you had ten guns to shoot bullets from one centimeters away, they would not be able to touch my Stand. Not that you would kill a Stand with a gun anyways, you're all going to die with the rest of these weaklings." The thing opened its mouth to show a brand new stinger. Joseph looked back at the rest of the passengers. They were still asleep. And amongst them, was the cold-blooded murderer controlling the beetle. But who? Who is it?! Was it a man? A woman? Old? Young? This was infuriating! Hikari gazed at the other passengers as well. She knew that they had to protect these innocent people. They can't let anyone involved in this senseless battle.

The bug vanished and reappeared one of the isle seats. It was just

hovering there in the air. The others were uneasy. What was he planning on doing now. It here for them, wasn't it. So why wasn't it attacking them? Wait...unless it's planning on...no, it can't! It can't do this! With great speed, the Tower of Gray swooped in and ripped four of the passengers tongues right out of their mouths, holding them out for all the world to see. Hikari screamed as Jotaro moved in to shield her from a gruesome sight. Tower of Gray laughed at their faces. "Bingo! Got their tongues, now for the best part!" It flew at the back wall of the plane, and writing in its victims' blood to write out the word 'Massacre'. It planned to murder every single person on this flight before the night's end.

"No...it actually did it." Kakyoin said in disbelief, shocked that the user killed off innocent people that weren't even involved in this. Enrage that he did, Avdol brought out his fiery Stand to end this! "Fine! I'll burn that damn bug alive! Go Magician's Red!" Before he could get his chance, Kakyoin stopped him. An elderly man sitting in the back was awoken due to the noise. He rubbed the sleep from his eyes and he got up. Tower of Gray hovered above him. Kakyoin tried to warn the man but he didn't listen. As he began to walk to the restroom, he pressed his hand on the wall. Staining his hand with blood. At first he was confused, but once reality set in, the man screamed in fear. Why was there blood on the wall?! Kakyoin moved in quick and chopped him at the back of his neck, knocking him unconscious. He turned to his friends and told them, "We have to defeat it before the other passengers start to panic, easier said than done though. Mr. Avdol, using an active like your Magician's Red inside an airborne plane could make it explode, killing all of us. JoJo, if your power would to rip a hole in the fuselage, it would be a catastrophe." He glared at the bug-like Stand and declared, "This calls for a quiet and discreet Stand. My Hierophant Green is most suited to defeating it, let me take care of the pest control."

Tower of Gray chuckled at the purple-eyed man. "Noriaki Kakyoin, eh. I've heard all about you from Lord Dio. Don't bother, you think you have silence on your side. But your Stand can not keep up with my speed."

"You sure about that?" Kakyoin challenged. "**Emerald Splash**!" Millions of precious green stones shot out at its target at high speed.

As powerful as the attack is, the downside is that it accuracy isn't that spot on. Even so, none of the emeralds made contact with Tower of Gray as it easily slips through the cracks of the attack. When it flew closer to him, Kakyoin ordered his Stand to use **Emerald Splash** again to attack it. Yet, it still dodged everything. Tower of Gray chuckled at him. "You seem to think you can hit me if you fire enough shots, but you haven't hit me at all!" The damn bug still managed to slip through the stones, avoiding any ounce of damage. Once it was close enough, it used its stinger to destroy the mask of Hierophant Green, revealing its mouth. The attack caused Kakyoin to cough up blood and collapse on the floor. Tower of Gray continued to taunt him. "I'm just too fast for you, you're way too slow to get a bingo. And Kakyoin, with my next attack, I'll stab your Stand's tongue with this Tower Needle and rip it out! Won't that be fun?!"

The purple-eyed man glared at the thing. He refused to back down to this sick freak. "**Emerald Splash**!" He yelled as Hierophant launch another attack. He still couldn't get a hit. Tower of Gray laughed at his face as he continues to avoid them. "Don't you get it?!"

"Damn. Impossible, how can he win if his attacks don't find their mark?" Avdol questioned.

"His attacks are strong, but his accuracy isn't that good...so why does he keep using it?" Hikari asked. "Unless...do you think he has some kind of plan?"

"You'll go mad from the pain once this rips its tongue out! Hahahahaha, how exquisite!" Tower of Gray laughed. He lunged forward and was about to kill red-haired Stand user.

"Is that right? If its tongue's ripped out, I'll go mad from the pain?" Kakyoin asked. The beetle shot out the Tower Needle to do what it promised. Instead of being afraid however, Kakyoin smirked at it. "My Hierophant Green will go mad alright." In a swift motion, Hierophant Green's appendages suddenly sprout forth from the plane seats and impale Tower of Gray from all sides. "What?!" It screeched. "If it rips you apart, it'll go mad. From pure joy." Kakyoin said. "His appendages have already slip beneath the seats. I just needed enough time to set up my little trap. You didn't realized I was using my **Emerald Splash** to keep you in one spot?" Hierophant Green then

used its appendages to tear the bug to shreds, killing it. With the Stand mutilated, the user of the Stand is revealed to be the old man Kakyoin had knocked out earlier when his skull was split open, his tongue split in two and his blood spilled onto the floor. "So that geezer was the user all along, huh? Heh, guess I should've expected as much. A repulsive Stand usually has a repulsive user." The purple-eyed man said.

The team moved the man to one of the empty seats away from everyone else. As Hikari healed the boys' injuries, they realized that, unlike Kakyoin before, this elderly man didn't have a flesh bud imbedded in him. Was he acting on his own accord? "Well, that's strange. It doesn't look like he had Dio's flesh bud in his forehead." Kakyoin said.

"Tower of Gray was always evil. He killed tourist by the hundreds and got paid for it." Avdol explained and he covered the bloody corpse with a large sheet. "He'd make it look like an accident and got away with it every time. I'm sure Dio was able to use him because he was easily bought, and blinded by greed."

Hikari stared at the covered body with sad eyes. She didn't want to believe it. How can a person grow to become a cold-hearted killer. A killer with no sense of humanity to even care about the life of another. "It's so sad. I don't understand how someone like him could do these terrible things with no remorse. Why must he be like this?" She asked. Though, Hikari wasn't looking for an answer. Avdol sighed. "I'm afraid the world has always been like this, Hikari. Human nature is always a paradoxical pattern, filled with indecision and determination, inconsistencies and predictability, and light and darkness. But we must try to understand to that pattern and learn form it. Do you understand?" He told her gently. All she could do was give a silent nod as she averted her sad eyes. Jotaro placed a comforting hand on her shoulder.

Suddenly, the plane felt...odd. Noises gave out and everything felt slightly out of place. It was like the plane was getting crooked or something. It wasn't balanced right. "Something's wrong. It could be my imagination, but I get the feeling this plane isn't flying straight anymore." Joseph said. A cup fell from one of the seats and confirmed Joseph's suspicions as it rolled down the isle. The plane was crooked.

Which could mean it was going down, fast. Another thought ran through his head, and he nearly turned pale. Without saying anything to his team, he immediately ran towards to cockpit. The others turn to one other with concern.

"Sorry sir, you can't be up here." One of the stewardess said as she tried to stop the elder Joestar from going in any further. "The cockpit is up ahead, so passengers may not enter." Joseph understood that, but he brushed the woman to the side as he made it to the door. The stewardess and her friend once again tried to stop him, when they were easily distracted by the very handsome face of a certain teen delinquent. They turned to face him as he stared down at them with a cold glare. The women blushed and had a dreamy look in their eyes. *'Oh. He's so handsome.'* They both thought.

"Move it, bitch." Jotaro said as he harshly shoved them aside.

"What a shock." They swooned. They fell right into Kakyoin's arms. The women looked at the dark-red haired young man and held the same dream-like state when they saw Jotaro. "Whoa there. Sorry ladies, his disrespect towards you is incorrigible, but we have an emergency on our hands." He said as he gave them a dashing smile. "Please forgive him for me."

"Okay." They said. Hikari and Avdol were at the back as they watched the scene played with perplexed expressions. Well...that happened. They quickly brushed it off as they went to catch up with everyone else. Joseph barged into the cockpit and was shocked to what he found. "Damn it! This is horrible!" They found all of the pilots had been murdered, all their tongues were ripped out, that can explain why the plane was descending at an alarming rate. "We've been had!"

"Their tongues have been ripped out. That rhino bastard, he killed the pilots before we knew he was here." Jotaro said. Hikari gagged at the sight. *'These poor people...'* She tried her best not to look at them and asked Joseph, who was at the front seat of plane, "Mr. Jostar, is something wrong with the controls?"

"You bet there's something wrong. We're loosing altitude fast, and the autopilot's been destroyed as well. Damn it, we're going to crash."

"But there must be something we can do, right?" Hikari asked. But then again, what can they do? They need to figure out a way to land this plane safely, or else it won't just be them who'll die, but the rest of the passengers as well. Hikari would try to placed a barrier around the plane, but she wasn't sure if she even make one that big. Suddenly, a gurgle, hoarse of laughs came from behind her, she looked over her shoulder and she screamed, alerting everyone in the room. The elderly man somehow managed to get up and was standing before them. Hikari jumped away from him and Jotaro pushed her behind him. "BWAHAHAHAHAHA! My Stand is the tower card, which signifies horrible accidents and the end of journeys. I'll keep you from Lord Dio, if it's the last thing I do. Even if you managed to survive the crash, you're still ten thousand kilometers away from Egypt!" He boasted. "Those who swore loyalty to Lord Dio will pursue you relentlessly. You don't stand a chance in hell, there are Stands in this world with powers that define the very limits of imagination. Lord Dio's power is the one who rules over all of them, he is the Master of Stands. Reigning over the world like a God among mortals. There's no way you'll reach him alive. You bastards won't even see Egypt, your deaths will be swift and painful, HAHAHAHA!!" And just like that, the elderly man fell backwards and dropped dead immediately.

Once he was dead, Jotaro requested the stewardesses to go put on life jackets on all the other passengers and to make sure they were secured while Joseph tries to land the plane as safely as he can. Though, Joseph commented that he has experience with prop plans and that this will be his third plane crash. Honestly, whoever heard of someone surviving three plane crashes in their lifetime? Everyone sighed and groaned. Jotaro made it a point to never be on a plane with his grandfather again.

Amazingly, or rather miraculously, Joseph actually managed to land the plane safely 35 kilometers off the coast of Hong Kong. Rescue teams were dispatched to fetched the survivors and get them to safety. The team had no other choice but to head towards the city of Hong Kong and to gather their thoughts there. Hong Kong. Hong Kong Island, Kowloon, the new territories. With more then 235 individual islands in the area, its breathtaking nightscape is known world over as, The Million-Dollar View. The team decided to go to a

nearby restaurant and figure out which would the safest, and fastest,route without endangering any more innocent civilians. "It's now become completely impossible for us to fly to Egypt." Joseph said. "You see, if we encounter a Stand User like the last one in a commercial flight, we'll cause a disaster. One that will harm many people, and might kill many more. With that in mind, we have to get to Egypt by either land or sea."

"I hear you, but if we fail to find Dio within fifty days..." Avdol trailed off. He didn't need to say anything. They already knew. They all went quiet for a while. If they are unable to find him and defeat him before the end of their time limit. Then Holly will die. But not just her. The entire world will be doomed and become a living hell for everyone once Dio sets his plans into motion. Hundreds with live in fear and thousands will be mercilessly murdered by his hand. "If we could've stayed on that plane, we'd probably be in Cairo and this would be over." Kakyoin said.

"I'm well aware of that. However, it's too soon to worry about it." Joseph reassured them.

"Huh?"

"A hundred years ago, Jules Verne wrote, 'Around the World in Eighty Days'. A story about a man who travels forty thousand kilometers in eleven weeks, using nothing but trains and steam boats." Joseph began to explain. "We may not have a plane, but we still have fifty days. We'll be able to travel the ten thousand kilometers to Egypt, and as for the route we take." Joseph pulled out a map from his coat and spread it on the table. He pointed to Hong Kong, their current location, and traced his fingers across the ocean lines. "I'd say, we go by sea. We'll charter a suitably sized boat, go around the Malay Peninsula, and cross the India ocean, a silk road of the sea as it were."

"I believe that is best as well." Avdol nodded, agreeing with his friend. "Crossing by land could be difficult. And we have to cross the Himalayas or the desert, if we run into trouble, we'd lose a lot of time. There are too many dangers."

"I haven't been to any of those places using either route before, so I

really don't know. I'll leave it up to the two of you." Kakyoin told them.

Jotaro and Hikari nodded. "Same with me."

"You have my trust. I'm sure we'll get to Egypt before we know it."

"Then it's decided. Now, the greatest danger that we'll face, will be the Stand users that Dio sends against us. We'll have to do our best to get to Egypt without being spotted." Joseph said. Little did they know, they were already being watched. Sitting just a few feet away from them was a man smirking at them. He found his targets. This should be interesting.

The team beginning to relax a bit as they drank the fine tea the restaurant had offered them. It was pretty peaceful for that moment. Jotaro glanced at Kakyoin as he opened the teapot slightly. Kakyoin noticed his stare and chuckled a bit. "Don't be so jumpy. This is just to let them know that we want more tea. If you do this in Hong Kong, they'll usually bring you more within a few seconds." He said. He was right. Within seconds of doing so, a nearby waitress came by their table and poured him a fresh cup of tea. "Also, anytime the server pours some tea into your cup," Kakyoin tapped on the table twice and politely smiled at the waitress. "Tap the table. It's a way of saying 'thank you'." The waitress smiled back and walked away.

Hikari clapped her hands and was in awe. "Wow. Kakyoin, I didn't know you could do that, you're so smart. Have you come here before?"

"Hahaha, well, I've toured a lot with my family." Kakyoin smiled.

"Excuse me." A new voice called out. The others turned and found a man of above-average height and athletic or muscular build walking towards their table, holding the menu close to his face. "Sorry to be a bother, I'm a tourist from France, could you help me out? My Chinese is a bit rusty and I'm having a hard time with the characters on the menu." He said. "Could you help me decipher it?" He closes the menu, giving them a good look at his face. With a receded hairline, he wears silvery hair that rises directly above his head, straight, to a height about half that of his head. He has blue eyes. He has no

eyebrows. He also wears earrings in the shape of jaggedly halved (broken) hearts. He wears a fitted sleeveless black top; shoulder less except for one strap running from his chest over his left shoulder, white pants with brown patches on both sides of his hips, black arm bands, and black boots.

"You're annoying, go away." Jotaro told him.

"Come now, Jotaro, it's fine. Try to be nice to the man." Joseph said.

"Why don't you sit and join us while me order? Here, you can have my seat." Hikari said as she got up to give her chair the French man. "Hikari," Jotaro began before the man interrupted him. He shook his head and tried to decline her generous offer. "No, it's fine. A lovely lady like yourself should relax in your seat." Hikari gave him a sweet smile and told him, "I don't mind, please seat. I'll just get another one." The man took her seat as she went and brought a new one from an empty table. Once she sat back down, Jotaro took his chance to lightly hit on her head.

"I've been to Hong Kong many times over the years, I can at least read the characters on the menus." Joseph said as he began to list some of the delicious sounding meals. "So, what do you want to order? Dish with shrimp? Duck? Shark fin and mushrooms?" He called over a waiter and told him exactly what he had in mind on what to have. The others wasn't sure what it was at the time cause he was being very vague about it, only saying 'this' and 'that'. Once their order did arrived...they were less than convinced it they should even eat at all. The meals were rice porridge, roasted frog, clam dish, and stewed fish. "These look like dishes with beef, fish, clams and frog." Avdol said.

"Indeed. This is quite different from our order." Kakyoin said.

"I knew this would happen. Damn it."

"U-um...b-but it does look rather tasty, right?" Hikari asked them, trying to keep up a smile. They all turned to her like she was nuts. If she was being honest, she was a little scared on how the frogs and fish were looking at her. Their guest didn't know what to even say about this. Joseph laughed out loud and said, "Well, it makes no

difference! It's all on me, everybody! Besides it doesn't matter what you order, it's all delicious. Hahahaha, alright everyone dig in." The others looked at one another with uncertainty and took their plates. With each bite of the different dishes, they realized that it truly was delicious. Despite it looks, the food was just bursting with flavor that it bounces off the tongue. Joseph smiled at their faces and said, "Ya see that? And you were worried, hahahahaha."

"Well, they've certainly taken a lot of time to prepare this, it's almost artistic." The tourist from France said and picked up a carrot in the shape that one thought it would be impossible to cut into. A star. "Take these carrots for example. Cut into perfect little stars. In fact, it reminds me of something." Everything became tense. Where was he getting at? They eyed the man cautiously. "I remember now. Someone I know has a mark, a birthmark just like this on the back of their neck. Know anyone like that?" He smirked.

"Are you another...enemy?" Kakyoin hesitated to ask. He didn't answer. Instead, he placed the carrot piece and placed it on the side of his neck. The rice porridge suddenly began bubbling and a rapier sword shot out through the table and was about to attack Joseph. It would've sliced him in half if he didn't caught it with his prosthetic hand. "It's a Stand!" He shouted. Avdol flipped the table away as he called forth his Stand of the flames. Everyone immediately backed out of its way. It shot out a tornado of fire at the enemy. But with great skill, the enemy Stand maneuvered the flames around its blade, as if it was under its control. The enemy Stand was reveled. In appearance, it looks like a thin, robotic humanoid clad in medieval armor, armed with a cup-hilted rapier and has the same blue eyes at its master. Although it is thin, it wields a heavy plate armor spiked at the shoulder pads and elbow pads. It has a distinctive helmet with a jewel embedded in the forehead and several pointed down projections protecting the mouth and cheeks.

"You were right. Another Stand user." Avdol said. The Stand flung the fire towards one of the flipped over tables, and it made itself into the form of a clock with the hand pointing to the number eight.

"Whoa, he has such speed with his sword." Kakyoin commented.

"My Stand is the Chariot card, and it's name is Silver Chariot.

Muhammad Avdol. It seems that I will be disposing of you first. I've carved a burning clock into that table, before that clock strikes twelve, you will be dead man." And so begins the fight between the swordsman of chariot and the magician of flames.

Chapter 8: The Chariot vs The Magician

"You know your way around a sword, I'll grant you that much but it will take much more than mere ego if you think I'll be defeated by the time the flames reach twelve." Avdol said. He had accepted the challenged the man from France gave him. "You're pride may well be your undoing Mr...Uh, who-"

"Pardonne-moi. We haven't been introduce yet. My name is Jean Pierre Polnareff." He said.

"Well met, Polnareff. It's good to know the name of one's opponent. However," Avdol paused as he pointed at the table. The fire came alive and engulfed the table, burning it to cinders. Small flames quietly rained down. "Back to the task at hand. If you're under the assumption that my flames only burn upward or with the wind as they would in nature, let me assure you they do not." He smirked. "My Stand is named Magician's Red because it wields fire as though by magic."

Polnareff sneered at him. "Hmph. Fire is what began life itself in this world. I should've expected as much from a fiery Stand such as Magician's Red, who represents 'beginnings'. However, you dare to speak of pride and ego." The French man pulled out five Francs and threw them into the air. The coins were perfectly aligned with the falling flames. "I assure you that my pride is well-deserved." With great speed and precision, Silver Chariot skewered both the coins and balls of fire in a single thrust of his rapier. Everyone was taken by complete surprised by the swordsman's skills. "Now you see that I'm every bit as deadly as I had said. It is not mere ego, my Stand has the unrestricted power to cut fire to ribbons as though it were nothing." Polnareff said. "It can slice through air, creating a vacuum and guiding the fire. Your flames are useless. Face it, your Magician's Red may be fearsome, but it's powerless against the likes of my Silver Chariot."

Polnareff withdrew his Stand and calmly walked passed the group. He walked over to the front doors and turned his head to look at

Avdol. He then told him, "Victory and Conquest. That represents the card The Chariot and defines my Stand as well. I can beat you in this cramped little place as well as anywhere else. Not very sporting though. Your flames will serve you to greater effects in a larger, open space. Beating you in the apex of your power Monsieur, is the only victory worthy of my Stand." He pushed the doors opened and shouted for them to follow him outside. Polnareff leads the group the Tiger Balm Garden. A fantastical hillside park built along Hong Kong's famous Tai Hang road. With surreal landscape of sculptures of Pagodas, it is a true Hong Kong auditee.

"What the hell kind of nonsense is this?" Joseph yelled out as they walked into a large open space in the garden.

"I believe they call it Tiger Balm Garden." Kakyoin answered.

"Oh yeah?"

"A prediction, if I may indulge." Polnareff says as he brought Silver Chariot. "Monsieur Avdol, you will die here. Destroyed by the flames of your very own Stand, Magician's Red."

"Avdol," Jotaro begins to say. He was planning to take Avdol's place in this fight. He was confident with that Star Platinum could teach the man a lesson. But Avdol stopped him by saying to him, "Jotaro. This is not your fight. In an open space like this one, there's nothing to keep my Stand from fighting at full force." In a burst of flames, Magician's Red appeared before him and was more then ready to battle the Chariot. The two Stand users stared each other down. Waiting for the other to make a move. Jotaro and the rest stepped off to the side. With Magician's Red's ability to produce fire, this was bound to get ugly. "En garde!" Polnareff shouted. The fight begins almost immediately Silver Chariot starts the fight off with a flurry of sword strikes, most of which Magician's Red quickly dodges. The man from France tried to urge the fortune teller to attack and stop defending. Magician's Red counters with an attack of blasting out several fire blasts from its mouth. Silver Chariot has expected that attack and further demonstrates its power by using its sword to deflect the shots towards a nearby statue and carving it to resemble Magician's Red.

"That God damned bastard, he's just toying with us!" Said Joseph. "He used Magician's Red's own fire balls to make a statue of it."

"Is Mr. Avdol going to be alright? Mr. Polnareff might be more skilled than we first thought." Hikari said. She was worried that her friend will not be given a easy fight. Polnareff appeared to be a very skilled fighter than Tower of Gray.

The ladder chuckled at the Egyptian man. "Look at that. In a place this odd, I dare say your fiendish face is right at home." Avdol didn't reacted to his insult. However, he glared at him as the flames glowed brighter around him and his Stand. Avdol closed his eyes and starts to concentrate his power to unleash a very special technique. "Well. Here it comes, show me your true power at last, Avdol. But know it will never be enough."

Joseph quickly realized what his friend was planning on unleashing and warned his teammates, "Hey, Chiara either put up a shield around us or hide behind something already. Avdol's gonna blow his top!" Without waiting for a response, Joseph quickly ran over for cover. "What are you talking about?" Jotaro asked. Feeling that the answer will come sooner than they think, Jotaro grabbed Hikari's wrist, and he and Kakyoin also ran for cover.

"**Crossfire Hurricane**!" Avdol yelled out. Launching from Magician's Red's mouth, an Ankh-shaped flame in a great storm. It fired right at Polnareff, but he wasn't in the least bit scared by the oncoming attack. He looked so smug. "Really, is that the best that you've got?! I told you before what my sword does, it creates a gap between the pockets of air so I can slice your flame!" Once again, Polnareff was able to cut through the fire and deflect the blast right back at Avdol himself. Magician's Red screamed in pain as Avdol couldn't even breath, let alone give out a scream of his own. Seemingly burnt by his own Stand, as predicted by Polnareff. "Avdol, no!" Joseph cried out. "The fire is so intense, it's burning Stand and user alike." Avdol collapses onto the ground as the flames continue to eat away at him. "Hahaha, it's just as I foretold." Polnareff laughed. "You will die by from an inferno of your own making."

"Mr. Avdol!" Hikari called out as she tried to run to his aid. Jotaro and Kakyoin stopped her by grabbing her arms. "Chiara, we've got to

stay out of this." Joseph tells her.

"B-but Mr. Avdol needs our help!"

Avdol glared at his opponent. He refused to lose to the likes of him. He felt a bit insulted that he predicted he would be the victor. Him! Trying to outwit a natural fortune teller like himself. He will not allow himself to lose. Despite the pain he was experiencing from his flames, he launches Magician's Red at Chariot. Polnareff looked so smug. "Good grief, just die already. One last pathetic gap? This is hard to watched." He laughed. Polnareff strikes back with sharp strike, but something feel right. Once the sword made contact, Magician's Red suddenly broke into pieces and engulfed Silver Chariot in its flames. Polnareff couldn't bear it. It burns to much! It hurts! "Impossible! How can his Stand injure me after the moment of its own destruction?!" The pieces fell. The made a strange sound. Like Meatal clanking against the ground. "It's not the Stand, you bastard. It's a dummy." Joseph told him. He quickly realizes the figure he had lit on fire earlier was not Magician's Red, but the statue he had carved himself. The Egyptian fortune teller got back up, unharmed by the fire. He played the part of the defeated well. "Perhaps you didn't take me for my word, when I told you I can control my flames freely. When you deflected it, I used to melt the statue's joints and allow it to move."Avdol said. "The one defeated by his own Stands power is you, Polnareff." The blue-eyed man, once filled with much confidence, was now trembling with fear. "Now, let's try this again." Avdol had Magician's Red launch another powerful Crossfire Hurricane at Polnareff. Hitting him point blank, taking the full force of the attack and is severely burnt.

"Challenging a fortune teller in a battle of predictions is a bold move. Give it another decade and you would've been a viable opponent."

Polnareff collapsed onto ground as the fire instantly went out. He now lays motionless. Joseph walked out from their safe spot and said, "Such terrifying power. His Stand must've melted in the face of such an attack. It's done for."

"That's one hell of a burn." Jotaro said. "I'm betting he's dead, or wishing he was. Yeah, he's not getting up from that."

"If he is alive, he'll be flat on his back for months. Having your Stand destroyed is a major trauma." Kakyoin told them as he was preparing to go. Hikari looked back at the French man's unconscious form. She actually hoped he was still alive. Even though he did attack them, that didn't mean he should be dead. Hikari supposed that the user for Tower of Gray could be an exception, since he did killed numerous people. "If you are alive...please, don't hurt anyone else. Okay?" Hikari whispered to herself. Avdol turned back to his teammates and began to walk away. "Now then, Mr. Joestar, let us resume our trip to Egypt." He said. Joseph nodded. It's best if they leave as soon as they can. With Polnareff, his Silver Chairot was still barely visible. It's armor moved slightly, before it exploded! The team snapped their heads around as bits of pieces of Silver Chariot flew around the garden.

"What the hell's going on?" Joseph asked. "His Stand just exploded into a bunch of pieces!" If that wasn't strange enough, once the sword-wielding Stand was blown up, Polnareff himself was suddenly blown ten feet off the ground! He was smiling and applauding like nothing had happened. He wasn't even hurt. The others looked in shock at the silver haired man. "How is he still laying down but suspended in mid-air?" Kakyoin asked.

"Bravo! Well done, Monsieur, bravo!" Polnareff boasted.

"That's impossible..."

"I don't believe it."

"He doesn't look injured at all!"

"Yeah. But, why the hell's he floating in the air?"

"How is he doing that?"

The man from France laughed at their shocked faces. His smirked didn't leave his own. "Look with your inner eye and see the truth." They quickly realized it. A transparent form of Silver Chariot was right below him. Holding him up. But...something was very different about it. Polnareff did a couple backflips before landing perfectly on his feet to the ground below. Silver Chariot appeared before him in

its clear visible form. The huge difference was that it was completely deprived of its armor, revealing its endoskeleton-like body. "Me oui, Monsieurs and Mademoiselle. He may have shed his armor, but it's still my Silver Chariot." He said. "You seem quite taken aback by this. I really should explain before I destroy you. Otherwise, it wouldn't be chivalrous, don't you agree? I'm sure you were expecting nothing less. If you don't mind, may we take a short timeout for an explanation?"

Avdol couldn't help but smile. He had to admit, he kind of respected this man for his unexpected curtesy. "Very well. Let's here this explanation." He said as he walked back to the battlefield. Polnareff placed his hands on his hips and continued on with further information of Silver Chariot. "First, the explosion you saw was not my Stand self-destructing. What you took as Silver Chariot's body, was armor. Armor that was cast off." He began. "But before it did, it absorb the brunt of your flames. That's how I escaped further harm. And bereft of armor, it has significantly more agility. Were you able to see my Stand as it held me up? That's right, Silver Chariot can now move faster then before."

"Hmm, illuminating. You're suggesting that you only stood there and took my Crossfire Hurricane head on because the armor didn't allow it to dodge, is that it?" Avdol said. He got into a fighting stance and he getting serious again. "But, the left of armor, it is also far more vulnerable. It may have survived my attack once before, but if it were hit again, its destruction would be absolute."

Polnareff frowned and crossed his arms. "Hmph, that may be." His cocky smile had returned to his face. "Oui, how can one know? Such a shame, we'll never find out."

"Never, huh? Mind if I try it out?" Avdol challenged. Polnafeff seemed to welcome it as he said, "First, let me show you all something that will really freak you out."

"Well, go ahead them."

Polnareff lifted his hand, giving his Stand a silent command. In an instant, Silver Chariot split into several clones of itself. He was right. Seeing his Stand split into clones like that really took them by surprise. "What the devil? He now has six...no, no wait, he has a total

of seven Stands now!" Joseph exclaimed.

"But that's impossible, there should only be one Stand per user." Kakyoin said.

Avdol was speechless. How the hell was he supposed to fight that Stand like this? Polnareff chuckled again. "Tell me, are you freaked out yet? These are afterimages, perfect mirrors of the Silver Chariot, guaranteed to fool your senses. Your sight, your hearing, your senses can't follow their movement." He said. In a blink of an eye, the seven Silver Chariots charged forth. Swinging their swords in blazing speed. Magician's Red was able to dodge the attacks as best as it could. But it knew it couldn't keep running forever. With a bird-like screech, Magician's Red used it's Red Bind attack. The flames coils like snakes at Silver Chariot, hoping to catch the real one and burn the oxygen right out of its throat, suffocating this cocky bastard. Yet, every time the flames touched the sword-wielding Stand, it turned out to be one of the fakes and reappear in different locations around Avdol. Polnareff laughed at his pathetic attempts to capture him.

"I told you that efforts to track it, would be in vain, did I not?" He said. "You waste your flames on images and spared the real threat." The fortune-teller refused to give up. He continued to use his Red Bind and tried to desperately track down the real Silver Chariot from the rest of the illusions. His friends were beginning to get concern for him. This was not getting easy. Especially, the strength Avdol's putting out on his Stand. It's taking a lot of mental strength. "Striking at random. Desperation is not a good look on you, my dear Avdol." Polnareff said.

"He's going to exhaust himself at this rate." Kakyoin said.

"Isn't there some way to figure out the real one from the rest?" Hikari asked as she watched as the flames hitting Silver Chariot, only to know later that it was only an afterimage. Having no other option, Avdol launches his **Crossfire Hurricane**. It fired that great storm that engulfed one he believed to be the real thing. However, just in case, the ankh bursted into a mini-tornado that the fire spread everywhere within its range. Even it was an afterimage, that blast would ensure that'll hit its target. Unfortunately, it didn't turn out that way. All seven of Silver Chariot returned to Polnareff's side. "Non, non, non,

non. Have you learned nothing at all today? You're a fool, whose attacks will not work on my Stand, now give up! Come on, come on, come on!" The clones bypassed Magician's Red and went straight for the user. With great speed and precision, it dealt great damage to Avdol. Not only did they stab him, but a few carved tiny ankhs onto his face. The force was enough to push him far back. Avdol held his wounded arm and acknowledged his opponent's skills. "What precision, what lethal efficiency. It's plain to see, his Stand's ability has been trained, and at great length."

"Hmph. I spent the last decade honing my skill. You had better hit me with everything you got, for I intend my next attack to be the coup de gras." Polnareff said.

"It's very chivalrous of you to keep giving me fair warning about your next move. Your honor is unimpeachable." Now that he thought about...why would such a man of honor and chivalry team up with a monster like Dio? "You've inspired me. Thus, I too will give fair warning before my next attack." Avdol told him. Though overwhelmed at first by the Stand's onslaught of attacks, Avdol has something big hiding under his sleeve. An attack that he is confident to finish this fight. Polnareff wasn't that convinced by that and merely believed he was delaying the inevitable. He was going to be victor, not him. He has to win. It's his only chance to find out the truth on what happened that day. "Really?"

"My **Crossfire Hurricane** comes in more varieties than the one you've already seen. It's a flame in the shape of an ankh, but it need not remained whole. I can divide it into as many pieces as I deemed fit." Avdol said. The fire grew and swirled around him and his Stand. As always, bowing to his will. The more he concentrate, the more the fire glowed and rose as it prepared it's attack. This was another of his most powerful forces of techniques. He's not going to hold back. "**Crossfire Hurricane Special**! Try and dodge them!" Magician's Red shot out its attack from its mouth. Like Avdol said, instead of being just one ankh, the fiery blast split into many pieces enough to cover the wide area. "You're a fool, Avdol. It's useless!" Polnareff said as his Stand circled around like a rotating shield.

"Damn, they've got him covered."

"He's thought of everything."

"Naïve, naïve, naïve! So very naïve!" Polnareff yelled as he sent his Stand out to do its job. "I will wield this divided flame against you precisely as I did before! Slice it, and hurl it back!!" He commanded his Silver Chariot. If only it were so. Before their swords could even make contact, right below them, a hidden flamed ankh erupted from the ground and struck Polnareff down. The ankh did attack all of the afterimages, but...attack the user, and the damaged is instantly reflected on the Stand. Polnareff fell to the ground with a loud thud and as he was slowly burning alive. This time, he wasn't getting up so easily. Avdol walked up and kneeled beside a burning hole in the ground. Wait. Where did that come from? Joseph quickly realized that it was a part of Avdol's plan. "That's...that's the hole that was dug by the flames earlier. Now I get it. It's clear to me, the first shot was a set up and nothing more. Then he used the tunnel to hit him with **Crossfire Hurricane**." He said.

"Like I said, that attack can be divided up into as many pieces as are called for." Avdol told the man from France. Polnareff tried to get back up. But the pain from the fire eating away at him, the oxygen being closed off, made him collapse again. It hurts. It hurts too much. Avdol stood back up and pulled out a dagger in front of him. What's was he going to do with that? Was he going to kill him? To his surprise, Avdol tossed the blade him, with enough distance to grab it himself. "Burning is a painful way to meet one's end. Take the knife and end it while you can." He said as he began to walk away from him.

Polnareff just stared at his retreating form. He took the dagger into his hand, he managed to get up a bit. And lifted it high, ready to throw the blade right into Avdol's back. He wasn't looking. He doesn't know. His back was exposed and he has a perfect shot. However, his hand was trembling. He was hesitating...he couldn't do it. Polnareff closed his eyes and sighed. He then pressed the cold steel against his throat. The flames were painful. He wanted the pain to go away. Still, he couldn't do it. He couldn't attack while his back was turned and he couldn't end his own life. He fell back down. He was defeated, and Polnareff accepted his fate to die. "I can see it was my own doing." He said to himself. "I couldn't picture his fire standing a chance against

my sword work...a slow death amid the flames is no less than I deserve, Monsieur. I challenged you to this duel and you were the clear victor. I will not soil it with suicide...it would be cowardly...to end it myself." He whispered out and he closed his eyes. Maybe...maybe it wouldn't be so bad...maybe, when he wakes up again...he will be reunited with her again.

Avdol turned back to him with a surprised expression. He snapped his fingers and the flames were quickly snuffed out. Avdol walked back to him, he spared his life because he recognizes his act of chivalry. He truly was a man of honor. "Even in your final moments, you conduct yourself with chivalry. How easy it would have been for you to throw that knife into my unsuspecting back." Avdol carefully helped him sit up as he discovered another flesh bud on Polnareff's forehead. This was a good man. "Even while working for a devil like Dio, you've carried yourself with honor. Your death would be a waste. Something must've set him down this dark path." He turned to Jotaro and Hikari, but he did not need to say more. They knew what he wanted them to do. Remove the bud and heal him. Avdol set him back down as Jotaro used Star Platinum to remove the flesh bud.

You would think after seeing it the first time, one would get used to it. But no. Once Joseph saw those revolting tentacles coming out Polnareff's head, he'd flipped and looked like he was going to puke. "Arrrgh!! Those tentacles are so gross, I can't even look at them! Come on, Jotaro, just destroy the damn thing! I'm going to throw up!"

"Quit your bitching, old man." Jotaro said as he easily rip out the bud, Star Platinum held it in front of the rays of the bright sun and it dissolved into dust. With that over and done with, Hikari had Soundless Voice to heal his burns and refresh him with new energy. He should be fine now. She walked towards Avdol and healed him up as well. He thanked her with a kind smile as Joseph seemed to get over his sickness. "There, now that my grandson has pulled out that flash bud, we can all be *bud*dies! Ya get it?" He said as gave a cheeky laugh.

Jotaro was annoyed by his grandfather's stupid sense of humor. "Hey, Kakyoin, Hikari. Don't people who make stupid puns all the time get on your nerves or is it just me?" They didn't say anything and just laughed it off. The next day, the team had their way to the docks.

Joseph had told them that the Speedwagon Foundation has chartered a boat for them and should be waiting at the docks. Traveling by boat should be safe as they were going to be with non-Stand users. Before they could reach the docks, a familiar face appeared before them. Avdol smirked. "We meet again. So, what's on your mind, Polnareff."

"I never thanked you properly for freeing me from Dio's mind control."

"Young JoJo is the one you should be thanking here, as well as Hikari for healing you."

"Don't need your thanks." Jotaro rudely said. Hikari smiled at him and said, "It's alright, we're happy to help you out."

Avdol chuckled at the two. "It appears your fine manners are wasted on the likes of us." Polnareff looked at them weirdly before sighing. "As you wish, I've no desire to come off as heavy-handed. But I'm not quite finished here." He told them as he began walking towards Joseph. He much more serious than he was before. "Monsieur Joestar. I hop you'll indulged me asking a very bizarre question."

"A bizarre question you say."

"I noticed at the restaurant yesterday, that you never took off your gloves even while eating. Tell me, your left hand wouldn't happened to be right hand under that glove?"

"Huh?" Joseph being confused was an understatement. He brought up his hand and looked at each of them. They were as they were, one left and one right. "Is my left hand a right one? You weren't kidding about the 'bizarre' part. What are you hoping to find out through all this?" Joseph asked.

Polnareff looked at them dead in the eyes and told them this. "I'm looking for the man who murdered my younger sister." Everyone was shocked. None of them couldn't figure out what to even say after that. "I don't know his face, but he definitely has two right hands instead of one of each." He explained. Joseph removed his gloved and showed Polnareff his metallic, robotic left hand. "Here. I lost the real thing in a horrible battle some fifty years ago."

"I apologize for the rudeness, please forgive me."

"If it's not too painful to talk about, I'd like to know what happened." Joseph asked him. Polnareff silently nodded. He turned his attention to the ocean as he began to recall the events that occurred that took his beloved sister away and why he choose to follow Dio in the first place. He was sure he couldn't forget that day even if he tried. Not for as long as he lived. It was just like any other day with the occasional rain. How he wished he could've been there. If he was...then maybe she would still be alive and that bastard would the one six feet under.

"It's been three years now. My younger sister and a classmate of hers were walking home from school in the rain, back in our native, France. It was a country road much like any other."

It was mid-afternoon that day, the rain poured all over the land as two young girls were walking down the country side path back home. They were smiling and laughing together. They were just enjoying their walk and talking to each other as good friends should. Polnareff sister mentions to her classmate that they should hurry along. She told her that she must get home to her elder brother, who was no doubt waiting for her. Her friend smiled and agreed. They continued to walk down the road, when her classmate stopped and pointed at a strange man. He was just standing on the side of the road...that strange part...was that he remained to be dry despite the rain falling around them.

"On the side of the road, a man stood with his back to them. Oddly enough, the mysterious stranger was dry. The rain fell in torrent around him, as though an invisible shell guarded him."

His sister's classmate got a bad feeling about him. She didn't think they should get too close to him. She was about to warn her friend about him and suggests that they take a different route home...she suddenly felt severe pain from her chest. Her blood spilled all over her body and on the ground beneath them. She didn't make a sound as she collapse to the ground. Polnareff's poor sister was so scared and so shocked at what just happened, she didn't even get the chance to even scream as the man suddenly lunged at her and gripped her neck. He forced her down, ripped off her clothes...and broke her. She screamed, she cried, she begged, she did everything she could to get someone's...anyone's attention for help. In her final moments of life...she pleaded for her brother to save her.

"Suddenly her friend fell to the ground in a fountain of blood as though her chest was cut by the wind. My sister was alone. He stole her innocence and then he killed her. That was all the man wanted. For that she died." What next after that was something, he often still wished was just bad dream. He had just got back from work and was waiting patiently for her to come back home. He was sitting in the living room, reading a book when he heard someone knocking at the front door frantically. He quickly put down the book and rushed to the door. His could barely breath as he saw his sister's friend at the door, covered in blood. Clutching her wounded chest and in an crying mess as she tried to explain to him what happened.

"Her friend escape with her life to tell me what she saw that faithful day. She didn't get a good look at their tormentor's face but saw that both of his hands were right hands. No one believed the poor girl's testimony about the man, no one but me, that is. I had already been keeping my own strange powers a secret by then and he sounded like a fellow Stand user."

"He's a Stand user alright, I'm sure of it." Joseph told him.

"I swore an oath!" Polnareff shouted as he turned back to them. "I promised my sister's soul that I would avenge her! To hunt down the killer and make him pay with his life! I would use my own Stand as tool of righteous vengeance! Then a year ago, my travels led me to Dio."

He walking down the streets of Egypt one day. He had asked everyone around if they had seen anyone with two right hands. No such luck. It getting pretty late in the evening and he was going to call it quits for the day when he saw something glowing just above the stairs of a building. Curious, he went up to investigate. He was greeted by man with blonde hair, and alabaster skin, with a falcon perched up his shoulder. He had set up a crystal ball and table and preformed a ritual that only a trained fortune teller would do. Within the crystal ball, showed a man with black hair and two right hands!

"That...man..." He said. "That reflection shows..."

"It's a vision from your heart. Not mine. The man you seek, the pain you hide...my power only makes it visible." He said. From where he stood,

Polnareff could clearly see the star-shaped birthmark on the back of his neck. "How about it, Polnareff?" He suddenly asked, catching him off guard. How did he know his name. "Care to become to become friends? Tragedy, gnaws away at your soul. I need no glass to see that. Work with me and your suffering will soon be nothing more than a thing of the past. The image in the globe is what pains you, isn't not? What if I could help you? I, too, am pledged with misfortune, I have been denied the sun's embrace for evermore. Be an agent of my will out in the sunlight and I will find this man who harms you so." All Polnareff could do was scream as he plunged the flesh bud into his skull.

"After that, I was commanded to kill all five of you. Never once did I question my orders."

Avdol crossed his arms and said, "Even if he hadn't used a flesh bud, Dio is quite the master at manipulating human beings to carry out his bidding."

"Truly. And if Dio has found your sister's killer, we might safely assume he's enlisted the villain in whatever dark plan he's got afoot." Kakyoin said. It does make sense.

"If that is true, I must join you on your trip to Egypt, Monsieurs and young Mademoiselle! By going after Dio, I will find the one who took my sister's life!" Polnareff told them. The team looked at each other, wondering if they should have him tag along. "What do we do?" Kakyoin asked.

"I have no objections to him coming." Avdol said.

"Me neither. I think it'll great, we need all the help we can get, and he certainly looks like a trusted friend."

"Hmph."

"Even if we tell him 'no', I'm sure he'll just follow along." It was decided. The team has gained a member. A swordsman in silver, shining armor.

Jean Pierre Polnareff. Stand name: Silver Chariot. Abilities: Fast and precise swordsmanship.

"The honor is all mine." Polnareff smiled.

Jotaro gave a sigh. "Give me a break-"

"Excuse me, sir." A giggling voice interrupted him. He looked down and two girls smiling and giggling up to him. They were holding a white portable camera. Ugh, he could already tell that these girls were just as annoying and irritating as the ones at school. "Sorry, but could I bug you to take our picture, maybe?" One of the girls asked him. *'He's so hot. what a good excuse to talk to him.'*

"Please, will you do it?"

"Oh, take it by the ocean behind us."

Argh, he can't take this! "Shut up, already!! Go bug someone else!!"

"Easy, mon amie. Ladies, I would love to take your photograph." Polnareff said and he took the girl's camera and led them to the edge of the docks. Wait, what? Hold up, wasn't he being serious and well-versed just a few minutes ago? What the hell just happened? "You have very nice legs, I'll be sure to get them in the shot." Polnareff took several photos of the girls, but they suspected he was mostly taken pictures of their legs too. "Tre bien! If only I could use this camera to capture your hearts instead of just your picture, Mademoiselle."

"This is nothing like the Polnareff of a moment ago."

"It's like his emotions change on a dime."

"More like he's got two brains, and the one downstairs suddenly started calling the shots."

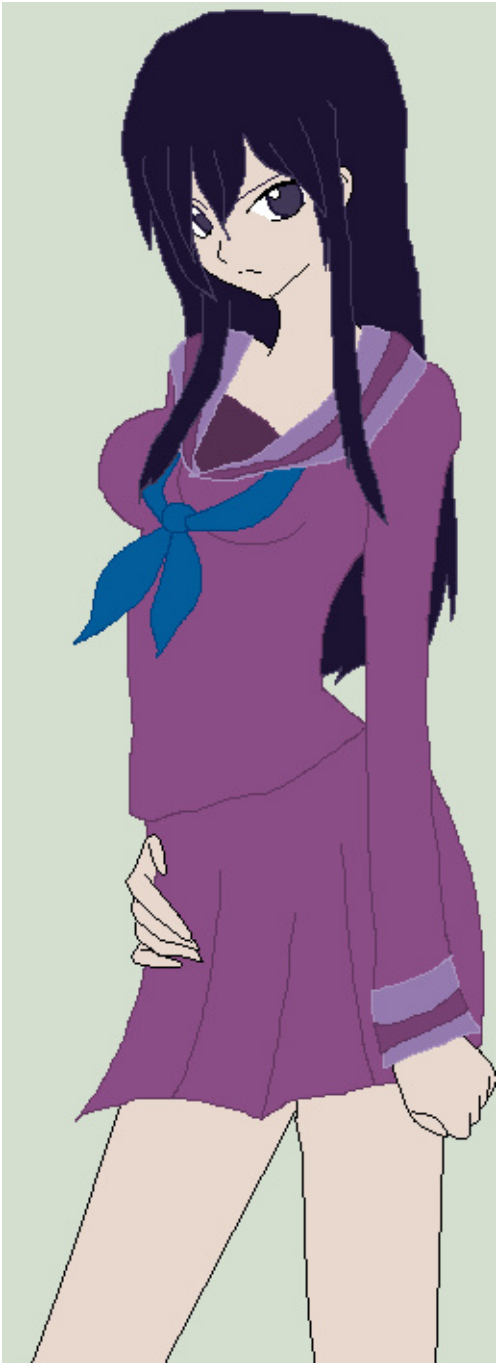
"B-b-but at least, h-he's nice?"

"Oh, give me a break."

After that...weird scene happened, Hikari mentions that a boat had just arrived and several people were calling them over. Knowing that it was the boat sent by Speedwagon, they group walked towards the boat. As they were walking, a girl of fifteen years comes out of hiding

from behind one of the crates and quietly stalks them from behind. It was a good idea that she followed that moron Polnareff here, though finding them when she got off the plane was a pain in the ass. She didn't know what they were talking about, but that didn't matter. She'd finally found them. The ones with the star birthmarks. She was more than ready to kill every last one of them. 'Kill them...and this will all be over.' She thought to herself. She suddenly gasped as she saw Hikari with them. Why was she here? Why was she here with them? She sadly gazed at the golden haired girl. If they were to meet...she won't be surprised if she doesn't recognized her. It didn't matter, Hikari is a good girl. *'Don't worry, my friend. I won't hurt you, but I will save you from those monsters. I will do what I must do to end it all.'*

Chapter 9: Two enemies on deck



Meanwhile, Back at the Kujo estate, doctors sent by the Speedwagon Foundation with the latest medical technologies still struggle to treat Holly's condition. With the loathsome curse of Dio, even they stand powerless against before Dio's curse. All they could do is treat her and keep her well enough until they Joestar team finally kill that monstrous bastard while they watch over. To save Holly, JoJo and crew continue on their journey to Egypt. With air travel now too treacherous, they board a boat heading first to Singapore.

"To get from Hong Kong to Singapore, we'll be on the water for three full days." Joseph said. "Well, let's relax and keep our spirits up."

"You're right, Mr. Joestar. Three days isn't too terribly long and we should make the most of it here, look how beautiful the ocean is." Hikari said as she walked towards him with a tray full of drinks. "Oh, here! I've made some lemonade, and I've given some to the sailors, and Mr. Avdol and Mr.Polnareff." She said as she handed him a glass. Joseph smiled at her. "Thank you, Chiara. But first, I have a serious question."

"What is it?"

"What the hell is with the high school uniforms, you three?" He asked the three teenagers. Pointing at Hikari first and then at Jotaro and Kakyoin, who were lounging on the poolside chairs. Kakyoin reading a book, and Jotaro who has his arms behind his head and legs crossed. "Can't you go and find something else to put on? Isn't it ridiculously hot?"

"Well, we are students after all. And good students should behave as such no matter where they are. I guess, that sounds like a stretch." Kakyoin tried to explain to him, not bothering to look up from his reading.

"Hmph."

"Kakyoin has a point to that. Besides, it really isn't that hot. Actually it feels very nice." Hikari smiled as she gave lemonade to the boys.

Joseph was very skeptical about that. "Ha, Japanese students are such stiffs, aren't they?"

"So this is what they call 'Bushido'. Like they say, clear your mind and even flames feel cool." Avdol said, sounded a bit impressed by them.

"That's all well in good, but that really won't get you any girls." Polnareff said to the boys as he took a sip of his drink. Suddenly voices could be hear shouting at the top of their lungs, just across them. They turned and saw two of the crew members integrating, or at least trying to, two people that they've never seen before. One was holding on to a eleven-year-old boy, of average height and thin to medium build. He had dark hair, brown eyes, a small, slightly upturned nose, and freckles. He also wore a cap, overalls, a light shirt, and sneakers. "Let go! Let go of me!! Damn it, I said get off me! Let me go! What's your problem!?" The boy shouted as he struggled to get out of the sailor's grip.

"Shut your trap, you brat!"

The other, who looked liked he was ready to blow his top, was shouting at a young girl of fifteen years. She had pale, transparent skin, dark purple eyes, and long, dark purple hair, with some of it in front of both shoulders, falling to her mid-back. Her bangs slightly covered the right side of her face and she wore the same school uniform as Hikari's wearing with black knee socks, and dark brown loafers. "Are you a thief?! And are you two working together?!" One of the crew members yelled as he struggled to get her up the stairs and into the upper deck.

"I keep telling you 'no'! Are you some kind of idiot?! I don't know whose more brain-dead, you or the dumbass who hired you in the first place!" The dark-purple haired girl yelled in his face. She glared daggers at the man and looked like she was debating on whether or not to punch the sailor in the face. The sailor forced her up the stairs as Joseph eyed at the two strangers and he said, "Hey, who are they? I thought we agreed there'd no other passengers onboard but us."

"Sorry, sir. They're stowaways. These two were hiding in the storage hold below." He explained. "Stowaways?" Joseph questioned. The sailor then pointed to the girl, who did decided to, punched the other

member, and was now being strong-armed by two more sailors. They were still shouting as they forced her through the upper deck door and when they closed it. "Several of supplies were found missing as we think that girl might've stolen them before the ship sailed."

"What you waiting for, come at me!" The boy yelled, being rather tough despite the fact he couldn't break loose. "I'll freaking break your balls!" The sailor wasn't fazed at all by his little 'threat' and held him by the back of his shirt. "Tell that to the police, you little shit, I dare you." The young boy suddenly stopped struggling and had a scared expression on his face. "What, the police?" He finally escaped his grip and tried to beg him to not inform the authorities as he'll be willing to work as compensation. "Wait, I'm sorry, alright? Please, just let me go. I just wanted to Singapore to see my dad, that's all. I'll do anything, you can even put me to work for my ticket. And besides, that girl you've got, she and I have nothing to do with each other. Let her go too."

The crew member pretended to think it over as he began pulling the poor boy's check and ear. "Let's see. What should I do? Should I let you go or turn you in? What to do, what to do...we could use another cabin boy." He said. He let go of the boy's face, before flicking his nose. "No way I'm letting you go. That's too easy." Knowing that he was going to be turn in by the police, the boy actually began to cry. Jotaro sighed at the scene before him. It was just too pathetic to even watch. "Damn, how annoying." He said. Jotaro then looked to Hikari to asked what she thought about it, when he noticed she was staring intently at the door the others dragged the second stowaway into. "What's the matter Hikari?" Jotaro asked as he got up and walked over to her. "That girl...I don't know why, but...I thought she looked familiar." Hikari told him.

"Was she a friend of yours or something?"

"Maybe? I don't...I can't really remember..."

The two friends then saw Kakyoin suddenly put his book down, got up and walked over to the stairs. His teammates watched in confusion as he climb the steps to the upper deck and walked towards the door. Without knocking, he opened it and walked in to hear the sailor shout, "Did you do it?! Some of our good supplies are

missing and you're more likely the one who stole them!" The girl growled and slammed her fist onto the table and yelled, "No! Just how many fucking times do I have to say it for you to get it through your little brain!" The sailor grabbed her collar and held her up. "Listen to me, you little bi-!"

"Fair lady and gentlemen. Why don't we all composed ourselves and talk in a calmly manner?" Kakyoin asked he made his presence known to the people in the room. The sailor shoved the girl back into her seat as he stared the dark red-haired teen. "Who the hell are you? You're not allowed to be in here." Kakyoin gave a smile and told him, "Well you see, I'm here to pick up my friend that you've got here." Both the sailors and the girl in question stared at Kakyoin like he had three heads. "What? Your friend?"

"Why, yes." He said as he walked over the dark purple-eyed girl and gently took her arm and pulled her into an embrace. The confused expression still locked in her face. "I was beginning to wonder where you were. I was getting worried." He said as he pulled away to gave her a smile. The girl had no idea on what to even say to this guy. *'What the hell is he doing?'* She thought to herself. "Now I see why I couldn't find you before, these young sailors here where unjustly holding you it seems. I hope they weren't planning to hurt you in anyway shape or form," Kakyoin paused as he turn to glare at the sailors. "We wouldn't want to see what happens if they did, now would we?" They coward under his gaze and quickly apologized for their actions. Kakyoin said nothing else as he wrapped his arm around the girl's waist as they walked out of the room together. Once the door closed behind him, the dark-purple-eyed girl immediately pulled away from him as if his touch burned her. She glared at him and said, "What was that all about? I had a plan to get out of this without you getting in the way. I didn't asked for your help." She crossed her arms and purposely bumped her shoulder against his as she walked down the steps. Kakyoin still smiled and sighed.

The girl walked passed the group as she went to the far corner of the ship, but not before a quick glance at Hikari. She leaned against the rails as she looked out towards the ocean. Kakyoin walked down the stairs and rejoined with his friends. Joseph then asked him the same thing, "What was that all about? Why did you help that girl out?"

Kakyoin shrugged his shoulders. "I honestly have no idea why. I just had the sudden urge to help her, that's all."

"Still, she doesn't seem to be all that grateful about it." Polnareff said. Kakyoin shook his head and said he was happy to help her out of that situation. Hikari eyed at the strange girl. She knew she had seen her before...but when and where? She was about to go and talk to her when she suddenly heard a splash. Hikari turned towards the sound and saw that the boy had jumped overboard and was swimming away! Everyone, except Jotaro, ran to the other side of the ship where the boy had jumped from. In the background, the girl was getting concern over the kid. "Whoa, in he goes. That kid's got guts." Polnareff said.

"Is he planning to swim to shore from out here?" Kakyoin said.

"What should we do?" Joseph asked. Jotaro sighed and told them, "Just leave him. He wouldn't have dive in if he wasn't a good swimmer." As the young child swam even further away, one of sailors, just now, remembered something important. "He's in danger! This entire area is infested with sharks!" They all stared in shock as they saw a large silhouette of said shark inches underneath of the boy. *'You're telling us this now, you freaking idiot!'* The girl shouted in her thoughts as she ran to the other far side of the ship. She would've save the kind the very second she saw him, but there was nothing to work with in the water. "Hey kid, come back, it's dangerous!" Joseph shouted. "You'll die!" The group tries to tell the child to come back to the ship but either he was too far away to hear them or simply ignore them, the boy kept swimming away. However, he stopped at the very last second to see the shark rose from the water and reveal its massive jaw and razor sharp teeth. He screamed at the top of his lungs as he thought he was going to die.

Just before the child was about to be eaten by the shark, Star Platinum suddenly burst out of the water and managed to save the child by upper cutting the shark in the face, lifting it high in the air. The boy watched in both shock and amazement as the undersea predator was attacked by some kind of invisible force before it crashed back into the water, incapacitated. Jotaro grabbed the startled boy by his shirt and overalls, saying, "Good grief. Come on, you brat." He started to drag him back to the ship when stopped and

looked at the kid. He lets the kid go and pressed his hand against his chest, feeling something weird, with the kid going red in the face. "Hold on." Jotaro knocked off the cap from the kid's head, letting the long, dark hair to flow out down to *her* mid-back. "A girl? And a runty one at that, just my luck."

"Hey, how dare you feel me up like that, you bastard?!" She yelled as she tried to slap him, but he easily block it. He pulled down his cap and sighed. He grabbed her arm and proceeded to swim back to the ship. In the distance, the shark was suddenly pulled down, and a large amount of blood was surfaced. The shark reappeared again, but it was savagely bisected. Joseph noticed it and sees that it was caused by an unknown aquatic creature. It was chasing after Jotaro now. "Hey Jotaro! Below you, something's coming after you from underwater!" Joseph yelled out. "It's not a shark and it's racing towards you! You have to get out of their now, hurry!" Jotaro quickly wrapped his arm around the child and swam as fast as he could to the lifesaver raft and the ship, but it was clear he wasn't going to make it in time. The creature was much to fast. "JoJo!" Hikari cried out. "If it's at that distance, leave it to my Hierophant Green." Kakyoin brought out his Long-Range Stand and quickly lifted Jotaro and the girl to safety, as soon as the mysterious creature shredded the raft into pieces. As quickly as it appeared, it vanished without a trace. "It just disappeared!" Polnareff shouted. "That thing is a Stand!"

"Stunning. An aquatic Stand. In all my dealings with the occult, I've never heard of such a thing." Avdol said.

Once Jotaro set the kid down and rejoined with his teammates, Hikari ran to him saying, "JoJo, you're didn't get hurt, did you?" Jotaro shook his head and told her. "No, I'm fine. It didn't even get me." She gave him a loving hug, relieved that nothing had happened him. Jotaro patted her head, again reassuring her that he was alright. She pulled away and was about to check up the little girl, when Jotaro grabbed her arm and pulled her back. Everyone eyed cautiously at the young child.

"This girl...there's no way she's a..." Joseph began.

"Could she be that Stand's user?" Polnareff asked.

"Did she try to lead JoJo into shark-infested waters on purpose?"

"What...what are you saying? There's no possible way for her to be a Stand user, she's just an ordinary little girl." Hikari said, defending the child. The little girl caught them staring at her. She glared at them, got up on her feet and pulled out a pocket knife. "Geez, what's with you jerks?! Stop staring like that, it's creepy. I have no idea what going here but I'll fight you." She got into a fighting position and tried to be tough. "Don't underestimate me, okay?! You're going to regret this. One on one, come at me, I dare you, you punks." Hikari walked towards the child and easily swiped the small weapon away from her hands. She kneeled down to her level and gently said, "Sweetheart, it's very dangerous to use weapons like these. You don't know how to use them and you could hurt really yourself." Hikari pinched the child's cheek as she did so. Seeing that, the guys began to rethink their previous questions about her.

"Is she playing us? Maybe we should toss her back into the ocean." Polnareff said.

"Calm down. If Hikari's right, and she is just a stowaway and gets eaten by sharks, it'll be bad." Kakyoin said.

"We've already checked the ten people on this boat, I'm positive they're on the clear. I don't know who it could be other than this girl...or the one over there." Joseph said as they all turn to the teenager in the far side of the boat. She was glaring daggers at them, that much was made clear. "Isn't there a way to find out who they really are?"

Avdol might have an idea and asked the little girl a simple question, while Polnareff and Kakyoin kept their eyes on the second one. "Hey, how is Dio doing these days?" None of them noticed, but the other girl visibly twitched at the mere mentioned of Dio's name. Just hearing that son of a bitch's name was enough to make her angry. She grit her teeth as she tried to keep her cool. The little girl quickly took back her knife and step away. "Dio, huh? What the hell is that?"

"Don't pretend like you don't know, you little brat." Polnareff.

"Hey, I warned you punks. You going to be a man and talk to me or

do you want to get shanked? Which is it, huh?" The child questions. "My demon blade wants the blood of its 340th victim and you all look like prime cuts."

Kakyoin suppressed a laugh when she said that. He knew a pure, bonafide lie when he heard one. The girl growled at him and yelled, "What's so funny? Stupid jerk hole!"

"'Jerk hole'? I'm starting to get the feeling she's not our Stand user." Kakyoin said.

"Yes. But who then?" Joseph asked. That's was the million dollar question. They turned back to the teen girl who was still glaring at them, but now she looked super pissed. They wondered if she could be the Stand user. But how would they figure it out. Hikari looked at the girl, knowing that she has met her before. But...where? Hikari walked straight over to her, without giving the others a chance to stop her this time. As she walked closer, Hikari noticed that her expression soften up and tried to step back away from her. Hikari gave her a sweet smile. "Um, hello. My name's Hikari...I'm sorry to ask this but, have you and I met before."

The girl stared at her with soft eyes and shook her head. "No. You don't have to apologize...it has been a while since we last spoke. I know who you are...my name's Nemuru. Nemuru Fujioka." She finally introduce herself. Hikari eyes widened once she heard her name. She finally remembered why she'd looked so familiar. "Nemuru.... That's right, you and I met back in middle school. Second year, right?" She asked. Nemuru gave a surprisingly gentle smile. She couldn't believe she still remembered her. "Yeah, in our second year of middle school, you and I met, and became friends. Though we weren't in the same class, but still."

"I thought so. Come, I have to introduce you to my friends." Hikari said as she held Nemuru's hand and began leading her to the guys. Nemuru's face contorted into a scowl to what Hikari had referred them to be. "Your...friends?" Hikari smiled and nodded. "Yeah, they're all very nice people and I'm sure you'll be good friends with them too." She had no idea what was going through Nemuru's mind. There was no way she was going to consider *them* as her friends. No way in hell will she ever think of them as such. She wondered how they

managed to drag a perfectly, innocent girl like Hikari into this. However, Nemuru was planning to save her from them anyway.

Once they got close to the guys, Hikari wasted no time in introducing her to the them. "Everyone, this is Nemuru Fujioka. She's an old friend of mine from middle school. We don't have to worry anymore about her, she's someone we can trust." Hikari smiled brightly.

"A friend of yours, huh?" Joseph said.

"Well, any friend of Hikari's, is a friend of mine." Polnareff said with a smile. Hikari giggled and introduce her to them one by one. "These are my friends; Mr. Polnareff, Mr. Avdol, and Mr. Joseph Joestar. You've already met him," She pointed to Kakyoin. "His name is Noriaki Kakyoin." He walked up and held out his hand. "It's nice to properly meet you, Nemuru." Kakyoin smiled at him. She glanced at his outstretched hand before shaking it. "Like wise." She mumbled. Hikari then hugged Jotaro's arm and told her, "And this is Jotaro Kujo, my best friend in the world." Jotaro didn't bother to greet her as he turned away and began to light a cigarette. Well, isn't he a social butterfly? Suddenly a new voice said, "These two girls are stowaways? Thanks for grabbing them for me." A tall, muscular man, possibly in his late thirties, suddenly came in and grabbed both the little girl and Nemuru. Locking them in his vice-like grip. He had blond hair and blue eyes, had a mustache and a short beard on his chin. He wore a short sleeved navy blue shirt, a captain's hat, a red neckerchief, white pants, and black shoes. He also wore white gloves with black armbands. He was the captain of the ship, Captain Dragon.

"Captain." Joseph greeted. Captain Dragon tighten his grip on the girls, making them wince in pain. "I'm pretty strict when it comes to stowaways on my ship here." He said. "You may be girls but if I go easy on you, we'll just get more and more stowaways." Nemuru glared at the captain and said, "I think we get the point, and you don't have to be such a filthy-argh!" She cried out when he squeezed her wrist. Any tighter and he would've broken it. "I think we'll lock the two of you in the brig below deck until we make it to port." Captain Dragon said as he tossed them to the crew members. "Hey Captain, I like to ask something. You verified the identities of all ten men onboard, haven't you?" Joseph asked.

"Of course. They're all veterans, each one of them on this ship for over ten years, I'll vouch for every single man." Captain Dragon told him. "I'm not sure why you're so worried about that since I gave you my word from the very beginning. Oh, by the way..." He stopped as he walked closer and snatched the cigarette right from Jotaro's mouth. Hikari was starting to get nervous now. *'Oh no.'* She thought. "I must request that you do not smoke on deck. What were you planning on doing with the ashes and bud after you were done?" He asked the teen delinquent. "Were you just going to toss them into these pristine waters? You may be a guest on this ship, but you will abide by my rules." The captain then puts out Jotaro's cigarette by using his cap as an ashtray. Now, Hikari was definitely nervous. She remembers that the last time someone had done that, they went straight to the hospital and was lucky to get out with only a broken leg and neck-brace. "You got that?" She wasn't the only one, the others were also getting worried as they knew well-enough of Jotaro's temper. The captain placed the unlit cigarette it in his coat pocket, telling him, "You got it kid?" As he began to walk away, Jotaro suddenly said, "Hold it, pops. If you don't want me to smoke aboard ship, then just tell me. Don't be a condescending prick about the whole thing, you jackass."

"Hey Jotaro. Don't be so disrespectful to the captain. You're the one at fault." Joseph scolded.

"Hmph. His rules don't mean shit. I'll be as rude as I want. And you know why?" He asked, but didn't wait for a response. "The captain is the Stand user." He said, shocking everyone around him. He's the Stand user!? How did he know that? The captain however, looked genuinely confused. What exactly were they talking about? "A Stand...user? I'm not sure I follow you. What is that?" He asked. Captain Dragon seriously had no idea what was going on.

"That is completely impossible, Jotaro. We chose Captain Dragon because he came recommended with verification from the Speedwagon Foundation. He's someone that we can trust. There's no chance that he's a Stand user." Avdol said, defending the poor man.

"Hold on, what's this thing...a Stand? I have no idea what you guys are talking about?" Captain Dragon said.

"JoJo, random guesses will only make things more confusing!"

"Do you have any real proof, JoJo?"

"I've found a way to differentiate Stand users from others." Jotaro said as he touched the tip of his nose with his index finger. "The trick is to watch a possible Stand user around cigarette smoke, because a single whiff, makes a vein pop up on their nose." Almost immediately, the men and Hikari covered their noses when Jotaro mentioned that. Was that true?! The little girl watched in confusion when they all covered their noses, even Nemuru, who was beside her, was doing it. *'What the hell are they all doing?'*

"You're not serious, Jotaro!" Polnareff frantically exclaimed.

"Relax, I'm lying. That said, it looks like we found the idiot haven't we?" Jotaro said as he glanced at Dragon. He cried out in shock as everyone else stared at him with wide eyes. Seeing that his cover was blown, there's was no point to in trying to deny it. He took of his cap and stared with a menacing glare. Nemuru took the child and put a good distance between them and the imposter. Joseph turned to his grandson and said, "Quite impressive. But what tip you off that it was the captain?"

"Actually, I really didn't have a clue." He said. "However, I planned to try this to the entire crew from the moment we arrived. Simple as that."

"And I fell for it. Didn't expect this, but damn, you're good." Dragon laughed to himself. "You're right. I'm not the captain, the real captain's already sleeping with the fishes at the bottom of the China sea." He smirked.

"If that's true, then you can sleep in the depths of hell, you bastard."Jotaro said. He's been itching for a good fight all morning. The impostor's smirk widened and immediately called forth his Stand. A clawed, blue and scaly webbed hand shot out of the side of the ship, grabbed the little girl by her ankle and dragged her to its tight hold. The imposter's Stand is a humanoid Stand with aquatic features. It manifests itself as some sort of merfolk-like entity with a flat head, four eyes, a large dorsal fin lining most of its back, additional fins on

its legs, and webbed hands and feet. With that thing, there's certainly trouble on the water. Lies and betrayal. The moon card represents the fear of the unknown. It's name? Dark Blue Moon.

"I've kept my identity hidden, hoping you off one by one. Six on one is so troublesome, even for me." The imposter said. "The other way would've much simpler. But since you've figure me out, I have no choice. Six on one it is." Nemuru couldn't help but smirked at him. The damned idiot. Nobody knows a thing. Well...not yet, at least. "Getting my hands on her just shows that Lady Luck is on my side. Think I'll take a dip in these shark infested waters with the runt. If you want to save her, you're going to have to dive in after her." The imposter said. "Any ocean, I have the advantage, I can take on all six of you, hahahaha!" He was so smug.

"Go on, talk tough while you hide behind a hostage." Jotaro said. "It'll take a lot more than that to shake me up, you dumbass."

"It's no act. This is a prediction. I hear your Stand, Star Platinum, is fast. I like to put that to the test." He told him. "I'm not trying to brag, but my Dark Blue Moon is king underwater. It's much swifter than any fish in the sea, and certainly faster than a vulgar meathead like you." The imposter said and he stood on top of the rails. "Why don't we test them out, right now? Come on. Follow me if you're not afraid of a little salt water!" He laughed as he and his undersea Stand jump off and was about to hit the ocean with the child in hand. When it comes to great speed between the two, Jotaro's Stand beat that. Star Platinum swiftly appeared and pummeled Dark Blue Moon with a barrage of blows as it yelled out its mighty cry. Knocking them both into the ocean. "**ORA! ORAORAORAORAORAORA!**"

With the imposter and his Stand incapacitated, Star Platinum grabbed the girl's wrist. The imposter was badly injured. He couldn't believe he was that fast. It was impossible for him to move at such speed. "He...attacked me faster than we could fall...that's impossible for a human." He said. "How'd he..?"

"You're the only whose swallowing salt water today, pops. Choke on it. Tell him, Avdol."Jotaro said.

"Your folly was trying to out predict a fortune teller, tough break."

"Well said, Avdol." Polnareff smirked. Hikari looked over the ocean and saw the imposters body slowly beginning to drift away from them. Well, it seems as if it's over now. Maybe they all can continue their three-day trip to Singapore. She sighed. It's lucky that things ended quickly this time. "There he goes. He talked up his Stand's power so much, I expected more but in the end, he was just a blabbering idiot." Polnareff said. The others then noticed that Jotaro couldn't pull the child up and looked like *he* was the one being pulled instead. "JoJo, what is it?"

"What's the matter, Jotaro? Hurry and pull the girl out already, would you?" Joseph told him. Easier said then done. Something didn't feel right. Jotaro's arm was growing numb, but was hurting at the time. He could barely move his arm as it felt like something had encased it in stone, and was trying to drag him into the water. Soon, he saw them. Barnacles. Barnacles covering Star Platinum's arm and was rapidly growing on the side of the boat and on his Stand's arm. "Damn it. I'm being pulled in." His real body began to suffer his Stand's pain. His hands and arms were slashed and blood poured from his wounds. Hikari and Joseph immediately tried to save him and free his arms from the barnacles. But the things were too strong. Kakyoin and Avdol tried to help out as well, but it was no use. Soon everyone else saw the crustaceans and realized that they were draining Star Platinum's arm. If they were there, then that means the imposter was still alive. He had attached them as soon as Jotaro hit him before.

"Jotaro, pull in your Stand right now!"

"What do you think I'm trying to do? That's why I'm sweating like a freaking pig, old man!" Jotaro was quickly taken away and falls into the water. However, before he did, Star Platinum passed the girl to Hierophant Green, who had tried to save them both. When she was brought to safety, Hikari gripped at the rails and fear consumed her being. He fell in! That imposter set up a trap for him and they didn't even take that into account! "No, JoJo!" She cried out.

"Crap! He fell in!"

"We've...we've got to-."

"We have to save him-!" Hikari began to say before she was suddenly grabbed from behind. "Hikari!" The men shouted. Hikari screamed as she and the little girl were dragged to other side to the ship and were imprisoned in a pitch black sphere. Nemuru stepped up and stood in front of the rest. She had the most vicious look of her face and she said, "Sorry. But I think that Jotaro is the last person you should be worrying about. Once I'm done here, four bloody bodies will be left on this boat." Nemuru's eyes were filled with such hatred and anger. Kill them, and this will be over. Kill them, and this will be over!! "And if Jotaro actually survives against Dark Blue Moon, it'll be his head I'm coming after next! Once I kill every last one of you, I can finally have my life back!!" She screamed.

Chapter 10: Dark Blue Moon and Shadow Mist

Jotaro hit the ocean floor with a thud that caused him to lose most of the oxygen he'd already had left. He quickly called forth his Star Platinum as he noticed the imposter Dragon was hovered above him with his Dark Blue Moon, sitting with his arms and legs crossed. He was just within his reach, and Star Platinum threw a quick punch, despite his arm being covered in barnacles. However, Dark Blue Moon launch a powerful burst of water that made him slam against the underwater rocks. "Welcome landlubber." Imposter Dragon laughed. "Glad you can join me in the watery depths. It's where Dark Blue Moon reign supreme, the undersea realm." Jotaro glared at him as the imposter licked the blood of his wounds. "Bad idea to underestimate me brother. Could be deadly. Since we can talk underwater through our Stands, how about you pop out another one of those cocky one liners before you die?" He taunted. What's the matter, catfish got your tongue, brother?"

"So, what you like after I'm done with you?" Jotaro asked, his voice was through Star Platinum.

"Huh?"

"It would be a shame to waste such fresh fish. Fish paste? Maybe a plate of sashimi. I'll make one hell of a meal out of your Stand." Jotaro told him.

"Don't play games with me." Imposter Dragon said as he tapped his head, with his undersea Stand mimicking his movements. "You're trying to sound tough, but I know the truth, boy. The real terror of all this is starting to sink into your thick skull. I can even tell what you're thinking, "How long can he stay underwater? I can probably last about two minutes, but can he last longer than me?". Am I right, brother?" Imposter Dragon said as he continue to boast about his own power and taunt Jotaro. The green-eyed delinquent didn't answer him. He didn't need too as he answered on his own. "Let me answer you, my lung capacity is three times that of a normal humans!"

Jotaro was visibly shocked. Three times stronger? Is that even possible for someone to accomplish? Imposter Dragon grinned at his expression and told him as the ship passed them by overhead, "See, for years I've been training. Six minutes and twelve seconds is my best submerge time. You must be dizzy just hearing that number right, brother?" Dark Blue Moon swam in incredible speed towards the boat and swung its arm against the ship's propeller. But it didn't sliced its arm off as one might think. No, instead the propeller was beginning to break and weaken against it. "Dark Blue Moon's fins are cutters that move faster than a ship's propeller, far shaper too!" Dark Blue Moon moved away and showed that the propeller was now mangled and moving at a much slower pace than before. "Before you get overconfident again, you might want to take a good, hard look at your Stand. Seems Dark Blue Moon's barnacles have taken a liking to absorbing your Stand's power." He was right. The damn things were now spreading across Star Platinum's body and halfway down his legs. He can't stay here. He's got to get back up to the surface. Before he landed at the bottom, he had sensed something amiss going on in the boat. "How does it feel to have your life energy slowly draining away from your body." Imposter Dragon said.

Meanwhile back on the ship, the guys were trying to figure out a way to save Hikari from whatever prison Nemuru created. They knew her Stand was activated but they didn't know what kind of Stand it was. They cannot take any chances. Nemuru spread an evil smirk. She raised her hand in the air and immediately they were each put into a headlock. They were slowly being lifted up in the air and hang up by their necks. "Wha...what's going on?!" Polnareff said as the air was being cut off from his lungs. "I don't know...can't breath!" Kakyoin cough out. He tried to look behind him to see what it was that was attacking them. His eyes widen at what he saw. It was...himself? However, his clone was completely pitch black, but he could still make out his white eyes. No iris, no pupil, just solid white eyes.

"Hahaha...look at yourselves, you're all so helpless." Nemuru chuckled at them. She then pointed to Kakyoin and said, "I think I'll start with you first." Nemuru had his clones slam him against the hard wooden floors, and proceeded to toss him around like a rag doll across the ship. Kakyoin crashed into the railings, the floors, the stairs, the beams, anywhere that Nemuru believed would cause some damage.

She had him crash into the other three, knocking them off their feet. Kakyoin slammed against the railing again as his shadowy clone gripped his neck. Kakyoin tried to pry its grip off of him, but when he tried, it only matched his own strength. "What...is this thing?" He asked himself. His clone gripped his neck tighter and used its free hand to beat him relentlessly. It made it much more painful as it protruded small, but sharp spikes on its knuckles. Polnareff got to his feet and charged towards her.

He used his Silver Chariot to try and attack Nemuru, but she quickly had his own clone appear in front of him and gave a hard punch to the stomach and slammed him against the floorboards. His clone gripped his head and transformed one of its hands into a sickle and stab him, however, it made sure to hit only the areas that wouldn't kill him. Nemuru could just kill them right there and now...but that was too easy. No...she wanted them to suffer before they die. She couldn't stop smiling. While that was going on, Joseph and Avdol tried to break away from their own clones' grip. What are these things? How is she controlling? Is this because of her Stand?

Joseph gazed down and realized something. From each of the clones, they were all connected to them and all lead back to Nemuru's feet. Does her Stand grant her the ability to control other people's shadows? He didn't have much time to think he felt his neck getting crushed. Joseph and Avdol were also thrown against the railing with their clones morphing into snakes and wrapped themselves around the two, slowly crushing them. Loud banging and muffled voices can heard. Nemuru turned and noticed it was coming from the black sphere. She knew it was Hikari trying to break free. But she wouldn't let her just yet. Not until she finished what needs to be done.

Hikari punched and kicked the black sphere with all her strength, but she couldn't managed so much of a dent in this thing. *'What's going on out there? What is this thing?'* She asked in her mind. She can't stay in here, her friends are in trouble and she's got to help them. Hikari continued to try and break out until she saw her knuckles were bruised and bleeding. She felt small arms wrap around her waist and turned to see the little girl looking at her with fear in her eyes. "What is this? Are we going to be okay?" She asked. She looked so scared. The child had no idea what was going on. Hikari held the child close

to her. She gently stroked her hair and said, "Don't worry about a thing. We're going to be just fine." Though, it sounded like she was trying to reassure herself. *'JoJo...everyone...please, you've got to be okay.'*

Nemuru walked close to Kakyoin. His clone stopped beating him and held him up for her. She smirked. "If I remembered correctly, these were shark invested waters, right?" Kakyoin's eyes widen. "How about you go take a little dip?" She said as the shadowy clone threw him overboard. "Kakyoin!!" They screamed in unison. It was happening all too fast, but Kakyoin managed to save himself by using his Stand's tentacles to grip onto the rails before he fell into the waters below. Nemuru let him climb back up. She waited for him to grab the rails before she stepped on his hand and grind it in. "AAAHH!" Kakyoin screamed. He couldn't let this continue any longer. Avdol brought out his Stand of fire in a focused rage. "**Red Bind**!!" He yelled as his fire shot out towards their enemy. Nemuru's eyes widened as she saw the roaring flames charging towards her. Nemuru immediately jumped back and tried to called back the clones, but she was too late. Kakyoin's shadowy clone was hit with full force of the flames, completely obliterating it. Nemuru screamed as she staggered back and fell to her knees.

Nemuru wrapped her arms around herself, crying out in pain. The shadows vanished instantly, freeing their prisoners. She glared at the fortune teller from Egypt and yelled, "You shouldn't have done that! That freaking hurt!!" When she yelled, Avdol's clone reappeared and shapeshifted again into a snake, wrapped around his body tighter and tighter. By then he could barely breath, but he wouldn't give in. He believed he found her Stand's weakness and had Magician's Red attack once more. Nemuru saw was he was about to do and, this time, called it back just in time before the flames reach her shadows. Getting back up on her feet, She stepped back and held her ground. Polnareff got back up and quickly ran to pull Kakyoin back up the ship. Avdol and Joseph ran up to the dark-purple haired girl, and prepared themselves for whatever she'll do next. They noticed that her own shadow was shifting around, molding beneath her feet. It rose up, and it began to take form. It took the shape of a young woman, but of course, was completely pitch black and with solid white eyes.

A icy cold chill ran down their spines...they finally knew. "Her

Stand...is her shadow?" Joseph asked as Nemuru's Stand lunged at them.

Back with Jotaro, he had tried to swim back to the surface. However, Dark Blue Moon was quick and placed itself between his user and Jotaro. There, it swung its arms around in a crazy manner. It created a whirlpool. A deadly whirlpool filled with its razor sharp scales. Jotaro and Star Platinum were easily swept away, and were trapped in the harsh currents. Imposter Dragon looked at his prey with a sadistic smile and said, "Haven't you realized brother? Dark Blue Moon has created an underwater whirlpool there's no way you can possibly escape." Jotaro used his strength, along with Star Platinum, to break free from this underwater vortex...but as expected, the waves and currents were much stronger. Imposter Dragon laughed at his pathetic attempt. "That's right, swim faster. You'll just make harder to breath while your power keeps draining." He said as Jotaro's body was going limp. He can't move his body. "But it's a little too early to kill a stupid, smart ass punk like you just yet."

Back on deck, Nemuru had her Stand attack Joseph by launching thin, but strong, spikes. Impaling him, but purposely missing his vital organs, while having his own shadow tossed him to the rails. The shadows of Kakyoin and Polnareff regain their life and smacked them against the rails, holding them in place. Avdol had Magician's Red unleashed its mighty flames. He shouted **Red Bind** and burn away the darkness of her power. Pushing her back even more. Avdol attempted to attack her directly but then he heard agonized screams. He turned and saw his two comrades had just been stabbed in the gut. Nemuru glared at him. "Careful...if you touch me with your Stand, those three will pay the price. Just sit back and let my Shadow Mist kill you already." She said in a low voice.

"It obvious that your Stand isn't strong enough to withstand my Magician's Red's flames, so I suggest you surrender while you still can." Avdol said. "Why do you attack us like this? Hikari called you a friend and yet you intend to kill us? What has Dio offered you to make you work for him?" Avdol wanted to know why. What caused an old friend to turn against you and work for a monster like Dio? Nemuru visibly twitched at that. Avdol quickly noticed it as her face contorted in a vicious look and her eyes held nothing but rage.

"How dare you?" She hissed. "Did you just implied that I'm actually working for *him*? For that disgusting son of a whore?!" She screamed. "Like hell I am! Just for that, I will destroy you!!!" Nemuru screamed at him as she commanded his shadow to deliver a hard punch to the jaw. Sending him flying, joining his friends. Nemuru took several steps towards them but stopped as she noticed the waters swirling. The others also looked upon the raging whirlpool as they quickly realized they'd forgotten something important. They've been so focused on the fight that they didn't even noticed Jotaro hasn't come back! Was he trapped with the whirlpool? "It's been too long. He's still not coming up!" Joseph exclaimed.

"A giant whirlpool, it must have him trapped!" Avdol said.

"Where the hell is JoJo?" Polnareff shouted.

"Let's go and save him." Kakyoin told them. Everyone unleashed their Stands and rushed towards the swirling whirlpool to try and save Jotaro from Dark Blue Moon's trap. Kakyoin's Hierophant Green was the first to get close to the raging waters, but he immediately pulled back as his arm was struck with intense pain. Kakyoin looked over and noticed, piercing his Stand's arm, were scales. But he knew that they weren't normal scales. "These are scales. That guy's Stand has scales as sharp as razors." His comrades look upon the ocean and realized that they don't have a chance at rescuing Jotaro. "There are countless scales swirling in that whirlpool, he wasn't bluffing when he said he could beat all six of us at once!" Avdol said. "It's like a watery ant-lion pit. If we dive in there, it's very possible we'll be slice to pieces!"

Nemuru narrowed her gaze at the raging waters. *'This guy...'* He's a lot more troublesome than he's worth.She turned her attention towards her would-be targets and was about to go and attack them once again, but she gets distracted by the loud banging coming from the black sphere. Hikari. *'Please...please, be patient. Once this is all over we can both go home.'* Nemuru was more than prepared to kill them, but then a small innocent voice inside her head was making her re-think her actions. It was telling...no, pleading her to stop this. It was telling her to forget her plan as it'll make Hikari sad and hate her. All surround sound suddenly stops. All that's left, was her own beating heart and that voice. Nemuru began walking towards the black

sphere.

"These men are dangerous..."

'Are they really?'

"They're working with him!They're going to hurt her in the end anyway!"

'How would you know that?! She told you they were her friends. If she trusts them, then we should too!'

"Just shut up!!"

Suddenly, Nemuru felt a sharp pain in the back of her neck and lost consciousness, falling to into Kakyoin's arms. When she was momentarily distracted, Kakyoin used his chance in knock her out. Once then, the black sphere had burst like a bubble and freed its prisoners. Hikari wasted no time in running towards the railing and looking down at the raging whirlpool. "JoJo!" She cried out. What in the world has been going on out here?!

"AAARRGH!!" Jotaro/Star Platinum yells out as Dark Blue Moon's scales slashes his body. What's even worse this whirlpool is getting stronger and these damned barnacles are spreading through his body even more. Jotaro glared at the imposter. "I'll take another guess at what you're thinking." He said. "'In a whirlpool, only one spot stays still.' Hahahaha, such mundane logic. 'It's the eye, if I can jump into the center where he is, I can attack him.'" The imposter mocked him. This was almost too easy. His Lord will be most pleased once he learns that this vulgar little jackass is dead. "That's what you're thinking right? If you believe you can hit me with that punch of yours again, then come and give it a shot. Throw your worthless Stand at me, its power's so drained, it doesn't have a chance."

Alright. Jotaro's really getting tired of hearing this guy talk. He did had a point however, if he *could* get to center, he can attack the imposter. Still, he's got to be patient. It's not time yet. "See if you can manage an attack! One that's even sharper than these underwater cutters, I'm waiting brother!" Just a little longer. Up back on the surface, the team felt utterly helpless. They couldn't do anything to

save their friend. How can they when the only thing separating them was the raging whirlpool of razor sharp scales. "Damn him!!" Avdol yelled. "We're completely helpless!"

What makes things harder to handle was Hikari struggling to get out of Polnareff's hold. She could sense it. Even back in that black prison, she sensed it. Jotaro was in trouble. And she needed to save him. "Hikari, calm down! There isn't anything we can do!" Polnareff said as he tired to keep her from jumping into the water. They all knew she can produce shields, but they still have yet to know just how much it'll take to break it or how long she can hold one.

"Please, let me go! Let me go! I've got to help him, please!" Hikari begged him. They all stared at the water below, hating the feeling of helplessness. They wondered it Jotaro was even alive or not. Kakyoin then thought he saw something rising from the tides for a split second. It was brief, but he knew who it was. "It's Jojo! I just saw JoJo in the whirlpool!"

"I don't think he's moving down there!" Polnareff said.

"JoJo!" Hikari cried out.

"So he went limp? He wasn't struggling against the whirlpool?" Joseph asked. He scratched his chin and began processing his thoughts. "Well, that might actually be a good thing." His teammates looked at him like he was crazy. How is going limp a good idea? What was the point of all that? Imposter Dragon laughed as he believed victory was getting closer in his sights. "Weren't you going to turn me into sashimi, boy?!" He was getting much closer to his target now. Almost there...just a few more inches.... "You're the one who's gonna be sliced up!" Imposter Dragon shouted as his Undersea Stand revved up its scales into a makeshift chainsaw. It was ready to slice Jotaro into a million pieces. It raised it's arm and positioned itself...and...there it is!

"**Star Finger!**"Breaking free from the barnacles, and in such high speed and power, Star Platinum's fingers extend to a long range attack, cutting right through Dark Blue Moon's head. With a flick of its wrist, Star Platinum effortlessly sliced Dark Blue Moon's head into two, which in turn, effectively defeats the impostor as well. "Sorry,

did I interrupt you? Who's gonna be sashimi?" Jotaro taunted the man. He could barely speak now and simply said blub...blub...blub. "What's that, I can't hear you. You're gonna have too speak up, we're underwater." Jotaro told him.

"But you're power was being drained...you let yourself go limp on purpose, didn't you? You concentrated your power in your fingers...that's what you were thinking...all along...." The man weakly said as he let out his final breath, sinking into the depths of the ocean. "Not even close. The only thing on my mind, is how gross it'll be. When I kicked your stupid ass, and you piss yourself underwater, and that's all. Bye pops." With the whirlpool, razor scales, and barnacles were gone. Jotaro immediately went up to the surface and happily welcomed the fresh air back into his lungs. He turned his attention to the boat and saw his teammates, specifically at Hikari, who was smiling brightly as tears streamed down her face. Damn it. He caused her to worry about him again. "JoJo!" Kakyoin and Hikari called out, happy to see that their friend was safe.

"That's my grandson for ya!" The elder Joestar said. Jotaro swan back to the boat and Joseph was about to throw a life raft to Jotaro when parts of the ship suddenly started to explode. Smoke and fire began to spread all over the ship. Joseph came to the conclusion that the impostor placed bombs on the ships, and were now being set off. The sailors quickly dispatch the emergency boats. While some sent out distress calls, the team boarded on the smaller boats. The group and the rest of the ship's crew manage to save themselves just in time as the ship was reduced to pieces. Before they knew it, it had already grown dark.

With no other choice, they group fell fast asleep. Hikari leaned against Jotaro's shoulder as she slept. Jotaro repositioned himself so she would be comfortable. She smiled in her sleep as she unconsciously snuggled against him. Jotaro was about to fall asleep himself when he saw her hands. Her smooth milky white skin, was now bruised and bloody. He turned his sights toward the unconscious Nemuru leaning against the side of the boat. Jotaro glared at her. He thought he felt something bad about her. Jotaro didn't know what kind of history she had with her, but she better stay away from his best friend if she knows what's good for her. He placed his hand on

top of hers and fell asleep.

The next day, they were still in the middle of nowhere. So far, there was no sign of any rescue ships in sights. This wasn't good. If they stayed out here in the open, it could be trouble if another enemy tries to attack them again. With nothing better to do, they made up some topic to discuss amongst themselves, eventually learning that the child's name was Anne. Nemuru soon woke up and noticed everyone was looking at her with cautious stares. Nemuru glared at them as she tried to distance herself between them. However, she felt a pang of guilt when she saw Hikari staring at her with sad eyes. Joseph hands Anne a container of water and says, "Here. You should have some water. We've set out distress calls, so someone should be here with a rescue ship soon enough."

Anne takes the container in her hands and stares at the group weirdly. "Okay, just what the hell is going on here?" She asks. "I don't get any of this, who are you guys?"

"Just think of us as fellow travelers." Joseph told her. "You're on a journey to see your father, while I'm on one for my daughter." He then gave her a warm, fatherly smile. Anne decided it was a better answer than anything, so quietly drank as she stared off into the ocean horizon. Then all of a sudden she spat out the water in pure shock. "Hey, that's the only fresh water we have!" Joseph shouted. "So don't spit it out, we need it."

Anne raised a shaking hand and pointed to what she was looking at. "N-n-no. Ev-ev-ev-ev-ev-ev-everyone! Look there!!" She yelled. All eyes turned and were shocked to the core as a gigantic freighter suddenly emerged from the mist.

Chapter 11: The Strength in the freighter

Within the darkness of his home, Dio stood before a mirror. The candles glowed brightly in the room, but even they could break through the seemingly never ending blackness. Dio stood in front of the mirror and was in deep thought. He had thought about this particular topic before but he felt as if he had only got part of the answer. He turns to one of his faithful servants and asked her about the question in mind. "Enyaba. There's something I like to ask you. What does it mean to live?"

Enyaba, an old woman wearing robes and having large, puffy white hair, says to him, "Is to obtain all that one desires. If you were to distill life into its essence, that is what it would be. A lust for riches, a desire for fame, food, love and lovers. That is one's goal." She chuckled. Love. Hahaha! What a foolish thing. Dio could barely comprehend the word of it. Still...it didn't mean he hadn't had desires back then. There was one who he had desired, who he had craved for. Who he lusted for. She was a strong-headed woman who seemed to have a will of iron, but that only made her more irresistible. He wanted her. He wanted her all to himself for eternity, and he could break her for eternity. But alas, she had escaped his grasp. "But one must always fight to get what one wants. Isn't that correct, Enyaba?" Dio said. True. He did fight to gain her. And what a fight it was. He fought and nearly won, but she still slipped away.

"Indeed." She said, continuing to chuckle.

"And if the battle is lost and one fails to obtain what one desires most, the result is frustration, pain and a sense of failure." Dio says as he starts to walk aimlessly. "One carries the wound into the future. Into the next fearful battle," He rested his hand near the Joestar mark. "I believe conquering that fear once and for all is what it means to live. The one who stands at the pinnacle is the one who has no fear. Do you understand, Enyaba?"

"I was the one who told you about the existence of your Stand and how to use it. Also you have an immortal body." Enyaba reminds

him. "Is there anything you could possibly fear?" She asks him. However, she finds the idea laughable. Her lord and master is the most powerful and feared man in the world, what could possibly he be fearful of? "Perhaps, old woman." He said. That caught Enyaba off-guard. But she maintained her composure and asked him, "What burdens you my lord?"

"The Joestar bloodline."

This time Enyaba couldn't keep face and nearly growled at the name. "Hmm?! 'Joestar', they worry you?! Those worms are mere trash. Your enemies are no match for your Stand."

"Yes. But I must believe its destiny when the lives of those worms are so thoroughly entangled with mine. It is a fate that has been written for us all from the very beginning. Let me be clear; It is not the Joestars that I fear, but fact that I can never underestimate their bloodline. In order to obliterate all fear, I have decided that I must remove the Joestars from the cogs of fate."

"You want to go and eliminate them yourself simply because you feel that they cannot be underestimated?" Enyaba asked.

"Yes."

"Foolishness! You should never engage in such trivial matters, they are beneath someone of your stature! I have sent seven Stand users to command; The Empress, The Wheel of Fortune, The Hanged Man, Temperance, The Emperor and The Devil, all of them on the move and ready to strike whenever you call! Thanks to these allies, you need not take any action yourself, Lord Dio." Enyaba said as she cackle like the wicked witch that she was. The seventh user was already in progress of his attack. Back on the ocean, the Joestar group and the of sailors that followed were taken by complete surprised when they were greeted by a large freighter, that came out of nowhere.

"A freighter."

"I didn't see it at all."

Jotaro was staring intensely at the large boat before them. He couldn't help but feel uneasy. There was something about this he didn't like about this whole situation. Joseph notices his grandson's uneasy and said, "Jotaro, something's bothering you isn't it? Are you worried there might be another Stand user on this freighter? It's not ideal, but we can handle it."

"Not quite. Strange they lowered the stairs but there's not a single soul to be seen around here anywhere." Jotaro told him. Joseph's eyes widened slightly and looked back at the ship. Jotaro had a point. The stairs were lowered for them to hop aboard, but usually would also be accompanied by those who run the ship in the first place. The moment it appeared, they hadn't heard a voice or sound of people among it. Soon their lifeboats had made it to the age of the staircase and Polnareff was the first to get off. "This ship came all this way to rescue us. There has to be some sort of crew onboard. Even if they're all Stand users, I'm getting on this boat. I'm done drifting in circles." Either he was being brave or foolish, Polnareff did had good point. If there was a crew inside, and if they were Stand users, it was better than sitting on a tiny boat floating around for hours.

Soon the sailors and the Joestar team were boarding the freighter. Nemuru had gone up just ahead of them and had it a point to the men of the group to not touch her. The only ones left to get on were Hikari and Anne. Jotaro leaned in and offered his hand to the young child while Hikari stayed behind her to make sure she didn't fall. "Take my hand, kid. I'll help you get up." Anne stared at his outstretched hand for a moment before she suddenly leaped from the boat and right into Joseph's arms. She turned her head to face the delinquent and stuck her tongue out at him.

Jotaro gave out a sigh in mild annoyance. "Good grief." He said. Hikari stood up and tried to jump right on the staircase, but then she lost her footing near the edge on the stairs and was about to fall right into the ocean. Luckily for her, Jotaro was quick to grab her arm and pull her back to safety, causing her to collide with his chest. "Thank you, JoJo." She said.

"Be more careful, will you?" Jotaro tells her. Once everyone was on deck, the atmosphere had become even heavier than it already was. The ship was so quiet that you could very easily hear a pin fall to the

ground. The entire group searches the freighter only to find it completely abandoned. Not a single person was seen nor was there any indication that someone, anyone, had recently been here. However, that wasn't the only strange part about this whole thing. Yes, there was no crew or captain with the freighter, but all its machinery still functioning and in working condition. Later, Kakyoin came in and told his group of the two rooms in the upper decks. Rooms that especially important when maintaining a ship; the control room and the radio room. As expected, they were both void of life.

They made their way to the control room and Joseph had just about enough about this ship and its lack of people already. "Hey, what's with this ship? There's no captain in the control room. There's no engineer in the radio room. There's no one anywhere." Joseph said as he walked over the compass, baffled on how the ship was in full operation. "And yet, look at this. All the gages and machinery are working properly, just like normal."

"Maybe they're just all in the bathroom with the bad case of the runs." Polnareff half-joked.

Hikari was very worried as she looked around. She didn't like any of this. This eerie silence of the ship, just the fact in came out of nowhere, was starting to make her ill. "Hey! Is there anyone around!" Joseph called out.

"You have to see this! Come here, quick!" Anne called out. She was pointing to something behind an open door. What they found next was unexpected to say the least. It was an orangutan inside a locked cage. "An ape. There's an ape inside that cage." Anne said.

"It's an organgutan." Kakyoin corrected her.

"Who the cares about a freakin' ape!? Let's slip up and find whoever's been feeding this thing." Everyone left, but Anne lagged behind as she looked back at the orangutan. She got a little nervous when she noticed that it was also staring right back her. Hikari went back to her and wrapped her arm protectively around the child's shoulders. "Stay close to us, sweetie. We don't want you getting hurt." As she took her away, neither of them noticed the orangutan's eyes widen when it saw the golden-haired girl. They also failed to see it spread a

wicked smile as they were leaving.

Everyone goes back to the main deck to find Avdol and Nemuru with the sailors by one of the machines of the freighter. "Well?" Avdol asked. One of the sailors was checking the control box as he tried to make sense of it. "It doesn't appeared to be broken but..." As the rest of them walked closer to see what's going on, Joseph stops as he sees that one of the cranes started to swing on its own. Odd since there was no wind currents of any kind to cause that. It swung around and it soon became apparent that it was moving on its own, unhinged itself and was about to attack someone! And its targets were the ones below it. "Avdol! That sailor, watch out!" Joseph called out. Before any of them could make any movement, the sailor checking on the controls was impaled in the back of his head by the hook of a crane. It then lifted his body up for everyone to see as his blood drips below.

Everyone let a terrified scream as it happen. Nemuru's eyes widen in shock, her first initial reaction was angry, but since they were the only ones was here, there was no one who she could see was responsible. Anne let out a scream of fright and Hikari ran over to her and wrapped her arms around her, shielding the child from the horrific sight. Hikari shut tight her own eyes from the scene as well, not wanting to look at the man's body. Tears formed in her eyes as she was getting more scared by the minute. What was going on here? Jotaro placed his hand on his friend's back as he eyed the hanging man. "Good grief, that isn't any way to greet a couple of ladies you've never met before, now is it?" Jotaro said.

"But no one was touching the controls!" A sailor yelled out.

"I saw that crane move, even though there was no one operating it! I don't believe in ghost, but what the hell?!" Another said.

"I saw it too. That crane impaled him all on its own!" Seeing that the sailors were starting to panic, Joseph step forth and took charge of the situation. "Keep your guard up, there's someone hostile here." He said. "Hey, don't touch the machinery, you got that? If it moves or runs on electricity, don't lay a finger on it. If you want to live then you'll do exactly as I tell you, understand? Get into the cabin below and stay there until I tell you otherwise." He instructed them.

The rest of the sailors followed his orders and headed straight for the cabin, Anne followed them but stops as she stares at the Joestar group. Ever since she's met them, all kinds of weirdness has been going on? The group didn't notice her at first and discussed amongst themselves at what just happened.

"Did anyone of you see even a glimpse of a Stand just now?" Joseph asked.

"I didn't." Polnareff told him.

"My apologies. I was the closest to the crane and yet I felt nothing. I should have been able to sense something." Avdol said. "But not just me. Someone else was close enough as well." All eyes turned to the dark-purple haired girl, standing off to the side. She knew what they were thinking, but she answered anyway. "I didn't sense anything out of the ordinary. And I also didn't see a Stand anywhere."

"Alright, I'll send Hierophant Green to take a look around the ship." Kakyoin said. Just as he was about to send Hierophant to search the entire freighter, Hikari pauses him and asked, "Please, wait a minute. Nemuru, do you think you can help him?" Now, Hikari already knew what Nemuru had attempted to do to her teammates as they told her everything when they were still on the lifeboats. While she couldn't believe or understand why she would do such a thing, Hikari wanted to believe that there was some good in her. Anything to prove that she is indeed a friend to trust and not an enemy that have to fight. However, the others didn't think of it that way, as when Nemuru took a step forward, they all went on the defence and Polnareff held out his arm in front of Hikari.

"Hold on, Hikari. How do we know we can really trust her. After all, she did try to kill us." Nemuru glared at him. Hikari lowered her gaze in sadness, he was right. She didn't know. But still. "I...I don't know. I don't even know if she'll attack again, but...I think that's up to her." She said.

Nemuru felt her heart ache when Hikari said that. Up until this moment, she had no reason to be cautious of her as she viewed her as a friend...but now she's losing her trust. She couldn't have that. Nemuru took a deep breath and begrudgingly decided to put her rage

against the group aside and help them out this once. But that didn't mean she wasn't going to get Hikari out of here. After all, that sweet girl had no reason to be apart of this. Nemuru walked forward to them till she was standing next to Kakyoin. She could practically feel the tension coming from him.

"I'll help you out on this. But I'm doing this only because Hikari asked me too, alright? I'm worried for her safety only." She says. Seeing there was no room for an argument, both Hierophant Green and Shadow Mist entered the cracks between the floors and used their eyes to search every inch of the ship. Anne watched them in greater confusion, especially when she saw Nemuru's shadow moving. Okay, seriously, who are these people? *'I have no idea what's going on. But scary things keep happening whenever you guys are around. Could you guys be jinxed? I've heard about people who caused disasters that endanger everyone. If that's what you are, I better stay away.'* Anne thought to herself. These were strange people. They had this air around them that made them stand out from the others, and she had no idea she could trust them.

Anne was snapped out of her thought when she saw the eldest Joestar walking towards her. Joseph kneeled down to her height and gave a look that only a father could give to his child. "I have just one bit of truth for you, so listen closely." He said. "Whatever happens, we're on your side. Stay safe, make sure you stay with the others, got it?"

When Anne nodded, Joseph turned around and called for Hikari to come over. As soon as she did, Joseph asked her, "Chiara, would you mind going with her? I think she'll be more calm with you."

"No, I don't mind at all." Hikari said. She gave a gentle smile to Anne and held out her hand. "Come on, let's go with the others, okay?" Anne looked back and forth between her and her hand for a moment before reaching out, holding her hand in her own. The girls went around corner to join the sailors and Joseph went back to his team. Hikari asked Anne if she wanted to look around a little bit before going to the sailors and she nodded. The two ended up going back to the control room, eventually going to the caged orangutan. Hikari placed her hands on Anne's shoulders and kept her close by her side. "Anne, stay close to me."

"Huh, o-okay."

There's no way she could tell her. There was something about this ape that didn't seem right. The orangutan stares at them and then it starts to signal for one of them to unlock the cage door. Tapping the lock with its finger. "Do you want us to open the cage for you?" Anne asked it. "But we can't, we have no idea where the key is. And you're too big to let out." Hikari gave Anne a smile. Good, she knows better.

As if trying to convince them, it tries to give them an halved apple for compensation. That's when alarms went off in her head as Hikari quickly notices that the apple was freshly cut. "It looked like it was cut with a knife, and that that it might've been cut mere minutes ago. But how was that possible?" She asked. They have yet to see a single person since they've arrived, and Hikari highly doubted that any of them were carrying food. The orangutan continues to set off alarms as it took out a match to light a cigarette for itself. Alright, where did it get that? Did it always had it somewhere in its cage?

"Whoa, you're a pretty smart monkey. Who trained you to do that?" Anne asked, impressed that it could do that. She may be impressed, but Hikari was getting more anxious. She knew some animals could be trained to do some tricks and the like, but this orangutan was acting too human. Chills ran down her spine and pulled Anne closer to her as the orangutan pulled out, and reading, a pinup girl magazine. Anne was getting nervous too as she clung tightly around Hikari's waist. "No way, a monkey like you is actually into looking at," She gulped down, "Pinups of girls?"

The orangutan then turned his gaze at the girls, having this unreadable look in its eyes. Hikari pulled Anne behind her as she began backing away from it. Alarms were blaring in her ears that this ape was more dangerous than they know. Hikari practically jumped when the door next to the cage opened, revealing the sailors. "Hey you two, be careful there!"

"They say an orangutan has five-times the strength of a normal human, so it could easily rip off your arm."

"Come on, stay with us in the room on the other side. Don't go off by yourself." The sailors said as they escorted the girls into the radio

room, leaving the ape on its own. The day was passing on, the sun had touched the border between the sky and the sea. Back on the deck, Hierophant Green and Shadow Mist returned to their users and brought back nothing to report. They searched every nook and cranny of this damned ship and they still couldn't find a living soul anywhere.

"It's inconceivable, we've had Hierophant Green and Shadow Mist search every inch of this ship but neither of us could find a single sign of human life aboard." Kakyoin stated.

"Yeah, I even had Shadow Mist searched the darkest corners and rooms of the ship, yet there was nothing." Nemuru said.

"We've searched every pipe and crevices, but still came up empty handed." Kakyoin growled at that last part. Nobody blamed him, this whole thing was beginning to infuriate them. If things continued on like this, then they're going have to leave this freighter. Jotaro looked back at the walkway where Hikari had gone off. Stand user or not, he always felt uneasy when she was by herself, and he won't feel better until he sees her. At the radio room, Hikari and Anne observes the sailors trying to use the radios to get a signal out and send someone over to their destination.

"Anything?"

"It's no use, I can't get a connection."

"Well, try again damn it."

Anne picked up a smell and realised it was coming from her. She sniffed her clothes, her body and touched her hair, and noticed that she was all sticky from the ocean. She let out a groan, making Hikari turn to her direction. "What's the matter, Anne?" She asked.

"I feel sticky from the salt water." She whined to her.

"Oh, I'm sorry. I think there's a shower room around here, but please wait until we reach land. I don't think-." Hikari said as she saw Anne was walking away. Hikari quickly ran after her as Anne located a shower room. "Anne, don't just walk off like that. It's dangerous to off

by yourself." Hikari told her. "I'm sorry, but I really need to wash off." Anne said as she turned the water on. Anne turned to the older girl and asked, "Do you want to take a shower too. It must stink being around a bunch of guys, right?"

"What? Anne, that's not a very nice thing to say. But...a shower might calm my nerves." Hikari said. *'But it's not going to get rid of the feeling that something really bad is going to happen...JoJo.'* Hikari grabbed a towel from the stall next-door and the two began taking off their clothes. Before getting in, Hikari went ahead and folded up each of their clothes neatly, then putting them off to the side. She entered the shower with Anne, closed the curtain and was enjoyed the feeling of the warm water. Hikari helped washed out Anne's hair while she used the soap to clean the rest of her body. While the girls were busy cleaning themselves up, they didn't hear the door leading to them open. A bloodied hand opened the door further to reveal that the sailors had been brutally murdered and their killer walks into the shower room, closing in on his unsuspecting victims.

The curtain was harshly pulled open and the girls gasped in shock as the orangutan stared back at them with lust in its eyes. Hikari pulled Anne behind her as soon as she saw the blood on its hands. The girls were frozen in fear as the animal started advancing towards them. With Jotaro, he had just entered the control room, looking for Hikari. He noticed that the door leading to the caged ape was open so he decided to go in and check. What he found was the orangutan's cage door wide open, the locks that held it shut were scattered around on the floor. The thing had escape and was now wondering the ship. But where? His answer came in a form a voice screaming "Stay back!". A voice that sounded a lot like-

"Hikari!"

Hikari moved themselves to the corner of the stall, trying to stay as far from the ape's reach as possible. Unfortunately, this only made them 'more desirable' by the orangutan as it began breathing heavily and its hands were twitching. Hikari grabbed the towels and covered their bodies, to hide away from this ape's sight. Lust clouded its eyes and kept advancing towards the girls. Anne gripped Hikari's arms as she was shaking in fear. Hikari was barely keeping it together herself, but she had to stay strong for the child she's protecting. Suddenly, the

ape had lunged at them. Hikari quickly created a shield around them as it started to furiously pound its fist to attempt to break in down while Anne screams.

"Hey!" The orangutan turned and around and Jotaro did the kindly thing by hitting its head with one of the locks. "JoJo!" Hikari called, so relieved at he had come in the nick of time. The orangutan had tried to crawl away, but Jotaro won't sit idly by and let him get away. "Take your lock, you stinking ape!" He yelled as swung the lock at the beast straight at its forehead. With a cry of anger, the ape grabbed Jotaro's jacket, ready to tear him apart. Jotaro sees its actions and says, "Seems that this ape, isn't your run-of-the-mill monkey. Could it be that he's the one?" The orangutan swung his leg at Jotaro's head, but Star Platinum quickly blocked the attack with its arm. But it didn't end there, a ceiling fan had broken off its pole and lodged its blades in Jotaro's shoulder.

The orangutan gave out a gruff 'laugh' as it was pleased it was able to hit him. Jotaro stared at the fan in confusion, he had a sneaking suspicion about the orangutan when he found his cage open, but the fan had seemingly attacked him on its own. Was this beast the only one or is there someone else here? "Wait, who the hell rip out that fan? It had to be him. This ape's a Stand user but where's the Stand? I should be able to see the damn thing but I can't. Doesn't make any sense." Jotaro said as he tried to take the fan's blades out but it suddenly bent and smacked his hand away, adding more confusion and shock to him as he watched it move and bend. "What the-! The steel propeller bent on its own like its alive!"

The fan then used its blades to smack Jotaro across the face with enough force for him to break through a door and send him flying. The orangtuan was jumping for joy at this point. "JoJo!" Hikari called out. The orangutan charges after him with the intent to kill. Hikari couldn't allow that to happen and told Anne to stay where she was till she gets back, but not before placing a shield around her. Hikari runs to the hallway, only to find Star Platinum make a huge dent in the wall and the ape disappearing right into it. What on earth was that? Jotaro turned to her and said, "Hey, you saw that right?"

"Y-yes, I did. What's going on with this boat?"

"I don't know but stay close to me, something bad is going down." Jotaro told her. Hikari ran over him and he protectively wrapped an arm around her. Jotaro tried to think of an answer on where that ape's Stand is and if this ship had some kind of connection to it. As he did though, he slowly noticed that he was feeling bare skin. Jotaro shifted his eyes and realised that he was holding Hikari while she's...oh thank God, she was wearing a towel, but still! He doesn't think that even she took noticed yet. Not only that but he was feeling *something else* being pressed up against his side. Ignoring that for the moment, he put his focus on this situation.

'The ape vanished into the wall...but that orangutan has to be the Stand user. When I touched it earlier, I felt a Stand's energy coming from it. I have no doubt that he's the one we're looking for. Doesn't make any sense...why can't I see the Stand like I always do?' Wait a minute. Seeing it. When having a Stand, that allows the user to see other Stands. And Stand are never cut from the same cloth...they can come in all shapes and sizes...if the ape is a Stand user...then does that mean...?!

"The Stand is actually the freighter!" Jotaro yelled out.

Chapter 12: Man vs Ape. One down, six to go

Jotaro held on to Hikari as she cried out when the ship began to creak and bend on its own. The halls began morphing in and out of control. On the deck, the Joestar group were struggling to escape as they were sinking into the ship's metal floors. To make matters worse, they were also being crushed by the sheer force it produced. "What's going on?!" Avdol asked. "This isn't good!" Jospeh said. Nemuru tried calling forth her Stand but the pain she was feeling from her ribs getting crushed was really making it difficult for her. "It's swallowing...us!" Polnareff said. Nemuru growled at him, "Ya think?!" Hikari's smiling face flashed in her mind. Her heart sank. *'Hikari! You better be safe somewhere!'* Nemuru pleaded. Joseph looked in all directions and quickly figured out the truth. "Is the freighter trying to-? Is..it possible the ship itself is-?"

"So the Stand is actually the freighter!" Jotaro said. Just then both Jotaro and Star Platinum were slammed against the wall, tied down by the pipes of the ship. "JoJo!" Hikari went in to try and help him, but she was caught by the pipes as well and was against the wall across from him. Again, thank God that towel was still covering her. The orangutan returned, its head poking through the walls, making another gruff laugh. "Damn! You son of a-!" Jotaro growled at the damn ape. The orangutan stepped out into the open, wearing an official captain's uniform and had a smok pipe. In his hands was dictionary, and he held it up to Jotaro and pointed to a single word. The word that the orangutan was pointing to was "Strength". It means force, energy, power or aid. Not only that, but it's also the eighth card of the tarot deck. It suggests challenge, a strong will and hidden powers. As it puffs his pipe, the orangutan toys around with a rubix cube. Seemingly taunting Jotaro with its 'great' intelligence.

Star Platinum tried to break from their restraints as he ripped off one of the pipes. However, the orangutan quickly noticed it and brought even more to hold him still, the pipes were twice as strong now. It laughed at his face, and Jotaro could already guess what it was thinking. *'Damn ape. Thinks he's won already, huh?'* Jotaro thought.

With Jotaro pin down, with the rest of the group captured, and with such a lovely lady in his grasp....the ape continued on laughing as it made other noise in some stupid attempt to talk. *"This entire ship is my Stand and you've lost! You're totally outmatched and helpless, and there's nothing you can do!"* Jotaro needed no explanation, he knew what the ape was trying to say. The ape finished the cube perfectly, and crushed it to bits in its hand. Hikari was shaking with fear now.

She wondered how they were going to get out of this one. Her sapphire orbs darted everywhere around the hall to try and find something for Soundless Voice to grab on to. Hikari nearly jumped out her skin as she caught the orangutan staring at her. More specifically, at her body with lust in its eyes. It spread a sickening smile as its eyes trailed up and down, licking its lips in anticipation. Hikari let out a squeak of fright. Jotaro felt a sudden surge of hate and annoyance as he didn't like how this freaking ape was looking at her. It was pissing him off.

Jotaro reached up and flicks a button from his jacket at the orangutan's head while it was distracted. The ape turned and found the discarded button. He picked it up and, at first, was mildly confused. "Over here, monkey. That button's not part of your Stand." Jotaro said. The orangutan stares at the button in its hand as it's eye began to twitch. It soon began shaking with rage. Jotaro scoffed at it for being so pathetic. "Are you angry? I guess it wounded your pride since you thought you already beaten us. Oh, it's not hurt at all, is it? Because apes like you don't have any pride." From there the orangutan roars in rage and jumps at him to attack him, however, it was this behavior that proved Jotaro's point. "That's exactly what makes you an ape and not a man. What's going to hurt now...is your head!" He said as he shot the damned thing in the head by the button it still hand in its hand by using Star Platinum's technique, Star Finger.

With it squirming on the floor in pain, screaming at the top of its lungs, the pipes grow weak and allowed Jotaro to break free. Hikari fell to the floor once the pipes holding her slid off of her. "Good grief." Jotaro said as the orangutan started to go into the corner. Fear was evident in its eyes as it looked at the giant delinquent. It stood back up and ripped open it's jacket, revealing its stomach and held its

hands up to show that it had given up. "I've heard that, when frightened, animals show their stomachs to signal their submission to the enemy." Jotaro said. "So, you're asking me to forgive you?" The ape nodded its head shakily. It dearly hope that Jotaro would just forgive it and let it go. However, Jotaro doesn't roll like that as he states, "I'm afraid your actions have already gone beyond the rules of the jungle. So I don't think so." Without even a second later, Star Platinum rushed in and proceeded to beat the life out of the ape with a barrage of punches. His final punch send it flying down the hall.

Once that was done, Jotaro walked over to Hikari and offered his hand for her. "Hey, you alright?" He asked. Hikari looked at Jotaro and then sprung to her feet, wrapping her arms around him. "JoJo, thank you. You're not hurt are you?" She said, tears swelled in her eyes as she held him tighter. "It didn't hurt you?" She asked. Unfortunately, Jotaro couldn't answer her. Not because he didn't want to...but because he *can't*! Not right now anyway. His whole body stiffened up as he stared down at her with wide eyes. When Hikari jumped up so suddenly, it caused a certain something to fall and was now being forgotten on the floor by the golden-haired girl. Jotaro quickly turned his head to the side, to refrain himself from looking any longer. Hikari looked up at Jotaro with concern and innocently asked, "JoJo? What's wrong?" Usually, he would hug her back or at least pat her on the head. So why wasn't he doing that now?

"Hikari,"

"Yes?"

"The towel." Huh? Hikari was a little confused at first before seeing the towel right beside her. Hikari gazed at it...then went and looked down at herself. "Aaah!" She yelped as her face flared up and quickly went to covered herself up. Hikari bowed down an apology several times to Jotaro. "I'm so sorry! I didn't mean for that happen! I'm sorry! I'm such an idiot!" Jotaro pulled down his cap and said, "It's fine, just shut up will you?" Hikari stopped and quickly nodded her head. Jotaro turned his back as he tried to collect his thoughts...and tried to erase that image from his mind. But wow...! Were they huge! Argh, stop thinking like that!! Hikari was his best friend, damn it! Just then the freighter began to distort, the entire ship was twisting

up. Meaning that the illusion or power it had on it was beginning to fade. Think is about time that they get the hell outta here!!! Hikari ran back into the shower room and got Anne out, after the two quickly changed back into their clothes. Jotaro, Hikari and Anne made back to the docks to get to their group. Luckily, the others escaped their own traps and the Joestar group manages to board back on the life boats they came with. When they were farther away, they watched as the massive freighter slowly changed into a small boat.

"Wow, I can't believe it. The ship's shape is changing. It's turning into a shabby little boat." Anne exclaimed.

"If I hadn't seen it myself, I wouldn't have believe it. That ape was travelling the sea on it's own Stand. What terrifying power, that was the first time I've encountered such energy." Avdol said.

"Hate to say it, but we were completely overwhelmed this round. If Jotaro hadn't figured it out, we would've been done for." Joseph stated. "Are we going to encounter even more Stands with crazy, unknown powers from now on? We have to be ready for anything."

Nemuru sat close to Hikari and asked her, "Are you alright? You didn't get hurt in there did you?" Hikari shook her head. "No, no, I'm fine. JoJo was there with Anne and I." She blushed slightly as she glanced over at the tall delinquent, who was trying to light up a cigarette but is unable to. Nemuru glanced over between them and narrowed her eyes, something about this was bugging her. But she won't force an answer from her. "So...we're going to be drifting again." Avdol said.

"Good grief, my cigarettes are soaked."

"M-maybe you shouldn't be smoking right now..?"

"There'll be plenty of sun in time for them to get dry, JoJo."

"We'll have to pray that we get rescued and reach Singapore safely...and soon."

"Well, at least there's one person who won't annoy me until then."

"It's been four days since we've left Japan."

There are forty-six days until time runs out for the Joestars, and so far all they've experienced is a plane crash, their cruiser sank to the bottom of the ocean, and they barely escaped a ghost ship. Will they catch a break and travel without the pressure of someone hunting you down and killing you dead...? The answer? Ha! Nope! Things were just the beginning of their insane journey...and all they can do is fight and survive.

Back in his mansio, Dio sits in his chair. Reading a book with the light from a nearby candle. Enyaba appeared a few inches away behind him and with great uneasiness told her master, "My lord, it would appear that Strength has been defeated. But have no fear, the remaining six Stand users are all very powerful and each deadlier than the last. And one of them is my son, his right arms shall crushed our enemies!" She says as she takes her hands out from the sleeves and reveals her two right hands. Enyaba chuckles as she says, "The Joestars will not pose a threat when he's finished with them."

Dio let out a soft chuckle as he closed his book. "You are a strange old woman. What is it that you desire the most?" He asked her. Enyaba then spread an eerie and wicked smile as she answers. "Oh, but I told you many times, my only wish is to stay be your side, my lord. Your guardian spirit has unbelievable power. Your ability to escape trouble and your strange life are the result of that." As she says this, Dio had brought out his own Stand and gaze upon it. He smirked as he couldn't wait to use it to its fullest, with it's great power, Dio was sure that no one will be capable of stopping him. However, he knew he had to be patient still, he can't rush into things so carelessly. Once he gets used to his new body, he'll be ready. "I would like to see your life unfold. It's the only thing I want." Enyaba said.

Thinking back to the six remaining Stand users, Enyaba then asked Dio. "My lord, what are your intentions with that Fujioka girl? It's clear that she has failed to eliminate the Joestars."

"Yes, indeed she has. But no matter, whether she succeeded or fails doesn't concern me. After all, I have something that she is desperate to gain back. And I look forward to see the look on her face when I reveal the truth." Dio said as he smirked. After all, what is more fun than to watch a person suffer and in agonising despair?

Chapter 13: Day at the pool!

While out at sea, the Joestar group were miraculously rescued by two *real* freighters that were passing by. After gaining a lift, the group had finally arrived in Singapore. Fun fact; There was a prince from the land of Sumatra, who traveled the seas seeking new lands. He, eventually, landed on an island inhabited by lion's called, Singas. An island he named, Singa Pura. Today, the land is bustled with ships and tankers from around the world. This nation that shared both eastern and western heritage thanks to free trade is Tropical Singapore. They group had decide to stay at a hotel, recharge their batteries, and think about their next plan of action.

Joseph had picked a good hotel that was within walking distance and seemed the most convenient. They were about to head towards it when a whistle blew out, catching their attention. They found that a police officer was running at them with an angry expression. "Hey, you!" He yelled. "Yeah, you! With the flattop!" Obviously, he was referring to the blue-eyed French man. "Yeah, you. You threw this trash, right? Then it's a five hundred Singapore dollar fine." He said. Polnareff's eyes widened in disbelief at the amount he just stated. "No way, five hundred?"

"The law here prohibits littering and fines all violators, and that means you." The officer continued, being completely adamant about the whole ordeal. "Five hundred Singapore dollars is..." Kakyoin said, trying to do the calculations in his head. "I think that's got to be about forty thousand yen." Joseph said.

"Trash?"

"Are you clear on that, punk?!" The officer asked Polnareff. "Trash?" He asked. Polnareff hadn't had a clue what he was going on about. Polnareff was sure that he hadn't thrown anything away. If he had, he would've remembered right away. The officer was now pointing at the 'trash' left on the ground to further prove his point. Everyone looked at what he was pointing to and saw a dark green bag. Avdol struggled to hold in his laughter. Polnareff then gave a smirk at the

officer. True, he did felt a little insulted but he couldn't blame the man who's only doing with job. "All I see is on the ground here is my own luggage." Now, instead of being in the right, the officer was caught by surprise as he looked down at Polnareff's bag. "So, you got me a little confused now. Would you be so kind to tell me what trash you're referring to, officer?" Polnareff asked him, putting a hand on his shoulder. "If you're wrong, then I'm obeying the law, right? So where is it?"

"Uh...you mean that bag is your luggage?" The officer asked, nervously.

"Yeah, you got it."

"O-oh, I'm terribly sorry." The others began laughing at the situation and at the poor officer's misunderstanding of Polnareff's luggage. They soon stopped laughing as a another voice was joining in. They turned and saw Anne laughing along, who then stopped herself when she realised that they were looking at her. Once the cop left, Polnareff asked his team, "What's up with this kid? She's still following us like a lost puppy."

"Hey, you. Weren't you going to see your father once we got here?" Joseph asked the young child. "Why don't you stop tagging along and go? You're here now, so move on." Polnareff told her.

"Heh, I'm meeting up with him in five days. I can go wherever the hell I want. I not taking orders from you jerks." Anne may have talked like she was tough, but one look in her eyes told that she didn't want to be left alone right now. Hikari, feeling sympathy for her, asked the others, "It's only for a little while...shouldn't we let her stay with us for the time being?"

Avdol shook his head and said, "She mustn't. She'll be in danger if she stays with us." That was a valid reason, still it wouldn't be right to just leave her on her own like this. Speaking of which, did she even have any money for resources to find a place for herself for five days? "Well, maybe she lacks the cash for a place to stay." Kakyoin said.

"Then that's it. We'll have to get her a hotel room for a few nights." Joseph said. "Hey, Polnareff. Get her to come with us and try not to

bruise her ego." Polanreff gave him a nod and began to walk towards the girl. "You got it."

Polnareff walked up to Anne and, being a man good with his words, was very subtle. "Hey, you're stinking poor, aren't you? Well, consider this your lucky day, freeloader."

Anne face dropped at his words and his teammates reactions range from face-palming, groans, and a chuckle. Way to be practical there, Polnareff. "Oh, for God's sake, Polnareff."

Nemuru rolled her eyes. "Wow, Polnareff. I'm impressed, I had no idea you had such a way with words." She said, sarcastically. Polnareff then whipped around and glared at her. "Why you little-!" Hikari quickly ran in between them and said, "P-please don't be angry. I-I'm sure she didn't mean it."

"I did."

"Let me talk to her." Hikari said as she went over to Anne. She kneeled down at her level and said, "Anne, if it's alright with you, you can come and stay with us for a while until your father arrive. You don't have to worry, we'll look after you until then." She then held out her hand to her. "What do you say?" She asked with a gentle smile. Anne looked her for a minuted before reaching out and holding her hand. With that done, Hikari led Anne towards the hotel with Nemuru following close behind. "You should definitely learn a thing or two form her, Polnareff. It'll make you look less of an idiot."

"Argh!! Why the hell are you even here?!" He yelled out, but Nemuru promptly ignored him. With nothing more to do, the team went inside and check into their rooms. But...there was a tiny problem. "I'm terribly sorry, sir. But we tend to be full at this time of year." The receptionist said to Joseph. Due to the overcrowding of the hotel that it was currently in, it prevented them from getting rooms close to each other. "We no longer have any large suites available. Might I suggest our double rooms?"

"I guess we're stuck. Now for the rooms...uh," Joseph said as he thought on whose staying with who in which room. "Avdol and I will share a room with each other." He said as the Egyptian man nodded

in agreement. "It'll make sense for Jotaro and I, and for Nemuru and Hikari, to share rooms since the four of us are students. Does that help, Joseph?" Kakyoin said.

"Then the last room goes to Polnareff and..." Avdol trailed off as everyone's eyes glanced down at Anne. She quickly got the hint of who she was going to room with and she, understandably, rejected the idea right away. "Huh?! That's just gross! Like I room with that guy!" She said pointing at Polnareff.

"You brat!"

"If I'm going to share a room with anybody, it's going to be with Hikari here!" Anne said as she ran up and wrapped her arms around the golden-haired girl's waist. Well, seeing that Anne made up her mind, she was going to stay with the girls while Polnareff got his own room. The receptionist then placed four room keys for them and Polnareff grabbed his, saying, "Fine, I can relax more in my own room anyway. I'm gonna sleep like a baby tonight."

Polanreff began to walk away but he turned back and told his team, "Let's go. We've been through all kinds of hell ever since the day we left Hong Kong. We should hurry up and take a shower in a place where it's actually safe." The others chuckled at him while Nemuru rolled her eyes again. She whispered over to Hikari, "Can this guy be any more of a headache?" Hikari just giggled at that. Because the hotel was overcrowded, they didn't have much choice to split up. So Polnareff went up to the ninth floors, the girls went to the eleventh, the guys to the tenth and finally Joseph and Avdol went up to the twelfth floor.

Once they arrived at their room, Anne immediately jumped on one of the beds and sighed in content. "Oh man, finally we get to sleep in a real bed." She said. Nemuru sat down in one of the chairs, looking out through the balcony windows. "I guess, but I'm more happy to be away from those guys." Hikari looked at Nemuru with sad eyes. She then asked her, "Nemuru..? Why are you so hostile towards my friends..? They...haven't done anything to make you upset." Hikari wanted to know. She knew that the others are good people who wouldn't attack or upset others without a reason. She knew Jotaro would rather skip all that as he didn't want any trouble. But in just a

short amount of time, Nemuru had tried to kill them and is holding some kind of grudge against them.

Nemuru's face softened as she locked eyes with her. Every time she would look at her with those innocent eyes, guilt would wash over her. But...she shouldn't feel any guilt...it's all their fault...they were to blame. Yet, here she was defending them, calling them her friends... She sighed. Might as well. There's no way Nemuru could lie to her. "It's because of them that my life has been nothing but hell for the past three years." Hikari gasped when she heard this. What was she talking about? The others have never met her before until two days ago...so what could they have done to her that was so bad. What happened to her three years ago? "I don't understand. What happened? How could they have any involvement?" Hikari asked her, confused. Nemuru seemed to hesitate to answer.

Hikari then carefully asked, "D-does this...have to do with Dio?" She flinched, jumping back when Nemuru slammed her fist on the armchair. She was pissed off. Just hearing his name will get her riled up. It scared her a bit, but that confirmed what she wanted to know. Nemuru took a few deep breaths as she tried to calm herself down. "I'm sorry. I didn't mean to scare you like that." She said. Hikari shook her head. "No, I'm sorry. I shouldn't have asked. It wasn't any business of mine."

Anne looked back and forth between the two girls in confusion. "What are you guys talking about? Who's this Dio person?" She asked. The girls turned to her and quickly said, "Oh, he's nobody. Please, don't concern yourself, okay sweetie?"

"She's right. That guy's got nothing to do with you." Nemuru told her. Though she was still curious, Anne seemed to buy it and she said she was going to the bathroom. Once she was gone, the girls continued their conversation. "Nemuru...I-I don't know what Dio did to you...and I'm sure it must've been so terrifying and so painful...but JoJo and the others have nothing to do with it." Hikari told her, trying to be as gentle as she can with her. "What is it? What makes you so sure about them?" Nemuru asked her. True, they've all hopped on this journey a bit too soon, and they really don't know much about Dio as well as Joseph and Avdol seemed to know...but this was something Hikari knows for a fact. "Dio is a very dangerous

person...and he'll force others to do what he wants. My friends and JoJo are on this trip because they want to stop him. They're plan is stop Dio before he could hurt anybody else. They are good people, and they're people you can trust, so...please? Won't you give them a chance?"

Nemuru turned away from her. A small, sad smile spread on her face. She hasn't changed a bit since middle school. Classic Hikari, always thinking about the best in others. Always giving them a chance. Nemuru thought back on her actions and the events that happened afterwards. Her reasons for going after the group, the way that ape had attacked them, and the deal Dio had made for her. She held her head with her hand as she lowly growled. Now that had a clearer head, and was actually taking the time to think about it, Nemuru couldn't believe how stupid she was. She turned back to Hikari and said, "Alright. You win. I'll give them a chance." Anne came out from the bathroom and the girls were simply enjoying their sweet time for a good while. Then came a knock at the door and Hikari went to look through the peephole to see who it was.

"JoJo!" She said happily as she opened the door for him and Kakyoin. "Is there something you two need." She asked. Her smile dropped when she saw their serious expressions. Nemuru and Anne walked to her side, and when seeing them, Jotaro said, "So, the three of you are here." Nemuru raised an eyebrow. "Of course, we are. What's up?" She asked him. "Mr. Joseph had called us earlier and wants us to meet in his room. From the sounds of it, it's urgent." Hikari and Nemuru looked at each other before nodding. They stepped out of the room and told Anne to stay there with the door locked. Telling to never open the door for anyone unless it's one of them. With that done, the four students went up to the twelfth floor to Joseph's and Avdol's room.

The two men turned and saw them come in. "Huh, it's just the four of you?" Joseph asked looking around a bit for Anne. "Why isn't the girl with you?" Avdol asked them. "We all decided against it because she would be vulnerable. The risk of her falling under attack while with us is far too great." Kakyoin explained to them. Joseph nodded. "Alright, so we're just waiting for Polnareff to arrive. But man, he's so late. It's already been way over five minutes."

"Um, excuse me. May I ask who it is that's targeted us this time?" Hikari asked as she and the others took a seat. Avdol stepped forth and explained everything to them. Apparently the guy's name is Soul Sacrificed, a Native American shaman who doubles as an assassin, and nobody knows what his Stand looks like as those who do are already dead. What makes him noticeable is the numerous scars that cover his body. He then turned to Nemuru and asked her, "Ms. Fujioka, what do you know about Soul Sacrifice?"

Nemuru shook her head. "Nothing. In fact, I haven't even heard of this man before today." Joseph then turned to her and said, "It's obvious that you're not at all loyal to Dio, otherwise that ape wouldn't have attack you along with us. Is that right?"

"Yes, and you should thank Hikari for this. I despise Dio to the point I wish he were dead right this instant, so I've decided to offer my help in taking him down." Nemuru told him. After a while, after several questions and confirmation on both their words, and an sincere apology, along with the explanation that Dio took something dear from her, the rest of the Joestar group decided to trust Nemuru, forgive her and considered her a part of the team. Hikari let out a relieved sigh. *'Finally...we're all friends. Thank you, Nemuru.'*

Within ten minutes, Polnareff arrives at the room. He looked awful and was covered in blood, and had a bit mark on his neck. "Ah, Polnareff, you're finally here." Avdol said. "Yeah..."

"You're not terribly punctual and you look like hell." Joseph said. "Okay, let's right to it. Let's figure out what our strategy will be if Soul Sacrificed attacks. Polnareff, pay attention."

"You're...joking, right?" Polnareff said as he slid down to the floor. And things went about as you expect, Polnareff had already defeated Soul Sacrifice, and, after Hikari healed him of all his wounds, was escorted out of the hotel by the police who suspected him of killing one of the employees and Soul Sacrifice himself who was found in the hotel bathroom stalls, and is now being interrogated. Luckily for him, agents from the Speedwagon Foundation had come to bail him out without issue.

Seeing it was going to take a while, the group went about to enjoy

what little time they had until the matter was resolved. So, the girls decided to spend it at the hotel pool. They went to a nearby clothing store and went into the isle that held most of the swimwear. It would be fun, if one of them weren't blushing red as a tomato. "But...I'm not sure if I'm alright in wearing them." Hikari said. Nemuru and Anne had already picked out swimsuits for themselves, and were now trying to get Hikari to wear one of the bikinis. "Come on, Hikari. There's nothing to be embarrassed about, just try it on and see how it is."

"Yeah, she's right. Besides, you might look really cute in it." Anne said.

"Couldn't I wear the one-piece swimsuit?" Hikari asked, holding up the navy blue one-piece she had in her hands.

"No." They immediately replied with. Nemuru took it away from her and tossed the bikini to her. "Wear that one instead. At least, for today?" She said. Hikari looked down at the suit in question and back at her. She was happy enough to be spending time with her old friend, but she didn't think a bikini would look nice on her at all. She didn't think she had much to look at. But if they thought so, then why not. Hikari gave a smile and said, "Okay." Within twenty minutes, the girls bought their swimsuits, and a bottle of sunscreen, and went back to the hotel to change. Then they went down to the pool to have some fun. Anne gleefully jumped into the water with a shout. The girls followed in shortly after. They spent a good ten minutes, playing around, splashed at one another and see who could swim the fastest. Nemuru won. Neither of them realised it, but Nemuru and Hikari were attracting a lot of attention by the guys around the pool.

Soon after Hikari and Nemuru sat down on the pool's chaise lounge chairs while Anne continued to play in the water. "Anne, please play it safe!" Hikari called out to her. "I will!"

"See, it's not so bad, is it?" Nemuru asked as she laid back on her chair, sunbathing. Hikari giggled at her while she put sunscreen on her arms and legs. "No, not really. But I still like one-pieces better." Nemuru held back her own laughter. "You're too much, you know that?" "I am? I'm sorry." Hikari apologized. "Don't be, it's nothing." Nemuru told her. Nodding, Hikari looked at the doors leading into

the pool and said, "JoJo and Kakyoin should be coming in a bit."

"What? You invited them?" She nodded. "Uh-huh. Just before we left to buy our swimsuits, I thought it might be fun for all of us to have fun at the pool." Nemuru arched a brow at her. "Are you serious? They might not take off their uniforms to even enjoy it." She said. "Well, maybe...but they could sit down with us...right?" As the girls were talking, Jotaro and Kakyoin had arrived at the pool. They were both momentarily stunned when they saw them. Nemuru was wearing a black bikini with the top and bottom being held together by strings. Hikari was very a light blue bikini with the bottoms having a mini skirt attached. Both were showing their figures perfectly.

They quickly snapped out of it when they noticed a group of guys, much older than they are, ogling at them. The girls didn't seem to be aware of them. The guys could hear them whispering amongst themselves, they weren't even trying to be subtle about it. "Check them out, they are hot!" "Yeah, ya see the pair on that blonde chick over there?" "The one next to looks like she had some attitude." "Maybe, but that makes them fun, that chick is one size bigger than her's." "I don't know, that one in the skirt looks more easier."

Now, they weren't saying it directly to them...but it was starting to piss them off. "Fine, we'll go after the one in black, while you two go for Miss. Easy pickings." Right after they said that, Jotaro and Kayoin immediately walked over to the girls, purposefully slamming their shoulders against the group. Hikari noticed them coming and smiled brightly, waving them over while Nemuru gave a half-hearted wave. "JoJo! Kakyoin! We're happy you were able-." Jotaro cut Hikari off by him removing his jacket and practically throwing it over her. He then sat down on the chair with her and wrapped his arm around her. Hikari was confused at this, but she shrugged it off and smiled. Kakyoin sat down next Nemuru and did the same thing. His actions definitely caught her off guard and was confused at what he was doing. "Of course, this is probably one of the few moments to just relax, right?" Kakyoin asked. Hikari nodded, smiling. "Yeah."

Jotaro and Kakyoin then sent glares as sharp as daggers at the group of men, now looking scared and hurried off. Clearly not wanting to mess with them. The girls had no idea of their existence. Nemuru

shrugged Kakyoin's arm off her and scooted away a bit. "So, have the two of you decided on what to do after this?" Kakyoin asked them, happy that the problem had been dealt with. "Yeah, I was thinking that after here, we can go take a look around the area just a bit. Ah, maybe going on the cable car to see all over!" Hikari said, already getting excited. She then lowered her voice and said, "I-if you guys want to..."

"Beats just staying here all day." Jotaro said. The others nodded in agreement. After a while, Hikari got up and told Anne that they were going to take a walk around the town. Anne nodded and she got out of the pool. Hikari tried to take of Jotaro's jacket and give it back to him, but he said for her to keep it until they got to her room. When they left, it was just Kakyoin and Nemuru alone. "You're not going?" He asked. "No, I am. Just thought I spend a little more time here, that's all. I'm sure Hikari will wait for us."

Kakyoin chuckled at her. Nemuru glanced at him with unreadable look in her eyes. He was the one who had helped her out on that boat when they first met, without even knowing who she was...and he was the one she had attacked first. Now, she really felt bad. Maybe she's the one who should learn a few things from Hikari. "Hey..." Kakyoin look at her and she gave a small sigh. "I'm...really sorry. For what happen on the boat...Dio...really screwed with my head. I don't expect for all you to fully forgive me."

Kakyoin shook his head. "I understand. I wasn't much better than what you did. But I guess what he did to you was much worse, wasn't it?" He said, softly. "Yeah. It was." She said. "We may not know what exactly he did, but we're willing to trust you and help each other out on his journey. Besides, if you have Hikari for a friend, then you can't be all bad."

Nemuru actually laughed at that. "Thanks...that...means a lot." She said, holding out her hand. "So...I guess, this is the part where we form a friendship?" Kakyoin smiled and shook her hand. "Guess so." The two shared a laugh together as Nemuru stood up from the chair. "Well, we better get going. I hate having her to wait for too long. Ya ready?" Kakyoin nodded as he got up and the two began walking back inside. Maybe...maybe this could be a good thing for her. Ever since the incident, Nemuru had built a wall around herself to keep

everyone else out. She turned so cold and distant. When she felt, she didn't even reach out to her only friend at the time.

'Yeah...I should definitely learn a thing from Hikari. How long has it since I had any close friends..? I should probably open up to these guys...' She shifted her eyes to the dark-haired teen next to her and gave a small smile. *'Maybe I should start with him.'* Yeah. It'll take time, but Nemuru hoped to build some kind of bond with the people Hikari has chosen to call friends. Kakyoin glanced behind them and saw a few guys staring at Nemuru. He shot them a glare and wrapped his arm around her shoulders.

Once again, Nemuru was caught off guard and this time, had blushed pretty pink. Not once has any boy ever done this. Even before, the boys from school were too intimidated to go near her. But...she looked at him and he turned back at her with a smile...Kakyoin seemed so... at least in her view, so confident and genuine. "Sorry, but there are puddles of water everywhere, so it's a little slippery." Nemuru cleared her throat and nodded. *'This guy...'*

Meanwhile, Joseph and Avdol were discussing on some serious matter on. The attacks against them were becoming more relentless and much more dangerous. "To think that the enemy's pursuit would come so early on." Avdol said.

"Don't forget that Dio's body used to belong to Jonathan Joestar." Joseph reminded him. While we're united, he'll know everything Jotaro and I do. That's why his minions' attacks are relentless, but we can use that against him and read his thoughts just as he reads ours."

"Hm. Shall I go buy and camera?" Avdol asked the elder Joestar. Joseph stood up and told his friend, "That won't be necessary." He said as he pointed to the TV that was in the room. "I can use my powers even without a camera." Joseph walked over the the TV and placed his hands on both sides, he then summoned his Hermit Purple. The vines attached themselves on the TV and it turned on, switching between channels all on it own. It flipped through so many channels that for each word it cuts off it slowly, but effectively, gave out a message.

"Very strange, the channels are changing as if the TV has a mind of

its own."

"It's searching for words from among the channels and connecting them into a sentence, creating a message for the ear and not the eye." Joseph explained to him.

"It looks like there...is a...very bad..!" It started.

"There! I think the first part is 'There is a,'."

"Trai...tor..! Who's among...us all..."

"Wait, what was that? What the hell did it just say?" Joseph asked as he didn't catch that very well. "I could be wrong, but I think it said that there is a traitor who is walking among us." Avdol told him.

"Ka...kyo...in! Beware...of...him! Di...o's...loy..al...servant!"

What?! Kakyoin, a traitor?! But...there's no way. He can't be a traitor. Dio had placed a flush Bub on his head, that was proof enough that he used him and intended on possibly killing him when was through of him. There's no way anyone could stay loyal to someone like that. Kakyoin isn't a traitor! He isn't!! Just the TV started to go crazy with static and the channels weren't showing anymore. Instead, the screen showed something even more terrifying than the message. They saw him! Dio!! His back was facing them, they still couldn't see his face, but they knew he was looking right at them. "Joestar, you bastard. You're watching me, well watch this!" Dio said as he turned to face them, his face still shrouded in darkness. He appeared to point at the screen, which began to crack, breaking with each passing second. "Dio!" Joseph screamed out.

"He found us, look out!" Avdol yelled out. The two men jumped back from the TV and took cover, just in time as the TV had exploded with enough force to shake up the entire room! Shards of glass littered the floor as smoke and static flew out from the broken screen. "But...that can't be true, can it?" Avdol asked as they got back up. He didn't want to believe that Kakyoin was still working for Dio all this time.

"You know as well as I do. Hermit Purple says, Kakyoin is a traitor. A servant to Dio, who will, at some point, betray all of us!" Joseph said.

"It can't be!"

"There must be a reason. I won't believe Kakyoin is a traitor, there has to be an explanation. We'll have to be even more alert. If he is still connected to Dio, he could exterminate any one of us while we're sleeping. He'd be just like Dio's very own Trojan horse." Joseph then thought about Kakyoin's whereabouts along with the others. "Where is Kakyoin?" He asked. "He's with Jotaro and Hikari." Avdol told him. Just a few minutes ago, he saw them walking out together. Jotaro and Hikari were walking down the street with Anne right beside them, talking about whatever came to her mind. Walking behind them was Kakyoin, who was staring at the two with a menacing look on his face. He smirked. *'This should be easy.'*

Chapter 14: Kakyoin? A traitor?!

Jotaro, Hikari, Anne and Kakyoin were walking together somewhere in Singapore. Enjoying the comfortable silence and the warm sunny rays. Hikari turned to Kakyoin and asked him why Nemuru hadn't come with them. Kakyoin shrugged his shoulders and said that she didn't feel like coming. Anne spotted a ice cream kiosk up ahead and ran towards. "Can I get some ice cream, please?" She asked the owner. He turned to her with welcoming smile as he greeted the young girl. "Welcome. You know, ice cream is pretty good but this baby here," He said as he held out a fresh coconut. "Chilled coconut juice, nothing in the world like it. How bout it?" The owner offered an, a already made, drink to Anne as she looked at it with little uncertainty.

"I guess we could try it." Jotaro said as he and the others walked up to the kiosk. "Four then" He told the owner. "Thank you much! That's eighteen dollars." He said. Anne got upset with him and told him to lower the price to at least nine or twelve. Hikari started to go through her wallet, counting to see if she had enough when Jotaro gave her a look that said 'don't even think about it'. She quickly put her wallet back in her pocket. "Sorry."

"Here. This should cover it." Kakyoin said as he gave the owner the money to pay for their chilled drinks. Behind them was some sleazy looking guy who was walking by when he set his eyes on the high schooler's wallet. When Kakyion was about to put it back in his pocket, the guy ran up and swiped it from his hand. "I'll take that!" He said as he ran off. Kakyoin only took a glance at the thief and he sent out Hierophant Green after him. His Stand grabbed the guy by his ankle, causing him to trip and dropping his wallet. Of course, because he wasn't able to see his Stand, the guy thought that Kakyoin had done something to make his fall. And turned to give him a piece of his mind.

But he was frozen stiff as Kakyoin glared down at him with the most vicious look that no one would think he could even make. From how his eyes seem to pierce his soul, it was very clear that Kakyoin was

going to cause some serious pain. "So...you dumb, useless, disgusting piece of shit! Who the hell do you think you are?!" He yelled. Catching the attention from Jotaro, Hikari and Anne back at the kiosk, they hadn't noticed that he moved from his spot till just now. "I'll make you wish you were never born!!" Kakyoin shouted as he slammed his knee against the thief's face, breaking his nose in the process. What?! "Kakyoin!" Jotaro called out to him. "What are you doing?" Hikari asked in shock.

However their voices didn't reach their friend as he kept inflicting his merciless punishment. "Get up." Kakyoin demanded, holding the man up by his hair. "You vile, little cockroach dick. Do I look like easy pickings to you? And now, you'll feel the pain!" Kakyoin tossed the thief face-up across the his shoulders before hooking his head with one hand and a leg with the other to then pull down on both ends with brutal force, making thief to cough up blood with every pull. "How dare you touch my wallet with the same grimy fingers that wipe your filthy ass! I can't let you get away with something like that, now can I?!" He yelled, pulling him down with even more force than he used before. "Can I? Come on, tell me!! Can I?!"

Kakyoin wanted an answer from him, but he knew that if kept him in the hold he's in, he'll never answer. But that's exactly what he wants. "Kakyoin, what are you doing to this guy?! You'll kill the bastard!" Jotaro shouted at him, but he wasn't letting up. "Stop! Please, Stop!" Hikari begged, visibly shaking now. What's going on with him?! This isn't like him. Kakyoin had never used this type of filthy language or was ever *this* violent. She didn't understand why Kakyoin was behaving like this all of a sudden. He always been so polite and kind ever since they saved him...so why? Why is he like this? What happened to her friend?!

"Kakyoin! Now cut it out, damn it! You're losing control!" Jotaro couldn't stand back any longer, so he ran up and roughly shoved Kakyoin to force him to release the injured man. Once the man fell to the ground, Jotaro and Hikari went to his side if he was okay. "You're acting like such a bastard. Something's not right." Jotaro said as he looked over Kakyoin. He was picking up his stolen wallet and acted as if nothing had happened. "What's gotten into you?" He asked. Kakyoin turned around and shot him with a dirty look. He dusted

himself off and said, "That hurt, you know. You didn't have to shove me around like you're the one in charge."

"Huh? B-but it's not like that...JoJo was only trying to-." Hikari began to say. "Trying to what?" He snapped at her, making her shrink down. Jotaro glared at him as he stood back up in full height. Anne soon walked up to them to see what was going on. "That man tried to steal my wallet, he was committing a crime. And criminals should be punished. Tell me, am I wrong Jotaro? You'd do the same, old pal." He said as he took a sip from his drink that he took from Anne's hands.

'This guy,' Jotaro thought to himself as he glared at the dark-red haired man. He knew something was wrong with him. He just didn't know what exactly. For now, he should keep an eye on him, and make sure neither Hikari and Anne doesn't get to close to him. "What are you glaring at? You know, the look in your eyes is awfully hostel, Jotaro." Kakyoin said. "What's wrong. Why are you so upset? You couldn't be possibly thinking of ending our friendship over a little tussle with a thief now, would you? You're acting as if I've done something unforgivable." Kakyoin said. "Are you okay?" He heard Hikari say. He looked over and saw that the man had bolted up and ran away in fear. Odd, that backbreaker should've kept him from moving like that. Unless...

"Hikari, did you just heal that man?" Kakyoin asked her. Hikari stood up and gave a hesitated nod. "Y-yes." Kakyoin glared at her and shouted, "You stupid, little bitch! Why the hell would you even think of healing a criminal like him!!" Hikari didn't know what she should say to him to get him to calm down. She was too scared of his violent behavior to even process any words. "I-I-I couldn't...he was in pain...a-and I-." Hikari stuttered. Kakyoin growled at her and made her way towards her. He raised his hand, but Jotaro quickly ran in front of her. Grabbing Kakyoin's wrist so tightly, he hoped he left a bruise, and shoved him away. "And what the hell was that?" Jotaro asked. He was starting to get pissed off now.

"Seriously? She aided a someone who stole from me. A stupid move on her part, wouldn't you agree?" Kakyoin asked him, so nonchalantly. "That gave you no right to try and hurt her." The tall delinquent said, in a low voice. "Hmph." He went. "Are you okay?"

Anne asked her. Hikari kept her eyes down as she nodded her head. Just then a few kids ran by and one of them called out, "Look a beetle!" All of them were amazed the four beetles that were huddled together on a nearby tree. Laughing as they watched them. Kakyoin turned and got a look at the beetles. He then let out a small laugh and held his head.

"JoJo. You're making way too big of a deal out of this. I'm just having a bad day, no big thing." Kakyoin said. Hoping that would help explain his bad behavior and is nothing they should be worried about. "I'm so exhausted from the trip, combined with the fact Nemuru gave me a hard time earlier, it's put me in such a bad mood."

"Just a bad mood, huh?" Jataro asked. Not believing him for a second. He knew what it was like when it comes to being in a bad mood. However, whatever's ticked him off goes beyond that. The way he had 'punished' that pickpocketing thief, he was in control of himself. Kakyoin was fully aware of his actions. "Seem to me, you felt pretty good." He said. Kakyoin gave him a cold stare as Jotaro turned and walked away. He placed his hand on Hikari's shoulder and lead her away from the scene. "The old man and Avdol think it's a good idea to head to India by train. We leave tomorrow. We'll take the cable car to Singapore station to reserve tickets." He said, leaving him behind.

Taking this moment with her, Jotaro turned to Hikari and asked her, "Are you sure you're alright? You were shaking back there." He was still angry that Kakyoin would actually try and slap her, especially since he was given so much kindness and a friendship from her. He also angry at fact Kakyoin called her a 'bitch' as Jotaro wanted to punch his lights out for that. But he had decided against it because he couldn't do it in front Hikari or Anne. Oh, but he will. He, most certainly, will. Hikari nodded at him. She then gave a small smile as she said, "I was a little scared of him, but I'm okay now." Hikari gave his hand a gentle squeeze to let him know that she was fine. Jotaro looked at her for a minute before taking his hand back.

Hikari looked over and saw that Anne wasn't with them. "Anne?" She called out. "Let's go sweetie, don't get left behind." Anne quickly ran up to the two teens and gripped on Hikari's hand. The look on her face was one of pure terror. She was a little pale and was trying to

breath. "Anne?" Hikari said as she bent down to her height to see if she was alright. "What's up, half-pint?" Jotaro asked her.

"Nothing. Don't worry." Anne said as she looked back at Kakyoin. Oh, so that was it. Anne wrapped her arms around Hikari's waist and didn't let go of her the whole way to the station. Jotaro made sure to stay close to the girls, to put as much distance between them and Kakyoin. The latter who kept this odd smile on his face. His eyes held this sort of malice in them. Jotaro wasn't quite sure, but he needed to prepare himself for anything he was going to do next.

Fortunately, their walk to the cable car station, more or less, turned out fairly well as they weren't any other issues or any violent outbursts from Kakyoin. Hikari was uneasy with the heavy atmosphere that was amongst the small group, so when she saw a shop that was selling soft-serve ice cream and told them that she was going to go buy one for each of them. But Kakyoin shut down her offer and told her he didn't want anything. So, while Hikari went to get the ice cream, Jotaro and the others reserve their tickets for tomorrow's train ride. Once that was done, they went to the end of the station and looked out over the view. And for a while, it was a great moment. That's when everything went crazy.

"Hey Jotaro," Kakyoin called out as he began to walked towards him. "Are you gonna eat that cherry? If not, then hand it over already. I'm starving." He said as he plucked the fruit from his dessert. When he did, Kakyoin suddenly pushed Jotaro right off the ledge. He had that same menacing smile of his face as he did so. "Uh-oh, better watch out Jotaro." Kakyoin said. The girls yelled out as they quickly grabbed Jotaro's arm, preventing him from falling. Luckily, Jotaro had managed to grab onto the metal railing when Kakyoin pushed him. While the girls were trying to keep Jotaro from falling, he was laughing like the whole thing was some kind of joke.

"Hahaha! Good one, huh? Hahahaha!" He laughed. Kakyoin continued laughing as Jotaro climbed back over to safety. As Hikari was checking him over, she turned to the purple-eyed man and said to him, "Why are you laughing? That wasn't funny...you've could've killed him." Kakyoin gave her an odd look and tried to play it off. "What? I was only playing with him, no need to make a fuss over it." He told her with a twisted grin. Kakyoin then ate the cherry that he

took, but instead of eating like a normal person, he began playing with it around his tongue. Repeatedly saying the word 'lick'. The way he was doing, along with that creepy look in his eye, made the whole thing disturbing and made them feel....incredibly uncomfortable.

Eventually, it got out off hand and the cherry fell off of his tongue. Falling onto the floor. But Kakyoin didn't seem to care that much as he told Jotaro that the whole thing was a joke. "That look again. What's with this hardcore glaring Jotaro, old pal? Have you lost your sense of humour?" He mocked. As many anyone might guessed, Jotaro was NOT the type to take 'jokes' likes these lightly. He also doesn't do jokes. Kakyoin picked up the cherry and, thankfully, ate it the way you're supposed to. However, when he ate it, Hikari noticed that he grew in size. She went to Jotaro to try and warn him, but then he said to Kakyoin, "Get in, Kakyoin." An empty cable car had just arrived at the station, the doors opened for its next passengers.

"The cable car just got here. Now I told you to get in. See, I got your ticket right here." Jotaro says as he held up a tight fist. His glare, sharpened. He had enough of this. Hikari went back and pushed Anne behind her. "I'm gonna knock your crooked, possessed ass right into that cable car." Kakyoin's eyes widened as Jotaro suddenly gave him a solid punch to the jaw. Jotaro put all of his strength into that blow as he was still furious for Hikari's sake and that fact he had tried to kill him earlier, so this is all Kakyoin deserved. Or so he thought.

Jotaro knew he was strong. He knew he was tough. But he never expected for Kakyoin's jaw to split wide open. Hanging off by a mere thread. "What the?!" Jotaro shouted. "Aahhh!!" Anne screamed. "This..! What is this?!" Hikari shouted. 'Kakyoin' fell back into the cable car with a loud grunt. Then he begun to laugh...however, he sounded much different. His voice was distorted and hollow. "You're a bit off. Possessed isn't quite the word, want to give it another try?" 'Kakyoin asked. Jotaro eyes widened as he was quick to realise that this wasn't who he appears to be. Whoever this was, it wasn't his friend. "Wait a minute...this isn't Kakyoin."

"Congrats on not being as stupid as you look." 'Kakyoin' said as he stood up. His whole being was now big enough to reach the cable car's roof. This newfound height towered over Jotaro's. "Though, you still haven't realised my body's been growing this whole time, have

you?" He said as he tapped the roof with his finger. "Alright, who are you?" Jotaro demanded. He started to think on who this really is...more importantly what kind of Stand this is. He thought to himself as he walked inside the cable car to deal with this creep.

'Is he a Stand? Can't be...I was able to touch him just now. Unless he's a Stand I can strike with my own fists?' The doors closed behind him. Leaving him alone, and cutting himself off to the others. "JoJo!" Anne said as she ran after the cable car. Hikari didn't like how this was going on. She couldn't get to Jotaro, but she knew she had to warn the others about this. Hikari looked over and saw a few pay-phones nearby. She ran over to them and quickly began calling Joseph. "I can merge with any organic matter I consume. I'm a Stand anyone can see and touch. Lucky them, don't you think?" 'Kakyoin' said as his face and voice was getting more distorted, shifting around the disguised to reveal the person who has been posing as Kakyoin the entire time.

"I'm Yellow Temperance of the Temperance card!" The disguise fell off into a yellow, blob mess as it showed its master's true identity. He had dark, curly hair, brown eyes and a muscular build, maroon-colored pants and black shoes. His Stand, Yellow Temperance appears as an amorphous, yellow blob-like substance, with no mouth, eyes, nose or any other facial features, and by the looks of it...it's bound to its user. "Gaze upon my handsome face with envy! You may call me Rubber Soul!" He said. "Come now Jotaro, old pal. Take a good look at your hand. See that little bit of me? It latched on when you hit me and it really doesn't want to let go."

Jotaro looked down and saw what he was talking about. His finger was infected by Yellow Temperance, with a bit of it stuck to it. It was a small portion, but it hurt like hell. As he tried to get it off, Rubber Soul then said, "I advise you not to touch or it'll go after your left hand to." Damn it! "You should save your left hand for picking your nose. This Stand is a slow eater and the more it eats, the bigger it gets. You'll never get it off."

"Crap, damn you!" Jotaro growled as he unleashed Star Platinum on this guy to break his face. **"ORA!"** He/it yelled out as Star Platinum threw a fast punch his way. But Rubber Soul wasn't worried in the slightest as he held a sadistic grin on his lips. "What do you mean

'**Ora**'? When I digest you, I'll shove your own crap down your measly throat." Yellow Temperance flared out and wrapped itself around Star Platinum's arm, painfully burning it. Literally! Jotaro could see the small flames that were on his right arm. "The hell?! This stuff burns!" He said as Rubber Soul let out a wicked laughter as his pain. He knew this would be easy, but he didn't expect it to be this much fun! "Damn Bastard!" The delinquent shouted as he glared at him.

"Please, please pick up." Hikari said to herself as the phone was trying to reach Joseph's room. She prayed that he was in his hotel room and would pick up quickly. She needed to tell them about their new enemy and fast! Jotaro was in danger!! Anne stayed her side as she kept her eyes on the cable car that Jotaro was in. Finally, the phone was answered and she immediately said, "Hello?! Mr. Joestar?! Please, help us! It's JoJo, he's in trouble!" On the other side of the phone, Joseph told her to calm down and said, "Chiara, please try to calm down. Tell me what's wrong." Avdol overheard the poor girl's cry for help as he stood up from his chair and walked over to Joseph's side. "It's Kakyoin!"

"What about Kakyoin?" He asked her. Remembering what Hermit Purple had warned them about, he hoped that this isn't what is was going to be. "It's true. Seems he has betrayed us." Avdol said. Joseph stayed silent as Hikari did her best to explain the situation. "Kakyoin's face split apart, but it...it wasn't him at all! It was some man disguised as him! It's another enemy hired by Dio, and now JoJo's fighting with him now! B-but his Stand is nothing like ours or what we've seen, it's some sort of slim and I-I-I think it's attached itself on him!" Hikari said in a rush.

"Chiara, calm down. Where are you now? Is Anne with you?" Joseph asked her.

"Yes, she's with me. Don't worry, she's safe. We're at the cable car station at the train center." Hikari told him. "JoJo's being attacked, please come quickly! The fake Kakyoin is attacking him!" After hearing all this, Joseph immediately told her to get Anne and herself to come back to the hotel as fast as they could go. Just then, his door opened and two figures walked right in. "Did someone say my name just now?" Joseph and Avdol turned around and saw...Kakyoin had walked in with mildly confused expression. Nemuru was right next to

him, looking rather concerned herself. What the..? Wait, what was Kakyoin doing here?

"Where the hell have you two been?" Joseph asked him. This made the two teens even more confused. "Hm? JoJo and Hikari left us behind, so the two of us were sunbathing by the pool." Kakyoin explained to him. "With your school uniform on?" Avdol asked.

"Yes, why not?" Kakyoin asked. Avdol turned to Nemuru and asked her, "Nemuru, was Kakyoin with you the entire time, with his uniform on?" The dark-purple haired girl nodded as she said, "Yeah, he and I were out by the pool, and the whole time we were there, he hadn't taken off his uniform."

So...if Kakyoin was here in the hotel the entire time...then that means-. Joseph went back to the phone and told Hikari, "It's alright, we have the real one here with us. Chiara, be careful, this means your Kakyoin is a fake!"

"But I already told you that!" Suddenly, Anne let out yell and Hikari quickly turned around and for a minute her heart just stopped. Jotaro had bust through the window and jumped out of the cable car to escape from the Stand user. He jumped and reached out towards the platform that was across from where they were. He reaches out...so close...just a little further...and he-.

Chapter 15: The Joestar Family's secret technique

"Where the hell have you two been?" Joseph asked him. This made the two teens even more confused. "Hm? JoJo and Hikari left us behind, so the two of us were sunbathing by the pool." Kakyoin explained to him. "With your school uniform on?" Avdol asked.

"Yes, why not?" Kakyoin asked. Avdol turned to Nemuru and asked her, "Nemuru, was Kakyoin with you the entire time, with his uniform on?" The dark-purple haired girl nodded as she said, "Yeah, he and I were out by the pool, and the whole time we were there, he hadn't taken off his uniform once."

So...if Kakyoin was here in the hotel the entire time...then that means-. Joseph went back to the phone and told Hikari, "It's alright, we have the real one here with us. Chiara, be careful, this means your Kakyoin is a fake!"

"B-but I already told you that!" Suddenly, Anne let out yell and Hikari quickly turned around and for a minute her heart just stopped. Jotaro had bust through the window and jumped out of the cable car to escape from the Stand user. He jumped and reached out towards the platform that was across from where they were. He reaches out...so close...just a little further...and he-.

He didn't make it. Jotaro's fingers only grazed the platform as he began to fall. But luckily, with the help of Star Platinum, his reach was extended and Star Platinum managed to grab onto the ledge, pulling his master up to safety. As Jotaro climb up, he looked at his hand. Seeing a piece of Yellow Temperance still stuck on it. It was a little painful, it was like a damn leech. "Good freaking grief." Jotaro groaned out of annoyance. *'A Stand that fuses with flesh..? It's devouring my finger...this could get bad.'*

Jotaro pulled himself up and stood above the platform, glaring at Rubber Soul. The latter was still inside the cablecar with a cocky grin on his face. *'But first, I've got to get this stuff off me. Might be easier said than done. It might mean I have to cut off my finger.'*

"Haha! You really think you got away?! Sorry to burst your bubble, old pal!" Rubber Soul called out from the cablecar as he continue to say, "Now dig that earwax out of your ears and listen up, hotshot. Your time's run out cause Yellow Temperance....has no weaknesses! You didn't escape, it's just that I don't have to chase you! You're as good as dead, hahahahaha!!!!"

Jotaro went through his pocket and held up his lighter, lighting it. He glances back and forth between the fire and the small blob in his hand. He *really* didn't want to do this...but what other choice did he have? "This'll hurt like a son of bitch. But I don't have a choice." He said. At the very least, Hikari's Soundless Voice can heal burns. Jotaro brought the lighter over to his finger and set it a blaze. The fire not only covered the slime but also his finger along with it. It hurt like hell, he grit his teeth to try and endure it. Unfortunately, the fire didn't do a thing, it ended up making it spread across his hand even more.

Jotaro's eyes widened as he looked at his nearly consumed hand. "Wait. What the hell? The flame only made it grow bigger." He said, shocked by the sight. "That was a bad idea. Damn, I thought I had it." Looking up ahead, Jotaro saw another cable car heading in his direction. He saw a kid staring out the window with an ice pop in his hand. That gave him an idea. If fire didn't work, then maybe ice can. Jotaro took a deep breath. He towards its directions and, with Star Platinum's strength, he jumped and grabbed on hold of the cable car. Once he was there, he had Star Platinum tear open the door. Dropping down the streets below.

Inside the cable car was the young boy, his sleeping father, their pet dog, and a short, slightly overweighted woman who was sitting across from them. The white dog, startled by the sudden appearance of the young delinquent, barked at him. "Pardon me." Jotaro said as he stepped inside. "My goodness. That's certainly a bizarre entrance." The woman said, unfazed to the fact that someone had, uh, JUMPED ON TO THE CABLE CAR!!!!

"Don't mind me." Jotaro told her as he kneeled down to the little boy's height and told him, "Hey there, kid. I'm going to need to borrow your popsicle for just a second." Jotaro took the ice pop from the boy's hand and he started to tear up a bit at the loss. The woman

saw what this strange young man was doing and out of concern, she asked him, "Hold on, young man. What is it do you think you're doing with that child?"

"Is this your kid?"

"No, he's not but-."

"Then shut up lady and enjoy the scenery." Jotaro said to her. He then turned back to the young boy and, in a surprisingly kind way, told him, "Sorry, kid. When we get down to the bottom, I'll buy you a new one, okay? Whatever kind you want." The boy gave shy nod as he let him take it. Jotaro held the ice pop to his hand said to himself, "If I can't burn it off...." He brought it close to the blob, however, it just made things worse. As soon as it made contact, the blob created small needles and ended up making it dig deeper into his hand. This greatly took Jotaro by surprise. Can nothing get this thing off of him?!

"You're really are stupid. Nothing will work on it, not even fire and ice." The woman said, so calmly. What did this woman just say?! How the hell does she even-?! Wait, a minute. Something's not right here. Jotaro's eyes widened in shock. The woman spread a sinister smirk and said, "I told you before, didn't I? You won't find a single weakness. Hahahaha!" Rubber Soul!! But...how did he get in here before him? Damn it, this guy was beginning to piss him off. The boy began to get a little scared by what was going on so he quickly picked up his dog and huddled against his father for safety, the man quickly woke up as it began to get loud for some reason. "And now you're mine, you little shit! Hahahaha!"

"You bastard. You were already in this cable car, waiting for me, weren't you?" Jotaro asked him. But he needed no answer. What was going through his mind at the moment was how to beat this guy. But how can he when he can't even touch him? Rubber Soul spread an evil smile and said, "Now it's your turn to die!" Rubber Soul discarded his disguise and decided to face Jotaro head on.

"ORA!" Star Platinum reached for the metal handle on top of the door, tore it off and swung it right at Rubber Soul's head. The man's eyes widened as he witnessed the incredible speed of Star Platinum.

But instead of being scared, he again spread a sinister smirk. He was still confident that he was the victor of this fight. "Wha? You're fast. But," Yellow Temperance grew in size and formed a shield around him. So when the handle aimed for his head, it got caught within the slime and keeping its master safe. "I keep telling you, I don't have any weaknesses. Are you even listening to me, you dumbass redneck!?" Rubber Soul shouted at him.

"My Stand is armour that can also absorb power. A defensive wall that can also attack." He continued to say as his Stand began 'eating' the handle in Star Platinum's hand. The slime on Jotaro's hand kept growing more larger by the second. Blood began dripping down as it continued to eat. "No matter how fast you are, no matter how strong or smart you think you are, against Yellow Temperance, you are helpless. There's no way you can defeat me. You won't survive, unless of course, you suck it up and take a cleaver to your right hand." Then suddenly, Yellow Temperance grew even larger in size as it shot forth and clung to Jotaro's whole body. The man wrapped his arms around his son as the thing had just barely missed them. "Do you understand?!"

Jotaro grunted as the slime had almost engulfed his entire body. Damn it, things just keep getting worse, don't they? Not only did he have to find a way to beat this creep, but he also have to find a way to keep that family out of harm. "Try as hard as you want, but you have no way in winning. You're not getting out of this, not until you're digested. I'll eat you up."

"Oh good grief." Jotaro sighed. Rubber Soul raised his eyebrow in confusion. Odd, he should be panicking at this point. "You're right, you really don't have any weaknesses. Maybe you are the world's strongest and that's terrifying. But I'll tell ya, we Kujo's....No,wait. I mean, Joestar's. We use strategy to fight against to fight our way past any obstacle." Jotaro tells him. "You haven't won yet, and I have still one strategy left."

Rubber Soul sputtered out a laughter. Oh, boy. This is too much. This idiot's in the process of being eaten and he still thinks he can win? Man, what a moron. "Really." Rubber Soul taunted him. "And that's to," Jotaro began to say as he remembered what his grandfather told him before. While the girls had gone out, Joseph took him to the side

and told him of the Joestar family's secret technique, to use it if only when it's necessary. He had explained that it had save his life and those around a number of times, and it never fails. *"And that's to..."*

Then Star Platinum suddenly punched a hole in the cable car and the two jumped down, dragging Rubber Soul down with them. "Run away!" Jotaro yelled out. The two fell from the cable car, but Rubber Soul didn't seemed to care. He knows that this was a stupid move on Jotaro's part. Where the hell could even he run to if there's nothing? He's done. Rubber Soul has won this fight. Rubber Soul laughed as he said, "What the hell? You're in the middle of being eaten alive, you dumbass! My Stand's got a hold you can't escape and you'll say you'll run away? Don't make me laugh."

"When I said 'run away'," Jotaro started as he used his Stand to grab hold of Yellow Temperance. Then the two users landed straight into the waters below. Due to Yellow Temperance being wrapped around Jotaro, and since Star Platinum willingly grabbed hold, the slime also wrapped itself around Rubber Soul as well, nearly suffocating him. "I meant into the water!"

"Damn it....! I.....I can't breath....!" Rubber Soul said. Wanting air to return to his lungs again, Rubber Soul opens his Stand's guard to allow himself to breathe and rose back up to the surface. However, because of this, it also left him completely vulnerable. He froze when he suddenly heard Jotaro say, "You let your Stands guard down to take a breath. Your Stand may be invincible, but you sure as hell aren't. If I destroy you, then your Stand dies too!"

Star Platinum grabbed Rubber Soul into a full nelson as Jotaro glared daggers at him. "Do YOU understand?" He said as he raised a fist. "Listen. I've had it up to here with that cocky-ass mouth or yours, alright?! I just happen to be the type of guy who takes these things to heart. And you should know by now that you've pissed me off the most by calling Hikari a bitch!"

Without warning, not that he needed one, but Jotaro landed a strong punch to Rubber Soul's jaw, yelling out, "**Ora!**" It felt good to see this guy loose a couple teeth. Jotaro then slammed his elbow into Rubber Soul's face, knocking him back a few inches. Rubber Soul resurfaced, his "handsome" face all bloody, and held out his hand. Signalling his

surrender to him. "No, please stop it. I can't fight anymore, I'm through! My beautiful nose is completely shattered! And my face is so messed up, they are going to wire my jaw shut too! It hurts!" Yeah...like he gives a damn.

"Spare me! Dio...he-he paid me to do this!" Rubber Soul coughed. "Look, I don't plan on risking my life going after you guys." He told him. To prove his point, Rubber Soul had Yellow Temperance remove itself from Jotaro, finally freeing him. He wasn't to get himself killed like this. "There, see? Oh! And I-I'm so sorry for calling that girl such a horrible name. Forgive me."

"I want something from you." Jotaro tells him. "The other Stand users. I want all the info you've got." Rubber Soul was in shock at what Jotaro had asked of him. One look in his eyes, and he knew he was dead serious. Still though, if he were to give him what he wanted, he'd be turning against them. He may have been a creep, but he still had some morals. "But that's the one thing I can't say! Don't ask me that, please! I won't do it. I mean, I do have some pride, you know. I just can't, okay?"

Jotaro raised his fist up again, heavily implying that he was going to beat the ever loving crap out him. Even if he didn't say anything, he was going to enjoy destroying him. "Okay then. That's honourable."

"I remember now!" Rubber Soul shouted. "There are four of them, okay? One is The Emperor, then Hangman and Empress, and the last one goes by 'Death'."

"Got it. And what about their powers?" Jotaro asked him as Rubber Soul tried to leave. Oh, ho. But the tall delinquent wasn't letting him go that easily. "Sorry, I-I don't know." Rubber Soul told him. Jotaro raised his fist even higher at him. He's not playing around here! "No, no, really! I honestly don't know anymore! Don't you see, Stand users don't reveal their powers. If they did, they'd be exposing their weaknesses out right." He said. "But I do know something. Some witch taught Dio about Stands and her son is one of the four coming after you."

What Rubber Soul said next caught Jotaro by surprise. When he had learn of this man's certain characteristics, he knew he had to tell

Polnareff. "His name is Centerfold. He's unmistakable because he has two right hands. His card is The Hangman. He's the one who killed Polnareff's little sister, isn't he? I've heard the occasional rumour about his powers." Rubber Soul swam to the street's edge and tried to pull himself up as he continued. "A mirror. Apparently, he uses a mirror. I haven't actually seen it, but Polnareff has no chance of winning. He's dead meat."

The slime Stand user then looked on ahead and saw three blue crawdads on a drainage pipe. It wasn't that far away from Jotaro at all. Rubber Soul then spread a smirk and he pulled himself onto the larger pipes near the edge. "I just noticed something, Jotaro." He laughed. "Looks like I got some luck on my side. Hahaha, sucks to be you. See that drain over there, off to your right? The one with all the blue crawdads? Take a real good look."

Jotaro looked into the direction he told him and saw just in time to see one on the crawdads go limp and get dragged through the drain pip. He could hear the distinct sound of something feeding off of it. His eyes widened in realisation. Two of the metal screws came off and a familiar yellow slime was seeping through. He snapped back to face Rubber Soul, who had got back up to dry land. Laughing in glee and his Stand was being sent through a manhole. That particular manhole connects to the very same drain pipe. And Jotaro was in perfect range of it!! Yellow Temperance shot out from the drain pipe and caught the delinquent. It was grown larger as it engulfed his torso. It grabbed ahold of his and yanked him towards the drain pipe. It was clear that it was going to crush him through the small hole and devour him.

"Now you can't attack me, loser! I guess what I've told you about the man with two right hands will go to waste." Rubber Soul shouted as his grin spread even wider. Yes! This was it! He won! There's no way this idiot can escape now. "You're not gonna be able to help poor Polnareff, Jotaro Kujo! Aren't I lucky to have this drain to slurp you into. And you thought you had me, didn't you! Man, am I lucky! Time to power up with some crustaceans!" The other two crawdads were quickly consumed and made Yellow Temperance grow even more stronger and more bigger.

The slime held a tighter grip on Jotaro's right arm and pressed it

against the drainpipe. Jotaro clench his jaw as he glared at the slime's User. "This is going to be fun. I'll mash you up and turn you into jelly! And when I kill you, Dio's gonna give me a hundred-million dollars! Haha, a few minutes of brawling with you and I will be set for life! Aren't I, lucky?! Tell me I'm lucky, you ball-less little butt-munch!!"

What was Jotaro's response to that? A simple smirk. Geez, it's hard to take this guy seriously. "Good grief, really? When you're focused on everything else, it's hard to observe yourself. You don't get it, do you?" Jotaro told him. "Fine. Then I'll just beat the lesson in; You're luck finally ran out. Before, you got away with only a broken nose." Rubber Soul's eyes widened slightly. He saw Star Platinum giving him a wide grin. "When I'm done, you won't have bones left to break!!" Jotaro yelled as he used Star Platinum to punch the drain and increase water pressure, breaking the manhole open, smacking him in the face with said manhole, and sending him flying back into the water.

Life lesson. When Star Platinum smiles...not even God can save you.

Rubber Soul broke through the water surface and he coughed out for air. He was soon grabbed by the hair and was forced to look at Jotaro Kujo in the eyes. The burning rage was building up. Rubber Soul then let a very nervous laugh and he said, "Uh...hahaha...I was only kidding around, Mr. Jotaro. I swear, I was just messing with you buddy! Didn't mean anything by it, okay? Be cool, man, be cool. It was just a prank!" Yeah....that's not going to cut it. "Uh, wait. Hang on a second.... You're not thinking about punching me anymore, are you? I'm seriously injured here. My nose is badly broken and jaw's going to be wired shut." He laughed, nervously.

As mentioned before, does it look like Jotaro gives a crap about all that? Don't think so. "Just shut up already. I have nothing more to say to you, you're way too pathetic. I'm done wasting my breath."

"**ORAORAORAORAORAORA!!!**" Star Platinum yelled out as it finish him off with a barrage of punches while Jotaro held his head up.

Later

"Ugh, good grief." Polnareff sighed. "So we're finally heading to India.

And the man with the two right hands is called, Centerfold. Right." The Joestar Group were now on a train ride to India. After Jotaro took care of Rubber Soul, he went back to the hotel to meet everyone. Of course, a worried Hikari was there waiting for him. Upon seeing him, she quickly ran up and gave him a hug. Grateful that he was alright. As she hugged him, Jotaro told everyone about Rubber Soul and the information he gave him. So now, they're going to India with a few ideas of who'll be coming after them. Jotaro also told Polnareff about the identity of his sister's murderer.

"By the way, where'd did Anne run off to?" The French man asked as he noticed that they were one person short. "She was hanging around Singapore station right before our train departed but..." Joseph began to say.

"She vanished. Remember, she came to Singapore to meet her father. I'm sure she found him." Avdol said with a smile.

"Yeah, well that story about meeting up with her dad sounded fishy to me, I bet she's a runaway." Polnareff said. "But it is a bit lonely without that little rugrat. Right, JoJo?" He asked, turning to look at the delinquent. Jotaro gave a small smile and he let out a "Hmph." Hikari smiled at her best friend as she leaned against his arm. "But that Stand earlier was pretty creepy. Freaks me out that a Stand could disguise himself as me." Kakyoin said.

"You know, I've been thinking about it. He must've transformed when Hikari and I left the hotel."

"That makes sense. After all, you two left before us, so there was plenty of time for him to disguise himself as Kakyoin and meet up with you." Nemuru said, agreeing with him. Looking down at the plate in front of Jotaro, Kakyoin asked him, "JoJo, those cherries? Are you going to eat them? Not to be greedy, but they are my favourite. Could I have one?"

"Yeah, sure."

"You're the best." Kakyoin said as he took a cherry into his mouth....and began playing with it on his tongue in the same manner as Rubber Soul's? What?! The hell?! Jotaro watched in with a creeped

out expression while Hikari clung on to his arm as she whimpered in fear. It wasn't as creepy as when Rubber Soul had done it....but it still didn't make it any better.

While they were beyond uncomfortable by it, Nemuru just watched him with mild confusion. She raised an eyebrow as she began saying, "How do you eat your cherries like that? WHY do you eat your cherries like that? You need to fix that." Kakyoin chew his favourite fruit as he looked at Nemuru with a confused expression. "What do you mean?"

"I'm just saying."

"Oh! Look you guys, the flamingos are in flight." Kakyoin said, gazing out the window. "Really?" Nemuru asked, taking a look for herself. The other two teens hadn't really bothered in looking as they just wanted to forget they ever saw that.... Again. Hikari spend the whole trip, resting against Jotaro's arm, as he placed his head against his hand. "Oh good grief." He sighed. In an adjacent train car, unbeknownst to the Joestar Group, Anne was in a deep sleeping. Looks like she's along for the ride.... least for a little while.

"JoJo...." She mumbled into sleep as she snuggled against her backpack.

Chapter 16: Emperor and Hanged Man, Part 1

"Tokyo. Hong Kong. Singapore. So the India leg of our journey is finally upon us." Joseph said. The group was currently on a small boat that heading towards the harbour in India. It was foggy, so they couldn't see a damn thing outside of the small windows. "But..." Joseph went as he scratched the side of his head in uncertainty. "Well, I'm a little bit worried. I mean, is there anywhere to get a cheeseburger there? I've always heard that India was the land of curry, disease, too many people."

"Curry is sounds pretty good to me." Hikari said, softly.

"No offence, but I'm worried that my stomach won't be able to handle the culture gap." Polnareff said. Avdol let a soft chuckle before reassuring his friends that things weren't going to be a bad as they might appear. "That assessment is rather distorted. You needn't worry, it's a country of extraordinary people. That, I assure you, my friends." As soon as he finished, the boat had reached the harbour and the walkway was set down for the passengers.

"Well, we've reached Calcutta. Let's get going." Avdol said as he opened the door for them to experience life here in India. With Avdol's reassurance, the others were willing to give it a try and face it head on. Besides, just how bad could a small part of the country be?

"Aaahh!" Hikari screamed as she stepped away, covering her chest with her arms. Nemuru quickly went over to her side and held her protectively. She growled at the crowd of people, "Who the hell groped her? I will end you!" She yelled.

Yeah...as it turns out the preconceptions they had about the country are true. Earlier, Joseph had called over a taxi for all of them and the ride was going well. That is until their taxi had stopped in the middle of the road because of a napping cow, which is considered a holy animal in India. Because of this set back, they had no choice but to exit the car. But as soon as they did, the group was practically ambushed by hoards of people surrounding them. The guys quickly

formed a protective circle around the girls as more and more people began to swarm them.

"Let me carry that for you!" A man asked Polnareff. The Frenchman cringed away from him as he held his bag close to him and out from the man's reach.

"Want a tattoo? You're very pretty!" A middle-aged man told Kakyoin as he offered to give him a discount if he wanted a special design tattoo.

"Need some antivenin, it won't hurt your stomach." "Stay in our hotel." Two men said to Joseph as they try to get his attention on their deals. Joseph held up his hands as he tried to tell him that he wasn't interested. This is Calcutta, India. In the twentieth century, its population is eleven million. Calcutta buzzes with a bustling energy that will pull you in and never let you go.

"Gah, I stepped in some cow shit, damn!!" Polnareff yelled out.

"Oh crap, somebody's already stolen my wallet!" Kakyoin said as he checked his pockets for it.

"Would the two ladies like to try our facials? Or perhaps manicures and pedicures? We'll gladly make your hair shine like the sun." A woman in heavy makeup and large earrings said as she tried to reach in for the girls. Nemuru pushed Hikari behind her as she said, "Keep your freakish nails away from us!"

Jotaro wasn't having much fun of this either as he was in the process of being "strong-armed" by a bunch of kids as they pulled on his jacket and chain. "Tip! Tip! Tip!" "If you don't give me tips, you won't go to heaven, sir."

"Hey kid, don't put your nose all over my stuff!" Polnareff cried out.

"Avdol! So this is India?!" Joseph shouted at his fortune-teller friend. Avdol turned to his with a bright smile. "See? Great country, isn't it?" He said as he laughed. "They're what makes India great, don't you think?"

After what felt like an entirety in that mob, the group had finally

escape them and, thankfully, found a more peaceful street. They spotted a restaurant and decided to take a breather from the craziness that just went down. "Here, try this. This is chai. I think you'll find it to your liking." Chai is one of India's most poplar drinks. A sweet concoction made by boiling black tea, sugar, and ginger with milk. It's good stuff. After taking a sip of chai, Jospeh let out a sigh and said, "At last, a little peace."

"Be patient with India. Once you get used to it, you'll see how wonderful this country is." Avdol told them.

"You know, I kind of like this place. It's pretty cool." Jotaro said, shocking his grandfather as he never thought he'd hear something like that from him. "What, Jotaro!? You can not be serious." Hikari laughed a little before smiling. "JoJo's right. I may have been a little overwhelmed, but India is pretty fun."

"At least they aren't as bad as the Japanese...." Jospeh said, vvveeerrryyy quietly to himself. Hikari caught the mumbling and asked, "What was that?"

"AH! Uh, at least they aren't as lovely as the Japanese. Hahaha....." Joseph said, laughing nervously. He prayed that this would save him. Hearing that lame ass cover up, Jotaro facepalmed. God, that was so stupid.

"Haha. Mr. Joestar, you're so funny." Hikari giggled. Joseph then breathed a sigh of relief. Safe!

"It's a hell of a lot of culture shock, though." Polnareff said. "Guess I'll like it once I'll get used to it, huh?" Polnareff reached for his bag and got from his seat. "Well, I guess people adapt to surroundings eventually. Where's the john?" He asked a waiter. "It's right over there, sir." The waiter said as he gestured to an entryway in the back of the restaurant.

Before Polnareff left, Jospeh stopped him by asking, "Hey Polnareff, aren't you going to order first." Polnareff gave a smile and said, "Pick for me. It better be something amazing. Something gorgeous and sophisticated that suits a Frenchman such as moi." With that, he went straight for the bathroom. "He wants sophisticated food?" Hikari

asked.

"Ugh, can he be more of a pompous prick? What does he even mean?" Nemuru said, rolling her eyes at the silver-haired man. "It means it doesn't matter. He'll eat anything." Kakyoin told her as he scanned through the menu choices. "Let's see, what's something he'll like? Excuse me?" He said as he called for the waiter. While they were ordering their food, Polnareff was making his way towards the bathroom. However, he was stopped by an employee, who gave him a wooden staff and told him to use it once he entered the bathroom.

At first Polnareff didn't know what to do with the thing and confused to why he was given this, but regardless he proceeded like nothing was wrong. He was pleasantly surprised to find the toilet to be nice and clean, despite it's odd appearance. Polnareff was about to do his business, when he screamed and freaked out when he saw that a pig's head was poking out from the toilet. He got the same employee to explain to him that the pig pen down below the restaurant was built higher than it should be.

After all that, Polnareff decided that no matter how hard he'd try, he'll never be used to India. Soon, he left the bathroom and thought it would be best to wait till he finds a normal bathroom. Polnareff was washing his hands as he said, "I'll wait till we get too the hotel."

"Sorry to keep you waiting." Polnareff peeked over the corner and saw that the food his friends had ordered had just arrived. Ah, good timing. Guess he should hurry up then. Polnareff grabbed a towel and dried his hands when he looks into the mirror. He was taken by surprised when he saw a hand pressed up against the window behind him. The owner of the hand slowly revealed itself to Polnareff, and he knew that it didn't look human. Polnareff let out a gasp and he quickly turned around to face it.

However, when he turned around....he found nothing. The being was gone. It wasn't there. But that didn't make sense, he just saw it! "Uh, where is he?" Polnareff asked himself. He carefully approached the window, but still he found nothing. "No way... Too weird. I know I saw someone out there." He continued to check around before he thought that he must've imagined it. With what they gone through so far, it's likely they might hallucinate from the stress of it.

Polnareff laughed at himself for being silly and blamed his little hallucination on culture shock. Besides, it's probably nothing. Right? Polnareff leaned over the sink and let out a sigh. When he looked up, he felt his heart stopped when the thing appeared again. It looked much closer than it did before. And this time, it pushed the window open! It was coming in! It opened the window wide and was creepily crawling inside. Seeing it in it full, it reflects that of a mummy with mechanical elements, making it seem less human. Its body is covered in bandages, with half its brain exposed.

"What the-?!" Polnareff shouted as he whipped around. He turned but once again he saw nothing and the window was closed. What the...? He turned back to the mirror and saw the thing was still making its way inside, getting closer. He turned back and forth, he could see the thing but at the same time, he didn't. "What the hell is going on here?!" Polnareff asked in himself. "I can only see this damned thing in the mirror." Wait a minute... Mirrors.... Mirrors... He can only see it through the mirror! This must be- "The mirror Stand, Jotaro talked about." Polnareff in realisation. "This is not good. Mon Dieu, this is so not good."

The Stand was very close to him now. His eyes widened when he saw that it produced a knife from its wrist. It was going to attack! No! This was him. This Stand belongs to him! The bastard who murdered his beloved sister! "Augh! Silver Chariot!" He called forth. He pierced his sword through the mirror and shattered it into pieces. He may have destroyed the mirror, but Centerfold is still out there. He stay here any longer!

"JoJo, here. You must try this." Hikari said as she offered a piece of her food to Jotaro. "Hm? Sure." He said as he took it from her hands. Jotaro was about to take a bite when he saw Polnareff rushed out with a angry expression. "A Stand! But where's the user?! Who is it?!" He began glancing at every person in the restaurant, trying to see who has two right hands. But no one had them, which means that he's somewhere else. He was getting impatient. Polnareff was consumed by his hatred by the man and he stormed off outside to try and find.

Only problem was that there way too many people and it could take forever to find him. But Polnareff was determined. He came this far,

and he wasn't going to give up! Centerfold was going to pay for what he did to his sister! "Damn it!" He shouted. "What's the matter, Polnareff?" Joseph asked as he and the others joined him outside. "What is this about?" Avdol asked him.

"If that was it. If that Stand belongs to who I think it does...then," Polnareff said, clenching his fist. "That means I've finally found him. Jotaro, the Stand user who uses the mirrors, he's here!" Jotaro narrows his eyes. He didn't like how this was going. "The bastard who killed my sister. My angelic sister. The scum who heartlessly trampled my sister's life, soul and pride. Who destroyed the world's most pure-heart." After all these years. After so many years spent tracking him down. He's got him. "Finally. Finally, we meet."

"Are you absolutely sure it's him?" Joseph asked cautiously. If it was indeed the man who Polnareff's been after, and if it came only be seen through a mirror, then they need to think of some kind of plan to trap him. "It's settled. Mr. Joestar, I'll be travelling on my own from here on out." Polnareff said. Shocking the Joestar crew. "With my sister's murderer finally within reach, I'll be damned if I'm going to wait for him to come after me. I'm screwed if he gets the drop on me and that's just not my style. I'll find him first and kill him."

"But we don't even know what he looks like or what his Stand is." Kakyoin pointed out to him.

"He's got a point. You don't know what his Stand's capabilities are and you'll end up dead if you're not careful." Nemuru told him.

"He's got two right hands, that's enough for me." Polnareff quickly said. "And don't forget, he knows that I'm coming after him. That should put him on the defensive and give me the advantage. See ya." And with that Polnareff walked away. Even knowing that he needed to do this, Hikari was worried for Polnareff. And his Stand sounded terrifying. Is there anyway to beat it? Hikari looked at Polnareff and was going to try and get him to stay when Avdol suddenly spoke.

"Tough talk for a man who's digging his own grave." That caused Polnareff to stop dead in his tracks. From the tone in his voice, it sounded like he was implying something. He turned around and glared at the Egyptian man. "And that means?"

"Just as it sounds, my friend."

"Are you implying that I'm gonna lose?" He asked.

"Yes." Avdol answered with little hesitation. "Can't you see the enemy attacked in order to isolate you, he's exploiting your biggest weakness. I won't let you go alone, Polnareff." The latter was getting even more angry as he walked up to Avdol and got up in his face. "Listen up, I'm only going to say it once. This whole time, I never once gave a damn about Dio. I told you in Hong Kong that I would go along with you so that I could get my revenge." Polnareff told him as he turned to the two members of the Joestar family.

"Mr. Joestar and Jotaro already know this." Hikari looked between Polnareff and the others. Why are they having this argument in the first place. Polnareff's anger is understandable, but...but he can't leave. They've already became such good friends. *'We are friends...right?'* Hikari thought. "M-Mr. Polnareff, please do go. We can help you, you don't have to do this alone." She said.

Polnareff looked at the young girl and sighed. "I'm sorry, Hikari. But I've been alone from the beginning, I've always been fighting alone." He said. That struck a cord within Nemuru. Any other day, she would've called him an idiot and insult him mercilessly. But now, as much as she hates to admit it, Nemuru has something to relate to Polnareff's rage. All the pain, the sorrow, the loneliness... Nemuru knew how it felt. She wanted revenge as well...but, she can't be so reckless, especially since she still has someone to protect. She clenched her fists tight as she said, "This takes ingenious levels of stupidity! Even for you, Polnareff. If you leave right now, you're as good as dead!"

"Okay, you know what?! I can't stand to spend one more second being around you, Nemuru!" Polnareff shouted at her. "You may think that you're a part of this team but I don't!" Nemuru felt her anger rise at his stupidity and selfishness as she grit her teeth. Nemuru growled and nearly tackled him if Avdol didn't hold her back. "Nemuru, stop!"

"I don't need to think I'm a part of the team to know that I finally have people willing to stick with me and help me!! I understand your rage! I understand your sorrow! I understand more than anything in

this group, dammit!! I just want to save my mom!! Don't do this alone!! Nothing good will come out of it!! Look what it did to me!!" Nemuru yelled out, nearing the verge of crying. Nemuru hide her face as she breathed heavily. Everyone stood in shock at her sudden outburst as Hikari gently gripped her shoulders, softly speaking to calm her down.

Avdol released the girl and left her in Hikari's care. As they stepped back, Avdol turned to Polnareff with a stern glare. "You're a selfish fool. Did you forget that you were brainwashed by Dio?! Are you so foolish, you've forgot that he's the root of all of this?!" Avdol yelled.

"You have no idea how it feels like to have your sister murdered, so shut the hell up!!" Polnareff shouted at him. What he said next was...something that should've been left unsaid. "I heard the last time you met Dio, you pissed yourself and ran away!" Avdol's eyes widened at that. Yes, he may have ran away...but at the moment, he knew if he had fought him, he would've turned into his slave and been long dead. "A coward like you would never understand why I need to do this!"

"What did you say?" Avdol said as he reached a hand towards him. Polnareff roughly shoved him away and yelled, "Don't touch me. You just got lucky the day you beat me in Hong Kong, enough with this lectury!"

"How dare you..."

"Oh, did that offend you?" Polnareff mocked. "But don't forget, I'm a lot angrier than you are right now and with a hell of a lot better reason. You can just keep being yourself with your 'Holier-than-thou' attitude, Avdol!"

"Why you-!" Avdol shouted as he went in to throw a punch at him when he was suddenly stopped by Joseph, who grabbed his wrist at the last minute. The elder JoJo had decided that this had gone on long enough. Besides, they were bringing in an unnecessary crowd. "Mr. Joestar-!"

"That's enough. Just let him go." Joseph said to him. "Now that his mind has made up, I doubt that anybody could stop him." Avdol

looked at Joseph for a moment, he turned away. Letting out a sigh. He swears, Polnareff was about as stubborn and foolish as a mule. He once believed that he was a man of honour and chivalry...but now... "Yeah? I lost all respect for him, that's all. My impression of him was completely wrong." Avdol said, sombrely. "You are correct in that I did run in fear from him. You see I'm certain that foresight will let us win. Rushing in without thinking will get us killed."

"Oh? Then I'll say this with certainty too," Polnareff began as he stepped up to Avdol one last time. "You're precious little divination will be wrong." He flipped Avdol's tassel, turned heeled and began walking away. Suddenly Polnareff felt a tug at his hand and, at first, was going to tell the person to piss off but stopped when a pair of sad sapphire eyes gazed up at him.

Hikari gripped his hand tight, silently telling him not to go. Tears were forming in her eyes. She didn't like this. Why were they fighting..? Friends don't fight like this. Polnareff stared at the young girl for a moment before he wrest his hand back and without saying another word or looking back, Polnareff left them.

The day rolled on by. The sun was setting near the horizon. And somewhere in a secluded area of India, an elephant crossed the land. Carrying its two passengers on its back. A cowboy with an above-average height and medium build. At his back he has light, neck-length hair and blue eyes. He has dimples in his cheeks and a cleft chin. He wears light-coloured clothes with a dark undershirt and a wide-brimmed hat from which hang two long, thin, loose straps; and a loose, sleeveless top or a type of poncho, hanging below his waist in a rectangle of fabric of mid-thigh length.

His lover behind him was a beautiful young Indian woman in typical Indian attire. The cowboy believed that they had traveled far enough as they were a few feet away from an old, semi-demolished ruins and stopped the elephant. He then told his lover, "Time to get off. I'm here to see a friend of mine." He motions the elephant to lower itself and once it was close enough to the ground the cowboy's lover stepped down. "Now get gone girl. You're on your own." He said as he motions the elephant to get on the move again. "Please make me your wife. I'll do anything you want." His lover said, stopping him from leaving. This can't be the end, could it? No, it mustn't, not after

everything they've been through. Her only wish was to be with him forever, and if being his wife means that, then so be it.

"Hm?" The cowboy went. "My life will belong to you. Just say whatever you wish of me, my love. Please let me stay with you, let me be by your side forever."

"Oh come on now. Don't be stupid, you're still only sixteen." He reminded her.

"I'm old enough to marry!" His lover responded quickly. "I love you." She said. Her gorgeous violet eyes only held her undying love for him. Why must he leave her behind? She loved him more than anything, didn't he love her back? The cowboy looked into her eyes and sighed. Guess she doesn't understand after all. He hopped off the elephant and walked towards her. He brought her close to him and held her hand. He gave her a sad smile as he said, "Listen, I'm just a no good drifter, baby. I live each day like it's my last. And one day, the end will come for me." His lover's heart was breaking. Is that his reason? It must be, he's never lied to her before.

But if he were to die...than she should be right there at his side. So that she may die right alongside him. If they couldn't be together in life, then they'll be together in heaven. His lover was about to speak, but he hushed her by placing a finger to her lips. "Shhh. This is no life for a lady, and you have royal blood. We can't have a fairytale marriage, no matter how much we might love each other."

His lover gasped lightly. "Really? You never said before, you love me?"

"Yeah." The cowboy said, smiling. "You're the only woman I've ever loved." Hearing those words from him warmed her heart. His lover smiled, happily. She knew it. She knew he loved her. "That's just it." He continued. "It's cause I love you that we can't marry. I want you to be happy and have something better. You understand, don't you?" So...he's leaving for her sake? So that she wouldn't be burdened with a man doomed to die? As much as it pained her, his lover nodded her head. "I know, sweetheart. This breaks my heart just as much as it breaks yours."

His lover felt tears coming into her eyes and she cried into her hands. She didn't want to say goodbye, but if this is what he wants... The cowboy kissed the crown of her head and pulled her into a loving embrace. "But I'll come back to see you and hold you like this whenever I can." He told her. "That's enough to make me happy." His happiness...that's right. His lover smiled and held rested her hands on his chest. She closed her eyes and smiled. "Okay."

While she was in bliss, the cowboy spread an unnerving grin. He let her go and hopped back on the elephant. He tipped his hat to her and said, "Goodbye. Love you, darling." And he left, just like that. Leaving her behind. His lover could do nothing but wave goodbye and prayed for his well-being. As he reached the ruins, a snarky chuckle caught his attention. He looked and saw that it was his companion. "You know it's bad manners to eavesdrop."

His companion continued to only give out a his snarky laughter. Man, he had no idea his cowboy friend was a good actor. He almost had him fooled. Almost. Still that was an entertaining showcase. "You think I spent too much on romance, don't cha?" The cowboy asked him. "Well, when you got girls like her all over the world at your beckon call, you've always got an ally. A partner. They'd do anything for me, even throw away their own lives. You are aware of how I work, aren't you? Mr. Centerfold?"

The man with two right hands, Centerfold laughed again. He knew how he liked to work and that's find by him. After all, he had already made the first strike by provoking the idiot Polnareff. Speaking of which, "By the way, about this Silver Chariot's Polnareff. Seems that he's left the group and is looking for you on his own. What do you want to do?" He asked. "He totally fell for your plan. Hook, line and sinker." The cowboy grinned sadistically. "Shall we go and kill him first?" He stopped when he spotted something slithering after Centerfold. A king cobra. The cowboy narrowed his eyes at the snake. Hm. This could be useful for practice.

The cobra leaped forwards to attack Centerfold. But the cowboy immediately equipped his Stand directly into his hand. His Stand is in the form of an elaborate, impractical-looking silver revolver. A metal frame covers the long barrel, under which is positioned a cylinder with no apparent use. It has no sight and a large sphere is embedded

in the metal frame between the hammer and the barrel. He aimed at the snake and with a smirk, he fired. The bullet traveled faster than the snake and severed its top part from the rest of its body clean off.

It's top part flew towards Centerfold with its venom-filled fangs bared. But unfortunately for the snake, its reflection was captured in a glass bottle next to him, and his Stand had appeared and completely mutilates the snake. Tearing it to shreds. Centerfold stood up and the cowboy hopped down from the elephant. "Let's go. You know, between your Hang Man and my Emperor, I have no doubt we can kill them all. No sweat." He said. "This'll be one hell of a ride." Centerfold laughed once more and the two walked to the town where the Joestar Group lies in.

Meanwhile, Polnareff stared out the window of his hotel room in silence. He was thinking about how things went down between him and Avdol. Between him and Nemuru, of all things. He wondered if he had any right to say those cruel words to them. He wondered if he should've said them at all. After all, even if they weren't great, Polnareff still had some pleasant memories. If he were to get his revenge on Centerfold...what then? Would he go back and apologise? Or would he just say goodbye and go back home?

Chapter 17: Emperor and Hanged Man, Part 2

The next morning, the remaining Joestar crew had gathered around for breakfast in a different hotel. Sitting in a deafening silence. Not since yesterday, they didn't have any else to say. To make matters even more dreary, it had begun to rain outside. Matching the depressing feeling hanging over them. Hikari gazed sadly at Nemuru. Out of all of them, Nemuru hadn't spoken a single word since yesterday's fight and this morning. Last night, Hikari tried to talk to her but she's shut it tight.

Looking over to an empty seat, Joseph softly said, "So he really didn't come back after all." The others followed his glance. The empty chair was a reminder that Polnareff wasn't with them anymore. If he was here, he would've probably made this situation more light-hearted. But he wasn't. Was he alright? Did he had some sort of strategy to beat Centerfold? What...what was he thinking going on alone?

Later on in the day, Polnareff searches for a lead. Asking nearly every person in the area if they seen someone -anyone- with two right hands. But so far, they all said the same thing. They never seen anyone who fits that description. Polnareff was growing furious and getting impatient. He knew that Centerfold was around somewhere close by. He just...didn't know where. Yet, he was determined to find him. No matter how long it takes. Then...he found it!

"What? You've seen him?" Polnareff asked a homeless man, who was sitting in between two stores. "Are you absolutely sure you saw a man with two right hands?" When the man nodded, Polnareff kneeled to his level and asked him where he saw him. The man then pointed in the direction. Polnareff looked at and saw the two men slowly approaching him. But his primary focus was on one of them. The one who the rain didn't touch, as if he was protected by an invisible shield. At that instant, he knew exactly who it was. Centerfold! The rain had began to clear up and the sun's light was breaking through the dark clouds. However, something went wrong.

Even though Polnareff just saw *two* men approaching him, Centerfold

had suddenly vanished from his view. The only one left was the cowboy himself. Polnareff growled beneath his breath and went in to confront him. "The gun is mightier than the sword." The cowboy suddenly said. "Huh?" Polnareff asks in confusion. "Hmm. Not bad, if I do say so myself." The cowboy smiled, tipping his hat.

"Wait. What? Who the hell are you, buddy?" Polnareff asked him. The cowboy smirked and lifted his head to meet him in the eye. "Hol Horse. That's what they call me." He said. "I'm a Stand user just like you are. And my card is the Emperor. Lord Dio paid me to get rid of you guys, so say your prayers and get ready for a beaten."

Polnareff gave an annoyed sigh and said, "Look here, cowboy. I don't give a rat's ass who you say you are. Where is the man with two right hands?"

"That was pretty rude. You asked me who I am, so I answered you. Well, whatever. I came here with that guy." Polnareff's eyes widened in shock. This cowboy was working with him?! Does that mean they're partners? Oh man, he wasn't expecting this. "He's nearby." Hol Horse told him.

"What? Where is he?!" Polnareff demanded. Looking around for any sign of him. "There's really no point at all in you asking that." Hol Horse tells him with a cocky grin. "I, Hol Horse, will have the pleasure in snuffing you out." At first, Polnareff glared at him before he gave a grin of his own.

"Arrogant morons like you always talk trash and it always end up the other way around." Hol Horse couldn't help but laugh at that. He laughed as if he heard the funniest joke imaginable. "Oh, what that funny?"

"Lord Dio had you pegged. "Polnareff had the fatal habit of underestimating his opponents. Beating him into a corpse won't be any trouble for you"." Hol Horse suddenly said. That shocked Polnareff. Had Dio really told him that?! This didn't feel right. "He was exactly right, so I couldn't help but laugh."

"Hmph. If I can't face him until I defeat you then that's just what I'll do, chump." Polnareff said. "Bring it on." Screw what Dio said, this

cowboy doesn't scare him. And once he's finished with him, he's going straight for Centerfold.

"Ever heard of military chess? The tank is stronger than the soldier and the tank is weaker against the mines. See, it's pretty much the basics of battle." Hol Horse said. "My Emperor is stronger than you, so I thought I'd be a gentleman. I'll let you know my Stand's abilities before me fight, so we're square. The gun is mightier than the sword. Ha, such a brilliant quote."

The Frenchman narrowed his eyes at him. "What are you trying to say exactly?"

"That I have have a Stand that shoots, and a sword simply can't beat that." Hol Horse answered. Polnareff placed a hand next to his ear and leaned in close to...hear him better. "So what? A peashooter?" He laughed out loud at the other man. His stupid laughter had caused Hol Horse to laugh as well. The two began laughing like crazy people as some of the citizens were glancing at them oddly. They suddenly stopped laughing as a single drop of water landed on a puddle.

"Prepare to die." They said in unison. Hol Horse made the first move and summoned his Emperor. "You underestimated me! And now Polnareff, you're dead!" He said as shot a bullet at Polnareff. It was fast, but to intercept the bullet fast enough, Polnareff had Silver Chariot take off his armour. Silver Chariot went in to slice the bullet in half down the middle, but the bullet avoids the sword by itself. *'Wait! What the-?!'* Polnareff thought. *'That's impossible! It bypass my sword! Oh crap!'*

Hol Horse smirked at his bewildered expression. *'The bullet is also my Stand. And underestimating me just cost your life.'* The bullet flew like a miniature torpedo and was positioned to land directly between Polnareff's eyes. Polnareff couldn't believe was happening. Was he going to die here?! What should he do?! "Polnareff!" Before he knew, the Frenchman was tackled to the ground as the bullet missed its target. He looked down and saw that it was Avdol who just saved his life! The fortune-teller had appeared just in time to push him out of the way.

"Wha... Avdol?" Polnareff was so confused as to why he was here?

And how did he managed to find him? "I've been worried about you and now look where you are!" Avdol yelled at him. "Your ego will end you, Polnareff!"

"You're worried about me?" He didn't understand. He called him a coward and they had that fight. Why would Avdol have any reason to worry about him, let alone coming in to save him. But still, this was his fight, and he wasn't going to allow him to get in his way. "Damn you, you came here to lecture me again!?" Polnareff yelled as they got up.

"The enemy already knows everything about you! You said you were a loner but from now on you won't be able to win alone!" Avdol shouted at him.

"What bad timing for an outsider to interfere." Hol Horse said. Hmph. No matter. This new comer will be taken out soon enough. Since its also his Stand, he had his bullet change directions to hit Avdol instead. The Egyptian man saw the bullet coming and he quickly shoved Polnareff away to protect him. "Polnareff, move! The bullet's coming back!" He shouted. "Go, Magician's Red!" The fire Stand appeared with a cry as Avdol says, "I'll melt it down!" As the bullet moved in closer, Hol Horse smirked. If Avdol thinks it'll be this easy to take him down, then he better think again!

Meanwhile, Joseph, Jotaro and the others are running all over the town. Serching desperately for any sign of Avdol or Polnareff. Joseph ran through a rice market as he began looking for his friend. He didn't expect him to run off like that. The enemy was near them and they had no idea what the extent of their abilities are. He's an idiot!, *'Damn that Avdol! He went after Polnareff himself!'*

Jotaro check through a small park. Kakyoin ran through a plaza. And the girls check through the centre of town. But none had found either of them. Where could they be? What if the enemy already found them? Were they already in a battle? They had to find them before it's too late. "They aren't here. Where should we go next?" Hikari asked Nemuru. The dark purple-haired girl turned to her with a concerned expression. She's still not saying anything..? "I'm getting scared...there's this feeling in my heart that something bad is going to happen." Hikari told her.

"Hey! There's a weird fight going on over there!" A person yelled out, catching the girls' attention. They looked at each other for a quick second before sprinting towards the direction of where the person was. Hopefully, they weren't too late. Funny thing is...hope is a very fragile thing. The girls arrived at the same time as Kakyoin at the very moment where they witnessed a horrifying scene. Just as Avdol was about to have Magician's Red burn the bullet, right behind him a solid puddle showing his reflection. Cenerfold's Hanged Man suddenly appeared. Produced its blade. And buried it deep into Avdol's back. Blood squirted out from his wound.

Avdol only caught a glimpse of Hanged Man as he sputtered out, "The puddle..." Hol Horse's bullet came in a second later. And struck Avdol in the head. It all happened so quickly. Everything went into slow motion as Avdol was falling towards the ground. His friends watched helplessly in shock when they just witness him getting killed right in front of them. Polnareff was frozen still like a statue. It was a long moment of silence before a cry of sorrow rang out.

"Mr. Avdol! NNOOO!!" Hikari immediately ran to his side as she quickly summoned Soundless Voice, placing her hands on his face. When the blue energy swept over his body, Hikari was praying strongly to God that she could save him. "Mr. Avdol!" Kakyoin shouted as he and Nemuru ran over as well.

"Man, today must be my day!" Hol Horse smiled. "My gun and Centerfold's mirror don't do very well against Avdol's flames, you see. We were sure he'd be our most formidable enemy. Talk about luck. With him gone, the game is in the bag."

"Please... Please be okay. Please be okay, Mr. Avdol..." Hikari said as she was putting all of her strength into her healing abilities. The wounds should have vanished by now. Hikari had done it. She healed him. Avdol was alright... Wasn't he? Kakyoin lifted him up into his arms. "Mr. Avdol!" Kakyoin's hand felt something wet and sticky coming from Avdol's back. He moved it and saw that his hand was covered in blood. Hikari's eyes widen in fear when she noticed that Avdol wasn't opening his eyes.

He...he was just hurt, that's all... Right..? Hikari just healed him. She healed him. It...they were only minor wounds...r-right? Avdol's going

to start speaking and open his eyes any minute now. Any minute now, he's going to wake up. Right? Right?! Kakyoin gave Avdol a gentle shake to help him wake up, but he remained motionless. "Mr. Avdol, you got to wake up!" Kakyoin shouted.

"Mr. Avdol..! Please, wake up! Open your eyes..!" Hikari cried out as her whole body shook. Holding back her tears, hoping that this wasn't real. "No, please! Mr. Avdol!" Kakyoin shouted. Nemuru was in shock. She couldn't believe this... There's...there's just no way that he's gone. He can't be. Avdol was an overall righteous individual, who possessed a strong sense of duty and loyalty. No... No, he can't be... *'This guy was way too good to be taken away just like that... That was too easy. Too quick!'* She thought. Behind them, Polnareff was frozen. He couldn't process on what just happen.

Kakyoin gently set Avdol back down as a white transparent aura escaped from his body. In an instant, they all knew what it was. His soul. That was enough for Hikari to breakdown and cry. She hugged Avdol as she continued to cry out for him. "No! No, no! Please..! Don't go, Mr. Avdol! Don't leave us!" Nemuru held Hikari's shoulders as she and Kakyoin joined her in mourning. Polnareff kicked some dirt away and he turned his back on the scene before him.

"That's what he gets for lecturing people. Look at him now." Polnareff said. Causing Kakyoin and Nemuru to turn to him in surprise. They couldn't believe they just said that. "Wha...What did you say, Polnareff?" Kakyoin growled under his breath, trying to keep calm. But he grew angry at him. "Mr. Avdol was worried about you."

"Who asked him for help because I never did! He likes to meddle in other people's business but he's slow as hell so they got him." Polnareff said. "Guys like him just get in the way and screw up, that's why I said I was going in alone."

This is insane. Avdol came here to save his life and this is how he's being treated?! He died to protect him and Polnareff doesn't seemed to care about it?! "You bastard! He saved your life...how dare you..!" Kakyoin said.

Nemuru stood back up and glared at the Frenchman. "You son of bitch..." She began stomping her way towards him. "Avdol sacrificed

his life to save your sorry ass and this is how you react?! If he wasn't so noble, he would've just let you die without a second thought! You got some nerve to-!" She stopped as she noticed droplets of water falling to the ground. Kakyoin noticed it too as well as seeing Polnareff's shoulders shaking. Hikari looked over and softly said, "Mr. Polnareff?"

His whole body shook as tears fell from his eyes. It happened again. For the third time in his life, it happened. Why isn't that the people around him...the people closest to him..."I am sick of it." Polnareff said. He turned his head to look at them, revealing his grief-stricken face and the tears in his eyes. "Having people up and die on me."

"Polnareff..." Kakyoin began.

First his mother. Then his sister. And now Avdol..? Just how many people is he going to lose?! "I'm so sick of it. You hear me!!"

Seeing them mourn over the loss of their command....made Hol Horse laugh a bit. This was pathetic. "For such a tough guy, he sure was easy to finish off." They grew stiff. "But I guess if you think about it, the end is usually a pretty sudden curtain call, you know. Most folks don't get to say goodbye, especially when a bullet to the brain's involved." He laughed. "Think of it as a parting wisdom before I make you croak." Polnareff glared daggers at the cowboy and furiously wiped his tears away. He wasn't going to let him get away with this.

"Polnareff!" Kakyoin shouted as he bounced back up to his feet. Trying to stop him from going after Hol Horse. "Don't let him get to you, you're much stronger than that!" Polnareff didn't seem to listen as he kept walking towards the cowboy. "You still don't get it, do you?! Mr. Avdol told you - he begged you not to fight alone!" That got him to stop finally. Kakyoin seemed to be getting through to him, so he continued. "But you completely ignored him. Even if it meant dying with your enemy, you were hellbent on getting revenge. He followed you cause that worried him and this is what happened as a result."

"Then tell me, what am I supposed to do?" Polnareff asked.

"What we need to do is to fall back." Nemuru told him with a stern

voice. Polnareff's whole body stiffed up as she said this. Fall back? As in running away?! After what these bastards did to Avdol?! No way. No way was he going to run. That wasn't what he was all about. Polnareff's aura began to flare up around him as he said, "Avdol was stabbed in the back and didn't have a chance. My sister couldn't defend herself and was killed. You expect me to run away and just forget all this happened?!"

"How can we fight them when we don't even know what their Stands can do?!" Kakyoin asked him. "Don't fight a battle that will only end in your death! That's what Mr. Avdol was trying to tell you!" Nemuru helped Hikari get up as she said, "We understand your anger, but I don't think we take any chances with these a-holes yet!"

Hol Horse looked over at the others and smirked. He found it slightly amusing that these two were trying so hard to convince him. Maybe he should have some fun with this. "Hey, come on. Do it, little Pol Pol." Hol Horse taunted. Polnareff growled underneath his breath as he glared at the cowboy. How he would love it if he could just bash his face in. Polnareff clenched his fist so tightly, his nails almost pierced the skin. "Why you-!"

"Polnareff!" Kakyoin shouted. "Calm down and slowly retreat towards us." He then pointed over to a nearby jeep and told him. "That trucks our way out."

Polnareff glances back to them, still shaking in anger. "Calm? Calm down, you say? How...?" He gazed down at Avdol's body and he started to breath heavily. He didn't want to run! He didn't want to just up and leave after someone was killed because of him. He wanted to stay here and fight them! Fight to avenge his death! If he had to die, then at the very least, he'll take one of these bastards with him! "Don't do it..." A quiet, gentle voice spoke out.

Polnareff let out a small gasp as he turned to face Hikari. Tears continued to stream down her face as she looked at with a pleading expression. She wiped away her tears, and took a deep breath to calm herself. "Please, Mr. Polnareff. The enemy knows about our Stands and we don't. Let's get out of here for now...I don't want to see you die too!" Hikari cried. Polnareff's rage was slowly being washed away, slowly calming down the more he looked at her. A gentle face.

A kind, friendly voice. For a brief moment, Polnareff believed his little sister was staring at him right now. He let out a heavy sigh. "....A-alright."

"Kekekeke.... Hey, Polnareff.." A raspy and gritty voice called out, causing Polnareff's eyes to widen. He snapped his head to a window next to him and saw Centerfold's Hang Man coming from the puddle. Even though it's mouth was obscure from view, he knew it was smirking at him. Cackling at him. "It's your fault Avdol died, you know." Centerfolg/Hang Man said. Polnareff quickly turned around where the reflection showed, but he wasn't there. As you expected.

"I think that means you owe him, it only seems fair." Polnareff turns back to the window and saw that Hang Man was getting close to his own reflection. "You're friend bit the dust because of you." He laughed. "Damn you, you bastard... Where's your real body?!" Polnareff demanded, his rage rising once again. "Polnareff! Calm down!" Kakyoin shouted at him. "He's trying to get to you! Don't listen to him!" Nemuru yelled.

"But," Centerfold/Hang Man continued. His head peering just above Polnareff's shoulder. "There's no need to be sad. Actually, you should be happy. You're about see your dear friend again." He unsheathed his knife. "You'll soon be dead and you could enjoy the afterlife with those two fools. You're welcome." He chuckled at him. The next thing Centerfold/Hang man said, truly made the Frenchman fly into a rage. "I have to say, your sister was so very sweet."

The look of terror on her face. The shrill scream she let out. The hopeless pleas for help she cried out. The way her neck felt beneath his hands....the way she *felt* when he shattered her innocence. It was intoxicating to him. He still laughed once in a while whenever he thought about her cries to her beloved big brother. "Once you're reunited with your sister, be sure to ask her exactly *how* I killed her! We had such a ball!"

This man...this horrid, disgusting excuse for a man...had no right... He had absolutely no right to even speak about Sherry! He let a scream of unbridled anger, sorrow and hate towards him as he unleashed his Silver Chariot to attack. "Polnareff, don't fall for his tricks! He wants you to attack!" Kakyoin warned him. "Bastard!!" But

it was too late. Silver Chariot's rapier destroyed the window, rendering it to pieces. However, amongst the falling pieces, his reflection still showed and Hang man was uninjured. Polnareff's eyes widened when he caught a glimpse of Hang Man being right behind him.

"Oh, didn't you know? Your Chariot cannot cut my Hang Man." The pieces fell to the ground and now Polnareff could see that Hang Man standing close behind him. Hang Man then placed a tight, cold grip on Polnareff's neck. "I'm in the mirror...where your Stand can't go. That's why...." Centerfold cackled like a lunatic. "So close! And yet so far away. Hol Horse, fire away! Let's put an end to this idiot."

"Aye, aye, sir." Hol Horse said as he brought out his Emperor once more. Talk about being stuck between a rock and a hard place. Polnareff move due to Hang Man's grip on him and even if he did try to escape, he would either get stabbed by Centerfold's knife or be shot down by Hol Horse's gun. And it looked like it was going to be the latter, as Hol Horse cocked at hammer and fired! The bullet was aimed for Polnareff's head just as the knife was aimed for his neck! But then a shield appeared out of nowhere and the bullet bounced back at Hol Horse. "Whoa!" The cowboy yelled as he barely dodged it.

"**Emerald Splash**!" Kakyoin shouted as he shot out his barrage of emeralds, firing at random direction but also managing to hit Polnareff as well, grazing his cheek and arm. "What the-? Why'd he shot Polnareff?!" Hol Horse gasped in shock. Kakyoin quickly jumped into the driver's side of the jeep while the girls jumped into the back, and Kakyoin drove as fast as he could. Nemuru used Shadow Mist's abilities to control Polnareff's shadow and pull him into the jeep as they sped away from the scene. Leaving Hol Horse in the dust, literally. He swat the dust away as he growled at the fleeing jeep. "Kakyoin, that was his name? Not bad, partner!" He said as he summoned his Stand again and aimed.

But then, he pulled his gun back and grunted in annoyance. "That's out of my Stand's range." He said. "Even if I got him from here, the bullet wouldn't hit him with very much force." Hol Horse glanced down at the shattered pieces of glass and saw that they were clear as day. Odd, Centerfold's gone. Where'd he run to this time? Hol Horse

thought about it for a moment before realising it. "He went after them, huh? Well, I'll be. He must really have it in for Polnareff."

In the jeep, Polnareff laments of what happened and what his actions had cost them. Without even looking at his friends, Polnareff tells them. "I'm so sorry, everyone. It... it's just that... I thought so long as I avenged my sister, I wouldn't care if I lived or died. But I understand now, I know Avdol was fighting for me. His sacrifice won't be for not. I'll fight to keep on living." Upon hearing his vow, shocked them. They honestly didn't expect something like this from, but... It was a relief to know that Polnareff will not throw his life away. "You sure that you really mean that, Polnareff?" Kakyoin asked.

"Oui." He said. "Good!" He suddenly heard Nemuru shouted as she reached out to yank on his hair and bang his head on the small window. When she released him, Kakyoin then endowed him in the face. "Be honest, you deserved that." Nemuru told him. "That's all we're giving you as proof that we've made up, Polnareff." Kakyoin said as tears swelled in his eyes.

"Right.... M-merci, Kakyoin. Nemuru." Polnareff said as he slumped down in his seat. "Was that even necessary?!" Hikari cried out as she reached over through the small window to heal him. Seriously, why can't anyone express their feelings in words and not in unneeded violence? She'll never understand it. "When those bastards come after us again, I swear we'll defeat them together."

"Right. But first we need to think of some kind of plan." Nemuru told them.

Meanwhile, back at the battlefield, Joseph and Jotaro arrived as they both heard a lot of commotion that was going on. When they got there, they found Avdol's body. They had no idea what happened... but they can understand the basics. "Avdol... My old friend..." Joseph said, saddened to see him like this. Jotaro held a hard expression as he stared at the now deceased fortune-teller. Joseph bent down next to him and had moment to let this painful reality set in. Jotaro turned his attention to the bloody headband in his hand. He gripped it tight as he felt his anger build up. Whoever was responsible for his Avdol's death is going to pay dearly for this. Jotaro then turned to the side and gazed down the road. "Hikari...." He said, softly.

Chapter 18: Emperor and Hanged Man, Part 3

"You know, I was so sure that I stabbed him with my sword." Polnareff began to say once his wounds at healed up. "But my strike never hit him. It was like he wasn't there." He almost flinched when he spotted the jeep's rearview mirror. He gripped it tight in his hand and tore it off. "Even breaking the mirror into pieces didn't stop him. The Hang Man just attacked from the shards, how in the hell am I supposed to fight against that?" He asked. His head was beginning to hurt he struggled to figure out how and why.

"He attacks your reflection, but his knife sinks into your real flesh and my Stand can't go inside mirrors. Are we supposed to attack him if he's inside some kind of mirror world? Damn it!" Polnareff yelled at he tossed the mirror out the window.

"Stupid." Nemuru told him. The Frenchman was about to retort something back at her when Kakyoin stepped in. "What Nemuru was trying to say is that you keep talking about "inside the mirror" and "the mirror world". But there's no such thing as a world within the mirror. Remember, this is reality. Not fantasy." He said.

Polnareff just stared at the two like they were crazy and continued on to try and convince them. "What are you talking about? You saw it too, didn't you? You could only see him in a mirror and when you turn around, he's gone."

"Yes. But anything you see in a mirror is just a reflection created by light." Kakyoin said.

"I'm not an idiot, you don't have to tell me that!" Polnareff shouted. Nemuru struggled, and failed, to hold in a laugh. "Pfft, hahaha! That's up for debate, Polnareff." She laughed. Polnareff growled at her. "Oh, shut up! Listen, I mean this case. I'm talking about what's going on now. If Stands can exist in this world, there could be a mirror world too."

"There isn't." Kakyoin said. "Come on, man!" Polnareff cried out.

Hikari looked back and forth between them, going on and one about what exists and what doesn't. None of this is going anywhere. Hikari then softly spoke out. "Um... M-maybe, Hang Man just wants us to believe there's a mirror world... And that he's just trying to hide his real weakness?"

Nemuru gave Hikari a smirk. "How about that? Hikari is able to use her brain unlike a certain someone with stupid hair." She said as she took a glance at the silver-haired man. "Do you just live to piss me off at any given moment?!"

"Please, stop fighting you two." Hikari begged them

"I think that fact is what's going to help us solve the mystery of Hang Man. Look, Stands are able to destroy other Stands, so there's still has to be something we don't know about his-." Kakyoin cut himself off when he thought he saw something flicker under him. Kakyoin looks down at the steering wheel where he looks at the shiny metal part of it. At first, he didn't see anything and thought that maybe he had just imagined it. But then one sweep of light and Kakyoin's eyes widen in shock when saw Hanged Man inside the steering wheel. From the reflection he was climbing into the jeep from the back and headed straight for the girls. He then brought out his knives and lunged at them!

Kakyoin gasped as he snapped his attention to the back but saw no one but the girls, who were looking at him in confusion. Kakyoin looks back the steering wheel and saw Hang Man's face. "You guys! The chrome of the starring wheel, the bastard's caught up to us! Hikari put a shield around us, now!" Kakyoin yelled. Hang Man then smashed through the window on the back of the jeep, and the group tried to avoid the glass. Kakyoin saw that he had brought out his knife again and he hits the brakes to avoid the Stand. The jeeps was going way too fast to do a simple stop and they ended up swerving out of control. They drove over a small hill and the jeep rolled over, the girls let out a scream as they were thrown in the air. Kakyoin and Polnareff braced themselves as the jeep crashed, the jeep landing upside down.

The girls bounced away from the wreckage and soon rolled to a stop. They were able to breath easily for a bit. Hikari had created a shield

around them just as they were tossed in the air, but this was a bit different. This new shield was in a from of a bubble, and by the looks of it, was big enough for two people. Hikari looked over at the wreckage of the vehicle and breath a sigh of relief. *'Oh thank goodness. I managed to save them too...'* Hikari thought as she saw two bubble shields around them, sparing them from any further damage. The sapphire-eyed girl dropped the bubbles, feeling mentally exhausted from created three shields at once. "Ugh, hey... are you okay? Talk to me." Polnareff asked him.

"I...I'm slammed my chest but I'll be fine. Thanks to Hikari's shields, we were able to survive that." Kakyoin said. As Kakyoin goes to pull himself from the jeep, Polnareff caught a glimpse of a ray of light shooting off from the broken glass. He followed the ray of light as it kept bouncing from one reflective surface to another. It stopped at the jeep's bumper and Polnareff's eyes widen when he saw Hang Man's face. He was about to attack but Polnareff quickly summons Silver Chariot and had his sword cut the bumper to bits. He knew it wouldn't be enough, but it could at least give them time to run. He told Kakyoin to make a break for it and joined the girls to hide behind boulder to get some coverage.

When they were safe from anything was that reflective, Polnareff had figured out the true nature of Centerfold's Stand and was quick to explain this to the others. "I got it. I just saw him do it. He's going from mirror to mirror, this guy moves by jumping around. One reflection to another. He traveled all this way by reflecting over and over. It's the only explanation for how he caught up with us."

"Reflecting?" Kakyoin asked him as he let out a gasp of realisation. "That means he's actually light. Are you saying that the true nature of his Stand is light?"

"I am. I just saw him in the car's bumper, he's going to reflect off that surface onto something else." Polnareff said.

"If that's the case, then how are we going to beat him?" Nemuru asked him. If this guy is light reflecting off surfaces, then how exactly can their own Stands land a punch on him? "I don't know, but for now stay clear of reflective stuff. Take anything shiny off your body and your uniform buttons!" Polnareff said as he began removing his

earrings. Kakyoin got the hint and proceeded to take his uniform buttons and his own earrings as well. While Hikari didn't have anything shiny on her, Nemuru instinctively reached into her pocket and gripped at its contents. She didn't want to take it out but she kind of hope she might use it to trap Hang Man somehow.

"Hey mister, you guys okay? Want me to bring you some medicine?" A young boy asked as he approaches them from out of nowhere. Polnareff stiffens up when he quickly realised that the boy might be in grave danger if he doesn't get away form here soon. He was worried that Hang Man might use him in some way. "We're fine. Look, it's dangerous, get out of here!" Polnareff told the boy as he tried to shoo him away.

The boy didn't seem to catch what he said as he turned to the damaged jeep and said, "Whoa! You guys totally messed up your car." While his eyes were focused on the car, Kakyoin and the girls were shocked when they caught a glimpse of a light shooting off of the bumper. But it moved too quickly for them to figure out where it went. The boy turned back to them and became concern when he saw Polnareff's blood running down his face. "Hey. You're bleeding, mister." Polnareff took only one look in the child's eye and let out a horrified gasp. "Are you sure you're okay?" He asked.

There, inside the boy's left eye, was Hangman. And based on the reflection, he was standing right behind them. "That asshole!" Polnareff yelled. "He's reflected in the kid's eye!" Hang Man chuckled darkly at them. He knew that he chose a good place to jump to. There's no way they'll be getting to him, not unless they're willing to hurt this kid. "Alright, this guy's beginning to piss me off!" Nemuru shouted as she and the others jumped to their feet to get out of the kid's line of sight.

"Listen kid, don't look at us!" Polnareff shouted. Unfortunately for them, this only confused the boy as he turned to face them. He was completely oblivious to the danger that was going on right now. But it wasn't any of his fault at all. "I told you, don't look at us!" Polnareff shouted again as he tried to stay clear from his sight but the boy kept following him. "Don't follow me with your eyes!"

"Huh? But you're hurt." The boy said. "I'm fine, see? Perfectly fine, got

it?! So go look over there!" Polnareff shouted. The boy still wasn't convinced. "But...but you're bleeding." He said.

"You brat, I said look over there!!" Despite his efforts, Polnareff heard Hang Man's laughter as he showed up behind the Frenchman's reflection. "Damn you, Centerfold!" Polnareff growled as he brought out Silver Chariot. "What are you going to do? You wouldn't poke out this cute little kid's eye out with that sword of yours, would you? Polnareff?!" Hang Man/Centerfold said as he grabbed Polnareff's neck in a tight grip, causing the latter to let a shout of pain.

"Polnareff!" His friends cried out. "And now, I've finally got you! You can't run anymore, not unless you gouge the kid's eyes out!" Centerfold laughs as he brought his knives to do as he promised. Killing Polnareff in the most painful way possible as he started to laugh maniacally. Kakyoin glared daggers at Hangman and clenched his fist. "You disgusting, cruel son of a bitch! You're dead!" He yelled. Nemuru grit her teeth as she had no choice in the matter and was about to sprung her but stopped when Polnareff suddenly began laughing as well.

"Don't worry, Kakyoin. Mon frère, that's not what you say at a time like this." Polnareff smiled as he gave two thumbs up. "Listen, in times like these, you've got to say something fitting. Before you get your revenge, say something like this here. My name is Jean Pierre Polnareff. For the honour of my dearest sister's soul and so my good friend Avdol can rest peacefully in heaven above, I'm going to hurl you into the depths of despair! Prepare yourself, Centerfold."

Polnareff gave the child a small smile and he apologised to him in advanced, promising to buy him whatever candy he wanted later. He kicks up sand into the boys eyes, and when his eyes closed, it forced Hanged Man to move into the only reflective view available: Polnareff's right eye. Silver Chariot swiftly swiped his sword across the air in a split second as he did.

"I don't really understand how, but he essentially moves at the speed of light. No one can normally see speed like that, but then I knew if the kid closed his eyes, the next move would be to my eye. There was no other place to go and that's how will beat him." Polnareff explains. "Oh, I see." Kakyoin said, surprised by how Polnareff managed to

figure that out. "I have to say I'm impressed, Polnareff. Guess you're smarter than you look." Nemuru told him, smiling. "Great work, Mr. Polnareff!" Hikari cheered.

Hang Man can only exist within the world of reflection. When one world is about to be destroyed, he must migrate to another reflective object. A good ability, but can be easily be exploited when one can predict his trajectory, and Polnareff did exactly that. A large slash mark appeared on Hang Man's body and they heard Centerfold's screaming in the distance, located in some type of temple ruins. Without a second to waste the group rushed over it, where Polnareff was even more determined to get to him. After three long years, he can finally put his sister's soul to rest. They climbed the flight of stairs leading up to the temple and there find a man holding on to the deep wound on his chest.

The wound was the same as the one Silver Chariot gave to Hang Man. They approach him with both confidence and caution. Who knows what other cheap tricks he might do. With a hard gaze, Polnareff confronted him. "At last we meet. Centerfold. My name's Jean Pierre Polnareff and I have seen through your Stands clever little trick. It's a Stand of light that moves at extraordinary speed. I know there's no way that I can catch it, but if I can predict where your Stand's going to jump next and I slash its trajectory in that moment, I can cut you. If Kakyoin, Nemuru, Hikari and Avdol hadn't shown up, I probably wouldn't figure that out and you would've killed me."

Kakyoin lowers his gaze down to the wounded man's hands and his eyes widen in shock as he saw that he has a left hand instead of another right. This was not the man there were looking for! "No, Polnareff! This isn't the man with the pair of right hands, that's not Centerfold!" Kakyoin shouted out to warn him. But it didn't matter, as a knife flew out of nowhere a stabbed Polnareff in the back, making him fall to his knees in pain. "Polnareff!" Kakyoin shouted. "The hell just happened?!" Nemuru yelled. Kakyoin pulled the knife out and he and Nemuru searched around to see if they can find any sign of the real Centerfold while Hikari healed him.

"Hehe! Over here!" A voice called out. They turned and saw man crawling out of a shadowy corner and showed himself to our heroes.

The man was full on appearance was absolutely revolting. He had two right hands, was bald, his eyes was completely white with no pupils or irises of any kind, and, likely due to age, was kneeling on the ground. "I'm Centerfold, insignificant fools! That man is some beggar who was in the wrong place at the wrong time. I just carved a small wound in him. The same wound you were gracious to give me." He said as the man flinched in fear when he saw Centerfold.

"You totally fell for it. Getting close to him without knowing what I look like was a grave mistake. One you'll pay for with your lives!" Centerfold laughed as he stood up to his feet. "He's horrible..." Hikari said. Nemuru had just about enough of him and thrusted her hand at the shadows of the corner which Centerfold had crawled out from. The darkness shifted and turned at her command and shot out wrapped Centerfold in tight vice-like grip. "Kakyoin?" She stated. "With pleasure. **Emerald**-!" Kakyoin shouted as he brought out Hierophant Green to attack ugly, mercenary.

However, Centerfold stops him when he says, "Whoa! Wait now, take a good look around you!" What the hell was he talking about? What was he trying to gain? Centerfold raises his hands and yells out to a bunch of people half way across from them. "Hey, gather 'round! See these two gentleman and ladies? They say they've got a boatload of cash to share!" That instantly got their attention and a swarm of people stood up and gathered around our group.

"They'll give us money for nothing huh?" "Such generosity!" "You have such big hearts, thank you!" "Bless you!" Our heroes found themselves surrounded by them as they practically pestered them about the non-existent boatload of money they apparently have. But that was the least of their problems. With so many people's eyes looking right at them, Hand Man has many different opinions to travel between and his path becomes too unpredictable for them to hit the Stand.

"You say, you've figure out my Stand? You fool! You think I don't know my own weakness?!" Centerfold yelled as Hang Man slashed across Polnareff's chest. Hang Man jumped into a different eye, aiming towards Kakyoin next. "I have no weakness! You can never know where I'll jump to next!" He slashed Kakyoin's arm. He jumped again. Slashed Nemuru's back. Jumped. Slashed Hikari's shoulder.

"Don't look! Don't stare at us! Please, just look away!" Polnareff begged to the crowed of people. But his pleas fell on deaf ears and Hang Man kept hopping around from one eye to another. Centerfold laughed maniacally once more at their helplessness.

"You can't run anymore!" The user of the mirror-hopping Stand yelled. "What are you going to do? Blow everyone up?!" Polnareff yelled out in pain as Hang Man left dozens of slash marks all over his body. "You sacrificed your entire youth just to hunt me down and just when you're close, you're going to fail to avenge your sister? How pathetic and sad. Meanwhile, I, Centerfold, will continue a life surrounded by young beauties like your sister. Maybe I'll started with the two lovely girls right next to you."

"Ugh, you're disgusting!" Nemuru shouted out as Hang Man cut her cheek. She growled as she wrapped her arms protectively around Hikari to keep Hang Man from hurting her any further. "I can see it now. Oh, the pleasures! Come to think of it, that sweet sister of yours," Centerfold said as he licked his lips with delight. "Was really good at sobbing." He laughed. If looks could kill, Polnareff's glare would've killed Centerfold ten times over. He had no right to talk about Sherry like that!! "Why you!!" Polnareff shouted.

"Polnareff. You could do better than that." Kakyoin said, suddenly. His friends stared at him with slight confusion. "'Why you' isn't what you say. When taking revenge you have to be more refined. This is what you say." Kakyoin stood tall and confident, placing his hand on his hip as he proudly declares, "My name is Noriaki Kakyoin. In order to avenge my dear friend, Avdol. So that the soul of my friend Polnareff's sister may rest in peace for all eternity. I'll have you pay with your life." Nemuru gave a smirk and told him, "Heh, couldn't have said it any better." She then reached into her pocket and pulled out a very shiny, silver, open face pocket watch and held up for the crowd to see. Centerfold's eyes widened in shock when he saw this.

"I'll give this watch to whoever catches it and as a bonus, I'll throw in this gold coin in the mix. Behold, a watch so perfect it shines like a mirror and with something like this, you can sell it for $5,000." Nemuru winked at them. Polnareff smiled at Nemuru as he realised that this was the perfect opportunity to put Centerfold into the ground. Nemuru tosses the watch high into the air, making everyone look at it and leaving only one reflective surface for Hanged Man to travel to.

"Looks like all of their eyes are focused on point now." Kakyoin said.

"This your chance, Mr. Polnareff." Hikari smiled.

"Yeah..." Polnareff smirked as he found Hang Man hiding in the eye of the man in front of him. They know of the trajectory Hang Man's going to take and there's only one thing left to do. "Merci, Kakyoin! Nemuru!" Polnareff kicks sand into the eye Hanged Man is in currently, forcing the Stand to move to the watch, and slashes its path. Centerfold screamed in agony as he felt Silver Chariot's sword slashes down his head. This isn't wasn't to end this way! He was supposed to win! Centerfold had nowhere else for Hang Man to jump to. He...He had to get out of here!

The watch fell back into Nemuru's hand and she tosses the gold coin to a different direction, causing the crowd to chase after it. As Centerfold tries to run, the others immediately chased after him. He's not getting away that easily. Centerfold ran as fast as he could to get away from them but was stopped by an iron fence. "It won't open!" He shouted as he tried to open it, but it was shut tight. He turned around and cowered in fear when Polnareff stood before him.

"Looks like you're the one who's really good at sobbing, Centerfold. And you're about to plummet into hell. Begging and crying the whole way down. But there's one thing I can't rely on the guardians of hell to do. And that's to turn your body into a pincushion!!" Polnareff yells as he summons Silver Chariot to attack him, stabbing him repeatedly, and leaving holes all over his body. "I've waited *years* for this moment!" With one final thrust of his sword, Centerfold's body was thrown into the air and lands on a fence, hanging upside down. He has become the Hang Man.

"I'll leave the rest to the devil. Rot in Hell." Polnareff said, in a melancholy voice as he stared coldly at the punctured corpse. "So this is the true Hang Man, huh? He's was rotten, all the way to the core." Kakyoin said.

Without saying other word, Polnareff turned and walked away from the scene. "Polnareff? Where-?" Nemuru started to ask when Polnareff interrupted her. "I got my revenge." He said as he continued to walk away. The others looked at each other for a moment before going up to catch up to him. Hikari ran to his side and held his hand. The Frenchman looked down at the young girl, who gave him a kind and bright smile. Polnareff's cold eyes turned soft and gave a smile back. She really did looked like his sister in his eyes. Hikari then healed his

and the others wounds before making their way back to return back to the town. But Hikari stopped to heal the poor beggar that Centerfold used to trap them and gave him a few spare coins she had on her.

The group was silent all the way back to town, and it was a bit of a trek since they messed up their jeep, but they eventually made it to civilisation. Once they did, Hikari suggested they go find Jotaro and Joseph to let them know what happened. They all agreed when they heard a voice calling out to them. "Hold it!" They turned around and saw it was the cowboy himself, Hol Horse. "Finally caught up with you." He says as he brought Emperor and points it at them.

'Wait.... Damn it, I totally forgot this guy was around.' Nemuru thought as she raised an eyebrow at the blonde-haired man.

'Oh.... What was his name again?' Hikari thought.

None of them said anything to Hol Horse and just kept walking. Hol Horse lets out a laugh as he thought that they were ignoring him out of fear. "Why are you walking so slow? If you're gonna run, run like your lives depend on it, it's way more fun. Isn't that right, Mr. Centerfold?" Hol Horse asked his partner as he shoots a nearby bottle. That made the group turn to face him. Does... Does he not know what happen? If they managed to make it back alive, then..?

"Better say your prayers, boys and girls. This is where your lives come to an end. Come at us with everything you got, it's so boring if you just stand there and die. Right, Mr. Centerfold?" Hol Horse asked again and starts shooting at glass with Emperor to help Hanged Man's attack. A large piece lands at their feet and Polnareff decided to just crush it under his boot. Hol Horse was taken by surprise and was confused to why his partner was doing anything or responding back to him. "Hey, Mr. Centerfold! Aren't you going to play?!" Hol Horse shouted.

"I don't think he's listening anymore, cowboy." Polnareff tells him.

"Huh?"

"He's quite busy at the moment. Carrying out his sentence in hell." He

says as Silver Chariot appears, ready to fight again. Hol Horse was, at first, shocked at what he just heard, but he pulled up a smirk and thought that he was trying to scare him. "Hey, hey, hey, hey, hey! Don't try to pull that nonsense. Bluffing won't work on me. Nice try though." Hol Horse said. "There's no way you could've beaten him. Even I wouldn't try to test my luck against that mother. You know Polnareff, your sense of humour stinks." He laughed.

"That piece of shit's corpse is two or three thousand meters that way if you want to take a look." Polnareff tells him. Hol Horse looks at Polnareff and saw that he was being serious about this. And without any hesitation whatsoever, "Okay, I will!" Hol Horse turned tail and ran away. His unexpected actions caused Polnareff's eyes to widen in shock as he yells out after him. "Huh? You're running away?!" Soon he and the others began running after him.

Hol Horse didn't stop to answer, he just kept on running. Like hell he was going to risk his life for this. *'I don't stand a chance, I'm at a total disadvantage by myself. I'm hightailing it out of here, waiting for a better chance. Or better yet, waiting till I find myself another partner in crime. 'It's all about being number 2'. That's the motto I liked to live by. Got a problem with it?'* Hol Horse rounded the corner and he momentarily thought he made it out scot-free. Then a fist flew in and punched him square in the face, knocking him back a few feet. The rest had caught up to the fallen cowboy and were relieved to see familiar faces.

"Mr. Joestar! Jotaro!" Kakyoin said.

"JoJo, it's you!"

Joseph closes his eyes and sombrely said, "We already know about Avdol. What a tragedy... We didn't have a lot of time to do much for him, but we gave a proper funeral." The group fell silent as they were reminded of what happened to their dear and loyal friend. That's when they realised that there was one more person to take into account. He had a hand in Avdol's death too. The Joestar group turned and surrounded Hol Horse. "The one who stabbed Mr. Avdol in the back was the one with two right hands. But the cause of death was Hol Horse's bullet." Kakyoin explained. "What should we do with him?"

"Obviously, we can't just let him go for what he did to him." Nemuru said. Polnareff agreed with her as he began to say, "I'll give him his sentence." Hol Horse let out a frightful whimper as he began to tremble with fear. Polnareff called forth his Silver Chariot and readied his blade. "Death!" Before Silver Chariot could strike, Polnareff was knocked over by a woman. The same woman that Hol Horse had left behind.

"Please run, Sir Hol Horse!" She cried out to him. "The hell?! Get off, lady!" Polnareff shouted. He wasn't the only one confused. The rest of the team stared at this strange woman, wondering who she was and where'd she come from. "I'll hold him off for you! I don't know what exactly is going on here, but I do know I will always protect you! You are my everything, darling! Please run, hurry!" Polnareff tried his best to try and pry the woman off but she had a tight grip.

"Let go of me, stupid bitch! Come on, what are you doing?! Jotaro, Kakyoin, don't let Hol Horse get away!" Polnareff said.

"It's too late." Jotaro said.

"Huh?"

"S-sorry..." Hikari told him. Polnareff looked up and saw that Hol Horse was already up and on a horse and was in his "macho man bravado". "Very well said, my little sweetheart! I'll gladly accept your feelings and keep on living!" He said as he quickly rode away. "Remember, I'm only running away because I love you baby! Forever and ever!!"

"Well, they say cowards know how to flee fast." Nemuru said. Polnareff continued to try and shake the woman off and ended up dragging her across the ground. "Auugh!" She cried out when her elbow was scrapped across. "Oh, don't you dare "auugh" at me." Polnareff said. He looked back and saw that Hol Horse was already long gone.

"Polnareff, that woman is just another one of his victims." Joseph said to as he walked over to help out the poor young woman, tearing a piece of cloth. "And he no longer had any intentions of fighting with us. We have no time to deal with him. Avdol is gone now, but we

have to forge ahead. It's already been fifteen days we don't have time to waste." Joseph told him as he wrapped the cloth around her wounded elbow. When he began tying it, a drop of the woman's blood fell on Joseph's arm.

The Frenchman took a deep breath to calm himself. "Damn it..." Polnareff cursed. "Guess it can't be helped. All right! We continue onward to Egypt. Listen up, in order to defeat Dio, we have fight as one. We can't go off on our own or we'll play right into the enemy's hands. Got it!?" Everyone chuckled at Avdol's previous statement now being said by Polnareff. "Let's get a move on!" Polnareff said

"Good grief." Jotaro said. As the group leave, Joseph felt an itch on his arm. He started to scratch it, but little do they know a tiny wart was beginning to form, making an ominous noise.

Chapter 19: The Wheel of Fortune, part 1

It took the group no time to get tickets for a bus. The destination this time was the sacred city of Varanasi. The woman who had knocked down Polnareff was on the same bus with them as she told them her family lived in the city they were traveling too. Hikari sat next to Jotaro on the bus leaning against him asleep. Jotaro had no trouble with Hikari leaning on him and even shifted himself so she could sleep better.

Polnareff spent the whole bus ride lecturing the woman on why she shouldn't be with Hol Horse and how she was making bad decisions. When Polnareff realised that he didn't know her name, she answered. "Nena." Polnareff complimented that it was a pretty name. Nemuru rolled her eyes at Polnareff. He just had to go and flirt with the woman who tackled him to the ground. "Moron." She mumbled.

"Hey." Kakyoin called out to his teammates. "Where almost there. The city of Varanasi." He said as they all looked out the window. When the bus stopped, Jotaro picked Hikari up bridal style and carried her off allowing her to sleep some more. Joseph had been constantly scratching at his arm the whole bus ride, a large welt growing in the spot that he was continuously scratching. He and the others failed to noticed this "wart" had bit off a fly's head when it flew near it. "What's wrong, old man? You don't look well." Jotaro said.

"Looks like my bug bite just got a lot worse. This thing must be infected." Joseph showed everyone his arm. There was a large growth on his arm and it looked like it had a face. "It's definitely swollen. It would be best to have a doctor look at it before it gets worse. I'm not sure if Soundless Voice can heal that." Kakyoin said. "I agree." Nemuru said.

"Hey, doesn't that sort of look like a person's face?" Polnareff said staring at the growth. Joseph pulled his arm back. "Stop kidding around, Polnareff. That's creepy."

"Hehe, Sorry 'bout that. Want me to go to the hospital with you?" Polnareff asked the elder Joestar. "No! Stop treating me like an old man," Joseph said before walking away. Nena stayed behind the Joestar group as she kept her eyes on Joseph. She opened her mouth to let out her tongue, which has another wart on it. It had made the same ominous sound as did the one on Joseph's arm.

After a while Hikari had woken up to find herself in a bizarre position, Jotaro's arms. Hikari's became beet red with embarrassment and thanked Jotaro for carrying her and questioned where everyone was. He told her that Joseph went to take care of his bug bite while Polnareff went to go see the woman home. With that said her, Jotaro, Kakyoin and Nemuru decided to explore the different vendors.

Hikari marvelled at all the products, she bought some spices and herbs that could be used for medical purposes. Kakyoin had told that Joseph to the doctor to get that infection looked because he didn't think her Stand would be able to heal. Hikari felt bad about that so she thought she should be more useful to the group in a different way, healing wise. She even found a few materials that her mother might like for her clothing line.

The guys were checking over the different food vendors and Nemuru looked over a vendor that was selling some really nice gemstones. She found a sparkling amethyst stone and called over to Hikari. "What do you think of this stone here?" She asked as she turned around. "I think that I can figure out what your favourite colour is." Kakyoin chuckled as he smiled at her. Nemuru jumped slightly when she saw him. She looked around but didn't find Hikari anywhere... or Jotaro.

"Where did Hikari and Jotaro go?" She asked him. Kakyoin rubbed the back of his neck, looking a bit nervous yet amused at the same time. "Jotaro saw that she was going to view a snake charmer and he immediately went after her." He told her. Nemuru sighed and shook her head. "Seriously? That child's scared of snakes, and other things. I wonder how that girl's been functioning all these years if she forgot that."

"Well, let's be happy that Jotaro's been watching over her since grade school." Kakyoin said as they began walking together to find them. "I

guess so." She said. Though, she couldn't help that she was a bit jealous of how attached Hikari was of Jotaro. There was silence between them and Kakyoin was beginning to feel a little uncomfortable about it. Then he remembered that watch Nemuru had on her and thought of a topic. "You know, I've been wondering about that watch you used to get Hang Man. I'm surprised you're the kind of someone who carries that around."

Nemuru felt her face flush as she struggled to find an answer. "Y-yeah? Well, so what? I like it. Doesn't work though..." She said. "Oh. Is it broken or something?" Kakyoin asked.

"Yeah, but it's pretty old anyway." Nemuru said.

"It didn't look that old. Actually it looked like it was under a lot of great care." Kakyoin told her, smiling. Nemuru puffed her cheeks a bit and turned away. "So? I just said I like it." Kakyoin laughed at her flustered expression. Haha, she's so cute! *'Huh? Where'd that come from?'* He thought. That was weird. "Mind if I take a look at it?" He asked her. "No way!" Nemuru said almost immediately. Kakyoin was taken aback by her sudden outburst and she was just as shocked as he was. Nemuru quickly said, "I...I'm sorry. I didn't mean to shout like that."

"It's alright. It's my fault for not considering it." Kakyoin told her. Nemuru shook her head. "No, it's not that. It's just..." She began to say when she saw Jotaro and Hikari walking towards them. With Hikari clinging to his arm in fear. When asked what happened, Jotaro told them that one of the snakes had slithered near Hikari's foot and she screamed in fright. Luckily, the charmer had grabbed the snake in time, so she didn't get bit. But Hikari was slightly paralysed by the shock and Jotaro had move her himself.

The others couldn't help but laugh at her, and they continued on going through the marketplace. After a while of looking around, the group was stopped by two officers. "Have you any of you seen an older looking American man, about this tall wearing a tan shirt and brown pants?" An officer asked. "Huh? Oh, N-no sir." Hikari said, softly. "Never seen anyone like that." Nemuru told them. Jotaro and Kakyoin shook their heads too. The two officers thanked them for their time and they ran off, keeping up their search. "That sounded

like Mr. Joestar, right?" Hikari asked, nervously.

"Oh, good grief." Jotaro said.

"Can't he stay out of trouble for a few minutes?" Nemuru asked. After a while of searching, the four high school students found Joseph and a rather heartbroken looking Polnareff. It turns Nena was a Stand user in disguise and Polnareff found out in a rather tragic, and disturbing way. Night had fallen and Joseph rented a car so they could be on their way especially since the cops were still looking for him. Polnareff had been sulking the whole time and was still glum as he sat on the ground. "And here I thought we'd finally be able to sleep in a bed for once." Kakyoin said.

"If the old man hadn't screwed up, we wouldn't be out here hiding from the cops." Jotaro said.

"I took care of things. We can take this car. Polnareff, you do the driving." Joseph tossed the key to Polnareff. It simply lands in Polnareff's flat top sticking there. "What? Don't tell me, you're still in shock? I was the one who was attacked by the Stand." Joseph said.

"Sure... but I think I'd rather have gone through that...." Polnareff whined. Hikari gave a giggle and went over to the broken-hearted Frenchman, placing her hands on his shoulders. "Cheer up Mr. Polnareff, it's okay. I'm sure there are plenty of real, beautiful women out there waiting for you. You'll find the one eventually." Hikari said. Polnareff looked up at Hikari with comical teary eyes and a smile. "Ha, I highly doubt it!" Nemuru laughed. "Nemuru, hush!" The golden-haired girl scolded softly.

Polnareff then stood up abruptly, scaring Hikari, and stared intently at her. Polnareff then pinched and pulled her cheeks, as if making sure that she herself was real. "Ow! Ow, what are you doing, Mr. Polnareff?" Hikari asked him. Polnareff let go and let out a sigh of relief. "Thank goodness, you're real." He told her. His blue eyes then traveled to Nemuru and she already knew what going through his mind. "Touch my face and I'll break yours."

"Yeah, that's Nemuru." Polnareff said. Now that Polnareff was pulled out of his gloomy funk, they hopped inside the car and drove off into

the night, unaware of the other car following them. Morning came and the group stayed on the road to get to the next town over, Hikari and Nemuru felt rather squished in their seats. They were stuck in the back of the car sandwiched between Jotaro and Joseph. Normally this wouldn't be a problem, but Joseph and Jotaro had the figures of bodybuilders and took up a lot of space.

"We're about to hit the Indo Pakistani border. I guess it's time to say goodbye to India." Kakyoin said. "You know, I had mixed feelings about the country at first, but now I actually kind of miss the hustle and bustle of Calcutta, and frenetic chaos at the Ganges." Joseph said.

"I'll be coming back again, one of these days. I owe it to Avdol to give him a proper burial." Polnareff said. Everyone fell silent at that. That's right... Avdol wasn't with them anymore. It was an weird feeling not having him around. He was a big part of the team since the beginning... And now they have to move on without him? It definitely needed some time getting used to. "Mr. Avdol..." Kakyoin said. "I miss him." Hikari told them.

Pretty soon, the road ahead of them got a lot more narrower and they found another car in front of them. It looked to be an older red model with bright, metallic parts. "Where did he come from?" Nemuru questioned. The driver in front revved his engine, shooting fumes and dirt into the window of their car. "Quit driving so slow, idiot! Out of the way! I'm gonna pass the guy!" Polnareff shouted. Polnareff hit the gas and swerved around the other car right before the road got too narrow. Sending a few rocks to fly towards it.

"Polnareff, calmed down." Kakyoin said. But Polnareff let out a laugh as he continued to drive. "Hahaha! This four-wheel drive is great!" The others looked back at the car and became a little concern of a possible confrontation with the driver. "You know, that crazy manoeuvre of yours might've just damaged that poor car." Joseph said. "Yeah, your point?" Polnareff asked.

"I'm saying we don't need anymore trouble now. I'm wanted because of what happened in Varanasi. I liked to get across the boarder in one piece." As they came around a turn Polnareff gasped and slammed the breaks hard. "What's up, why'd you stop?!" Kakyoin asked.

"I told you, a crash could be disastrous!" Joseph said. "I know that! Just...looks who's standing over there!" Polnareff said pointing out the front window. The rest of the Joestar group looked up ahead and saw someone standing in the middle of the road hitchhiking. Their clothes and hat looked very familiar. "Good freaking Grief." Jotaro said pulling down his cap. The hitchhiker removed her hat to let down her long hair. It was Anne. She smiled at them and said, "Hey! Long time, no see guys. Got room for one more?"

Everything looked at one another in uncertainty, but they reluctantly agreed to give the kid a ride along with them. "Uhmmm... How are we gonna fit her in the car?" Nemuru asked them. Everyone looked back at Hikari and Jotaro. "W-What?" The sapphire-eyed girl asked. Hikari quickly got her answer when she was put in the lap of Jotaro giving Anne her seat next to Nemuru. Hikari's hair covered her face as she flushed sitting in Jotaro's lap. This was so embarrassing!!

"Mind telling why you're out here in the middle of nowhere, kid?" Nemuru asked Anne.

"I mean, come on, I'm a girl. Soon I'll be doing girl things like wearing a bra, and doing my nails to get the attention of boys. I'll look pathetic wandering around the world when I'm that age." Anne said.

"B-but Anne, don't you think that it might too dangerous for you to be travelling now, and all by yourself too? You're still little to be making such decisions." Hikari said.

"And by the way, aren't you, like, eleven or something? You're about as flat as a brick to be thinking about wearing one. And for the record, how'd you survive this long?" Nemuru said. "Hey!" Anne shouted at her. "This is the only chance I have to be free and see the world. You know what I mean?"

As they were talking, Polnareff looked into the rearview mirror and saw the same red car appearing behind them. He noticed that it was getting too close to them so he sped up the car. Hikari shook her head and told Anne, "That doesn't excuse the fact that you practically ran away from home. My goodness, your parents must be worrying themselves to death about you, sweetie."

"Look, I feel bad for lying about seeing my dad in Singapore, but let's just forget about that."

"No, we will not!" Hikari said.

HONK HONK

Everyone but Polnareff looked back and saw the car from earlier speeding towards them. "Hey, it's the car we passed. Looks like he's in a hurry," Jotaro said.

"Let him pass, okay Polnareff?" Joseph said. "Yeah." Polnareff rolled down the window and stuck his arm out gesturing for the car to pass. As the car passed Hikari and Jotaro watched it getting a weird vibe from the vehicle, they tried to catch a glimpse of the driver but couldn't see his face through the tinted windows. Once the car was in front of them it slowed down once again sending dirt and fumes into their car making everyone cough.

"What the hell? What's he trying to do? I let you pass, now hurry up and go already!" Polnareff tried his best to go around the car but the dirt road had gotten narrower making it hard to pass. "He's probably angry about your manoeuvre and these are the consequences." Kakyoin pointed out.

"So did you get a look at the driver's face?" Jotaro asked. "No. The windows were covered in thick dust, couldn't see a thing." Polnareff said.

"Neither could I... Couldn't be," Jotaro said to himself. Hikari looked at her best friend out of concern and reached out hold onto his sleeve. "Be very careful. Polnareff," Joseph said. Suddenly the car's front window rolled down and Polnareff tensed up. Keeping his eyes on the open window. Then an arm stuck out and the driver signals for them to pass. What? He's telling *them* to pass now?

Polnareff barely held in a laugh as he says, "Now he wants me to pass. Looks like the fool realised how shitty that piece of junk is. You should've stayed behind me the first place, dumbass. Coming through!" He sped up and easily went around the car but then a semi truck appeared out of nowhere. "Where'd that come from!?" Polnareff

shouted. "No use! Hold on!!" Kakyoin yelled out. Before anyone could react the semi truck smacks head first into the car.

"Star Platinum!"

Star Platinum hits the semi-truck back, lessening the impact and preventing it from crushing the car. The car flew back and landed hard on the ground. "Th-That was close! If it weren't for Star Platinum's power, we would have been crushed beneath that like a tin can." Polnareff said. "Oh, ya think!?" Nemuru told him. Hikari's whole body was shaking like a leaf as she grasped her arms wrapped tightly around Jotaro's neck. "C-c-can we please not drive for a little bit?" Hikari said. Jotaro looks down at her and wrapped an arm around her shoulders.

"He's gone. Where did that blasted car go?!" Joseph yelled.

"Looks like it just kept going. I think the driver could've be one of the Stand users. Then again, it could've just been some sick bastard." Jotaro said.

"Of course it was one of Dio's lackeys! We were almost road kill for God's sake." Polnareff yelled. "Then why didn't he simply attack us with his Stand when he had the chance?" Kakyoin said. Polnareff started the car back up, good thing it works considering the front half was smashed in. "Anyway, we've got to keep heading to Pakistan. Be on guard, if someone comes after us again, we'll make them eat our dust." Joseph said. "Damn straight." Polnareff agreed.

"What about the semi?" Nemuru asked, pointing at the wrecked truck that was off to the side. Kakyoin was on her side about it and said, "She's got a point. What we should we do about? Star Platinum left it a wreck, won't be going anywhere." Jotaro pulled down his cap and answered. "That's easy, we pretend we never saw it. Let's get going." He said.

'He's so cool...!' Anne thought. Nemuru looked over and noticed Anne looking at Jotaro with a smile and flushed cheeks. She raised an eyebrow at the girl. *'Oh...so that's why she followed us. However,'* Nemuru thought as she stared at the tall delinquent and gentle girl. A small, sad smile appeared on her face. *'Somebody's gotta tell her that he*

might have his eyes on someone else.'

Hikari soon calmed herself down and looked up to be face-to-face with Jotaro since she still had her arms wrapped around his neck. Jotaro looked at Hikari and then he smiled, catching her off guard. She quickly let go of Jotaro and sat forward in his lap her hands followed tightly in her own lap, her cheeks growing hot. If this keeps up, she's going to faint.

With the red, old car, it continued to drive upwards till it reached a fork in the road. It had a sign post with one saying 'SYRIE' and below was an arrow pointing to left, directing any drivers that that was the way to Pakistan. The driver revved up his engines and crashed against the sign, forcing the arrow to switch to the right instead. Then the car mysteriously vanished. Leaving only its tire marks on road leading up to the sigh.

The Joestar group continued to drive along the windy mountain road when they came across a roadside tea house. Seeing how they had been driving for most of the night and half way through the day, Joseph suggested they stopped to take a break. And to get some time to avoid the crazy driver that might've tried to get them killed. They parked near the place and everyone filed out of the car. They walked into the small shop and saw the it must've been a slow day since there were four other guests and the three were very brash looking men. Joseph walked up to the counter to find the owner using some type of hand operated pressing machine to make some type of juice.

"What is that stuff?" Joseph asked him.

"Fresh sugarcane juice." The man said. "Care for a glass?" He asked with a friendly smile as he squeezed two drops of lemon into the drink. "Sure why not." Joseph said but when he lifted the glass to take a drink, he saw a reflection of the car from earlier. He quickly turned around, catching everyone's attention, and they turned around too to see the car parked under the shade of a tree.

"It-it's him! That car's here!" Polnareff shouted as he and Jotaro walked over to the car to see if they could find the owner of the car, but saw that it was empty. "Hey! Tell me something, who's the owner of that car parked over there?" Joseph asked the shop owner behind

the counter. "Come on, spill it!"

"Uh... I'm not sure, sir. To be honest, sir, I didn't notice it there...." The man told him.

"Our driver isn't just going to come out and announce it." Kakyoin said.

"He's messing with us!" Polnareff shouted, getting angry.

"Yeah. And I guess this leaves us with only one option. Right, Jotaro?" Joseph said.

"Yeah. Poor innocent bastards." Jotaro said. The three men heard that and saw the giant teen pointing in their direction. "Oh no." Nemuru said as she and Hikari pulled Anne back knowing what exactly what was coming. "We'll just beat them all down!" Jotaro said.

Jotaro and Joseph quickly started grabbing men, beating anyone who was unlucky enough to get caught in the Joestar's path. "Hey, Jotaro, this is crazy! Mr. Joestar, not you too!" Kakyoin yelled. "Well I now know exactly which side of the family Jotaro takes after." Nemuru said. "JoJo! Honey, please stop! This isn't helping anyone!" Hikari cried out. Although Kakyoin and Hikari were doing their best to stop Jotaro and Joseph, Polnareff decided to join in.

He held up a man by the scruff of his shirt, "Pretty suspicious mug you got there. Was it you?!" He yelled. "Ah! Not me!"

SLAM

The fighting stopped at the sound of a car door slamming and an engine revving. They turned around to see the car speeding away. Their eyes widened in shock when the guy had gotten away somehow under their noses. "That slippery just played the lot of us didn't he?" Polnareff said.

"Damn it! Did anyone see his face?" Joseph asked his crew.

"No. Was is he trying to do? He could be just some mad man with a car or he could be trying to kill us." Kakyoin said. "Stand user or not, I going to beat his ass when I get my hands on him." Nemuru said as

she pound her fist into her hand. Polnareff growled in frustration as he clenched his fists. "We need to take care of this crap! I won't rest until I catch him and get to the bottom of this! Not to mention we owe him payback for that truck that almost hit us earlier." Everyone quickly piled back into the car and Polnareff sped off chasing after the mysterious car, leaving a very confused group of men behind.

They easily caught up with the car but it was speeding pretty fast. "Damn it. For a piece of shit, that car could really get up and go." Polnareff said as the driver lead them to the busted sign post and took the right turn, with the Joestar right behind him. What they had failed to see was a damaged sign that read in bold letters 'DANGER: ROAD CLOSED'. Kakyoin pulled out a map, "That's strange. According to the map, we should be running parallel with train tracks or something."

"Who the hell cares? We'll catch up soon anyway. That bastard, I'm gonna nail him once we round this curve!" Polnareff said. As they turned the curve Polnareff was surprised to not only see the car gone but they were at a dead end. He hit the brakes but the car skidded to the edge of the mountain stopping just before it went over and into a gorge.

"Where the hell he go?! He's gone!" Joseph said.

"Did he just drive off the cliff?" Polnareff asked. "If he did we'd be seeing some smoke below us. "There's no way he could cross that suspension bridge." That's when the car jerked forward. "WHAT?!" They yelled out. Everyone looked back to see the car had reappeared and was now pushing their car over the ledge. "It's him! He keeps pushing us!" Joseph yelled.

"How the hell did he get behind us?" Kakyoin asked. Polnareff put the car in reverse but it was no use as the other car kept pushing them. "Damn! How much horsepower is that piece of junk running with!? Damn it, it's like fighting a tank!" Polnareff shouted as he kept trying to fight against the other. But he panicked as he saw that no matter how hard he stepped on the gas, they were nearing the edge. "It's no use! Everyone, get out! It's our only chance!" Polnareff panicked trying to take his seatbelt off. "You dumbass!" Nemuru shouted at the Frenchman.

"Polnareff! What are you doing?! You can't get out the car until the rest of us are clear first! You have to hold down the brake!!" Kakyoin shouted.

"What?!" The car jerked forward and the front wheels went over the edge. "S-Sorry!" Polnareff said. The car went over the edge and free fell into the pit. The driver let out a chuckle as they screamed. "Hierophant Green!" The green Stand came out going to grab the front of the car. "Stop! Hierophant Green isn't nearly strong enough to support this kind of weight! You'll be torn to shreds." Joseph said.

"Mr. Joestar, with all due respect I am aware of my own abilities. I am not a fool." Kakyoin told him. Suddenly the car stopped jerked as it stopped falling. Hierophant Green had used the front winch of the car and pulled the cable up hooking it onto the car that had pushed them over. "Ah, I get it. You used the car's winch instead of just brute strength!" Joseph said.

"Not bad Kakyoin. I got a question for you, you like sumo?" Jotaro asked. Star Platinum came out and grabbed the wire pulling their car up. "Especially deadlocks at the edge of the ring?! It's exciting, isn't it?!" Jotaro said. Star Platinum pulled them up and punched the other car with a mighty "ORA!" Making it fall down into the gorge. The car winch unhooked as they landed back safely on the ground.

"Yeah, I'm a fan of sumo. But in sumo, it's against the rules to punch your opponent." Kakyoin said. Jotaro smirked looking at Kakyoin. "That was amazing, JoJo! Terrifying, but amazing!" Hikari cheerfully said as she wrapped her arms around Jotaro's neck, hugging him. Jotaro placed his hands on her arms and gently pulled her off. She still had her bright smile on her face. Jotaro gave a small smile as he patted her head. Looking at them made Kakyoin shift his gaze at the dark-purple girl, who was currently holding her head. For some reason, he's hoping for the same thing from her.

"Ugh, my head." She groaned. She then saw Kakyoin looking at her and she smiled. "Nice work on the winch line, Kakyoin." She said, giving him a playful punch in the shoulder. Kakyoin let out a defeated sigh, but smile nonetheless. Oh well. He'll take what he can get.

Chapter 20: The Wheel of Fortune, part 2

After they were safely back onto of the cliff, everyone got out to see the car below on fire with smoke coming from it. It was totally destroyed, and considering all things, no one could've have survived a fall like that.

"Nothing here suggests he used a Stand attack, I think it's safe to say, he's just some weirdo with an axe to grind." Joseph said. "Yeah. Either way, he's a goner after that fall. Heh, I guess what goes around, comes around." Polnareff said.

"Yeah, but I still wonder. How did it get behind us? It was like watching a magician or something, it's so strange." Anne pondered. Just then, a soft static noise came up and a voice followed soon after, saying. "Actually, little girl, it's not strange at all." Everyone gasped and looked behind them. "The radio!" Polnareff said. "He's coming from the am fm fam!"

"I was able to do that because it's my Stand, Joestar!" The voice said.

"What?!" Joseph yelled. "He knows my name, so that confirms it. He's an enemy Stand user!"

"Where is he? Could he really be sending out a signal from the car down there?" Kakyoin asked. "No way! Do you see the wreck down there?" Polnareff told him. He didn't want to think that is was what he thought it was. However, Jotaro had confirmed his unheard question. "No. That old jalopy could very well be a Stand. You remember the boat Stand? This may be a repeat." Jotaro said

"Oh, great. Wonderful." Nemuru said, bitterly.

"Behold, the Wheel of Fortune. My Stand will lead you to your maker!" The radio threaten. Suddenly the ground beneath them started to shake. Oh, come on! What's happening now!? "What the? An earthquake?"Kakyoin asked. "I've got a bad feeling." Polnareff

said.

"Everybody, get in the car!" Joseph said.

"No! Stay back! Don't go anywhere near it!" Jotaro yelled. "Couldn't be!" "Below us!" Polnareff and Kakyoin yelled out. The ground beneath the car broke open and that was enough to make the Joestar team and Anne to run away from their car as the Wheel of Fortune broke through the ground. The car was mangled and crushed but it still managed to burrow through the ground to the surface.

"Impossible! It burrowed up through the ground! Alright, I think it's pretty obvious that car's actually a Stand!" Polnareff shouted in shock. "Looks like the Stand's user is inside the car." The car started to morph taking on a new shape, looking more like a monster than a car. Spikes and tubes erupt from its hull, its bumper morphs into a beastly maw, with mandible-like projections on either side, and it gains massive exhaust ports on its rear. Wheel of Fortune revved its engine and sped towards them. "It's heading straight for us!" Polnareff yelled. Jotaro scoffed, giving a smirk and held up his fist. "If it's a duel you want, I'm happy to oblige."

"Don't do it, Jotaro. Don't fight it yet! Not until we know what that Stand's power is!" Joseph said. Wheel of Fortune sent out some kind of attack and Jotaro was struck, three holes appearing on his body, blood gushing from them. "Jotaro!"

"Impossible... I couldn't see it. What the hell did he shoot at me and how did the hell did he-?" Jotaro said but was interrupted by the enemy's laughter. "Yeeehahahahaha! Don't even know what hit you, huh? You'll soon find out! The moment you croak that is!" Wheel of Fortune said charging forward. It sent out another attack. Polnareff and Kakyoin jumped in and tried to save Jotaro, while Hikari rushed in with Soundless Voice to form a shield, but the attack was too fast and all four were hit. "Hikari!" Nemuru gasped. "Jotaro! Polnareff! Kakyoin!" Joseph said.

"God damn! What the hell is this?! The wounds aren't deep, but they sting like hell!" Polnareff said. "I can't see it at all! I thought the car threw something at us, but there's nothing inside our wounds! What the hell is going on here!?" Kakyoin shouted.

"JoJo, are you alright?" Hikari asked him. "Don't worry about me, Hikari." Jotaro told her as he pushed her behind him for protection. "I don't know what the hell he's hurling at us. But he's got damn good aim."

"I'll pulverise your legs so you can't move, and then run you over!" Wheel of Fortune said. "Everyone, run between the boulders!" Joseph yelled. Everyone ran back in between a narrow passageway hoping that would block Wheel of Fortune. The Bound Stand had barely missed them when they entered. But the user was determined to get to them. "Stop running away, you cowards!" Wheel of Fortune shouted. "What are you, roaches?!"

"Oh no! He's digging his way through!" Joseph yelled.

"And we're no match for him in here." Kakyoin said.

"What a freak! He's acting like some stupid muscle head who got cut off in traffic and flew into a fit of road rage." Polnareff shouting.

"Just keep running!" Jotaro yelled. Everyone ran towards the rock wall and started to climb up. Nemuru slipped slightly but she was grabbed by Kakyoin who helped keep her on the rock wall. Jotaro had Hikari hold onto his back and ordered her to not looked down. She nodded and held on tight. As Nemuru climbed, she stopped halfway up when she heard Anne cry out. She looked down to see the girl had tripped and was now just laying out on the ground crying.

"Wait, come back! I can't keep up! Ahhhhh! Yeah, okay, so I ran away from home. I'm a good for nothing drifter that nobody loves! I'm gonna die!!" Anne cried. Nemuru sweatdropped. "S-she cant be serious." Jotaro picked Anne up by the back of her overalls pulling her up the wall. "Good grief, If you have time to say all that crap, you can run away. You damn little brat."

"I love you so much, Jotaro!" Anne yelled. Nemuru sweatdropped more. "She *can't* be serious." They quickly climbed to the top of the wall, but the enemy just continued to laugh at them from below. He saw this as a mere obstacle and their pathetic attempt to avoid their inevitable death.

"Yeehahahah! Go ahead and climb. There's no path left for you to take! No way to escape, no way to survive, and last, but certainly not least, no future! Because... This Wheel of Fortune is going to grind you into mincemeat and splatter you all over these boulders! I'll paint this mountain red with your guts!" Wheel of Fortune's wheels grew spikes and it started to drive up the side of the rocky wall. "OH NO!" Joseph screamed.

"It's climbing up the cliff!" Kakyoin said. "Are you freaking kidding me?!" Nemuru yelled. "Is there anything this car can't do!?" Polnareff shouted. As the Wheel of Fortune was speeding towards them, Jotaro motioned for all of them to stay back. "Good grief. Looks like the time to fight him is now. The rest of you stay back, he's mine. Once he climbs up here, the car's underside will be bare. Then we'll see just how strong this thing is." Jotaro said.

"I get it. Once it's underside is exposed, we may be able to attack it." Kakyoin said. Wheel of Fortune appeared over the side and, with a roar from the user, Star Platinum moved in quick on the offensive. "You're pretty fast there, Jotaro! But not too bright!" Wheel of Fortune said as Star Platinum rushed forward and prepared to use his awesome strength to pulverised the car. "Your bodies reek and you haven't even noticed! Try paying attention!" Wheel of Fortune said. Star Platinum pulled back as Jotaro realised what the Wheel of Fortune meant.

"Come to think of it, I guess I did smell gasoline." Kakyoin said. Nemuru took a few sniffs before her eyes widened in shock as she shouted out, "It's you guys!" Hikari looked down at herself and panicked when she saw that her whole body had traces of gasoline. "Ah, no way...!" She whimpered. "Our bodies smell like a gas station!" Polnareff said. Wheel of Fortune sent out another attack and they could tell what it was. "That what it was shooting! Gasoline! It was shooting small amounts of it at speed like bullets! Incredible!" Kakyoin said.

"This is nuts! So he wasn't trying to wound us, he was dousing our bodies in gasoline, were covered in this stuff!" Polnareff said. Jotaro was hit with more gasoline bullets as Wheel of Fortune started to come down. Hikari's eyes widened in fear as she saw her best friend nearly fall to his knees. "No..." She said softly. Then she screamed,

"JoJo!!" And she sprinted towards him with no hesitation. They others were shocked at her sudden actions and called out to her. "Chiara!" "Get back! It's too dangerous!" Hikari!"

"Looks like you finally caught on, but its too late now!" Wheel of Fortune pulled on some wires creating electric sparks. "Now all you need is a little jolt!" Hikari arrived just as the wires shot out hitting both Jotaro and Hikari, catching the two on fire. "What?!" Hikari wrapped her arms around Jotaro and shut her eyes. "AHHHHHH! Jotaro!" Anne cried. "Hikari!!" Nemuru yelled out as tears formed in her eyes. Jotaro and Hikari let out a scream as they were quickly engulfed in a large flame. "Jotaro!" Joseph yelled. He desperately tried to run to his grandson but he was quickly held back by Kakyoin.

"Mr. Joestar, stay back! We're soaking with gasoline too, it's too dangerous!" Kakyoin said. Nemuru collapse to her knees as she watched helplessly as she watched her dearest friend and Jotaro burned alive. *'Hikari...! No..! I'm sorry, I couldn't protect you..!!'* She cried in her thoughts. Wheel of Fortune laughed as Jotaro's and Hikari's body hit the ground. "Jotaro! Chiara, no!" Joseph shouted.

"I win! Part Three is over!" Wheel of Fortune cackled. Wheel of Fortune continued to laugh as everyone looked heartbroken over the loss of Jotaro and Hikari. "Is that so? And who exactly would replace me, Jotaro Kujo?"

"Huh?!"

SMASH

A fist broke through the ground and Hikari had come out from the ground gasping for air with Jotaro right beside her, he climbed out of the solid rock, only missing his jacket. He was completely healed from his previous injuries and whatever else that fire might left him with. He held out a hand for his golden-haired friend and when she grasped it, he lifted her up to her and held her close. "Let me guess, You thought it'd be you, ya road hog!" Jotaro said with a smirk.

"You burrowed into the ground with Star Platinum! So the only thing that burned up was your jacket! But...that doesn't explain how you were able to escape without a scratch!" He yelled. Jotaro continued

to smirked as Hikari looked up at Wheel of Fortune. "It's because of me. Before the fire engulfed us, I had managed to form a shield around JoJo and I. And while Star Platinum was digging us underground, I had Soundless Voice heal Jotaro up." She said.

"Hmph, a little parting wisdom. What you said earlier about paths? Was dead wrong. You see, in life you have to forge your own path, no one can do it for you. So I'll offer you some guidance." Jotaro said. The Stand's user let out a cry of fear as he instantly knew what was coming next. "But first, you have to go through a little pain!" He brought Star Platinum and he hammered in the pain and to destroy Wheel of Fortune. "**ORA ORA ORA ORA ORA ORA**!" Star Platinum crushed Wheel of Fortune and knocked the Stand user out of the vehicle. "That is how is it's done. See, you just paved your own path, congrats on being a fast learner. Here ends the lesson." Jotaro said, still smirking.

A wounded man sat up fear over his face. He had black hair and eyes, and the seriously weird thing about him was that he has large and muscular arms, while the rest of his body is relatively skinny. "What an odd guy. His arms are the size of boulders, and yet everything else is so small. Talk about a bluff," Kakyoin said. Nemuru looked annoyed by looking at the guy and sighed. "Ugh, I don't know he's even worth giving a beat down." The man turned over and started to crawl away but was stopped by Polnareff. "Hello. Going somewhere?" Polnareff said, stepping on the man's back.

"Please, don't kill me! I'm just in this for the money, honest!" The man shrieked. Everyone laughed at the poor man's whimpering. Even Jotaro had amused smile on his face. Hikari was laughing at bit too, but she slowly stopped when she felt Jotaro's hand tighten its grip on her shoulder. Uh-oh. She's going to get an earful from him. Suddenly Wheel of Fortune started to shake and then it slowly transformed into a small, dilapidated car. "Oh, would you look at that. I can't believe the Stand was disguising such a small car, that entire time. Kind of reminds me of a fluffy little sheep that's just had all of his wool shorn off. What a pathetic hunk of junk." Joseph said.

"HAHAHAHAHAHAH!" They laughed at him. His attacks and Stand were impressive, but the user was a total let down. "What should we do with him?" Polnareff questions. Soon the man was chain to a

boulder upside down his mouth gagged. A sign in front of him telling anyone who passed by that he was a monk in the midst of spiritual training and he shouldn't be disturbed. While Polnareff and Joseph were chaining him to the boulder, still laughing, Jotaro pulled Hikari off to the side. Hikari knew what was coming and braced herself.

Sure enough, Jotaro bonked her on the head and went through with his scolding. "You're such a damned idiot, the hell were you thinking rushing in like that?" Hikari gave him the most apologetic look and fiddled with her fingers as she said, "I-I'm s-sorry. I just... Wanted to protect you...s-somehow. I'm so sorry." Jotaro gave her a stare before letting out a sigh. To be honest, he thought it was stupid of her to go running into danger like that, but he was just so relieved to see that she was safe and sound. So he'll let this one slide. For now. "Good freaking grief." He said as he stepped forward and patted her head. Hikari gave a small smile and went in to hug him.

Anne watched them from the distance and saw their whole interaction. Her face fell a little when Jotaro patted her head and Hikari hugging him. Nemuru walked up the kid and placed a comforting hand on her shoulder. "Sorry, Anne. But it looks like you've lost." She told her. Anne sighed. "Yeah... Guess, I didn't stand a chance." When Hikari and Jotaro pulled away, Nemuru sprinted towards them and gave Hikari a bear bone-crushing hug. Thanking God, her friend was safe. But she made a mental note to keep her in arms reach next time.

Afterwards, they finished chaining the user up and just left him there. Him crying for help that may or may not come. Who knows? Oh, well. Not their problem. "Well then. Let's take his car across the boarder. Only fair since he smashed ours." Joseph said.

"It's pretty beat up though. I wonder how if it'll last that long." Kakyoin said. The car drove off and they could hear the cries of the man in the distance. "And you're on the next flight to Hong Kong once we find an airport." Jotaro said to Anne. "Aw, no! Why?!" Anne yelled.

"Shut up! Don't you understand that you're in the way, you little brat?" Polnareff said. They heard a very bad noise coming from the car. Which either meant it something going on with the engine or

something had broken off. "Uhh..? We might not make it that far..." Joseph says.

"HHEEELLP!!"

Meanwhile, in a dark secluded room, Enyaba was in a crumpled mess. Crying, sobbing and overall, frustrated that all six of her Stand users were defeated. Including her dear, beloved son. Earlier on that day, she had found about his death when she received that same wounds on her body, the very same ones that he had, due to a special link they both share. She knew full well who killed him. As she mourns for her son, Enyaba shouts to herself, "My seven assassins have all been defeated so easily! How could they be crushed like that?! The shame!! I can not bear to face Lord Dio!" With a scream, Enya started banging her head against the floor.

"Damn you!! Cruse you, Polnareff!! Curse you, Kakyoin! Curse, Nemuru! Curse Hikari!! Curse, Jotaro and his wretched grandfather!! AAUUGGHH!!" Madness and bloodlust filled her to the brim as she jumped to her feet and ran out like the horrid witch she was. "I, Enyaba, shall be your next and final opponent! I will fight with my very own Stand! The Stand of Justice!"

Chapter 21: Justice part 1

"JoJo? Honey, come with me." Hikari said as pulled the tall delinquent into a clothing store, a tailor parlour, which specialises in making fittings for individual customers. The owner looked up from the fabrics she was sorting through when she heard the door bell chime. She turned around and greeted them. "Hello, welcome! Welcome to my shop! What can I do to help you today. Hikari smiled at her and pulled out a small notebook. "Hello. I was wondering if you could make this jacket made as fast as you can for my friend, please?"

Hikari showed the owner and the workers a drawing of Jotaro's jacket and had written down his exact measurements as to make sure they made it to his size and to not make any mistakes. A seamstress got to work quick and with expert hands made Jotaro's jacket in no time. Jotaro tried on the new jacket and it was a perfect fit. Hikari smiled brightly at him as he put on his trademark jacket, they even included the chain and everything.

"Oh my that looks quite good on you! In all my years, I've never received such a strange request for clothing! But the pleasure was mine, sir." The seamstress exclaimed. But she was quickly silenced when Jotaro held out some money to her. "Here, we've got to go. Keep the change." Once the bill was paid, Hikari said thank you to both the owner and the seamstress and the two teen left the shop, "We should hurry, JoJo or we'll gonna miss the plane!" Hikari held Jotaro's hand and they ran down the street heading to the airport.

At the airport, Joseph and the others had already bought a plane ticket for Anne to go back home to her parents. It was easier said than done, cause Anne was struggling to get out of Polnareff's grip and avoid going into the plane while Kakyoin gave her ticket to the flight attendant. "Let go! Let go of me!" Anne shouted as she kept on struggling. "And don't you dare touch me there, you jerk!" Polnareff was literally only holding her up from beneath her arms. "Hey, don't say it like that!" He shouted back.

"Here's her ticket." Kakyoin said as he handed it to the attendant. "And make sure she gets to her destination safely, please." Nemuru said to him.

"No, I don't wanna! I wanna keep going with you guys!" Anne shouted again. However, she stopped her thrashing when Joseph placed a hand on her head, making her look up at him. It was then that Joseph decided to tell Anne, more or less, the real reason as to why they were travelling, and knew that, once he did, Anne would see reason and go back for her own safety. "Listen little miss," Joseph started. "We're not vacationing here. My daughter, Jotaro's mother, is in grave danger at the moment." Anne's eyes slightly widened when she heard that. She hadn't really thought about something like that for them. Then again, how could she?

"We're on this journey to save my daughter's life. Not to put yours at risk." Joseph gave the child a smile and then said, "Forget this running away business and start heading home. I'm sure your parents are worried sick wondering where you are." Anne stopped struggling then and there, and Polnareff set her down. Anne truly didn't want to leave, but with what has been said to her, she didn't have much a say in the matter anymore. "Fine, I suppose so. I'll make you look good this time, grandpa."

Anne proceeded to go towards the plane, but she stopped and began searching the area. What..? Where was he? She thought he'd be here to see her leave. Joseph noticed this and asked her, "What's the matter?" Anne tensed up and puffed out her cheeks. "Nothing." She then jogged up the stairs and stopped at the entrance. She turned back to the Joestar group and said, "See ya! Life is just a bunch of goodbyes anyway." The flight attendant followed behind her and folded up the stairs and shut the door. Anne sat near the back as the plane began to take off. She frowned as she realised that she couldn't say goodbye to the one person she wanted to see one last time.

'I do sort of wished I could've seen him once more before I had to go.' Anne thought to herself. She then looked out the window and her eyes widened out of joy. She smiled brightly as she let out a gasp of happiness. She saw Jotaro walking beside the plane with Hikari at his side. He had made it. She was able to see him again. Even though she knew he couldn't hear her, Anne still called out to him. "Goodbye,

JoJo! You better save your mom, we're all counting on you! I'll be cheering you on!" Anne smiled from her window seat in the plane. Anne then noticed Hikari's hand holding his. She pouted but she smiled brightly and waved her goodbye. "Goodbye, Hikari! It was great meeting you! You better take good care of him, you hear me!"

Hikari saw her and happily waved at Anne, "Bye-bye Anne! Stay safe!" She called out to her as the plane took off into the air. Jotaro looked up to the plane and gave a small "Hmph" and turned away.

After a while, the Joestar group had gotten a new car and were now driving through Pakistan. Hikari and Nemuru were once again sandwiched between Jotaro and Joseph, but this time the girls had even less room since they had to squeeze into a small jeep. Hikari was only grateful that she wasn't sitting on Jotaro's lap again, she didn't think she could handle that again.

"I got to say Jotaro, I'm impressed you got a Japanese school uniform made here in Pakistan." Joseph said. "The fit is perfect too." Jotaro gave a small smirk and told his grandfather, "It's a 100% wool." Hikari smiled at him and felt his new jacket. "It definitely feels wonderful."

"Hey Polnareff, are you okay driving right now? The fog in this area is getting quite thick." Kakyoin said. Now that he mentioned it, with the fog rolling in, it didn't seem safe for them to keep on driving. They were driving on a road near cliff side towards Karachi and the couldn't see the bottom of the cliff. "These aren't exactly the safest conditions. It's one hell of a drop off the right side and there's no guardrail anywhere." Polnareff said

"Hmm... The fog looks even thicker up ahead." Joseph said as he pull out his pocket watch, "It's not even 3:00 yet, but we should head in." He looked down the cliff and spotted a town just up ahead. "Let's find a place to stay in that town for the night."

"You think they have nice hotels?" Polnareff asked. "Nice hotel, huh?" Kakyoin smirked at him. Nemuru rolled her eyes at the Frenchman and said, "I don't know if you're pompous or just really picky at where you'll sleep." Polnareff sneered at her and said, "I just appreciate a nice, clean places, alright?!" As Nemuru continued to

taunt him, Jotaro looked to the side of the car and his eyes widened when he saw a dead dog on a pike. For a second he thought his eyes were playing tricks on him, but he knew that it was real. *'What the hell?! Was that... a dead dog?'* He thought.

Hikari felt Jotaro tense up beside her and looked up at him. She touched his arm gently and asked, "JoJo? What's wrong, sweetie?" Joseph noticed this as well and asked, "What's the matter Jotaro?" The tall delinquent quickly calmed down and turned to her. He shook his head and told her, "Oh, uh...It was nothing."

Nemuru shifted her eyes to Jotaro and raised an eyebrow. She didn't know why, but she could tell that he wasn't telling the truth. But she didn't call him out on it at the time. If it meant to protect Hikari, than that was all Nemuru cared about. The jeep drove into the town but it was rather hard to see anything with such a thick fog. You could easily cut it with a knife.

"Hey, this is a nice little town, don't you think? There must be a few thousand people living here." Joseph said as he looked around. "Let's ask about a hotel at that restaurant over there." Kakyoin said as the car parked. As they all got out the car, Jotaro put an arm around Hikari's shoulder. Drawing the golden-haired girl close to him. "Stay close." He whispered, studying his surroundings. Hikari was briefly confused but she nodded her head. Looking around, this place was beginning to scare her. It was far too quiet and eerie. Out of instinct, Hikari grabbed a hold of Jotaro's arm.

Polnareff seemed to share the frighten girl's feelings as he said, "But there's a real quiet about this place. No matter where we've gone, every other has been rowdy and congested." Joseph thought about it and said, "It's probably because of the fog." They walked to the restaurant where Joseph decided he was going to do all the talking. This could only end so well with his big mouth. "Listen up guys. In Pakistan and the rest of the Islamic world, this is how you greet people. First, you smile and say," Joseph approached a man standing outside a restaurant and with a wide smile and happy tone said, "Assalam Alaikum!" Nemuru almost facepalmed, *'We're in Pakistan. They speak Urdu not Arabic, you idiot.'* She thought.

The man stared at Joseph with a hard look then slammed the open

sign flipping it to close. "E-er..... No harm intended! No need to close up shop just for us, sir." Joseph stuttered. "We just wanted to ask a question. Are there hotels here in town?" All the older man received in response was silence. Hikari was starting to really get creeped out by the man's dead stare and hide behind Jotaro while hugging his arm.

Joseph was feeling really uncomfortable and then started to go into motion as if he were holding an old-fashioned phone. "Anybody home?!" He said. "I do not know." The man said in a very gruff voice before turning around and walking away."Good day." He said, leaving the Joestar group really uneasy. "Hey, wait a minute! What do you mean 'you don't know'? Huh?" Joseph went as his eyes widened when he saw various cockroaches traveling around the man's neck and back. Taken aback at what he saw, Joseph rubbed his eyes. Wondering if he had just been seeing things. When looked back, the man had disappeared into the restaurant.

"What's with that guy? That can't be right." Joseph said. He thought back to the roaches he saw, but quickly decided that it was his mind playing tricks on him. "I'm sure he couldn't understand you because your pronunciation's so bad," Polnareff said. "Actually Mr. Joestar was fine he just spoke the wrong language. They speak Urdu in Pakistan, not Arabic." Nemuru pointed out.

Polnareff started to laugh at Joseph's shocked face, "Haha, Let's go ask the guy over there." Everyone looked over to where Polnareff was pointing to and saw a man sitting on the ground hunched over. "Excuse me? Sorry, but we're looking for a hotel around here. Preferably a hotel with nice, clean bathrooms. Do you know any that-! Gah!!" Polnareff stopped talking when he saw the man's face.

The man had a look of pure terror frozen on his face. Polnareff grabbed the man asking what was wrong but he fell over as two lizards crawled out of his mouth. "WHAT THE HELL!?" The guys shouted as Hikari let out a tiny shriek of terror as she attempted to hide her face in Jotaro's arm, hugging even tighter. She was shaken by the man's horror-stricken look. Jotaro looked over to her and reached out to hold her trembling hand. What was even stranger is that while they had shouted, no one in town reacted to them at all. Nemuru turned and narrowed her eyes at Jotaro and yelled, "What

the hell did you see on the way here?!"

Before Jotaro could say anything, Polnareff shouted out, "He's dead! With that look of fear on his face! What's going on?! Why's he lying dead in the road? What could have killed him?! A heart attack? A stroke?" Jotaro looked over at the corpse and took notice at the object in his hand. "It's possible. But look, what we've got here is no ordinary heart failure." Jotaro said examining the man.

Polnareff looked at the man again and he too saw what was in the man's hand and it shocked him even more. "It's...a gun! Wait a minute, This guy's holding a gun!" Polnareff pointed out. "You've just noticed?" Kakyoin told him. Jotaro looked at the gun and noticed that the barrel was smoking. "Check it out. It's still smoking." He said. "He must've just fired it. Maybe two to five minutes ago." Joseph said, thinking about the time frame on when this man had pulled the trigger. "Either way, he's must've died right before we arrived in town."

"Do you think...? He shot himself?" Polnareff asked in disbelief.

"I doubt it. His body doesn't seem to have any visible wounds and there's no blood anywhere." Kakyoin said and Joseph kneeled down to further examine the corpse. "Then how'd this guy die?! This isn't natural, look at him! His face is all twisted like he was screaming in utter terror!" Polnareff yelled.

"Outstanding. You got to wonder who or he shot at with that gun. What exactly happened?" Joseph questioned. Kakyoin looked around and saw that no person was reacting to anything they were doing or saying. As if they were actually ignoring the dead man who was lying on road right in front of them. "Didn't anyone here see anything? No one's stopping to help." Kakyoin said. He then spotted a woman walking nearby with two young children and called out to her, "Excuse me! Ma'am, wait! Someone has died here, please call the police!"

The girl beside her hid behind her back while the woman turned to face him. When Nemuru saw the woman's face, she almost gagged. The woman's face had puss spread across it with various leaking boils. Kakyoin looked at her and felt his stomach roiled. The woman

attempted to cover her face with her sleeve as she said, "Pardon me, young man. My boils seemed to be festering today. My apologies... You had a question. What was it that you needed?" Fighting back his initial disgust, Kakyoin repeated his question to her. "I asked if you could please call the police, ma'am."

"The police?" The woman asked in a mild surprised tone. As if she was pretending to be surprised. "What would I do that for?" She asked him. Kakyoin's eyes widened in shock. Did this woman seriously doesn't know what had happened? He had just told that someone was dead! Out in the open! "Look! That man's dead!" Kakyoin shouted as he pointed at the corpse. The woman then began to pick at her boils as her mind, I guess, began to process what he said. But then she said this, "Someone is dead, you say. How terribly unfortunate. I'm not sure if there is anything I can do about that."

Nemuru got pissed at this woman and shouted at her, Kakyoin didn't know what she planned to do, but he held her back by her shoulders. "Are you deaf or something, woman! He's already asked you to call the police twice!" Nemuru was getting aggravated over the whole creepiness of this entire town and it was really getting to her. "Easy, Nemuru." Kakyoin told her. "Of course, call the police. I think he did say that. Well, good day sir." And just like that she walked away without doing much to help them with their situation. Kakyoin nearly threw up as she kept talking about her boils and started to look around the town.

"What is with the people in this town?!" Kakyoin asked. "There's a man lying dead in the street and nobody seems even the slightest bit concerned! Didn't they hear the gunshot, nobody's doing anything! It's like they don't even care. These people are more oblivious than the most jaded NewYorker or Tokyo light."

"This whole thing is driving me crazy." Nemuru said as she messed up her hair. Something caught Jotaro's eye and he turned to see what is was. His eyes widen in silent shock when he saw a very familiar animal. "That dog..." Jotaro mumbled. It was the same dog from earlier up walking around with no injuries at all. Jotaro swore he saw that same dog dead on a spike.

"This blasted fog just keeps getting thicker and thicker." Polnareff

said as he looked up at the sky, well what he can barely see with the fog. Kakyoin agreed with him and said, "It's almost as if the fog is shallowing the town whole." Polnareff looked up at the sky and paled a bit. He pointed at a part of the sky and said, "This is really creepy. Call me crazy, but doesn't that part there look like a skull?"

Seeing that Hikari was still shaking like a leaf, Nemuru took over and held her shoulders. Comforting her as best she could. "If you're trying to scare us, I swear to God..." Nemuru warned. Polnareff quickly turned to her and shouted, "No, I'm serious! Look!" He pointed at the fog again, but Nemuru rolled her eyes in annoyance and proceeded to ignore him there after.

Joseph and Jotaro, however, looked at the fog and they too briefly saw the skull within it. Jotaro kneeled down beside his grandfather and asked him, "What do you want to do? You don't think it could be the work of another Stand user, do you?"

"Probably not. There's no motive. Would someone who's after us kill a man who has nothing to do with us, before we even got here? There's no reason for a Stand user to kill him." Joseph said. "Who knows... The way he died is obviously unnatural. Let's examine the body before the police come. Just...try not to touch it." Jotaro said.

"Right." Joseph nodded his head. "Wh-what?" Hikari stuttered as she stared the Joestar men in shock. Nemuru quickly moved in front of her and said, "Shh, shh. It's okay, hon. Try not to look." Nemuru slowly turned her around and made sure she didn't. Hikari shut her eyes tightly and covered her ears. As they studied the body, they were able to determine that the man was an Indian traveler not from this town.

"This might be something. It appears he was travelling too just like us." Joseph said as he used his pen to see the contents of the man's pocket. A small stack of money and a few tickets leading to somewhere. "He has bus and train tickets in his pocket. And he looks like he might be Indian. He's carrying Indian money on him. I'm guessing he's not from this town." As Joseph began to examine the body more closely, he saw something beneath the man's shirt. "Oh? Look at this wound!" Joseph used his pen to pull down the man's shirt to show a perfectly circular hole in his chest. "He's got gaping hole

here right in his upper chest. This must be what killed him!"

"Hang on, why isn't there any blood coming out?" Jotaro pondered. "With a fatal chest wound this big, there should be blood gushing everywhere. Unless, of course, this is no ordinary murder. Looks like things are about to get messy. We've got to get to the bottom of this and take off his clothes." Jotaro ripped the man's shirt off. Everyone gasped when they saw what was underneath. They found that his body was riddled with bloodless holes.

"What happened to his body?! There's tons of holes all over this guy! He's like that cartoon cheese you'd see on Tom and Jerry!" Polnareff shouted.

"And there's not a drop of blood anywhere near those wounds. How on earth was this man killed? What does this all mean?!" Joseph yelled.

"Be careful. If there wasn't a Stand user here before, you can bet there's one here now." Jotaro said. Knowing that this was getting far too dangerous, Joseph decided that it was best to leave here right away, now! "Everyone get in the car!" Joseph yelled as he ran to the car, grabbing the front seat and jumped over to get inside. "We're leaving this town now-What the-?!" He yelled. In a blink of an eye, the car had vanished and in its place, Joseph was met with a spiked iron fence. Kakyoin, Jotaro, Hikari, Nemuru and Polnareff look over seeing Joseph leaping onto a spiked fence.

"Impossible! This isn't the car! NO, Hermit Purple!!" He shouted as he used Hermit Purple to prevent himself from becoming impaled on the fence. Of course a spike did touch his back which caused him to scream even more. "Hey, old man. What in the hell are you doing? You're crazy." Jotaro said.

Once the elder Joestar got back to safely as he slid down the fence, he flipped out! "Oh no! What do you mean, what am I doing?! The car was right here a minute ago!" Joseph yelled.

"Huh, what are you talking about? We just parked the car over there and walked." Polnareff pointed over his shoulder. "What?! But...just now I could've sworn that-." Joseph gaped. His thoughts were

interrupted by the sound of a walking stick hitting the ground. Out of the fog came a familiar elderly woman hunched over carrying a large walking stick. She nodded at the six in a greeting and they all nodded back.

"Well hello, good sirs and madams. I see you are travellers. I'm afraid with this fog, it's dangerous to leave the town now. There are many cliffs, you know. I run my own Bed and Breakfast not far from here. If you like one, I'd stay there for the night, there's plenty of room for everyone. I'll even give you a healthy discount." Enyaba said.

"Finally, we've actually met a normal person for once!" Polnareff said. Jotaro looked at the woman suspiciously. The man's body was finally carried off by officials but everyone was still on edge since there was a high possibility that a Stand user was nearby.

"We have to assume the Stand user is hiding somewhere in this town. With this fog, there's no telling what our enemy could do. They could be next to us and we wouldn't know." Kakyoin warned his teammates. "We absolutely can not let our guard down tonight."

"You know guys... I realised that no one's attacked us quite yet. But, damn, this town is creepy." Polnareff said. Soon after, Enyaba lead the Joestar group towards a relatively large hotel. Then what she said next caused suspicion. "Come on, this way Master Joestar. That building over there is my Bed and Breakfast. Follow me and I'll show you to your rooms. Try not to fall behind." Enyaba said in a cheerful voice as she gave them a toothless smile. "I know it doesn't look like much, but it has history. About twenty years ago, one of the 007 movies was filmed here, and when John Lennon from the Beatles visited the country, he spend the entire time in our little hotel."

"What? Seriously?!" Polnareff ogled at the news.

"Oh no, I was just pulling your leg, young man! Still it is quite a lovely hotel, I've put my heart and soul into it. We don't have any other guests at the moment, so you can pick the dinner menu. Would you prefer meat, if not, we have fresh fish available."

"Wait a second, grandma. Before, you called me Joestar, didn't you?" Jotaro asked. Enyaba tried not to flinched at this. "How did you know

my name?" Jotaro asked her. Enyaba stopped walking and stood there. She turned around with a bright, cheery smile and said, "Come now, that delightful young man next to you said Mr. Joestar earlier. I may be old but my ears still work." Enyaba said pointing at Polnareff. "You...mean me? I think I said it, but I'm not sure." Polnareff said.

"Ah, you did sir! When you've been working in this business for as many years as I have, you really learn to memorise other people's names quickly." The hand the woman used to point with was all wrapped up and Polnareff pointed it out. She explained that she had burned her hand while cooking. Jotaro found all of this rather suspicious.

Once in the hotel, the woman asked them to sign the guestbook. "Are you okay now?" Nemuru asked Hikari when they got inside. She stopped shaking and was somewhat looked better than she was before, but she was still uneasy. Yet, Hikari brighten up and gave a cheerful smile. "Yup, I'm doing just fine. Thank you." She said happily. Nemuru gave her a sad smile as they walked towards the check-in desk. "Hey, mind if I talk to about something later?" She asked.

"No, not at all." Hikari said, smiling. As the sapphire-eyed girl went to up to the desk to sign her name, Jotaro came up behind her. Leaning over her trapping her body between his own and the check-in desk. He whispered something in her ear as she wrote. "Huh?" She went. Without moving from his spot behind Hikari, Jotaro took the pen from her and wrote in the guestbook too. When he was done he pulled away from her, leaving Hikari concerned. All that happened and Nemuru watched the entire thing in shock. Wide-eyed. *'Okay, we've seriously need to talk!'* She thought.

Enyaba showed them all their rooms once they written down their names and Hikari got a nice one all to herself. "Aw, what a cute little room." She said. Hikari sat down on the bed and began inspecting the room. It was nice, but she was still a little uneasy about being in this town. "This place really scares me... But I'm that much afraid. I've got my JoJo here with me and I can use my shields to defend myself." Hikari said, happily. Whispering the last part to herself. She walked over to the window but couldn't see anything but fog. The fog gave her even more chills and she quickly closed the blinds. "Ahh...but

maybe being with JoJo might make me better."

A knock came at her door and Hikari jumped in fright. "Ahh! Y-yes?!" She cried out, clutching the blinds. The opened up to reveal Nemuru and quickly said, "Relax, it's just me." Hikari gave a huge sigh of relief as Nemuru walked in and shut the door behind her. Hikari placed over her heart and said, "Oh thank goodness. I'm sorry."

"No, I'm sorry for scaring you like that." Nemuru told her. Hikari gave a sweet smile and shook her head. She didn't need to apologise. "It's alright. What was it that you wanted to talk about?" Hikari said as she sat back down on her bed. She was confused when Nemuru summoned Shadow Mist and moved her beneath the door, and was standing watch outside. Nemuru then gave a serious look to her friend and, without any wind up, went straight right in.

"Is there anything going on between you and Jotaro?"

Chapter 22: Justice part 2

"Huh? What do you mean?" Hikari asked her. Something going on? Hikari didn't what she was getting at. In all their years of being the best of friends, Hikari was confident that nothing bad was going between them. Nemuru crossed her arms and asked her, "How long have the two of you been friends?"

"We've been best friends since we were kids. We were in grade school and we've been together for the past seven years." Hikari told her.

"Seven years?" Nemuru asked, surprised. Then again she shouldn't be, it only makes sense that they be together for that long for Hikari to be so attached to him. The girl happily nodded. Nemuru shook her head and continued on. "So...you've been together for seven years...and has anything happen?"

"Huh?"

"I mean, as you guys were getting older, have either of you looked at each other differently?" Nemuru asked. Hikari thought about it and she smiled with a blush. This caught Nemuru's attention as she leaned forward. "I did began to see him in a different light." She started. "Yeah..?" Nemuru urge as she leaned in closer. Hikari brought her hands to her cheeks as she smiled.

"We were in middle school, and we were just about to enter in high school." Nemuru leaned in more. "And I began seeing JoJo as a cool, strong, amazing person. He acts so tough and assertive, yet he still held his gentle heart. He's so cool that I've decided to view him as my idol! My goal to be just like him, he's the greatest friend ever!" Hikari said as she began to giggle as she got excited just talking about him. Nemuru fell over, anime style. That was not what she was expecting. "Are you okay?" Hikari asked Nemuru when she saw her fall. The dark-purple haired girl got back up on her feet and said, "I'm fine. So what about him then?"

"What?"

"Well, did he ever say anything about you or see him look at you differently?" Nemuru asked, praying that Hikari wasn't this oblivious. Hikari went into deep thought and tried to remember if Jotaro did appear to act differently towards her, but couldn't think of any. "Well... he did call me a little bunny back in middle school, I was wearing a big, white bow on my head that day." She told her. Nemuru raised an eyebrow at her. *'That's... weirdly cute of him.'* Nemuru thought. "Anything else..?"

"No."

"So there's nothing going on?!"

"Nope."

'Than what the hell was that all about!?' Nemuru shouted in thought. Why did Jotaro stand so close behind her at the check-in desk like that if nothing was-?! Wait... Is it possible that because they've been together for so long they don't even realise it? Nemuru went into deep thinking before sitting beside Hikari and asked, "Tell me, after all these years, have you ever started to like him."

"What? How could you ask me that? I've always liked JoJo, he's very dear to me." Hikari said to her, feeling defensive. Why would she even say that? Hikari loved Jotaro more than anything else in the world. He's always been by her side and been a true friend to her. How could she not like him? "I'm talking about that kind of like." Nemuru said to her. Okay, what? Hikari tilted her hand in confusion. "I'm talking about a more different kind of like. The kind that makes your heart pound. Feel happy all over. And you can't think of your life without the one special person."

"What do you mean?" Hikari asked her curiously. "I mean, have you ever had a crush on him? A short, love-filled crush?" At that, Hikari's face turned beet red and waved her hands arounds. "Ah! No, no, no! It's nothing like that, we're just friends." She quickly said, clearly embarrassed. "Okay..." Nemuru then gave a a teasing smile. "Then what about him? Has he ever confessed that he had a crush on you?"

"I highly doubt that he would." What? "I don't think JoJo could really have those kinds of feelings for me. I mean, look at me." Hikari said as she gestured to herself. "I'm not exactly pretty. I don't have that much talents. There's really nothing special about me. And I'm not JoJo's type." His type? That guy has a type?! Seriously? "His type?" Nemuru asked. Hikari nodded. "Mmm-hmm. His likes traditional Japanese girls, and I'm Italian-Japanese, so I don't fit in that category."

'Bullshit!' Nemuru thought. "Even so, I'm so happy JoJo and I met. He saved me from those bullies and was proud to be my friend. Being a friend of his is something that'll always make me happy." Hikari said with a smile. She stood up and told Nemuru, "Thank you for coming here, Nemuru. It made me feel a lot better. I'm going to look around a little bit." Hikari left the room with a smile and left Nemuru alone in the room, feeling a little pissed. Well, that was interesting. Not exactly what she had in mind, but it was something. She knew that something was growing between the two, but they're too stuck on friendship to realise it. But... with the right strategy...

Nemuru wasn't a genius matchmaker, and she may haven't like the idea of a guy like Jotaro to even be close to Hikari, but she's clearly happy with him and Jotaro has proven that he treats her well and cares for her. So, for Hikari's happiness, Nemuru planned to bring them together. Nemuru walked out of the room and went to find Jotaro. Nemuru pretended to feel worried as soon as she saw him. She knocked on the door and Jotaro was the one who opened it. She found him, Kakyoin and Jospeh inside in front of a rather broken T.V.. Most likely trying to use it for Hermit Purple to give some foresight. Nemuru put on the act and told Jotaro, "Would you mind helping me? Hikari's been feeling scared since we've got here, and she isn't in her room."

Hikari ended up exploring the second floor first since it was the floor she and Nemuru were staying on. She explored every room but found nothing. She then made her way downstairs finding an empty room, well almost empty. Hikari spotted a grand piano and sat down at it. She smiled as she began to play a her mother's lullaby. She couldn't remember the last time she played the piano, but she knew how fun she and Jotaro had when they first started learning.

Whenever Jotaro's father, Sadao Kujo, wasn't on tour and was actually home, he would spend hours being with Jotaro and would teach him about the many kinds of instruments when they were kids. He had offered to give Hikari a musical lesson and she agreed. Since then, up until things change, Jotaro and Hikari would spend a lot of time playing piano and making up songs as they go along.

Hikari then felt someone sit next to her on the bench of the piano. She looked over to see Jotaro sitting next to her. She smiled brightly at him and gave a soft giggle. "Remember how when we first started learning piano? How we would play together and make up songs? We would spend hours playing until my papa had to practically drag us out of the room just to stop. But," Hikari leaned against his arm, smiling down at the keys. "That's one of my favourite memories together." A memory began to flash in her mind.

"I bet I can play faster than you can sing!" A twelve-year-old Jotaro told her and he sat down at the bench. Ten-year-old Hikari playfully pouted at him and she sat next to him. "Oh, that's not fair. I've singing since I was five and I don't want you to speed up because of me." They two laughed at each other and Jotaro said, "Whoever wins, the loser has to buy dessert for the winner!" Hikari laughed. "I want strawberry cream puffs, please!" Jotaro hovered his hands above the piano keys. "Ready?" "Ready!" The little contest ended up as a tie, with them getting exhausted, and they both got cream puffs.

She smiled brightly once again at that memory and was about to get up when she heard a melody being played. She looked over surprise to see Jotaro playing her one of her favourite songs. Hikari suddenly felt her heart pounding in her chest, but she smiled and sat back down. She closed her eyes enjoying the song. When the vocals came, Hikari started to sing with the song.

"Ame ni nureta hoho wa

Namida no nioi ga shita

Yasashii manazashi no

Tabibito."

Jotaro looked over at the golden-haired girl. He couldn't take his eyes off her. Whenever she would sing, Hikari's voice was always so soothing and gentle. Soft, kind and gentle. *'Hikari has always been that type of girl.'* Jotaro thought. When they first met, Jotaro couldn't believe that such a pure and innocent girl could exist in the world they live in. She was far too kind for her own good...but that's one of the reasons why he liked her so much.

After all, she had been his one and only real friend and stayed with him even after he became this way. A brash, fierce delinquent who can break a face with his bare hands, Hikari never left him and wasn't at all fazed by his sudden change. Surprised, yes, but never fazed. She cherished him and cared for him just as much as they first become friends that day. She was an angel. *'My angel...'* Jotaro's eyes widened. Where did that come from? Ever since this whole journey started, Jotaro had been feeling weird towards his best friend. Jotaro tore his eyes from her and continued to play as Hikari leaned her head on his shoulder.

"Shizuka ni hibiiteru

Natsukashii ongaku

Omoidasenai kioku

Samayou."

Hikari and Jotaro sat close together as they both created the melodious tune in perfect harmony. For a moment, it was like they two were in alone in the world they created together. Just them, the music, and the blissful feeling that came with it.

"Yume wa tobitatsu no chiisana tsubasa de

Omoi no kienai basho made

Futari de

Tooi umi wo sora wo koete.

Kurai yoru no naka de

Watashi wo terashiteru

Yasashii manazashi no

Anata ni

Aitai..."

As the last note was played, the room grew quiet with a calm atmosphere. Hikari stayed nestled in Jotaro's side, the two teens unmoving. Then Jotaro wrapped an around around her shoulders. Hikari again felt her heart rate speed up as her cheeks grew warm. She started to think about what Nemuru had told her, *"I mean, have you ever had a crush on him? A short, love-filled crush?"* Hikari didn't think ever did...but... She's always felt so happy whenever Jotaro was around. And she couldn't bear the thought of how her life would've been if she hadn't met him. *'Do I... have feelings for JoJo?'*

Suddenly a crash followed by yelling from another room broke the silence. The distinct sound of Polnareff screaming could be heard. Jotaro and Hikari stood up abruptly and both wondered on the heck that was. Remembering the old woman from before, Jotaro walked to where the sound had come from with Hikari close behind him.

The two walked over to the room where the noises had come from and opened it. Well, it was more like Jotaro kicking the door open, but can't argue with results. Because once they entered the room, Enyaba came out of another door off to the side, looking rather nervous. "Oh! You startled me. You must learn to knock my young man. What can I do for you?" The old lady stammered appearing nervous.

"We're here looking for Polnareff and we did knock. Maybe you didn't hear us because you were too busy doing something else. I wondered what." Jotaro said. His cold, steel glare pierced through Enyaba's soul. Out of all people, she wanted to avoid him the most. "We're looking for Polnareff but we can't find him. Seen him, grandma?" Jotaro asked.

Enyaba took a quick minute to think of an excuse as to not let him catch on. *'Damn, now what?! Unlike Polnareff, this Jotaro is clever and*

knows the right questions to ask to get what he wants, I have to be careful. Playing dumb would just make him more suspicious. I need something else.' Enyaba thought to herself. If it was only Hikari that came into the room, Enyaba was sure to play dumb and act like the kind, innocent old lady she's been pretending the whole time and get away with it.

'That Hikari is a naive, bubble-headed idiot. It would've been so easy to trick her. But with Jotaro here, she'll believe whatever he says. What a troublesome brat!' She needed to think of a plan to get rid of them without them suspecting her...but how? Then an idea came to her head and was confident that she could pull it off. *'I know, I'll tell them where they can find Polnareff and as soon as they turn their backs, I'll turn them into a pincushion with these!'* A pair of large, very sharp scissors were hidden in her sleeve. *'Then they'll be easy pickings for my Justice.'*

With her plan in mind, Enyaba gave a sweet smile to the two teens. "Yes, of course I can help you. I know exactly where Mr. Polnareff is Mr. Jotaro, Miss Hikari. He and I were just having a lovely chat." She said as she calmly walked towards them, acting as if nothing was wrong. "Oh?" Jotaro said. Enyaba pointed to the door behind her and said, "He's in the bathroom. But he's been in there for quite some time." Enyaba turned back to them with that same sweet smile and acted so calm and cheery. Jotaro glared at the old woman for a while before he said this.

"Of course, he's taking a shit. Through this door here?" Jotaro asked as he walked over to the door with Hikari. "Thank very much, miss." Hikari smiled at her, bowing her head in respect. "Yes, that's right." Enyaba said. "Once you're through the door, make a left turn." She pulled out her scissors. "The bathroom is at the very end of the hall." Jotaro and Hikari stopped right in front of the door, and in a swift motion, Enyaba sprinted towards them and jumped up, readying her scissors to stab them.

'What incompetent fools! You're are mere children after all! Murdering Polnareff will delight my son's soul and spilling your blood, Jotaro, will send Lord Dio in Egypt into jubilation!' Enyaba was about to stab Hikari in the back, murdering her first and get to Jotaro, when the tall delinquent suddenly said, "Oh yeah, I forgot. You have a second? I

got a question."

Jotaro pulled his leg back, tripping the old woman. Her eyes widened in fear as one of the scissor blades had aimed right for her eye. She fell to the ground with a loud thud. Hikari gasped when she saw Enyaba fell. "Oh my goodness, are you alright ma'am?" Hikari tried to bend down to help her, but Jotaro held her back from doing so. "What's the matter? Did you trip or you just that clumsy? You should be more careful." Jotaro said. "That was too close...." Enyaba shakily mumbled. She had barely managed to avoid impaling herself with her scissors.

Jotaro took noticed of them and said, with feigning sympathy, "Yeah. Could've been really bad. It could've gone into your eye or cut a huge chuck out of your scrawny neck. You're pretty damn lucky." The woman looked up at the two teens and started to sweat profusely. "Sweetie, please don't scare her like that." Hikari said. "You're right. I should've been more considerate. Sorry to ask before you even get up, but I have few more questions. First on the list, how did you know our names were Jotaro and Hikari?" Jotaro asked.

"I don't think we've ever told you our names. No one has. Not since we got here. Isn't that right?" He asked as he turned to his friend. Hikari shook her head and agreed with him. "No, I don't remember any of that." She said. "Huh, I find that strange." Enyaba was now panicking at this point now. She needed to think of an excuse now or else she'll be exposed sooner than she liked. She hesitantly looked over at Jotaro as he said, "Well, come on. Tell me. You know, it's funny. Maybe it's because I watched Columbo as a kid, but it's little details like that that keep me up at night."

Enyaba lifted herself up to her knees and tried to come up with a reasonable explanation. "Oh, you're beginning to hurt this old lady's feelings! It's the guestbook, you wrote your names in the guestbook earlier. Don't tell me you two don't remember." Enyaba then let out a fake bad cough, commenting on how dry the room was. "You two wrote Jotaro Kujo and Hikari Dorotéa, yes." Enyaba said with a relaxed smile.

"Oh? Then I guess you mean...this guestbook here?" Jotaro asked as he brought out the guestbook from his jacket. "Yes, that's it! See, your

names are right here." The woman shouted looking at the book. She suddenly froze when she saw the names written in it, "Qtaro Kujo? Haruko Dorotéa?"

"Neither Jotaro or Hikari isn't written anywhere in this old thing" Jotaro said. "Callimg me Joestar when we first met was your first mistake. I've suspected you since." Jotaro said as he tossed the book behind her as he glared her down. Hikari looked up at Jotaro in awe. She had wondered why he had told her to write down that name instead, but it makes a sense now. "I've told the others not to use our names and yet, you know it. Which could only mean..."

Enyaba couldn't think of an answer. As best she could, she could think of a possible excuse. She had seriously thought that she had been so careful about this little plan of hers. "Cut the crap, you old hag! I already know you're one of the Stand users that's after us, the jig is up." Jotaro said. Enyaba got a dark look on her face as she looked up at Jotaro and Hikari. No way she was going to fail Lord Dio. She'd rather die!

"What's the matter now? Aren't you going to show us your Stand and fight?" Jotaro said. "You're looking right at it!!" She yelled. Suddenly the door behind Hikari and Jotaro burst open and dozens of people from the village came in looking like zombies. Hikari let out a scream and Star Platinum came out fighting off each one as Jotaro protected Hikari. Star Platinum used his mighty strength to knock off each and every one of them straight out the window. Seeing more coming towards them, Hikari called forth Soundless Voice and she quickly put up a barrier around them.

At first, Enyaba looked scared but then she started to laugh like an insane witch. Before he could do anything, Jotaro gasped when he felt something sharp pierce through his leg. He looked down and saw that a zombie-baby had struck him using its tongue like a dagger stabbing him in the leg. "JoJo!" Hikari cried out as Soundless Voice knocked the zombie off of him and threw him out of the barrier. "My Stand, Justice, always prevails!" Enyaba shouted as her Stand formed behind her.

It appears as a skeletal phantom wearing a large crown decorated with jewelled arches and a spike on top, with the clouds of fog

swirling around its head and hands like a robe. The skull of Justice also lacks some teeth. And much like its user, Enyaba, it has two right hands. "All it needs is one small scratch and then your life is as good as forfeit! You've falling into my trap, Jotaro!" She shouted as blood started to leak out of Jotaro's wound. Hikari kneeled down and told him, "It's alright! I can heal it quickly!" Just as she was about to heal him a scream come out.

"GAHUHA!" The two teens turned around and saw Polnareff dragging himself out of the door with a hole in his tongue, and for some reason, he was also with Hol Horse. What the hell is he doing here? "Polnareff!" Jotaro said.

"Jotaro! It's me, Hol Horse, remember?!" Hol Horse called out to him. Honestly, no one in the group gave a damn about him and the only reason they'll bother with him was because he shot Avdol, the cowardly bastard! "Enyaba's Stand is made entirely out of fog. It'll split your wound right open and start flowing through your body that's how she's controls you with it. It'll even control corpses!" He shouted at him, telling about Enyaba's Stand's power.

"Shut your mouth Hol Horse!" Enyaba yelled. She made Hol Horse swing his fist punching himself in the face, knocking him back. Star Platinum appeared and started punching Justice but it seemed futile against the Stand made of fog. The sight of it made Enyaba cackle. "Can you punch the fog with your fist? Or cut the fog with your sword or shoot it with a gun? I don't think so! Absolutely futile! Hahahaha, there's you could do but accept your fate!" Enyaba said.

"It's the biggest, toughest, fiercest Stand there is! Ours are puny by comparison, we're no match for it. N-nothing stands a chance against Justice!" Hol Horse said with fear in his voice. "Lovely, keep them coming Hol Horse. Your fearful praise is music to my ears. Now I'll control you too, Jotaro!" Enyaba cackled.

"Quick! Run away Jotaro! Get Hikari out of here and run! She's going to turn into a puppet!" Polnareff shouted at him. "Good grief..." Jotaro. who was rather calm, steps forward getting in a pose, "I don't need to run. Before that old hag takes another breath, I'll defeat that Stand and send her packing. Hikari."

"Ah, right!" Hikari dropped the barrier and ran towards Polnareff and Hol Horse. "Hikari, what are you-?" Polnareff began to ask but was cut off by Hikari's gentle smile. "Don't worry. JoJo's going to win." She said. Enyaba was taken aback by Jotaro's calm demeanour and cocky attitude. She held a hand to her ear and said, "Huh?! What was that?! I could have sworn you just made some idiotic proclamation about defeating me, you little brat! Before I take another breath, is that right?! Well, I do that-!" Her voice stopped as she began to feel no air entering her body. Her lungs tightening under pressure and found it getting harder to breath.

"I'll do that...right-!" Enyaba suddenly grabbed her throat and started to turn blue. "What...did you...do... To me..?" Polnareff and Hol Horse gasped seeing this. Jotaro was using Star Platinum to having inhale Justice's fog-like form. Suffocating Enyaba as a result. "Jotaro's Star Platinum is sucking in her entire Stand!" Polnareff shouted. "NO! No, please stop... I can't breath!" Enyaba struggled to say as her face turned purple. She fell to her knees grabbing at her throat. "And he's holding it in! He's suffocating that bitch!" Polnareff praised.

Enyaba's face turned a new shade of purple as her eyes rolled in the back of her head, she passed out on the floor foaming at the mouth. Jotaro called back his Stand as he walked up to the unconscious woman, waving his hand in her face. "Heh, you see that? Looks like her head is in a bit of a fog. You ask me that's justice at his finest." He said.

Hikari checked out both of Polnareff's and Hol Horse's wounds and had Soundless Voice heal them into good shape. When was done, Hikari gave both a smile and said, "There now. You're all better. JoJo, it's your turn." Before she could go and get to him, Hol Horse suddenly grabbed her hands and stared at her with lovey-dovey eyes. "It makes my heartburn with passion to know that a beautiful girl like you to have such a kind heart to treat a felon like me, darling."

"Uh...What?" Hikari asked in confusion and before Hol Horse could say anything more, two pairs of feet came in and stomped him face first into the floor. "Don't even try it, buddy!" Polnareff warned him. "Don't waste your time on this guy, got it?" Jotaro told her. Once they got Enyaba tied up with a strong rope, Jotaro got Kakyoin, Nemuru and Joseph.

"What do you mean, what have I been licking? You ask such stupid questions. I honestly don't see why that matters." Polnareff said with red cheeks as he pretended to cough. Nemuru heard "The toilet." under his breah and gave a mischievous smirk. Oooh, she was NOT going to let him live this down. "Ehh..? You were licking what again? I couldn't hear you well." Joseph said.

"Who cares what is was, okay?!" Polnareff said, trying to avoid any further humiliation. "I thought I just heard the word, toilet. What are you two laughing about?" Kakyoin asked as he sees Joseph and Nemuru laughing amongst themselves. Joseph and Nemuru turned to him and whispered, not so subtlety, "Actually, I already knew about that. But I couldn't resist picking on him about it this first." Joseph said as he began laughing again. "You honestly think I would use this opportunity to make fun of him even more?" Nemuru asked him. Kakyoin sighed at them. Honestly, these two...

"Hold on! Jotaro already told you what happened, didn't he?!" Polnareff shouted. Hikari peeked behind the latter and shyly said, "I'm so sorry, Mr. Polnareff. I tried to stop him." Polnareff groaned in anger the two and they kept laughing at Polnareff to the point that Joseph was on his hands and knees laughing. "Everyone, come outside," Jotaro called, he was holding Hikari who was silently crying. Everyone walked to the entrance of the hotel and gaped to see a graveyard.

"What on earth? We stepped outside the hotel and this place is a..." Joseph said, completely shocked at what he was seeing. None of them would've expected this. The people, the town, the streets...everything felt so real. "It's a graveyard. She was using her Stand's fog to make this graveyard look like a town and a hotel." Kakyoin said.

"So the whole time we were here... we were talking to the corpses six feet under?" Polnareff said. Joseph went back inside the hotel, or church as it now appeared to be, and brought out the tied up Enyaba and Jotaro told the group to bring her along with them. "You want to take her with us? Are you serious?!" Polnareff shouted in disbelief.

"Sure am. We need to know how many more Stand users are out there, what their powers are, wherever Dio's dug a hole for himself in Egypt...as well as what his power is." Jotaro said.

"If we get the hag to tell us, It might finally give us the edge that we need." Joseph said. "That's worth the risk of dragging her around." Polnareff swallowed his uneasiness, he didn't like the idea of taking the witch with them, but he was already out numbered. "I highly doubt she'll be willing to share that information though." Kakyoin said.

"We just need to use my Hermit Purple. I'll project everything she's thinking onto a T.V. screen." Joseph said. Hikari wasn't listening to the conversation at all, instead she was staring out at the graveyard with tears in her eyes. Nemuru noticed Hikari's crestfallen look and walked up to her. "What's the matter, love?" Nemuru asked her and she held her shoulders. Hikari wiped her tears away and took a deep breath. "I'm sorry. I...just can't believe she would disturbed all these graves and not showing any respecting the dead." Hikari said.

"I understand. Come on, let's get going." She told her. Hikari gave a sad smiled and nodded as they walked back to the group, but then stopped at the sound of an engine turning on. Everyone looked to see Hol Horse in their car and drove away. "Hol Horse! You slime ball!" Polnareff yelled. "That's our car!" Kakyoin shouted as he and Polnareff ran after him. "Are you kidding me?!" Nemuru shouted. Polnareff and Kakyoin quickly gave up the chase seeing as they weren't going to catch the car.

"Sorry boys, I'm sticking with Dio after all, catch ya'll later! Provided that you all don't die before then, that is!" Hol Horse said. "A little advice for ya'll, you better put a bullet between that old lady's eyes real soon or else you'll find out just how terrifying Dio really is! And you do NOT want that! See ya!"

Chapter 23: The Lovers part 1

The group had to walk out of the graveyard and a couple of miles to find another mode of transportation. The whole time the woman of the group were passed out, which Polnareff, much to his dissatisfaction, had to carry Enyaba.

Once they finally found a ride, which was a horse-drawn carriage, they made went back on track to the next town over. Joseph and Jotaro sat in the front, Kakyoin, Nemuru, Hikari and Polnareff sat in the middle, and Enyaba, sitting alone in the back. The carriage finally arrived at its next destination, a coastal town of Karachi. Pakistan's industrialise and financial centre located in the Indus River delta.

Joseph pulled the carriage to a stop next to a food vendor who was selling Kebabs. He got out of the carriage and started to haggle with the vendor. The two men seemed to playing a mental game of tennis trying to get the best price for themselves. Nemuru was kind of impressed that Joseph was able to the Kebabs for 450 yen. *'He's such a con.'* Nemuru thought as she rolled her eyes in amusement.

As Joseph walked back over to the group, he stopped a surprised look on his face. His eyes widened when he saw that Enyaba was sitting up with eyes wide open. Joseph dropped the Kebabs in shock and shouted for his comrades to watch out. "Holy crap! Turn around, that old lady's awake!" Joseph pointed out. Kakyoin, Jotaro, Nemuru, Hikari and Polnareff all looked back at Enyaba. Nemuru pulled Hikari behind her and prepared herself for a fight.

Suddenly, Enyaba had a look of fear on her face and started to shake and sweat, "I-I promised you... I haven't said anything to any of them, I swear! W-Why are you here?! What could you possibly want with me?! Do you think that I would actually tell them the secret of Lord Dio's Stand?! I am and shall always be his loyal servant!" She had her focus forward making everyone look at the food vendor who seemed to be ignoring them.

Everyone looked at the food vendor as he slowly started to take off his cloak and sunglasses to reveal his identity. He was a young man with dark, shoulder-length hair that frays out on the sides, has multiple irises with a ripple pattern on his eyes and his eyebrows are segmented, taking the shape of dotted lines. Hikari looked back at Enyaba and screamed. Nemuru, as she took Hikari into her arms, jumped out from the carriage and held her protectively. Tentacles had bursted out from Enyaba's eyes, mouth and ears with blood spewing out.

The older woman screamed as the tentacles shot out, breaking the carriage in the process. Upon seeing this, the guys scooped jumped away from the carriage. Enyaba continued to scream in pain as whatever was inside attacked her from within.

"Gross! What are they?! Some kind of worms?!" Polnareff asked in disgust.

"Why!? I have done nothing wrong! Why have you come here to kill me?!" Enyaba yelled at the man. "Lord Dio places his trust in no one. Not even you, Enyaba. That is why. And it's my job to make sure that you never speak again." The man said as he began to remove the robes as well. Beneath them, he wore a shirt with an open chest, going lower past a belt with a loincloth-type extension over his groin. The shirt has long sleeves that are a darker colour than the rest, matching his pants. "As for the rest of you. The only way you're leaving is in pieces."

Blood exploded out of Enyaba as she fell out of the carriage and to the ground. The sight was far too gruesome that everyone had to turn away to keep themselves from looking any further. "You can call me, Dan. Dan of Steel. My Stand represents the one and only Lovers card. I will see to it that you all meet the same fate as that pathetic witch Enyaba." Dan said. Polnareff felt his rage coursing through him as he glared daggers at Dan. "How could you?! That old lady was one of your own, you son of a-!" He growled as he ran to Enyaba's side, desperately wondering if they as any way to save her.

As Enyaba laid on the ground dying she refused to believe that Dio would do this to her. "Lies! Lies!! These are...all lies!! This isn't happening! Lord Dio would never do this to me! I...am his loyal

servant! Loyal!" She screamed out.

"These things coming out of her body, they're definitely not some Stand." Kakyoin said with certainty. "Don't you see it? They're actually tentacles!" Now that Kakyoin was looking at them, he had an eerie suspicion that they looked familiar to him.

"I have dedicated everything to him! Lord Dio would never do me such harm!" Enyaba continued to scream out, adamant that Dio would never do something this cruel and painful to her for she had been his most loyal servant and had given her life for him. "He'd...never plant a flesh bud in me!"

"What did she say?!" Kakyoin asked in shock. So that's why..! No wonder he recognise them so well. There was a flesh bud inside her body! Kakyoin's whole body shuddered at the thought of the same thing happening to him if Jotaro hadn't save his life. "Lord Dio is my only reason for living! We trust each other wholeheartedly!"

"Hold on!" Polnareff brought Silver Chariot and cut through some of the tentacles. The severed tentacles rolled into the sunlight and once the sun's rays touched it, the flesh tentacle burned to a crisp. "See that? The sun disintegrated them. The flesh bud! It's made out of Dio's own cells!" Joseph exclaimed.

"Precisely! I must say, you are quite the perceptive one." Dan said to him. "Since you're so astute, I'll continue, that is what a full grown flesh bud looks like. I want to kill her, not control her, so I just grew it inside of the old bag." Hikari stared in shock at the old woman with tear-filled eyes. Even if she was one of their enemies, no one deserves to die like that. "Horrible... That's horrible!" She cried into Nemuru's shoulder.

"Enyaba, you may be the very one who told Lord Dio about the Stands. But you're a fool to think that man with such complete power would ever trust a feeble, old woman like you. Unfortunately, it's a point you failed to realise." Dan said.

Joseph knelt down next to Enyaba asking for what Dio's Stand was, explaining that Dio was not the man she thought he was. "Old Lady! What's the true identity of Dio's Stand!" He shouted to her. Surprising

everyone within earshot. "Tell us! You've placed all your hope in Dio! You trusted him with your life and your son's! And now after all you've sacrifice, you know he's not the man you thought he was, you know I'm right! We must defeat Dio, no matter the cost! You have to tell us! We need to know!! Tell us what we need to know about Dio's Stand before it's too late!"

Joseph begged her. He begged her to tell them what they had to know to defeat him, anything! However, it wasn't that easy. Dio was a man filled to the brim of charisma. He manipulates with people's minds and warped them into ways that'll benefit only to his whim. Even in her last breaths, she refused to reveal his Stand and had faith in Dio. Hikari let out a gasp as the life left Enyaba's eyes, the woman's soul leaving her body. "Oh God!" Joseph shouted. "Dio... That bastard..." Nemuru said, bitterly.

"Hahahahahaha..." Everyone turned around to see Dan laughing at Enyaba's death and loyalty. He was now sitting across the street with a cup of tea next to him. "How pathetic. It's laughable how sad that old woman was. But the very depth of her trust in him should tell you something. Lord Dio's evil charm is more powerful than you can imagine, hahaha."

"Seriously? Another f*** boy? We already had to deal with one, but now it's with pansy-ass lunatic?" Nemuru said, getting pretty pissed off of having this guy around.

"What you do mean "we had to deal with one"?" Jotaro asked her. Last time he checked, he was the one who fought Rubber Soul. "Well, when I said "we", I mean you. Also the fact we already have a f*** boy in our group. No offence, Polnareff, but we don't need another one." Nemuru said.

"Oh, screw you!!" Polnareff shouted at her. Within a second the group was surrounding Dan, but he didn't seem concerned at all. He calmly took a sip of his drink. "The old woman may have had it out for us, but she was mislead and sure as hell didn't deserve that death. I'll see you join her." Polnareff vowed.

"Six against one, but we won't hold back. Prepare yourself, Dan." Kakyoin told him. Nemuru cracked her knuckles and said, "Get in

line. I'm getting the first hit." Jotaro glared cold daggers at the dark-haired man. "On your feet." Jotaro ordered him. But Dan wasn't fazed by their threats and continued to ignore them as he sipped his tea. "Hey, Jackass. Stop trying to act cool and get up and fight. This is going down whether you want it or not." Jotaro tells him.

"Go ahead. But you can't touch me. I'm Dan of Steel and none of you can take me down. You don't have what it takes." Dan said as a matter of fact. "**Ora!**" Star Platinum didn't hesitate to punch Steely Dan in the stomach. Blood flew out the man's mouth as he was sent flying backwards but what really surprised everyone was that Joseph was sent flying back too, blood coming out of his mouth as well. "What the-?!" Jotaro said

"Mr. Joestar!" Hikari yelled. "The hell just happened?" Nemuru shouts.

"What happened, Mr. Joestar! He flew back just like that guy!" Polnareff shouted. Hikari and Nemuru ran over, checking on Joseph. He seemed to be fine but he indeed had a bruise forming on his stomach as if Star Platinum had hit him. "You're an utter fool! I was about to explain my powers when you hit me. Little patience nearly killed your grandfather. I suggest you listen next time." Dan said as he stood up, wiping the blood from his mouth. "Listen, my job's not over. I have other important business to attend to. You really think I show my face here just to kill Enyaba?" He asked as he spit out some blood.

The girls helped Joseph sit up as Nemuru growled at Dan. "You bastard. You said you had the Stand of Lovers card, didn't you? What the hell is that?!"

"What's the point in telling you now? The battle has already begun, Mr. Joestar." Dan said. Polnareff, Jotaro, and Kakyoin kept looking around trying to spot the Stand but couldn't find anything. Dan scoffed at them and said, "You're all simpletons! You do know no matter how hard you look, you won't be able to see my Stand." Dan then turned to a kid sweeping outside a shop nearby and called out to him, "Hey, half-pint." He pulled out some money, "You want some cash? It's all yours if you can hit me in the leg with that broom."

The kid took the money a little surprised but did as told. "What?! But...why would he-?!" The boy lifted his broom up and prepared himself to do what he was told. "Now hit me!" The boy swung his broom and struck Dan in the side of his leg, but instead of Steely Dan falling out of pain, Joseph did. "The hell? Now what?" Kakyoin asked.

Joseph gripped his head as he screamed in pain. "It... It hurts! I don't get it, it's like I broke my leg!!" He shouted. Dan smirked as he began to explain the full purpose of his Stand's abilities. "You mean you still haven't figured it out, how disappointing. My Stand can't be seen because its rooted firmly inside you. The moment Enyaba died, it entered you. It got to your brain through your ear and that's how I'll get to you."

"What?!" Joseph shouted in shock. He had his Stand inside his own body! If that's true...then how are they supposed to fight him?! "My Stand and I are connected, just like yours. If my Stand gets hurt, so do I, and the reverse is also true. You're utterly helpless, if you so much as scratch me, in that instant, my Stand will react to my pain by going berserk in your head. And inflicting the same agony on you! Not only that but it will deliver a pain several times greater. Now, I'll say it once more... Alone or together, you won't be able to lay a single finger on me!" They now knew what he meant by that. If they were to beat Dan to a pulp, they'll risk killing Joseph in the process.

"Plus, The Lovers has taken one of Lord Dio's flesh buds into your body. It's growing in your brain as we speak. Just like it did to Enyaba, it'll devour you from the inside-out." Steely Dan said. The boy from earlier hit Dan again at the back of his leg, and Jospeh screamed from the impact. The boy laughed as he held out his hand, hoping to get some more money. Dan merely gave a smirk before he got angry. "I don't recall asking you to strike me again, you stupid little brat!" He yelled as he knocked the boy away. The boy got scared and quickly ran away from the scene.

Dan dusted himself off as he started to talk about his Stand little flaw. "Well to be honest, My Stand, The Lovers isn't as strong as you might think it'd be. It doesn't have the strength to move even a single strand of hair, making it the world's weakest Stand. However, power isn't necessary if all you want to do is kill your opponent. Do you understand, ladies and gentlemen?" Dan tells them.

"Say something unfortunate happens. Like I get into an accident, a baseball hits me or I just trip and fall... How do you think that would affect you, Mr. Jostar?" He asked. Joseph paled as he reached for his head, where no doubt his Stand is sitting on his brain. "I might get banged up some, but your body would suffer far greater pain than mine." To prove his point even further, Dan cracked his knuckles and Joseph's fingers started to wiggle in pain. He stared in shock as he stared at his left hand. "What the?! How?! How am I feeling your knuckles cracking in my prosthetic hand?!" Joseph gasped.

"You've got ten minutes, old man. Then your brain will be eaten through, and you'll be a corpse like Enyaba." Dan stated with a smug look. Jotaro seemed to have enough as he growled like a beast and grabbed the front of Steely Dan's shirt, raising his fist along with Star Platinum's. "JoJo, no!" Hikari yelled running forward. She jumped onto Jotaro's arm, trying her best to hold it back but since he was so tall she was dangling about half a foot in the air. Kakyoin rushed in to help and he held his arm out to create a wedge between them. "Jotaro, calm down! Don't do anything rash!" Kakyoin said.

Jotaro pulled his fist back further while Hikari was still dangling from it. "Sorry, but no! I'm gonna kill this damn tool so quickly, he won't have enough time to feel pain!" Jotaro said. "JoJo! Please!" Hikari shouted. Joseph let out a strangled cough, catching their attention and Jotaro finally lets go of Dan, as Hakari kept her hold on his arm. Dan fixed his clothing as he smirked at the group, specifically at Jotaro. "Kill me before I feel it, huh? Sounds interesting. Do it then, I want to see what happens." He taunted. "What are you waiting for Jotaro? Come on, let's see it. Just what were you planning to strike? My face or maybe my throat?"

Hikari could actually feel the anger pouring off of her dearest friend. She gripped his arm even tighter. If Dan didn't stop soon, Jotaro was going to destroy him. "What? You mad? Let's see what'll happen, don't back down on me now man! Why don't you try busting a hole through my chest? Or how about you give up on using your Stand and crack my head open with a rock." Dan as he walked to pick a very sizeable, heavy rock for Jotaro to hit him with. "This one looks like a prime specimen. Sure looks big enough for the job." He turned back to Jotaro with a smug smirk, but it was quickly dropped when

Jotaro came in and picked him up again.

"You do not want to underestimate me, pretty boy. When I say I'm gonna do something... I don't it!" He told him with that cold look in his eyes. For a moment, Dan was actually scared of him. Jotaro brought forth Star Platinum and was about to bash his face in when Kakyoin and Hikari quickly brought out Hierophant Green and Soundless Voice to stop him! Kakyoin grabbed Jotaro by the shoulders to hold him back as Hikari wrapped her arms around Jotaro's waist.

Hierophant Green grabbed Star Platinum's arm while Soundless Voice copied her user by wrapping her arms around Star Platinum's waist. "Jotaro!! Don't do it!!" Kakyoin shouted. "Please stop! He wants you to attack!" Hikari cried out as she looked back at her and Jotaro's Stands, she let out a silent mortified squeak. Soundless Voice was snuggling up to the held back Star Platinum. Star Platinum didn't seem to mind and just looked away from the light azure-haired Stand.

Luckily, Polnareff and Kakyoin were too busy dealing with Jotaro while Joseph was still freaking out. So none of them saw what the Stands were doing, but Hikari blushed red when she saw that Nemuru did, and was smirking at her. "You've already seen how affective his power is. Are you trying to kill your own grandfather?!"

"Uhh... This is Jotaro we're talking about, he might be!" Polnareff said as he rushed into help keep the tall delinquent at bay. Jotaro growled at Dan, trying to hold himself back, but he so wanted to demolish him. Dan discarding his fear and smirked at him. "You dumb, good-for-nothing punk." Dan said as he hit Jotaro in the shoulder, making the others back away. Jotaro pushed Hikari behind him, not trusting whatever Dan planned to do next. Jotaro hesitantly let him go as Dan suddenly slammed the rock into Jotaro's stomach. Making him cough up blood.

"Jotaro!" Hikari cried out as he kneeled down from the pain. "Don't you toy me, you bastard. After the geezer kicks the bucket, you're next. Look out!!" Dan lifted up the rock to smash it over Jotaro's head but Hikari instinctively threw herself over Jotaro, taking the hit to her back. "Hikari!" Everyone shouted as the gentle girl fell into Jotaro's arms. Jotaro easily caught Hikari and immediately started

checking her over as the rest of the team came over.

"I-I'm f-fine." Hikari winced and grabbing at her upper back. She looked up at Jotaro with concerned filled eyes and asked, "JoJo, you d-didn't get hurt, did you?" Jotaro gritted his teeth in anger as he looked down at Hikari before looking back up at Dan sending him a glare as the man who dared to hurt her began laughing. Nemuru got pissed and growled at Dan. "Oh, you've done it now, you son of a bitch!!" She would've lunged at him if Kakyoin hadn't grabbed her wrist and pulled her into his arms. "Don't Nemuru!" He told her.

Joseph was in shock and felt such guilt that Hikari and his grandson were basically getting beaten up because of him, and they were all powerless to stop him. *'This is just insane! My Grandson and Chiara is being beaten up to save me! We're completely at this guy's mercy! I can't do anything while it's in my brain! I remember when that poison ring was placed around my aorta long ago, but... Think, Joseph! There's got to be something you can do.'* Joseph shouted in he thoughts. He tried to think of a plan when it suddenly hit harder than Lily's kicks.

He turned around to face Kakyoin, and with one look, knew what Joseph had in mind. Kakyoin gave him a conformed nod and the two of them started to run off, Kakyoin pulling Nemuru along side him, and with Polnareff trailing behind. "Jotaro! You and Hikari keep him away from Mr. Joestar at all costs! We're gonna try and get away from him as possible!" Kakyoin called back. Nemuru grit her teeth in anger. She didn't want to leave Hikari alone with that f*** boy, but... "Hikari! Try to keep Jotaro under control, that boy's temper is explosive!" She had to trust that Jotaro would protect her. Or else!

"I see. So that's your plan, putting some distance between me and the old man might make my Stand's power vanish without a trace? Sorry, but my Stand's physical weakness is made up for in other ways. The Lovers may be physical weak, but it's range is farther than any Stand in existence. It doesn't matter how far they run, their lives are forfeit. As long as it remains in a host." Dan gloated.

Jotaro helped Hikari stand up, gently placing a hand on her back. "You okay?" Jotaro asked. Hikari nodded and gave a small smile. "Mmm-hmm. I'm okay..." She then gasped in fright when Dan grabbed the front of Jotaro's jacket. "What's up?! Hey Jotaro, I'm talking to

you! It's impolite not to look at people when they're speaking to you! Look at me!"

Jotaro calmly shifted his eyes towards Dan and stated, "What's wrong? You sound like you're starting to lose your cool."

"What's your plan? Follow me around with this little girl until grandpa Joseph keels over, sounds like a blast." Dan said.

"Dan of Steel, was it? I'll make you pay for this, just a matter of when." Jotaro said. No way in hell he was going this pompous bastard was going to lay a hand on Hikari. He was her protector and he was going to do his job as such. Steely Dan started to chuckle. "Well, if you're gonna stick around for a while, I might as well help myself to your wallet." Dan said as he started searching through Jotaro's pocket and pulled out Jotaro's wallet along with a watch. "Nothing but chump change, huh? Though I didn't expect a guy like you to be sporting a tag heuer. I'll be borrowing this." Dan pocketed the items and then turn to fearful Hikari. "And what do you have me, my dear?"

Hikari couldn't suppress a shiver as she tried to answer. "I...I-I don't..." Dan smirked at Hikari and slowly looked her up and down. 'Did I really call her a 'little girl'? With a rack that big and a body that slim, she's really easy on the eyes...' Dan thought with a smirk. Hikari's cheek's turned red from embarrassment as she lowered her head to keep having to look at him. She didn't need to bother him though as he already helped himself in searching her. He pulled her wallet from her pocket, and gave her a tiny pinch on her thigh. Making her squeak in surprise. "Not much in here either, but it'll do." He said as he pocketed her wallet.

Meanwhile with the others, they ran practically halfway across town to get away from Dan of Steel but they finally found what they were looking for. Kakyoin spotted from across the street and pointed out to his friends. "There!" He shouted as he ran towards the shop with Joseph, Nemuru and Polnareff running close behind him. "An electronics store! Mr. Joestar, they have T.V.s!"

"Yeah, so? Why does that matter now?" Polnareff asked, not exactly getting the point. Nemuru smacked him upside the head and said,

"You idiot! Did you honestly think we've been running away for nothing?"

"I'm going to fight this blasted Stand that's inside my head." Joseph told him.

"Fight? Mon Dieu, non..!" Polnareff said out of shock. "We only have a few minutes! And we're gonna to need your help to put this off." Kakyoin told him. Joseph walked to the window displaying the T.V.s and pressed his hands against the glass. He summoned Hermit Purple and they went through the glass and into the T.V.. The screen flickered and flashed uncontrollably until it landed on a image of The Lovers inside his head. A creepy little thing. The Lovers was, unlike most Stands they've seen, of microscopic size. That truly explains why they couldn't see it before. It resembles a robotic humanoid creature with an insectoid head and with crab pincers for hands. It was like a combination of a fly, a flea, and the robot from the 1986 science fiction film Short Circuit.

"That's it!" Kakyoin said.

"Oh no!" Joseph shouted. "I hoped he was bluffing! How the hell did he get inside my brain so damn quickly?!"

"Wow... If I hadn't seen it myself, I wouldn't have believed it." Polnareff said as he stared at the tiny Stand inside the elder Joestar's head. "At least now we know for sure that it's in there. But I still don't see how we're going to destroy the thing." He said to the others. "By having our Stands enter Mr. Joestar's ear canal to find and destroy the monster." Kakyoin told him simply. Polnareff was caught off guard by that idea and shouted, "Are you crazy!?"

"Stands are basically materialisations of energy so we should be able to shrink them and get inside." Nemuru explain. "You don't know that!" Polnareff argued. "Oh, you want to fight me on this?" Nemuru said as she narrowed her eyes at him. "Hey! Try not to break anything while you're in there!" Joseph told them sternly.

"There's no time! We're going in now, Polnareff!" Kakyoin said in a tone that left no room for argument. Polnareff hesitated, but he quickly agreed. "Urgh... Alright!" The three Stand users brought forth

Hierophant Green, Shadow Mist and Silver Chariot and had them all shrink down to microscopic size and flew into Joseph's ear. "Get smaller. We're going to be entering a blood vessel." Kakyoin said as his and Polnareff's Stand jumped around while Shadow Mist simply glides through. "R-right." They had to find The Lovers and defeat him as soon as they can before Joseph's ten minutes are up.

They can only hope they can make it in time.

Chapter 24: The Lovers part 2

Author's note: Hello everyone. Ivory Luna, speaking to you loud and clear. Due to a suggestion made by @men-aint-shit, I'm putting a warning for this chapter. I hadn't exactly thought of this before when I wrote this chapter, and I feel terrible knowing I wrote this without taking consideration of the feelings of others. I'm sorry if I had offended anyone as there are a lot of people who aren't comfortable reading scenes like this, and it can be triggering to some.

So here is your warning. This chapter contained scenes of sexual assault. Viewer discretion is highly advised.

Steely Dan walked around town with Jotaro and Hikari following close by. Eventually, they stopped at a drainage ditch. Dan looked over at the ditch with some thought. "A drainage ditch? This could be fun. I'd try and jump it, but if I trip and twist my ankle, it could be real bad for old man Joestar." Hikari noticed a bridge that wasn't too far and hoped that if Dan saw it, it would spare Joseph some agony. "B-but look there. There's a bridge right over there, see?" She said, helpfully pointing it out to him.

Dan looked over at the bridge but had a bored expression. "Yeah... but walking all the way to that bridge would be such a bother. I've got an idea... Lie down across this ditch and make yourself into a bridge. I'll just walk on you to get across." Jotaro didn't say anything. He wasn't even looking at him. Hikari grew concerned for Jotaro and gently held his hand. *'JoJo...'*

Dan had gotten annoyed with Jotaro ignoring him and said, "What now? You don't want to be my bridge or something?"

"Tch, shut up. The hell you keep yammering about?" Jotaro said.

"I said make yourself into a bridge! You good-for-nothing, arrogant prick!" Dan yelled as he kicked at a fire hydrated hard. Hikari flinched, thinking about how much pain that caused Joseph. "AAAAUUGHH!" Joseph screamed out, feeling his whole leg going numb from the pain he suddenly felt.

"What?! What's the matter?!" Polnareff asked.

"Mr. Joestar!" Kakyoin called out.

"M-m-my leg! It's going numb!" Joseph said, falling to his knees from the pain and making him let go of the image of The Lovers. "Damn it, Jotaro. What the hell are you doing?! Chiara, you better be watching him."

"Aw, don't look so upset, Jotaro." Steely Dan said calmly swinging his leg. The two men stared each other down before Jotaro let out a "Tch" and walked over to the drainage ditch kneeling down. He laid himself across the gap just like a bridge. It broke Hikari's heart to her hero being forced to do this. *'I have to do something to protect JoJo's pride.'* She thought. Hikari had decided right there that no matter what Dan does, she was going to protect Jotaro's pride and be strong for him. No more was she going to cry.

"Good." Dan said as a sadistic smirk appeared on his face. He took one step before stomping onto Jotaro's back, digging his heel right in as he walked. He stopped halfway and stood there on Jotaro's back. "Your a rather sturdy bridge, aren't cha? Impressive." He started to bounce up and down on Jotaro's back.

"Stop it! Please!" Hikari begged of him. She can't bear to see Jotaro like this any longer. Dan gave her a smirk and continued to walk, and made sure to step on Jotaro's hand, digging his heels into Jotaro's fingers. Dan turned around and sent a charming smirk to Hikari holding his hand out to her. "Now the lady's turn." Hikari looked at his hand and turned away. She was NOT going to use her best friend as a bridge! Soundless Voice appeared and projected three shields to act as platforms, and Hikari jumped on each one crossing to the other side. Once she was over, she quickly went to helped Jotaro up.

"Here sweetheart. I got you." She said as she grabbed hold of his arm and pulled him up, healing his hand and body in the process. Hikari was bent down to her knees and raised up a little when he did, but that didn't matter. Hikari felt her skirt being lifted and gasped when she heard, "My, my, my. Pure white with a lacy trim on, not a bad choice. The little bows on the sides are nice touch. These shaped your cute little ass very nicely." Dan let out a chuckle as he let go of her

skirt and walked. Leaving Hikari frozen in shock and Jotaro glaring at him, gritting his teeth. How... f****ing...dare he?!

Once she had taken a deep breath to relax herself, Hikari and Jotaro continued to follow Dan again as the man walked with a happy stride. Jotaro pulled out a small booklet and started writing in it before putting it away. Dan stopped walking and turned around. "Oh...hang on. Jotaro, I have a very nasty itch. Scratch it." He ordered him. Before Jotaro could do what he asked, Hikari spoke up. "I'll do it." She said. "No way." Jotaro immediately shot that idea down, but Dan glanced at her before smirking. "On second thought, let the lady take of it. Her hands looks so soft and she might be more gentle than you. Go ahead."

Hikari swallowed her nervousness and walked up to Dan despite Jotaro's protest and began scratching Dan's back. The dark-haired man moaned in pleasure as Hikari worked on him. "Just a little lower." He said. Hikari went to his mid-back. "Even lower... Yeah, that's it. Not too hard, mind you."

"Auughh!" Joseph cried out as he began to feel really weird... As in *really* weird! He felt something going up and and down his back, and he couldn't keep still. "Mr. Joestar?" Kakyoin asked in concern. "Hey, what's the matter?" Polnareff asked. Joseph turned to his team and told them, "It honestly feels like someone's softly tickling my back. I can't concentrate much longer like this!" Joseph was cut off and began shouting and yelling loud enough that a large crowd of people had began to surround them. "Calm down!" The three Stand users yelled at him.

"Just perfect. We've got quite the captive audience." Kakyoin said as Joseph kept yelling like a senile old man. "Argh, this is getting embarrassing. For us and you, Mr. Joestar!" Nemuru said. "Mr. Joestar, keep your voice down! People are staring! Keep this up and they'll think you've gone nuts." Polnareff said to him.

"You..!? You think I'm screaming for the hell of it..?! WHA-Wha...!" Joseph then started screaming even louder when suddenly felt a pair of soft hands began trailing down his lower back. The people's expressions turned sympathetic and concerned for the group and spoke amongst themselves. "That poor man." "Why don't we give

them some change." Kakyoin turned and saw that they were tossing in several coins down to their feet. "Wha... Why are they throwing money?" Kakyoin asked in confusion. "Because they think Mr. Joestar is just some crazy old man with a mental problem." Nemuru answered him.

"I pity them. Older relatives like that can be tough." One said to his friend, he may have looked like he was whispering, but he's really not. "That is so true."

Polnareff was getting very embarrassed by the whole situation and decided it was best to leave now! As he covered his face in shame, he turned to the dark red-haired teen and said, "Kakyoin, go buy the T.V.. Let's get out of this crowd!" Kakyoin quickly agreed with and turned to the owner of the store, who was outside like the others, and told him that he would like to buy the T.V. that Joseph was using with Hermit Purple.

Once Hikari was done scratching Dan's back, the dark-haired man continued strolling along with a smile on his face. Once again, Jotaro pulled out that small booklet and wrote in it. Hikari caught a glimpse of the book and wondered what he was doing. Then Dan had stopped walking and, though they couldn't see it, they knew Dan was getting irritated. He narrowed his eyes as he used Lovers' eyes and senses to see what's going on.

'Unbelievable. Kakyoin's Hierophant, Polnareff's Chariot and Nemuru's Shadow shrunk themselves to a microscopic level and infiltrated Joestar's body. They intent to fight me, I can see them. They're travelling through the blood stream and heading towards the brain stem, right to my Lovers.' Dan thought. Still he was highly confident that they won't be able to defeat him as he tossed a smirk at the two following him and continued walking.

As soon as they got the T.V., they four other members of the Crusaders rushed off and ran to a more secluded area of town and got back to work. Joseph brought Hermit Purple and the image showed Lovers still sitting in his head. Hierophant Green, Silver Chariot and Shadow Mist should be getting close by now. Chariot cut an opening and the three Stands jumped through and were met with a practically a jungle of the flesh bud's tentacles.

"Great... We finally made it to the brain stem, but the flesh bud's already taken over! Damn it!" Chariot yelled out. A strange noise was heard, like something moving squishy, slimly meat... Shadow Mist looked around and saw Lovers digging away at Joseph's flesh. It let out gurgled yell when it saw her. Shadow's eyes widened and called to the others. "It's him!" Hierophant and Chariot quickly turned around and saw the the tiny menace.

"Just look at that fiend! He's using those weird claws of his to kneed Mr. Joestar's brain cells into a gooey mash! And I bet he's going to feed it to the flesh bud." Hierophant said. "We have to destroy him and tear out the flesh bud's roots as fast as we can, or else they'll completely devour his brain!"

"D'accord. I'll tear him to ribbons!" Polnareff said as he thrust his rapier towards Lovers, staring him down and as a thought ran through his mind. "You know on second thought. I think a finer cut should do the trick." Chariot thrusted his sword at the thing, but at first it didn't seem like do anything due to Lovers' hard claws blocking the blade. Chariot swung his sword in an attempt to slice his head of off, but Lovers quickly dodges him and lunged at him. Going into grab his neck with claws. "No, you don't!" Chariot kneed him in the stomach and pushed him away. When Lovers landed on his feet, he stumbled from the force of that kick and it gave Chariot the opening he needed.

He charges at the insect-like Stand and with one quick swipe of his sword, slice Lovers' head open. "He did it!" Hierophant said. Chariot jumped back to his friend as Lovers's body fell lifeless and shook his head. "No, not quite. I got to say Kakyoin, that thing's pretty fast. But luckily for us, I've already figured him out. If that's all the little beast has then he's no match for-."

"Polnareff! Who are you talking too?!" Hierophant yelled out, pointing to the other Hierophant beside Chariot. The swordsman looked in between the two green Stands in confusion. "Polnareff... That's not me..!" The real Hierophant called out to him. Shadow pointed to the Stand Chariot has just slain and he saw that it was melting away. "Look, that wasn't the real Stand you took down!" She told him.

Chariot then caught a glimpse of yellow chunks spilling and saw the "Hierophant" he was talking was melting away and spoke in a whole new different voice. "I'm the Lovers." He said as he bursted out of the disguise and jabbed his claw into Chariot's stomach, breaking a bit of his armour and forcing Polnareff, back on the surface, to cough up blood. Gripping his stomach in pain.

"Polnareff!" Joseph called out. "What did that thing do?" Nemuru asked as Hierophant and Shadow helped Chariot sit up when he was knocked back. They stared back as Lovers shed off the skin of Hierophant. "He disguised himself using the brain cells. Mr. Joestar's brain cells! Somehow that thing was able to use the collection of needed brain cells to disguise himself as my Hierophant Green! And since he can mould his cells at will, all you destroyed was a decoy made of those brain cells!"

"You hit the nail on the head! And you dummies completely fell for it!" Lovers said as he laughed maniacally, with a wave pool of saliva burst out of his tiny mouth, grossing out the team set out to stop him. He was such a disgusting creature.

Back with the Lovers' user, Dan had stopped walking once more and said, "Oh. There seems to be a spot on my shoe Jotaro. Why don't you come and clean it off?" He then sat down on a nearby bench and awaited for him to shine his shoes. Jotaro just looked at the man before he knelt down in front of Dan and started buffing his shoes. Quickly doing so to avoid having Hikari go anywhere near him again. Unfortunately, thing's didn't turn out so well.

As Jotaro was buffing his shoes, Dan turned his sights of the kind, gentle girl and said, "Hey, Hikari..?" The girl nearly jumped when she heard him call out her name. She suppress a shiver and stood her ground. "Y...Yes?" Dan gestured for her to come closer and Hikari did. Thinking that she would take over and sparing Jotaro any more humiliation. But she was wrong.

When she was within arms reach, Dan had grabbed her and pulled her onto his lap, making her face go red. "Nothing better than having a beautiful woman sitting on your lap, wouldn't you say Jotaro?" Dan said, smirking down at Jotaro, who was still cleaning his shoes. Jotaro just clenched his teeth and kept cleaning. Hikari turned her

head to avoid his stare as he kept his hands around her waist. *'Stay strong...! You have to stay strong..! It's for JoJo, you have to show him you can be strong!'* Hikari thought. She gasped when Dan started to stroke her legs, running his hand up and down, giving the occasional squeeze.

Hikari's face turn a deeper shade of red and tried her best not to react. Normally, she would've gotten off of him and shove him away or something, but the thought of hurting Joseph in the process had crossed through her mind. Dan started to laugh and kicked Jotaro in the face. "Come on! Pull your head out of your ass, would ya!" Dan shouted in glee. "JoJo!" Hikari went to move but Dan kept a tighter grip on her waist and began drumming his fingers on her thigh.

"You better shine those shoes right, Jotaro! I'm in such a good mood, I can hardly stand it! So I'm gonna need you to keep polishing these shoes until they're shinning as brightly as I feel right now. You think you can handle that, my little sycophant? You can stop polishing when that magnificent sun up in the sky makes these puppies sparkle. Also I want you to use your tongue to shine them." Dan said, taunting the youngest member of Joestar. However, Jotaro simply stood up and pulled out the small booklet, writing in it. "Hey! You bastard!" Dan shouted standing up, at the same time knocking Hikari onto the ground.

Hikari grunted a little upon hitting the ground, but she stood up, dusting her clothes off, as she watched the interactions of Jotaro and Dan. Jotaro only continued to write in the booklet before Dan snatched it away from his hand. "What are you writing in there?!" Dan looked in the booklet and saw that Jotaro had written down all the things Dan had done to the both of them.

"Punched me in the gut. Hit Hikari with a rock. Stole our wallets. Stole my watch. Used me as a bridge over open sewer. Lifted up Hikari's skirt. Made Hikari scratch his back. Made me shine his shine his shoes. Made Hikari sit on his lap. Stroke her legs. Kicked me..." Everything! All up to this point. Jotaro had faith his team would get Lovers out of his grandfather's body, and he's just waiting for the right, *perfect* opportunity to get his hands on him.

"You're looking at your tab. And you're gonna pay in full. I'm writing

it down so... I won't forget." Jotaro said with a smile. He can almost see it. The moment where he, combined with Star Platinum, would beat him into ground. It's same to say that he planned to enjoy every second of it. Dan got an irate look then he backhanded Jotaro in the face, Hikari was a little taken back when she saw some blood drip out of Jotaro's mouth. She hoped she wasn't being mean, but Dan seemed really weak and Hikari was pretty sure Jotaro was made of rock hard stone.

"You're a scoundrel, Jotaro... Hehe, Well it doesn't matter. It'll all be meaningless in the end." Steely Dan said.

Back with the elder Joestar's head, Polnareff was shocked by what he was seeing and motioned for his friends to look for themselves. "Whoa!! Kakyoin! Nemuru, look! Check out the decoy's head that I just opened!" Instead of melting away into nothingness, the decoy began to shift and rise up, splitting into two and creating perfect copies of Lovers. Shocking the team by the sight of it.

The insect-like Stand chuckled at their bewildered expressions and said, "Listen up! He's some advice; To win in life, one must thoroughly know one self. It's like Aesop's fables, when the unassuming tortoise beasts the hare. The tortoise out runs the hare because he knows himself and his abilities better than anyone else! Of course the same applies to me. I'm no fool. I know perfectly well I don't possess the power or speed necessary mortally wound either of you one on one. But remember this! The spoils belong to those who admit their own weaknesses!"

"**Emerald Splash**!" Kakyoin shouted as he launched a barrage of emeralds towards Lovers just as Shadow Mist's arms morphed into blades and both of their attacks made contact. While they tore him to pieces, it wasn't the real Lovers and was just another decoy and made several dummies copies of himself. Soon there were so many of them, that they couldn't even begin to determine which one was the real Stand.

They were ambushed from behind and slammed against Silver Chariot's back, having a gash open up in Polnareff's back. Hierophant and Shadow had attacked, but all they were doing was hitting the dummies instead and creating even more of them. Soon enough they

created a small army's worth of them. The Lovers dummies all began taunting them by saying they're the real ones and that they should attack. But they knew better. Seeing how Polnareff had taken the most damage, Joseph begged for him to back down.

"Polnareff, that's enough! Withdraw your Stand now! I can't just watch you get hurt, even if you are trying to save me." Joseph told him.

"No way in hell! I can't stand the thought of giving up and watching you die like this!" Polnareff strongly tells him.

"Are you trying to die? Withdraw your Stand. Do as I say." Joseph's tone soften as he gazed down with a look a defeat on his face. "It's over." He honestly didn't know how much time he had left, it seemed hopeless now...if he were going to die... Then, the least he could do was accept it. He only prayed Lily, Holly and Jotaro wouldn't hold it against him. "Like hell it is!" Nemuru told him. "She's right, you can't quit Mr. Joestar! We'll fight till the end." Kakyoin said. Joseph was hesitant, but he nodded.

Kakyoin looked at the screen and was getting irritated. "Damn... They all look the same. Which one is the real one? I can't tell them apart." Nemuru placed a comforting hand on his shoulder and said, "Well, we've got to try something. Otherwise, Mr. Joestar will be killed." Just then a light buld shined in Nemuru's head. "Wait... I got it!" She said.

Meanwhile, Dan had led Hikari and Jotaro into a jewelry store some time afterwards. Inside, Dan pointed down at a gold bracelet with small sapphire jewels in a display case while giving a chuckle. " Hey now, take a look at this, Jotaro. It's beautiful, isn't it? I would wager an expensive gift like this would make any girl fall head over heels. If you were to give her something like this...I bet Hikari would love something like this huh? Would you?" Dan asked looking at Hikari.

Hikari vigorously shook her head. "No...I'm fine without it. B-but thank you." Dan merely shrugged at her and kept pointed down at the bracelet, "Jotaro, you see that space there in the glass? Use your Stand to sneak through it, steal the bracelet." His grin dropped when he saw that Jotaro didn't move as obediently as he would have liked.

"Steal it. What don't you understand, moron. Get a move on... If you know what's good for you. I mean, I don't mind breaking the glass myself and taking the bracelet myself. Then again, if I'm caught, I could be beaten to a bloody pulp. Old Joseph would surly die from the pain. Hurry, would ya! Do it while the salesman's looking the other way."

Jotaro narrowed his eyes down at the glass but he reached forward for the bracelet. Star Platinum's hand came out and quickly pulled the bracelet out of the gap. Once it came into his hand, Dan gave a satisfied smirk and then pointed at Jotaro, yelling out, "Oh no! This guy is shoplifting!" Both Hikari and Jotaro gasped. "Son of a..." Jotaro cursed under his breath. "Do something, this guy is shoplifting! Come on, salesman!" Dan shouted.

"I'll go get some help! Please, sir, don't let him get away!" The salesman said running into a back room. "Sure thing." Dan said, he looked back at Jotaro and laughed. "Bastard." He said as he held the bracelet tightly in his hands and glared back at Steely Dan. Hikari tugged at Jotaro's sleeve, scared at what's going to happen now. Then three burly looking men came out of the back room, all appearing mad.

"Alright boys. Where's this thief at?" The man in the middle asked.

"Who's the culprit? Is it that guy there?" The man to the right asked, pointing at Jotaro. "You're talking about that Asian kid?" The man in the centre started cracking his knuckles and said, "You know, back where I come from, when someone steals something we chop their fingers off!"

"Hey, Jotaro. You better not use your Stand against civilians." Steely Dan said. Jotaro glared at Steely Dan but was so focused on him that he didn't see the oncoming attack. "Punk!" Hikari let out a scream as Jotaro was hit in the back with a baseball bat. All of the men started to surround Jotaro and attacked him, the most he could do in this situation was block attacks. "No!" Hikari was about to move forward when a hand landed on her shoulder. "You can't use you Stand either Hikari." Dan laughed, loving the helpless and sorrowful look on her beautiful face.

Hikari yelled out as Jotaro was tossed out the shop and landed harshly on the dirt road. Before Jotaro could be struck again, Hikari got out of Dan's grip and ran towards her hero, not caring if she were to get hurt in the process! She swore to protect him! Hikari cried out and jumped onto Jotaro wrapping her arms around his neck in a what looked like a lover's embrace. *'Please! Dear Heavenly Father, I beg of you! Please let this work!'*

Both Jotaro and the three men were surprised at the girls sudden actions. "Please stop," Hikari's eyes were wet with tears forming. "This was all my fault. I...I only wanted to take a closer look at the bracelet and my...! And... m-m-my...!" She started trembling like a leaf. She was fighting hard not to cry. She felt so embarrassed to say this, but she had too. Anything for Jotaro. But she did pray that he won't be upset with her. "M-my boyfriend was just helping me! I'm sorry, I didn't mean to cause so much trouble." She looked back at the three men with the most genuinely innocent and pure face they've ever seen.

All three of the men blushed and looked away. "W-Well okay. J-Just don't let it happen again!" One of the men said before the three of them went back into the shop. Once they were gone, Hikari quickly wiped away her tears before they could fall and felt a little happy that was able to do something for him. She looked back at Jotaro and her cheeks turned red as they were face to face, they were so close she could feel his breath on her face.

She quickly removed her arms from around his neck and sat down, fist clenched in her lap and her face now completely red. Before Hikari could say anything she felt a hand on her head and looked up to see Jotaro's lips turned upwards in a small smile. Hikari wanted to ask him if what she did was brave, she was suddenly grabbed by her arm and pulled roughly against Dan's chest.

"Hahahahah, That was great! Nicely done my friend!" Dan said held his hand up to reveal an emerald encrusted gold necklace. "Thank to the commotion you two caused, I was able to get my hands on something even better than that bracelet." Hikari couldn't take this anymore and told Dan straight up. "That's enough! Don't you think you've cause enough pain to JoJo yet? How much more will you do until you're satisfied? I don't care what you do to me, but I won't let

you hurt JoJo any longer! I'm going to protect him from the likes you!"

Dan and Jotaro were both taken aback by Hikari's little outburst, but Dan grinned as he looked over at the tall delinquent. His grin widened and asked, "This little lady here sure cares all about you, doesn't she? Jotaro? It's obviously that the two of you are very close... But how close are you really?" Jotaro stiffened up. What was he getting at? Jotaro glared at him as he continued. "If I had to guess, I'd say the two of you have been together for a long time... But have you really been *together*?"

"What are you saying?" Hikari asked him. Soon, it would be her biggest mistake. Dan's grin turn sadistic and he turned Hikari around to face Jotaro as he grabbed her breast roughly and started rubbing her right thigh. "Aah!" Hikari shrieked at the sudden, and most unwelcome, touching. "I'm asking if Jotaro has taken your innocence yet." Dan said as he move his hand higher and fondled her breast. Jotaro had gotten really pissed off now and sprung up back to his feet. "You bastard!!" He yelled.

"No, no. I'm serious... I mean look at her Jotaro. Not only is she beautiful, but she also have a wonderful body. See, she's big enough to fit into my hand, so tell me...have you been with her yet? You must've, right? You've been taking her everyday and night, right?" Dan asked with that smug look on his face. Jotaro didn't answer and grit his teeth in rage. If he didn't get his hands off his angel right now...! "Stop it! Stop it, let me go!" Hikari shouted as she tried to get out of his hold. She struggled, thrashed against him to get away but she immediately stopped when he felt him cup her womanhood, and began rubbing it through her panties. Dan looked at Hikari's face and saw the incriminating evidence that gave him the answer. A pink virgin's blush.

His expression turned pleasantly surprised. "No... You haven't! You haven't taken it yet? Aw man, what's wrong with you? You haven't gone that far yet?" Dan asked as he squeezed and pinched hard on Hikari's breast and slipped in to message her inner thigh, making Hikari scream and cry out. "No! Stop it! Stop it!! Let go!!" Jotaro clenched his fists so tightly as he stared enrage at Dan that he drew blood. "Get your hands off her...!" He lowly growled. Jotaro was now

shaking in anger. But Dan relished in the moment. "That's a very cute virgin blush you have there... Tell you what, since Jotaro here hasn't sealed the deal, I'M taking your innocence instead." Hikari's heart stopped at that moment and stared back in fear at Dan. So many thoughts are running her head and fear had engulfed her entire being. *'He can't....! He can't...! This isn't happening! Please, this is just a nightmare... JoJo!!'*

"Then once you know what it feels like, Jotaro here or any other man can do whatever they please with you after, but right now...I'm calling dibs. Got that?" Dan said. Hikari's eyes widened. She couldn't hold back any more. Her tears rolled down her face and she gave a terrified, broken scream.

Chapter 25: A fragile beauty. A realisation.

"A friend is someone who can see the truth and pain in you even when you are fooling everyone else." - Anonymous.

As soon as Hikari let out that scream, Dan pushed her away and slapped her across the face, knocking her down to the ground. He still had that smug look on his face. He laughed when he saw Hikari curled up into a ball, shaking uncontrollably and she cried loud for them to hear. Jotaro immediately tried to get to her, but Dan quickly block his way. "Hahaha! Geez, why is she making such a big deal of this, huh? I don't get it. Jotaro, you really need to teach this little bunny a few adult lessons. She can't be this innocent forever. If you want we could pet the bunny together." Dan laughed.

Jotaro was now shaking with anger and rage against him. He was seeing red. It was bad enough that he had to do Dan's bidding, but.... But now.... What he did went way too far!!! How dare he violate and taunt Hikari's innocence like that?! HOW DARE HE EVEN TOUCH HER LIKE THAT?!?! This sick bastard had touched ***his*** Hikari inappropriately! Right in front of him!! His sweet, innocent angel has been violated in such a scarring way. The only mercy he'd grant this son of a bitch was a quick death. The thought of it alone was enough to make Jotaro give out a laugh. "...Hehehehe," Oh, here it comes. The perfect opportunity to get his hands on him was now!

"Jotaro! What the hell are you laughing about? What's so damn funny!?" Dan snapped. Jotaro laughed again. Ooh, it was tingling. "Nothing. I'm just a bit excited. I was laughing because you're punishment is tripled and I've been waiting a while for this moment. It's just about time for payback! And I got to say it's really got me tingly!" Jotaro said with a smirk.

"Why you!" Dan punched Jotaro hard in the stomach and drives it in hard. "It would seem that we have something of a misunderstanding. I'm sorry to say, but your old man isn't long for this world. That's the reality you're facing." Dan tells him with confidence. But Jotaro gave a chuckle and said, "How sad, you don't know us very well, do you friend? And I see you don't know Kakyoin or Nemuru at all."

"Come again?!" Dan shouted.

Back with the others, Kakyoin gave a small chuckle of amusement while Nemuru held a smirk of pride. "It seems to me you're obsessed with the notion of knowing oneself. Yes, that makes sense I suppose I'm incline to agree." Kakyoin said with a smile. "But before you continue pontificating, think on this for a moment. There's another adage, "Know thy enemy." That's nothing to scoff at."

"Take a good look, buddy! You seriously haven't noticed what Shadow Mist and Hierophant Green had been doing all this time?!" Nemuru said. The Lovers looked down and was shocked to see that both lower halves of the black and green Stand had sprawled down into a massive web-like trap. They were wrapped around the ankle of each and every one of them. "My Hierophant has the power to stretch out its feelers and Shadow can manipulate her body in darkness!" Kakyoin said. "And we've been inspecting every single one of you!" Nemuru yelled out in glee.

They quickly found the real Lovers Stand with no trouble. Hierophant's tentacle was glowing brightly as a beacon and its own shadow wrapped itself around its body preventing him from moving. "GAH! How could I have not noticed something touching me?!" Lovers shouted as the two Stands gave away his position. "So you're the Stand! **Emerald Splash**!" "You're dead!!" The two high schoolers shouted out and their Stands made their attacks. Hierophant shot out **Emerald Splash** while Shadow Mist morphed her body into a snake. The emeralds hit their mark, shooting its forehead, and the black viper bit into its neck! "Success!!" Joseph and Polnareff cheered.

Without any warning, blood suddenly spurted out of Dan's forehead and two, small puncture wounds appeared on the side of his neck. Jotaro smirked as he adjusted his hat. "Well, well, what do we have here? Looks like Kakyoin and Nemuru got you pretty damn good. So I'm wondering...will I get my payback once they're done." Jotaro said. His smirked widen as he was enjoying the fearful look that appeared on Dan's face. Now that they had found the real Stand and had wounded it, Lovers panicked at began digging his way out of Joseph's head! Now with him leaving, there was nothing stopping Joseph from destroying the flesh bud in his head. He pressed his fingers on the sides of his head and transferred his Hamon over to his brain. It

didn't touch the Stands, but it made quick work of the flesh bud, reducing it to dust!

While they had succeeded in saving Joseph's life, their victory was a bit short lived as Joseph came to the realisation that because Lovers was leaving his body, that would mean that it was going straight back to his user! And that could mean that it target Jotaro next!! Dan tried to catch his breath as he started to back away from Jotaro, the look of fear in his eyes was obvious. "What's wrong? Why are you backing away from me?" Jotaro asked, feigning sympathy as he continued to smirk at him. "Aren't you going to tell me more about my grandfather's death? I really love to know."

Dan gasped and turned around, trying to run away but Jotaro was not going to let him go so easily! After all...he's a debt to pay him. Jotaro grabbed the back of his hair, pulling him back. "Hey, wait at minute. What's with the big hurry? We weren't done talking yet." Jotaro said. "No, it couldn't be... You're not actually trying to run away, are you? After all you've done? After what you did to her?!" Dan panicked in Jotaro's hand, trying to free himself from the vice-like grip. Dan kept pulling and managed to break free but lost a good chunk of hair in the process.

He ended up falling to the ground on all fours. "Please, Jotaro, sir, forgive me! I admit it, you win! I'll lie down and lick your boots!" Dan crawled over to Jotaro and gripped his leg. "I know I did a did thing and I want to change! You can pummel me as much as you'd like! Hit me! Kick me! But please, don't kill me! I'm begging you to spare my life!" Dan then started licking Jotaro's shoes, making the tall delinquent sigh. Talk about pathetic. Jotaro just gave him a hard stare. He planned to beat him into submission and break both of his arms and legs, and leave it at that.

Dan glared up at Jotaro as began thinking to himself, *'Soon! Very soon the Lovers will returned to me and this idiot, Jotaro, doesn't have a single clue! Just you wait, this time it'll enter your brain! Neither Kakyoin or Nemuru can't help you from hundreds of meters away! I'll make you suffer pain so horrible, you'll wish you were never born!'* Dan suddenly looked up and was smirking at Jotaro. *'It's here! It's here, it's here, it's here, it's here!! Now, enter his ear!'* The Lovers flew towards the tall delinquent and headed straight for his ear.

Then, Star Platinum was summoned and he easily caught the pesky little creature between his fingers. Jotaro glared daggers at Dan as he had Star Platinum squeeze Lovers between his fingers. Oh, but he didn't do it quickly. For what he had done, he made sure Star Platinum slowly, but surely, break his arm and leg. He made sure that Dan could *feel* it! Dan let out a painful scream as he felt his bones shatter beneath his skin. "I kind of figured you go and try something shitty like this. Don't you know my Stand, Star Platinum possesses excellent eyesight and precise reflexes? You're pathetic. Didn't you check up on us at all, even a little bit?" Jotaro said.

Dan started to scream out in pain as he fell back. He stared up at Jotaro with intense fear and tried to save himself from even more agony. "No, no, no, no!! Believe me, I wasn't planning anything!" Dan said as he continued to cry out in pain. "Not against your Stand's immense power-!"

The tall delinquent placed a hand close his ear and tilted his head a bit. "Did you just say 'Your Stand'? Only 'Your'?" Jotaro said. "Let me explain! Wh-what I meant to say is that your awesome and powerful Stand is far superior to any other! I knew it didn't stand a chance, so I had it come back! Just look at you've done! You've already shatter my arm and leg to pieces! I can't possibly fight anymore, I can't even move!!" Steely Dan said.

Star Platinum slowly crushed Lovers a bit more, just to make a point to Dan to never, in his life, come anywhere close to them ever again. As Dan screamed in pain, Jotaro looked down at him, saying, "In that case, I guess I'll take pity on you and accept your arm and leg as payment for all the low blows you took out against me and for the sick act you put Hikari through. But only if you swear that you'll never show your ugly mug in front of us again."

"I'll do whatever you say, I promise! I'll head for some deserted island or I'll go to the ends of the Earth and never return to bother you!" Steely Dan cried. "You better not lying. The next time I see that face, it'll get a thousand punches." Jotaro said. In all honestly, he was actually hoping that he would disobey him. He really wanted to break his body in half. But he also felt that this was more than enough. For Hikari's sake, he won't do anymore unless this bastard provokes him. "I'm not lying! I would never, ever lie to you!" Steely

Dan wailed as he bowed to him. With that, Star Platinum released Lovers. "Get lost." Jotaro said.

He gave him one last glare before walking away. He needed to check on Hikari and make sure she was alright. He needed her to know how sorry he was that she had to go through that. At the time, he felt his heart ache, knowing that Hikari had desperately needed him for help and he couldn't do anything to stop it. But at the very least, Jotaro broke his limbs for her. Dan glared daggers at Jotaro's back. He couldn't believe he had to resort to that pathetic display, it was so humiliating! Then out from a nearby alley, three little kids came out running. Laughing about a game they were going to play. Dan's eyes narrowed at the little girl of the group and got a plan in mind.

"Jotaro!?" Dan called out, laughing. He pulled out a switchblade and made the tall delinquent stop. "You're an utter fool! Just take a look at that girl!" Jotaro looked at a trio of kids playing nearby and his eyes landed a little girl with braided pigtails. "It might interest you to know that my Stand, The Lovers, just went into that girl's ear. Now he's heading for her brain." Jotaro growled under his breath and went to turn around to face Dan. "You better not move, Jotaro!" Dan let out an insane laugh as he stood back on his good leg. "Here's what's about to happen. I'm gonna stab you in the back with this knife and make sure that your never able to move again! Attack me with your Star Platinum and that girl's pathetic life ends right here and now! But you would never allow such an innocent child to die, would you?! Heheheheheehe!"

Jotaro let out annoyed sigh. "Oh, good grief. Go ahead and stab me then." Jotaro said, turning his body so he was directly facing him. "Huh!? Hey, did you not hear me?! I just told you not to-!" Dan's body suddenly froze up. "I told... you not...to move..." Jotaro grabbed Dan's wrist, the one holding the knife, and asked, "What's the matter? Didn't you say something about stabbing me? Like this, right?" Jotaro forced Dan's hand back making him stab himself in the cheek. Feeling his anger rising up again for what he did to his angel, Jotaro pushed the knife just a little further into his cheek. "Ahhhhh! M-my...my body won't move! Wh-why?!" Dan yelled.

Deep within the girl's head, The Lovers was a bit...tied up with things from completely its job. "What the-?! What is this thing wrapped

around me?!" Lovers yelled out as it struggled to free itself from Hierophant. "I see you didn't notice. As your Stand was trying to make its escape, Kakyoin and Nemuru tied Hierophant's tentacle to its leg. And seeing as those tentacles stretched all the way back to your Stand like a string to a kite, you must've been so self-absorb you didn't even notice." Jotaro said. Hierophant Green yanked on the rope, pulling The Lovers out of the girl's ear, freeing her from Dan's control. The kids ran off, laughing. Unaware what could've happened. Jotaro took only one step towards him, and Dan quickly jumped back in fear and let out a cry. "Please, I'm begging you! Forgive me!"

"Ask for forgiveness from Enyaba, the woman you killed. Ask for forgiveness from the girl whose innocence you've stained. But as for me, I never had the slightest intention of forgiving you." Jotaro said, stepping forward. "D-Dio paid me to cause this madness.... You...you can have it all!" Dan said.

"Good grief. I know this is blatantly obvious, but you really are a piece of work. What you owe me...can never be payed back with money!" Jotaro shouted as Star Platinum came out and proceeded to beat Dan with extreme prejudice! "**ORA ORA ORA

and said, "Hikari, it's alright now. Just relax." He tried to wrapped his arms around her but Hikari was in so much trauma over what Dan did that her eyes widened in fear when she saw his hands, thinking that it was Dan's, and screamed.

"AAAGGGHHH!! NO, GET AWAY!! DON'T TOUCH ME!!" She screamed as she tried to run away from her "attacker". Jotaro quickly grabbed her arms and tried to calm her down. "Hikari! Hikari, look at me! Look at me, it's JoJo!" He shouted, trying to get through to her. He held onto her face to get her to look at him. However, Hikari was too far away to even listen or even recognise his voice. "LET ME GO!!" She screamed again as she continued her thrashing.

Then.... ***SLAP!!***

Hikari jumped away from him and wrapped her arms around herself for protection. She slowly looked up to see who was trying to hurt her. Only to have her heart sink into her stomach to find Jotaro kneeling next to her, with a shocked expression as he held his stinging cheek. More tears fell from her eyes, more quietly this time, and Hikari felt herself shatter when she realised she had slapped the one person she had admired so much. "Hikari..." Jotaro tried to reach out for her, but Hikari shakes her head in fear and sadness, and runs off. Jotaro quickly getting up and going after her. He grit his teeth. Damn you, Dan...

"Hikari!" Jotaro called out. But the sapphire-eyed girl kept on running away from him as more and more tears fell from her face. Why did she do that?! How could she have done such a thing to JoJo?! But...! Dan had said...!! Dan said that he was planning to-!! Hikari ran as fast as she could to get away and kept on running till she saw the rest of the group running up to meet up with them. Hikari nearly stopped running as she looked at the others with fear in her eyes.

But when she saw Nemuru, Hikari sprinted towards her. The dark-purple haired girl smiled when she saw that Hikari was okay and said, "Hey there, love! I'm glad you-." Nemuru was cut off when Hikari practically dove into her arms, crying hysterically. Nemuru immediately got worried and wrapped her arms around her dear friend. "Hey, hey! What's wrong?! What happened?" Nemuru asked her. Gently rubbing her back to try and calm her down while Joseph,

Kakyoin and Polnareff looked at her with concern. "Hikari, what has gotten you so upset?" Polnareff asked as he tried to wipe her tears away. He quickly jumped away as Hikari let out a scream when she saw him reach out to her. Nemuru held Hikari close as she moved her a few steps away. When Jotaro caught up to him, everyone wanted to know what in the hell happened?

"Jotaro, what the hell happened?!" "Why is Hikari crying like this?" "Did Dan had something to with is?" "Where is that f*** boy?!" Jotaro let out a heavy sigh and simply said, "I'll tell you everything. But we have to be somewhere a little bit private." Later on that night, the Joestar group found a hotel to rest up. When dividing up the rooms, they all thought it was best that Hikari share a room with Nemuru. Especially in the condition she was in. Nemuru placed a set of pyjamas on the edge of Hikari's bed and softly said, "There you go. Are you sure you don't want to eat something? It'll make you feel better."

Hikari sat on her bed, curled up into a ball with a large towel covering her. As soon they entered their room, Hikari quickly went to the shower and scrubbed every inch of her body. She washed and scrubbed everywhere...but she could still feel Dan's hands on her. As if he left his markings on her. Hikari wordlessly shook her head and tired to hide her crestfallen face in the towel. Nemuru felt her heartbreak just by looking at her. Whatever may have happened, she should've been there! She never should've left her side.

Nemuru let out a sigh and walk to the door. "Alright. I'll bring some food later on, okay. Don't open this door to anyone who isn't me." Hikari only gave another wordless nod. "I hope you eat something, Hikari. You're really making me worry." Nemuru said as she locked the door behind her. Her saying that made Hikari's head snapped up. Worry...? She was making her worry..? Oh no... If Nemuru was worried for her...then what about everyone else? JoJo... he must be so worried for her too! Seeing her cry. Seeing her scream at Polnareff and Jotaro, who were only trying to help. She even refused to go anywhere near them the whole here to the hotel. Why is she making this hard for everyone! Why is she suddenly becoming a burden on them!?

At the dinning area, Jotaro told them everything that had happened.

Everything that Dan did to the gentle Stand user. Safe to say, they were all pissed off. Polnareff and Nemuru were probably a hell of a lot angrier out of all them. "That sick son of bitch! How dare he soil a pure maiden's innocence like that?! Let alone taunt her with such vulgarity!!" Polnareff growled under his breath. He wished he had the opportunity to rip that bastard a new one for touching his little sister figure! "I honestly wish you would've kept him around for me to put that bastard into a coma. But I am glad you broke his body." Nemuru said with hate laced in her words.

"That's horrible. To think that Hikari would go through something so traumatic... Without any of us there to save her..." Kakyoin said, mostly to himself. Hikari was a kind, gentle and innocent girl. One who would always give a smile and think about the positive things in life. After everything they went through up to this point, Hikari's smile and kindness never faltered. But this seemed different...he didn't think she could recover from this. Joseph grit his teeth in silent rage. He blamed himself for this. If he hadn't been so careless, then Hikari wouldn't be so broken. Joseph let out a sigh and said, "I think it would be best if we sent Chiara back home."

"What?!" Everyone but Jotaro exclaimed. "Listen! You all saw that look on her face, didn't you? She didn't deserve any of the shit Dan did to her. Chiara's a gentle soul, who shouldn't even be here in the first place. I'm afraid this experience will have her ceased to function properly...she'll become vulnerable and she'll won't recover from it so easily." Joseph tells them. "I'm saying this because I'm only thinking for Chiara's sake." He turned to Nemuru and said, "You said that she was alone with the door locked, right?"

"Uh, y-yeah." She said. "Then you should go to her and tell her I'll be buying her a plane ticket for her tomorrow morning. She'll be heading back home first thing." Joseph told her.

"But I don't want to leave." A familiar, sweet voice chimed in. Everyone nearly jumped out of their skins and turned to find Hikari standing a few steps away from them. Smiling brightly. She looked like her usual self. Hikari gave a small giggle as she said, "I don't want to leave. I made a promise to go along with you and stop Dio. I can't back out now." Polnareff got up from his seat and ran towards her. Hikari's sudden, yet small, flinch didn't miss Jotaro's eyes. He

saw her take two steps back. "Hikari...are you sure you're alright? L-listen, dear, you don't have to worry about your promise. We'll understand wholeheartedly if you want to go home." Polnareff said. At first, he didn't think it was such a good idea for her to leave, but what Joseph said made a lot of sense.

Hikari gave firm nod and kept up her smile. "I'm sure. R-really, I'm doing just fine, see?" *She stuttered.* She let out a soft laugh as she spun around happily. "We've been through much worse things than this, I'm not gonna let this bring me down!" She said with a cheerful tone. Polnareff let out a sigh of relief and smiled. "Hikari, you're truly a strong kid." Polnareff motions to the table and Hikari went to sit between Nemuru and Jotaro. Joseph called in a waiter and had Hikari place in her order.

While everyone seemed to feel a little better now they were seeing Hikari smile again, Jotaro wasn't convinced in the slightest. He spend years being with her and knows nearly everything about her, and vice-versa. In the many years of seeing her smiling face everyday, Jotaro learned a few key points. Hikari has a gorgeous smile. One that is so innocent, sweet, and kind. But this smile was alien to him. It was forced, strained and filled with sorrow. Her laugh as forced too. Jotaro gazed down and saw that she was scooting her seat far from him. Forcing herself to be happy and distancing herself from him was NOT the type of things Hikari could do naturally.

When dinner ended, everyone turned in for the night and planned to get a good night sleep. Hikari wished everybody a good night sleep and walked into her room with Nemuru following behind. 11:00 pm. The group was already dead asleep now and off in dreamland at this time, except for one. Hikari opened her eye and looked up to see if Nemuru was in her deep sleep. Once she was confident that she was, Hikari, ever so quietly, got up from her bed and tiptoed to the door. Silently unlocking it and stepping outside. Hikari carefully closed the door behind her and quickly, but quietly, tiptoed down the hallway. A door opened up and its occupant watched silently as Hikari walked down the stairs.

Hikari walked down the stair, through the lobby and right outside the hotel. She looked around and saw a bench near the entrance. She went over to it and sat down, looking up to the countless of stars

hovering above her. A cold breeze flew in and Hikari wrapped her arms around herself and tried to say warm. *'You're doing great... Everyone's happy now. You didn't cry and you helped get over worrying about you. You can do this...'*

"Then once you know what it feels like, Jotaro here or any other man can do whatever they please with you after, but right now...I'm calling dibs. Got that?" Hikari let out a gasp when Dan's voice echoed through her head. *'No! Don't cry, don't cry! You have to be strong!'* All at once, she felt his body heat, his hands running up and down her body, his voice taunting her of deflowering and having other men do what they want with her. Hikari held on to herself even tighter. She felt her eyes starting to sting. It was pointless, Hikari let out one small whimper and began crying again. Her cry echoed throughout the night but she prayed that no one could hear her. She couldn't let anyone see her this way.

Play music

"Hikari." A voice said. The owner of the name snapped her up in the direction of where it came from. Her eyes widened in shock to find Jotaro standing right next to her, looming over her. He didn't have his school jacket or his hat on. Hikari gasps and stood up. Quickly drying her tears and giving a bright smile. "O-oh! Hi JoJo. What are you doing out here so late?" She asked. "I could ask you the same thing." He said. Taking a step closer. She stepped back. "I...I, uh, had trouble sleeping. So I thought looking at the night sky could help me fall asleep." Hikari told him. Jotaro narrowed his eyes. Her smile was still forced. "Then why were you crying?" Jotaro asked. "Oh no, I wasn't crying. Uh...s-some dust flew into my eyes! That's right...and...I...I was only trying to clear my eyes."

"You're a horrible liar." Jotaro said, taking another step closer to her. Hikari took another step back. "Hikari, stop it. You can fool any other person in this world, but you sure as hell can't fool me! Especially...me!" Jotaro told her. This time, walked towards her. Hikari kept backing away from him as she said, " Please...don't come any closer." Jotaro stopped walking and just stared at her. He waited for her to let out a breath and relax herself, before reaching out and pulling her into his arms, embracing her.

Hikari panicked and began crying out. Begging him to let her go. She hit his back, thrashed around and punched his chest a few times, but no matter what she did, Jotaro kept holding her. Eventually, Hikari stopped all together. She couldn't win against him and began to cry again. Letting out all of her emotions she held inside. "I'm sorry, JoJo!! I'm sorry for hurting you like that! I'm so sorry..! For being so weak!! I'm sorry!" She cried as she clung onto him. Jotaro said nothing as he held her even closer to him.

As she cried, Hikari's mind started to replay some of her old memories growing up with Jotaro. In all those memories, she realised that he had always been with her. Not once did he ever leave her. Even when things got tough, Jotaro was always there to hold her hand and give her the strength to keep on going. Jotaro was the reason for her to smile. That's right... JoJo was her hero. Her best friend. Her inspiration to be stronger. Nothing could ever change that. As long as it's him...as long as he's with her...Hikari can handle anything.

Shortly after, Hikari fell asleep from crying so much and Jotaro picked her up in his arms as he began to carry her back inside. He saw that she was gripping his shirt tightly. Yeah, he didn't think she was going to let go anytime soon. He got back to his room and gentle placed her on his bed and pulled the covers over. She seemed to be a lot better now, he figured. Jotaro was about to go and sleep on the floor when the light from the full moon shined through his window and onto Hikari. Jotaro's eyes widened slightly. Her pale skin and golden hair appeared to be glowing under the moonlight. She looked like a genuine angel...all that was missing were the enormous wings. So...beautiful.

Jotaro pressed his hands on the mattress and hovered over her. He gently brushed the bangs from her face and found himself entranced by her. A fragile beauty. Pure as the driven snow. She's not only gentle but brave. Hikari was a lot stronger than most people give her credit for. Even herself. She looked so fragile, like a beautiful China Doll. But she wasn't fragile, not completely. She was alone in her room. She could've easily quit and left the trip as soon as she got the chance without them knowing. But she didn't. Instead, she worked up the courage and came to them. She held up a smile and tried to

remain happy for their sakes. She was more concerned for *them* and how *they* were feeling than about herself. She didn't want them to worry about her. Hikari was strong. She just didn't know it.

Jotaro softly caress her cheek. His hand then slid down to her lips. They looked so soft. He suddenly began to wonder if they *felt* soft. *'Hikari...'* Jotaro's mind was starting to hazy as he began to lowered his head. To think that someone like him to have an angel like her stay by him all these year...and he never noticed. "My angel..." Jotaro tilted his head as he only managed to brush his lips against her when he felt her hand touch his. Jotaro snapped out of whatever spell he was in and got off of her. "What...what was I about to..? Did I actually just try to..." Jotaro quietly asked himself.

"JoJo..." Jotaro held in his breath when Hikari called out his name, worried that he might woken up. Possibly scared her. But now...she was still fast asleep, talking in her dreams. Her hand was slowly moving around. "JoJo..? Where..?" Jotaro's eyes soften and felt his heart swell up. A realisation then shot through him faster than bullet. "I've really been falling for you this whole time, haven't I?" He said to himself as he continued to look at her sleeping form. He walked over and got under the sheets with her. He held her protectively in his arms as she snuggled against him. This time, she gave a real smile. Jotaro caressed her cheek once more. "I'm not going to let anyone hurt you ever again." Jotaro whispered to her as sleep took over. The moon and the stars watching over them.

Chapter 26: The Sun part 1

If they ever had to wonder what Hell felt like....this would be it. It was scorching hot, their water dried up, the binoculars were destroyed, they hid under a makeshift cave...AND THEY HAD NO IDEA WHERE THE HELL THE ENEMY WAS!!! They were stuck in the middle of the freakin' desert and the heat kept on rising by the second. Any longer and they were sure they'll go insane. To make matters worse, Nemuru was in pretty bad condition as the heat was causing her to go in and out of slipping into a coma. Hikari had lost since passed out and Kakyoin was bleeding from his head.

"How could this have happened..? Can't believe...we totally fell for it." Joseph said as the sun hovered directly above them.

Now...how did they get here? Why were they in this predicament? Well, let's rewind time a bit shall we and find out how exactly they found themselves trapped beneath the sun.

It all started on the morning where Hikari was beginning to wake up.

The sun's gentle rays touched her eyes and drew her out from her dreamy state. She looked out the window...then up to the ceiling. Huh..? That's weird..? How did she get here? Was she in her room...no...her room didn't have windows. And...and what was that incredible warm heat source next to her and what was holding her? She turned her head and her eyes landed on the sleeping face of Jotaro.

Heavily startled, Hikari let out a frightful gasp and bolted right out of his arms. ...Well, she would've, but Jotaro had kept an iron grip on her. Hikari tried to calm herself down as she tried to remember what happened last night, terrified of what *might* had happened. All of her memories came back her and she harshly scolded herself. How could she ever consider that JoJo would dare to something as Dan had told her? She shouldn't listen to anything he said! *'JoJo's nothing like him! He's a big, sweet-hearted teddy bear and he'd never hurt me like that!'*

Finally having relaxed, Hikari just laid there and waited for Jotaro to wake up. In the meantime, she was actually getting comfortable laying like this, it reminded her on the days where they slept side-by-side as children. The thought of it made her smile. Shortly after, Jotaro woke up and found Hikari smiling kindly at him. "Good morning, JoJo." She said. Before Jotaro could say anything, he quickly realised their position and quickly bolted from the bed.

Oh crap, what was he thinking?! She was in a fragile state last night and he had her share a bed with him like some creep?! What did Hikari thought of him now? "Hikari," Jotaro began. The sapphire-eyed girl saw the guilty look in his eyes and sat on her knees. Waving her hands frantically as she said, "No, no! It's okay sweetie. I'm fine." She gave a gentle smile and folded her hands on her lap. "I'm fine...because it's you. If it had been anyone else, I would've been scared. But I'm not, and it's because it's you. I trust you, JoJo."

That sent a jolt through Jotaro's heart. He felt relieved, he was happy that Hikari was still able to trust him. He gave her a small smile. He meant what he said last night. He was NEVER going to let anyone hurt her while he was around. Jotaro swore on his life that he would protect his angel. Jotaro opened his mouth to say something else when a knock came through the door. ....Well it was actually loud banging through the door and Nemuru could easily be heard. She sounded worried. "Jotaro! Open the door, damn it! Hikari's gone!"

Hearing Nemuru's shouts, Hikari got out from the bed and went to go open, all while Jotaro trying to tell her not to as he knew this will lead to annoying headache. "Nemuru, it's alright. I didn't go anywhere." Hikari told her gently as she tried to calm her down. "I'm so sorry I worried you. JoJo had came to talk to me last night and after a while I got sleepy. Then JoJo carried me to his room and we both slept together." She said. The dark-purple haired girl was left shellshocked at her discovery. Hikari was here. In Jotaro's room. Alone. And there was one bed in his room. Nemuru went from worry to shock to pissed off in a matter of seconds. "You bastard!" She shouted at Jotaro. Whom the latter groaned in annoyance.

Jotaro and Hikari spent the next five minutes of that morning explaining to Nemuru the events previous night and that NOTHING had happened afterwards. Nemuru glared daggers at Jotaro the entire

time, but when she was given the full story, she let out a sigh and believed him. Still, she took Hikari's hand and quickly pushed out of the room and back to their own, while warning Jotato to watch his back next. The tall delinquent sighed. "Oh good grief..."

After managed to halt the Lovers' invasive attack, Jotaro and company choose to avoid the political unrest of Iran and Iraq. And instead cross the Arabian Sea at Karachi to arrive at the United Arab Emirates. The group made their way to a car dealership where Joseph was buying a car. A insanely expensive one at that. "Now then, if you be so kind as to sign this document, everything will be squared away sir."

"Hmm. Right here, yes?" Joseph asked the dealer as he wrote his name the cheque. While he was buying the car, Polnareff was sitting by the waiting area, flirting with a saleswoman. "Man, oh man. You know I'm the kind of guy who'd do almost anything for a pretty girl, even buy a car." He said to her with a charming smile. "My, aren't you sweet." The saleswoman said, smiling a bit.

"How would you feel about the two of us having dinner sometime?" Polnareff asked just as Joseph walked up to him, slamming his flattop with a sealed folder, ruining his hair and his shot with the saleswoman. "Sorry Polnareff. I hate to interrupt when you're obviously so busy, but," Joseph says to him with total sarcasm mixed with a feigned apology. Polnareff immediately shot up from his seat and nearly shouted at the older man. "Mr. Joestar!"

"Come on, it's time to leave."

"Seriously. Try not to mess up the hair! Do you know how hard it is to make it look this good?" Polnareff asked him as he got to work into fixing it to its normal state. "As if anyone cares about your hairdo. You're driving." Joseph said as he walked away. "Righto." Polnareff said as he turned to the saleswoman to bid farewell. "Au revoir, mademoiselle." The woman gave a smile and waved him goodbye.

"Hey, Mr. Joestar? I don't get why we're riding in such a fancy, expensive car in this sandy deathtrap. Wouldn't it be better for us to get an off-road vehicle instead?" Polnareff asked him, but Joseph merely let out a laugh as they walked past the door. "Oh there's a

method to my madness." Joseph tells him. This will be either very stupid or very absurdly illogical....with Joseph Joestar, there's no gray area with him.

Once the car was bought everyone piled in and drove off. This one was a little more spacious than the previous one, making Nemuru rather happy since she and Hikari weren't sandwiched in between Jotaro and Kakyoin. As the drove along the road, Polnareff was rather amazed with all the expensive looking homes. "Se magnifique, this country is amazing. Are you guys seeing what I am here? It's like every house is a crazy mansion or something." Polnareff said in amazement.

"Yeah..." Joseph said, barely paying attention as he was too focused on the map he was holding. "In Tokyo, a house like one of these would cost 3 or ¥4,000,000,000. However, for most people in this country, it's standard living." Joseph said as he began to explain. "It wasn't, but twenty years ago, that this place was a barren desert. Though, thanks to a thriving oil industry, it's grown into a playground for the rich." The sun above them was seeping through the car's front window, and already Polnareff was feeling the heat.

"They sun is merciless, but at least with air conditioning, it's perfectly comfortable inside the car. So no complaints here." Polnareff said as he looked up. Through the rear view mirror, the Frenchman took notice of Kakyoin's uneasiness. He looked worried for some reason as he gazed outside. He wasn't the only one, Kakyoin's fellow schoolmates also took notice and Jotaro asks him, "What's wrong Kakyoin?"

"It's nothing, I was just thinking about how open it is here." Kakyoin said with a smile. He wanted to ease tension, but he had a feeling in his gut that kept warning him about it. "I know we can spot anyone following us...but, I just can't shake the feeling that there's someone out there watching." He was worried about who could be lurking from whatever corner they were hiding in and about a possible ambush, which was completely understandable. "Yeah, can't say that I blame you." Polnareff tells him.

After closely inspecting the map, Joseph then tells the group, "Well, back to business. I've given a bit of thought to the route we should

take. About a 100 km, northwest, there's a village called, Yarpline. The desert and mountain make taking route near impossible. It normally takes two days to reach by car. So to expedite the travel time, the locals choose a Cessna to get there. If you want my opinion, we should go to the village and buy a Cessna in order to cross the vast Sadi Arabia desert."

Joseph then gave a grin and began to say, "You know, I've been apprehensive about getting anywhere near a plane. If a Stand user attacked and the plane went down, we'd be putting innocent lives in harm's way." Oh no....that could only mean one thing. "But if we had a Cessna, I could be the pilot, we'd be able to save a couple of days for sure." While that sounded like a good idea...it didn't really make flying any safer. Jotaro had told Joseph that in the most nicest way possible.

"Flying in a Cessna with a man who's been through three plane crashes, yeah that sounded like a perfect idea to me." In full-blown sarcasm. Joseph glared back at his grandson and continued on. "That comment not withstanding, our priority should be crossing the desert and hightailing it to the village of Yarpline. It'll take us one day on camel back."

"camel back?!" Polnareff asked in near disgust and confusion. "A Cessna is one thing, but on camel back? I've never ridden a camel in my life!" And he prayed to God he wouldn't. He heard stories about those filthy creatures. Joseph folded the map and began to chuckle. "Just leave everything to me. I know these creatures well and I'll teach you how to ride them. You boys and girls sit back and watch the magic happen."

"I have a bad feeling about this..." Nemuru said, grimly. The group had arrived at their destination and found a small farm that sold camels. Hikari gazed brightly at the tall creatures. She's never seen a camel in person and thought they were rather taller than she imagined but they were also adorable!

"You want camels, you say? Sure I have them, but they're gonna cost you my friend, and they need a gentle touch." The Camel Salesman said to Joseph. "We're kinda in a life or death situation here, so we need them, whatever it takes. As for payment," Joseph pointed at the

new car he had just bought, "How about a trade for that car?" And just like that everyone stared at him like he had gone insane! Then again...this was Joseph Joestar. His mind and way of thinking aren't normal.

"What?! Are you-?! You just spend a bunch of-!!" Nemuru shouted at Joseph but she was cut off when Hikari quickly covered her mouth with her hand. Still, she spouted out muffled words and insults at the elder Joestar. "I couldn't possibly accept such a generous offer!" The salesman exclaimed. "Yeah Mr. Joestar! And besides, you literally just bought that car!" Polnareff shouted at him. He really, really, *really* didn't want to ride on those smelly, filthy creatures!!

"What other reason did you think I had to buy such a fancy, expensive car? It's true an off-road vehicle would perform better here, but we're not in the big city. We can't just write a cheque in this place." Joseph said with the biggest grin on his face. "And cash isn't accepted here. In my experience, trading is far more effective in places such these. If you try to buy safety for cheap in a time of emergency, you'll fine yourself even worse off in the end. Besides, I don't know about you but I think we suffer enough already."

He then turned to the salesmen, who was still in shock, and gripped his hands. "Hey mister!" He then had him shake on it. Though it was a very one-sided handshake. "I take it this seals the deal? Oh hey, you know what? To make things a little more even, I'd like the water in those tanks too. It's the most important thing when you're in the desert." Joseph said.

"But the water isn't nearly as valuable as your car, sir. You are very strange indeed, sir." The salesman's said. He had no idea. Joseph just simply smiled, "All right, everyone. Let's get ready, shall we? Crossing the desert will no easy task, brace yourself men!" Pretty soon the group was all packed up and they were given the camels. Joseph and Polnareff received their own while the high-schoolers opted to share one.

Hikari smiled brightly as she gave one of the camels a loving pat. She smiled as it nudged its head against hers, asking for more love. Hikari pulled out a peach feeding it to the camel, giggling the whole time. "So cute!" Hikari said as she hugged its neck. "How many times did

Hikari bang her head when she was little?" Nemuru asked. "About ten." Jotaro told her.

Polnareff wasn't having as much fun as Hikari was. He let out a disgusted groan as the camel breathed heavily in his face. "That stinks! Hey Mr. Joestar. How the heck are we supposed get on one of these things? It's like three meters tall?" Polnareff asked as he sprayed from fragrance around to get rid of the smell.

"Allow me to demonstrate the proper way to mount a camels. You have to make them sit first, and then you get on." Joseph explained. He walked over to his camel and pulled down on the reins but the animal did not budge. "Like I said, you make them sit and then get on! You see! Just like this!" He kept pulling at the animal's reins but it just turned into like a single-sided game of tug-o-war. "You make them sit and you get on them! Give me a minute, any second this beast is gonna sit and let me saddle up!" Joseph then tried to get on the camel by jumping on it but that didn't work either.

"Mr. Joestar...you have ridden one of these haven't you?" Polnareff asked.

"I will have you know that I watched Lawrence of Arabia three times now from start to finish! I know all too well how to ride a camel!" Joseph said. Basically confessing that he only knows about camels through a freaking movie!! "Although two of those times, I slept through half a it."

"You learned to ride from a movie!? So you're...saying that you've never actually ridden one before?!" Polnareff shouted out. Nemuru was already done with Joseph's shit and bluntly said, "If we encounter poisonous snakes out....I'll let them kill him first." Hikari pinched her ear and gently scolded, "Don't say that. Be a little nicer Nemuru."

"How the hell can I do that when this geezer was bragging about how to ride a camel huh?" Nemuru said. The camel shook its head and covered Joseph's face in its saliva. The others, expect Hikari, let out a sigh. They should've expected this. Joseph turned to his group and gave a big grin. "The saliva makes great sunscreen. The more you know. Hahahaha!" Joseph let go of the camel and went to his pack

and took out an apple.

"Listen up, when you're handling an animal, it's absolutely imperative to understand exactly how it feels. And I mean, exactly." He showed it the camel then put it on the ground. The camel followed the red fruit sitting down. Joseph gave a victorious grin as he turned back to his team. "Ya see?! I make a camel sit down! If you just take the time to get inside its head, it'll sit down for you for sure!" He said as he gave a boisterous laugh. When he was done laughing, Joseph hopped onto the camel, still grinning all the while.

"Whoa, I did it! Whoa, it's so high off the ground! By the way, did you know that camel's can close their nostrils to keep the sand out? And before I forget, you're forbidden from making stupid camel jokes, it that understood!?" Joseph tells them.

"Camel jokes..?" Hikari asked in confusion.

"You're turn. Now you greenhorns get to learn the finer points of riding a camel." Joseph said. "Wait, we're the greenhorns?" Nemuru asked. "Listen up. The first thing you need to know is that camels don't walk anything like horses. The front and back legs on either side move forward together so these things can sway a lot, but don't let that throw you off. If you find a way to ride the camel's rhythm, I know you'll be just fine. For example-."

As much as Joseph wanted to prove to them all that he knew what he was doing, his victory didn't last long because he lost control the moment he tried to get the camel to move. "GAH! H-hey, wait!! You're going too fast! Slow down! Listen to me, damn it! Ahh, I didn't tell you to go that way!!" Hikari, Jotaro, Nemuru, Kakyoin, and Polnareff's eyes all followed Joseph as the camel stomped around crazily before throwing the old man off. "AHH!" Joseph yelled. "Oh dear..." Hikari said as she went to Joseph and check on him.

After....that happened, the others went to their camels and they had got on fairly easy than Joseph had tried before. Jotaro helped Hikari onto the camel had her seated up front. He took the rails and made sure his arms were in place in case she were to fall. "You okay?" He asked. Hikari pulled the hood of her cloak over her head and nodded. "Mmm-hmm, I'm fine." She said, smiling. Kakyoin looked at them for

a brief moment before turning his eyes onto Nemuru, who was making sure the bags were secured. Seeing a chance, he stretched out his hand.

"Need some help?" He asked. Nemuru looked over to him and smiled, "Yeah, thanks." She grabbed his hand and Kakyoin pulled her up. He was trying to have her seated in front, but she then sat behind him, and, much to his disbelief, took the rails from him. "What? But-?" He started. Nemuru looked back at him in confusion. "What?" Kakyoin opened mouth to say something, but just let out a sigh, once again, in defeat. "It's nothing, forget it."

They all lined up and looked back at Joseph, who had gotten back up and had several scratches on him. He held his hat as he said, "Okay then...now that everyone gotten the hang of mounting and riding their camels," Everyone, except for Hikari, let out a sigh of annoyance. "Alright, we have a desert to get through! The time had arrive men, onward toward the northwest!" Joseph as he pointed in the direction, but the camels had a different route in mind and went the other way.

After finally getting the camels to listen to what they had to say, the team traveled across the desert, with branches with long leaves tied to the camels tails so they could cover their tracks. They had been traveling across the desert for what felt like hours now but for some reason, it only seemed to get hotter.

"Something's wrong. I still haven't been able to shake the feeling that someone out there is watching us." Kakyoin said as he looked behind him. The others followed his gaze, but all they found was nothing but sand and rocks for miles around. "Kakyoin, don't you think you might be worrying a bit too much?" Polnareff asked him. "I mean, the palm leaves will erase our tracks plus we can see for kilometres in all directions. If someone were here, we'd know."

"Actually, I think he's onto something. I feel some sort of presence too." Jotaro said. It had been nagging him for a while now, but now that they were this far off, it had became much more apparent. "Hey, Jotaro, why don't you take a look?" Joseph asked him. Jotaro took out a pair of binoculars and used Star Platinum's enhanced vision to look around. Nemuru let out a dry cough and wiped off some sweat

from her brow. *'Why is it so hot all of a sudden...?'* Nemuru wondered, beginning to feel weak. Kakyoin looked back at her in concern.

"How about it? Do you see anything suspicious out there?" Joseph asked.

"No, nothing. Nothing whatsoever. Even so, something's not right here. But what is it?" Jotaro said as he narrowed his eyes. It can't just be nothing. He and Kakyoin both felt that someone was watching them, but they didn't know who or where they could be. Polnareff took a quick swing of his water before turning to the group. "Hey, let's hurry up and go." He said.

"Yeah. Let's get as far away as we can. We'll keep pressing forward until the sun goes down this evening, then stop to pitch our tents. It's much too dangerous for us to travel at night." Joseph said. Polnareff began to fan himself as he said, "I only wish we get out of this freaking heat. Just look at this, it's reading 50 degrees Celsius." Polnareff held up a thermometer and showed everyone the temperature.

"He's right. It's really hot out here. Abnormally hot, even for a desert." Nemuru said, feeling herself getting lightheaded. Hikari covered her mouth with her cloak as she let out a dry cough, prompting Jotaro to pat her back. "Yeah, it is hot out here. But then again, the weather is at its hottest right around now." Joseph took out his watch and looked at the time. He then let out a gasp. "Eight o'clock? Wha? Jotaro, check your watch. What time does it say?" Jotaro brought out his watch and told him. "Ten passed eight," Jotaro quickly caught on to his grandfather's hunch and looked up at him. "Hey Old man!"

"My watch is correct. We...lost track of time. But...what the hell is going on?! According to my watch, it's past 8:00 pm!" Joseph tells the others. They all stared back in shock at the news. "So why isn't the sun setting!?" Joseph yelled out as he gazed up the heating star in the sky. It was past eight, so it should've gone down. It should've been night by now! Why was it still in the sky?! "This is impossible! The thermometer is jumping to 60 degrees Celsius!" Polnareff shouted.

Everyone looked at the sun to see that it was slowly rising higher in the sky. However, the sun seemed a little strange. It was the fiery

sphere everyone was familiar with, but it somehow looked to be much smaller. "No, the sun isn't setting at all. It's actually...!" Kakyoin started.

"It's actually rising higher in the west!" Polnareff shouted.

"Wait, could it be that the sun is really..?!" Joseph shouted.

"...a Stand?!" Jotaro asked.

"I don't understand how such a thing is even possible! How could this sun actually be a Stand! Quickly, take cover behind those rocks!" Joseph yelled. Everyone got off their camels and ran behind some large boulders. Hikari could feel the heat radiating off the sand under her feet, it was getting hotter with each passing second. "How the hell can that sun be a Stand?!" Polnareff shouted. "We're such fools! How did we miss this?"

"I knew we were being watched but I never thought this is why I could see our stalker." Kakyoin said. "At this rate, that sun is gonna burn all day, no, all night long." Polnareff said. "Oh mon dieu, it's going to roast us like a bunch of rotisserie chickens, we're totally screwed!!"

"Yeah, though I doubt it will take that long." Joseph said as he peeked over the rocks and saw the camels looking woozy from the heat. "The thing is a sauna can dangerously raise the body's temperature in minutes."

"Okay, then how do we fight it?" Polnareff asked as he wiped some sweat of his face. He glanced at his thermometer and his eyes widened in shock. "It's 70 degrees Celsius! And to add insult to injury, we can't tell if the Stand is close or not. The distance is impossible to judge."

"Our only option here, is to quickly take out the Stand user." Jotaro said. "Indeed." Joseph agreed. "The user...he has to be nearby, we have to find him. He must have a way to conceal himself and somehow he's been following us all this time." Everyone did their best to locate the enemy Stand user but couldn't see anything. Polnareff had a thought come to him as he told his teammates, "Hang on a

minute. What if it's like the Lovers we encountered in Pakistan? Maybe this guy has a Stand he can use from far away."

"That's not the case this time." Joseph told him, narrowing his eyes. "Sure, a weak Stand can be controlled from a distance but this sun is just too strong. The energy it's emitting is incredible! The Stand user has to be nearby." He was right. The sun's heat was getting hotter and hotter with each passing second. It was drying up what little grass was around, reduced a scorpion to ash, and caused a camel collapsed from the heat.

"Hey, check it out. The camels are starting to collapse from exposure to the heat." Jotaro tells them. "And this waiting isn't getting us anywhere." Kakyoin said. He then felt some weight on his shoulder and found that Nemuru looked so much more paler than she already was. She was breathing heavily and looked sick.

His eyes widen as he remembered her Stand's abilities. Though was able to control shadows and manipulate the darkness, fire and intense heat were her biggest weaknesses and this sun was causing some incredible exhaustion. Kakyoin held her up and he said, "I'll use Hierophant to some recognisance around the area."

"Kakyoin," Joseph said as he tried to stop him. However, Kakyoin held his arm out to cut him off as he said, "I'm only searching for the Stand's rough location. Once we know how far away it actually is, we might just be able to locate the user." He brought out Hierophant up to the sky and began counting the distance between them.

"20 meters....40 meters...60 meters...80 meters...100-!" Kakyoin cut himself off as he let out a gasp and saw the colours shifting around the Sun-like stand. Jotaro noticed as well as he tells his friend, "Something's not right! Kakyoin have Hierophant come back!"

"There's something coming right at us!" Polnareff shouted.

"Before that happens, **Emerald**-!" Kakyoin's attack was halted before it had the chance when the sun Stand attacked by shooting out what seemed to pieces of flaming rocks. Shattering the emeralds and heavily injuring Kakyoin. "No! Kakyoin!" Joseph shouted.

Chapter 27: The Sun part 2

"Get down!" Hikari, while stumbling, stood up and called out Soundless Voice. She immediately put up a shield over them as the blasts made contact with it. With each hit, Hikari was feeling herself growing weaker, as if they were hitting her head on. Unfortunately, a camel was caught in the crossfire and was shot down, along with a tank of their water. "Arugh! You bastard!" Polnareff shouted as he brought out Silver Chariot and helped in deflecting the attack. Jotaro quickly summoned Star Platinum and shouted, "I'm gonna bust a hole in the ground! Everyone get in now!"

Star Platinum struck the ground creating a giant hole and everyone divide in. It was still hot but at least they got a little more shade inside of the makeshift cave. Hikari felt so weak and lightheaded, she felt like going to sleep. But her sapphire eyes glanced over to Kakyoin and saw that he was bleeding. No...she can't rest while he was still hurt. "Ka...Kakyoin.." Hikari rasped out as she brought Soundless Voice and healed him before she fell back and passed out in Jotaro's arms. "Hikari!" Jotaro and the others called out. The tall delinquent check her out and pressed his fingers on her neck, he sighed in relief. "She's unconscious, but I think she's okay." Jotaro tells them.

The others nodded and the older man glanced over to the dark red-haired teen. "You okay Kakyoin?" Joseph asked him. "Yes I am. I was in the middle of initiating my **Emerald Splash**, so that protected me from any major damage." Kakyoin said. Nemuru looked outside the cave. With the little shade it provided, it help her feel a bit better and she said, "I'm glad you're alright, but what's more concerning is this Godforsaken heat. I feel like it's gonna drive me insane!"

"Did any of you noticed that attack was perfectly aimed at us? ...and that could only mean that the enemy has been watching us! But from where?! Where is he?!" Polnareff shouted. He can't take this anymore! Where the hell is the enemy hiding? Joseph turned to Polnareff and said, "Polnareff, keep your voice down. If you keep shouting the enemy will find us. Just lay low for now."

"You're....j-joking..right?" Nemuru asked him, way too out of it to properly be incredulous of Joseph's plan. "We'll sit tight for a while and see what happens next." Joseph said as he brought out a flask of water but when he held it up to opened it, he saw a large hole in it. Most likely due to the attack from earlier. "Oh shit!" He threw the container into the desert's sand since it was useless now.

Minutes passed by and everyone was now breathing heavily the heat taking a toll on them. They were mere seconds away from going insane. Joseph looked back at his team in concern and thought to himself. *'Things can't go on like this. Come on, think, damn it! It's time for this old timer to take the bull by the horns. But this isn't the most ideal spot. I can't even use my best technique, it's crucial that I get more information!'* Joseph turned to Jotaro and asked him for him to hand him the binoculars.

When he did, Joseph used them to try and take a peek from out of the cave to see if he could find anything to indicate to find where the user was hiding, but the moment he stuck out the binoculars, the sun-like Stand quickly destroyed them in Joseph's hands. "Agh! Son of a...*bitch*! Where the hell are you?! How are you watching us? Are you invisible or something?! Show yourself, you coward! Damn!" Joseph yelled as he slammed his fits onto the sand.

Minutes ticked by and it only got hotter. Though it was minutes, but to the Crusaders, it felt like hours. It felt like ours in hell! Nemuru felt her face and it felt like it was on fire. *'Damn it all...this can't be real...!'* Nemuru thought as she tried to stay conscious. At this rate, our group of heroes will be cooked alive.

The heat was really getting to them as their vision was stating to go hazy and reality seemed to warp out of control. Everything was spinning... Too hot... Too hot.... What is this..? Why is this happening?! Where the hell was the Stand user!?!? Suddenly a small laughter was heard. Joseph turned around and saw that Kakyoin pointing and laughing. "Hey Kakyoin. What's the matter?" Joseph asked. Kakyoin's laughter got louder and more hysterical freaking out Joseph. "Kakyoin! What the hell are you laughing about? Hey, snap out of it already! Control yourself man!" Joseph shouted at him.

Suddenly Jotaro started to laugh too...now really freaking out Joseph,

who really didn't Jotaro was even capable of laughing. And this was too creepy! "J-Jotaro? This is happening to you too?!" Joseph said. Nemuru let out a snicker before she bursted out laughing like a manic as she nearly fell on Kakyoin's shoulder, all three students laughing like patients in a mental asylum. Joseph eyes were filled with worry and disbelief at what he was witnessing. Pretty soon Polnareff was joining in too. "Pol...Polnareff, no! Not you too!" Joseph said.

Now most of the team of Crusaders were laughing out loud as if they had heard the most hilarious joke in the entire world while Joseph stared back in shock. Joseph wasn't even 100% sure this was actually happening, he might have passed out and this was just all just a fever-induced hallucination. "Oh my god, no! They've all lost it! This damn heat has driven them all completely insane! I have my sanity, but what can I do!?" Joseph shouted to himself.

Their laughter had gotten so much louder and the old man knew that he had to snapped them out of it, they ever hope to regain their sanity after this is over. Joseph grabbed the front of Jotaro's jacket and began to shout at them. "Hey Jotaro! Get a hold of yourself man! You have to down! You have to listen to me Jotaro, sometimes things get rough but when they do, you have to remain in control! Think about Chiara! What she think if she were to wake up and see you like this, huh?! You really want her to see you in the state you're in?!"

Joseph then felt a hand gripping his shoulder and he turned to see Kakyoin looking at him, trying to stop laughing as he wiped a tear from his eye due to laughing so much. He tired to speak to him but his laughter was getting in the way a bit. "Please! Please don't get the wrong idea about this...Mr. Joestar." He said. "Have a look at that rock over there!" Kakyoin said as he pointed out of the cave. "It's large enough for someone to hide behind, don't you agree?"

Joseph looked out and saw a large, round rock a few feet away from them. "What?" Joseph asked in confusion. "I don't follow you." He said. "Oh you will! Now take a look at the rock on the opposite side." Kakyoin said as he traced his finger to the other side of the area. "Opposite side huh?" Joseph questioned. He followed his finger and saw another rock with the exact same size and shape as the one Kakyoin had first pointed to. "Um..." Joseph went, still not quite understanding where Kakyoin was getting at.

"You still don't see it sir? Have another look." Kakyoin said as he traced along the two rocks back and forth, and began to explain to Joseph what he wasn't getting while the others were getting over their laughter. Their loud and boisterous laugh was slowly bringing Hikari out from her unconscious state. "There's a rock that's shaped exactly the same way but it's on the opposite side." Kakyoin said. "The shadow is also reversed. Which means..." He trailed off so that Joseph could figure it out, but the old man was silent as he either still didn't get it or was slowly piecing everything together.

Hikari slowly sat up and rubbed her eye. "W....*Yawn~* What's going on...? Did something funny h-happened?" Hikari asked in a drowsy tone. "Hahahaha! What a stupid trick!" Polnareff laughed. "I can't even begin to think of any insults for this dumbass...!! Hahaha!!" Nemuru laughed. Jotaro carefully laid Hikari against the stone wall and asked her, "Can you sit up on your own?"

When she slowly nodded her head, Jotaro brushed her bangs from her face and cupped her cheek. Then he got up and moved to the entrance of the cave, going past his grandfather in the process. "Move. Stay here old man." He said. Joseph's eyes widened as he shouted out a warning to Jotaro. "Jotaro! If you go out there now, you're all but asking the enemy to attack you! It's dangerous!" The tall delinquent glanced over his shoulder and scoffed at Joseph's pointless warning as summoned out his Stand.

"**ORA**!" Star Platinum picked up a rock and, like a professional baseball player, pitched it forward with incredible force. It hit its target, shattering the hidden glass and a voice heard once it made impact. "NO!" It went. Joseph's eyes went wide as he stated at the hole in complete shock. "Gah! How'd a hole suddenly appeared in thin air?!" Joseph shouted in surprise.

"Good grief old man. You really are pathetic.Well, I'll just assume that the heats too much for you. Or else I'd find it very hard to believe you're my grandfather." Jotaro said. The sky went from day to night as the giant Sun Stand vanished, revealing its wide collection of stars and making the air around them nice and cool, which the team greatly welcomed. "Ahh that so much better." Nemuru sighed out in relief as she stretched her body.

"What's...going on...?" Hikari asked as she sluggishly crawled out of the cave, still very sleepy from the ordeal. Jotaro went over to her and picked her up in his arms like a bride. "Since we've defeated the enemy Stand, night's finally fallen. Or maybe should I say it's back to being night?" Kakyoin said smiling at the sky. "However you want to slice it, we're safe at last." Polnareff said.

"Just how long do you plan on hiding in that hole?" Jotaro asked his grandfather as he was still crouched in the cave. Joseph, while still in confusion, said, "Oh, yeah right." And he climb out. "Good grief, it's finally gotten dark around here." Jotaro said. Now that everyone had finally gotten out of the cave, they walked over to the shattered glass.

From there they had discovered that it was, in fact, a large mirror. Behind the mirror was a passed out man with a large bump on his head from where Star Platinum had nailed him. He was a short, overweight man who had short, spiky hair. He wore a T-shirt bearing a rising sun symbol, much like the Imperial Japanese flag, a light blue jacket, dark pants and brown shoes. The mirror was hooked up to some type of motorised chair, it even had an air conditioning system.

"Well what do you know, it's a mirror." Joseph said as he inspected the moving contraption. "It looks like it's rather comfy." Kakyoin said as he looked at the chair with the air conditioner right beside it. "Pfft, yeah right. This definitely looks like only a fat, little basement-dweller like him would keep around." Nemuru said.

"Man, I had no clue he was reflecting the desert and tailing us from behind this nifty little thing. He was smarter than I thought." Polnareff said, complimenting the man's ingenuity. He briefly wondered what kind of parts he used to make the thing and made so comfortable while traveling. "I see he has got a tank of water too. How about we take it off his hands?" Jotaro said. "Let's do it. He owe us after making us loose one." Nemuru says already going to haul it up.

Polnareff noticed a cup on the mini desk in front and decided to take it. Drinking it all. Joseph was still left in utter confusion, not only by this man's stupid little trick but also by how easily and quickly they had, apparently, defeated him. "Huh? Let me understand all this. You

mean...we've already defeated the Stand user? There's nothing else to do? We don't even know this guy's name, but somehow we've already made short work of his Stand?" Joseph asked a series of questions to his teammates. If all that was true, then this guy was an even BIGGER let down the Wheel of Fortune's user.

"Yes, you hit the nail on the head." Kakyoin confirmed.

Consider the Sun's user, Arabia Fats, officially retired. Which was rather a big disappointment for being a waste of time for a heroes. But nevertheless, he won't be bothering them again anytime soon.

"So this was The Sun card's Stand huh? At first, he was pretty impressive. But once we figured the guy out he actually kinda sucked didn't he?" Jotaro asked, chuckling a bit.

"So, off to our next destination. It's pretty chilly in the desert at night isn't it?" Kakyoin asked. Nemuru shrugged. "Possibly, I hate to sleep in the cold. Even with the tents, I don't that we'll be able to sleep it off."

"Now hold your horses, traveling at night is dangerous. If we're not careful, we could lose our way." Joseph informed them. "Yeah and with that idiot out of the way, it'll be sweet dreams tonight." Polnareff said as he then let out a sneeze. Everyone then shared a laugh after that. Ba-dum-tssh.

After gathering up their supplies the group packed up ready to finish their trek through the desert. Jotaro got onto his camel and, with extreme care so he wouldn't wake her up, pulled her up onto his camel and sat her in front. Halfway through their journey, Hikari was far deep in her sleep and snuggling up close in Jotaro's arms. Yup, it looked liked everything had worked out for them this time and they deserved a goodnight's rest after today.

Somewhere in the vast emptiness in a dark and lonely room, a broken-hearted little girl was clutching onto her beloved teddy bear as she cried in wide, pitch black of space. She cried for what felt like hours...but no one seemed to hear her. No one was around to

acknowledge her tears. No one was around to help find her. She stuck here all alone with no one to turn to. But...she didn't believe she needed to be heard. She didn't believed she deserved to be found. But she had done something unforgivable.

"Mommy... Daddy... I'm sorry! I'm so sorry..! Please, please come back home. I miss you...!" She cried as she hugged her teddy bear close to her, hoping that he would help the nightmares go away.

"Who...are you?" A voice called out.

Chapter 28: Death Thirteen part 1

Kakyoin was just having a great sleep, and he tried to continue with favourable nightly routine, but he found it hard to sleep when the cries of a baby kept on ringing loud in his ear constantly. "That piercing noise..." Kakyoin mumbled in his sleep.

Knowing he wasn't going to get through the rest of the night with that baby crying, Kakyoin awoken from his slumber, sat up and rubbed the sleep from his eyes. And was taken aback by the location of where he woke up. There was, in his light purple striped pyjamas, resting in the top seat of a ferris wheel cart in a deserted amusement park. Okay...what?

"What is this place? An amusement park? I've never been here before." Kakyoin said. He looked down and saw that he was still wearing his pyjamas. "Wha... Why in the world am I riding on the ferris wheel in my pyjamas? How'd I get here?" Kakyoin asked himself as he tried to recollect the last thing he remembered. "The desert. I remembered being in the desert riding through the Saudi Arabia on camel back...but where are the others. Did they abandon me?"

Before Kakyoin could try to rationalise the situation he was in, he suddenly heard a small child's cry and turned around. Sitting across from him, seated the corner, was a little girl who looked no older than twelve. She wore a white sweater with her hood up over her head. The hood had a rather cute bear-like image, bear ears and facial features. She also wore a black knee-length skirt, black knee socks and dark brown boots. She even held a white teddybear and was hugging it for dear life.

"Mommy... Daddy... I'm sorry! I'm so sorry..! Please, please come back home. I miss you...!" She cried as she hugged her teddy bear close to her, hoping that he would help the nightmares go away. Kakyoin felt a surge of sympathy for the girl and kneeled in front of her. "Who...are you? Are you okay?" He asked her gently, not wanting to scare her. The little girl was, understandably surprised at Kakyoin's

sudden appearance and cowered back into the corner of the opposite sight. "P-please... Don't hurt me..." She said in a whimper.

Kakyoin was caught off guard now. This girl...she looked so familiar... She greatly reminded him of someone. Her pale, transparent skin, her big dark-purple eyes and matching dark-purple hair, her bangs her just above her right eye. He thought it was just a coincidence...but the similarities were all too perfect. He then spoke in a soft, gentle voice and held his hands up. "Don't be scared. I promise I'm not here to hurt you. What's the matter, are you lost?"

The little girl sniffed and gave a nod, then a shake...then a nod again. "I...I don't know. I don't know where I am or where my parents are...I'm scared that they must've left me all alone..." She said as she began to tear up again. "Hey now, it's alright. There's no way they would leave you in a place like this, I'm sure they're worried sick and are looking for you right now." Kakyoin tells her. This caused her to look up at him, a small ray of hope in her eyes. "Really?"

"Really. How about once we get down, I'll help you look for them." Kakyoin tells the child. This causes her to fully look up at him and he could practically see sparkles in her eyes. "You're not just saying that? You'll really help me, big brother?" Kakyoin gave a confirm nod. "Yeah, I'll any way I can."

The little girl then gave the brightest smile and then jumped into his arms, giving Kakyoin a big hug. "Thank you big brother!" She said happily as she pulled away. She couldn't believe it. Someone had actually found her and wanted to help. He was so nice and for some reason, she felt like she could trust him. Kakyoin couldn't help but smile back at her. She was so adorable, and he was really started to doubt that any parent to abandon such a sweet little girl!

Kakyoin set the little girl back down to her seat and squished her cheeks together, causing her to laugh. "Right, I didn't catch your name. I'm Noriaki Kakyoin." He introduced himself. The little girl smiled and bowed her head a bit. Then she told him her name, which shocked him to the core.

"My name's Nemuru Fujioka. It's nice to meet you big brother." She said smiling brightly.

Kakyoin stared wide-eyed in shock. Nemuru?! This cute little girl...was Nemuru?! That's...that's insane! How could this be Nemuru?! She wasn't acting like the girl he was familiar with. Could...this be what she looked and acted like when she was little? Was he talking to her child self? The girl, Nemuru, was growing worried for Kakyoin when he suddenly became silent.

"Are you okay big brother? You look sick." She said. Kakyoin tensed up and tried to hide his shock with a rather nervous smile. "Oh...y-yeah, I'm fine. Don't worry about me." He said. As the chibi Nemuru looked out to the giant amusement park, Kakyoin was left speechless at how he was interacting with a younger version of Nemuru. The Nemuru he knew was tough, a bit on the brash side, and had an

attitude that said she will kick your ass at a moment's notice. Not to mention she had an adorable flustered face. This one was more shy, yet very friendly and was a sweetheart. Two very polar opposite personalities.

He was brought out of his thoughts when chibi Nemuru suddenly said, "Aw, a puppy." He blinked and saw her run past him and went to the dog that sitting where Kakyoin was mere moments ago. "How cute! Where'd you come from?" Nemuru asked it and she petted the dog. Kakyoin gave a small smile as he watched the cute scene in front of him. He got up and patted the dog as well. But still...this whole thing was so confusing. "This isn't making any sense. There's not a soul anywhere in the amusement park. So why do I hear the cries of a baby and for that matter, where is it?"

"Look there big brother." Chibi Nemuru said as she pointed to a flurry of balloons that were released into the air. Kakyoin noticed that all of the balloons had cards tied to the end of their string. One green balloon in particular had flown towards them to their cart and Kakyoin took the card and looked at it. It looked like a tarot card. He flipped it over and what he saw made him gasp, scaring chibi Nemuru. "What's wrong?" She asked.

The tarot card he was holding was the one representing Death! "This...this card is...Death Thirteen." Kakyoin said. While chibi Nemuru was jumping up to try and see the card in was holding, Kakyoin saw that green liquid was spilling out from around the card's hand and he quickly realises that the card was alive! The card then gave a wicked smile and launched its arms high out of the card, wielding a great scythe and swung it at its victims. Kakyoin let out a scream as he tosses the card away, but upon seeing the scythe coming towards them, he grabbed chibi Nemuru and ducked out of its way. Unfortunately, the scythe found a target and ended up killing the dog instead.

Seeing such grotesque horror by how brutally the dog was slain, Kakyoin let out a terrified scream. Things were getting much more worse when the cart started to break apart and multiple demonic hands suddenly appeared from the ground, everything around had turned pitch black and the hands began grabbing at chibi Nemuru, nearly ripping her away from Kakyoin. "AAHH!" She screamed.

"Nemuru!" Kakyoin yelled out as he grabbed her hand and tried to pull her free. But more of the demonic hands appeared and grabbed a hold of him too, but they were trying to force him to let go of her.

"Big brother!!" Chibi Nemuru cried out. "It's okay! I got you!!" Kakyoin shouted as he tired to fight against the hands grasp. However, they were much too strong and they found their grip slipping. "Big brother!!" "I'm here! I'm not going to let them take you!!"

"Help me Kakyoin! Please help me!!" Chibi Nemuru cried as with a single tug, they forced Kakyoin to let go and pulled chibi Nemuru back, plunging her into the darkness below. Kakyoin heard her loud and clear crying, pleading for him to save her. All the dark red-haired teen could do was scream out to her. "NEMURU!!! NNOOOO!!!" He screamed.

Suddenly Kakyoin found himself in some kind of hotel room with Polnareff right beside him, who had woken him up from that God awful nightmare. "Hey, take it easy. Stop screaming and shaking the bed like that creepy girl from The Exorcist, you're weirding me out." Polnareff tells Kakyoin with a smile. He disregarded Kakyoin's frozen expression of fear and the cold sweat he broke out. Kakyoin took a deep breath and looked around him. "Where are we?" Kakyoin asked him.

"Don't ask stupid questions." Polnareff said as he clapped his hands and walked over to the window. "Now come on and get up already would ya?" Polnareff pushed opened the small wooden door and allowed the sunshine to enter the room. Cringing at the sudden brightness, Kakyoin shielded his eyes. "After breakfast, we're gonna take to the skies. Looks like another scorcher today." Polnareff said.

Kakyoin let out a sigh and said, "I had a terrible nightmare. It was true horrifying." Kakyoin wiped off the sweat from his forehead as he tried to relax. Polnareff got really interested at what kind of dream Kakyoin had and walked over to get in on the details. "You don't say. Lay on the details, I wanna hear all about it."

"Well the thing is I can't remember. I've forgotten it all." Kakyoin tells him.

"Come again?"

"Regardless, it was petrifying." Kakyoin said as he let out a sigh and held his head. "But when you woke me up, you pulled me out of it." Polnareff then gave a tiny smirk and said, "I'm not sure what kind of dream you had, but I believe it must've been scary if you were dreaming about Nemuru."

Kakyoin shot his head up and looked at him with a shocked expression. "Wait, what?" He asked. "Yeah, you screamed out Nemuru's name twice, I'm willing to bet she must've made your dream life hell." Polnareff mostly said it as a joke but when he looked at Kakyoin's face, the teen was genuinely surprised. "I was...dreaming about her..." He almost didn't believe his own words. Polnareff then a got mischievous, teasing smile on his face and leaned in close to Kakyoin's face. Whom the latter scooted away from. "Wh-what? What's that look for?" Kakyoin asked.

"Kakyoin...~" Polnareff said in a teasing voice. "What?" He asked. "Do you have a crush on Nemuru?! You can tell me!!" He practically shouted. His sudden question startled Kakyoin so much that he literally jumped off the bed. "What?! Why would you ask me that?!" Kakyoin shouted at him, his face was turning red. Polnareff took noticed and smiled wider. "Aw, you're blushing! You do have a crush, don't you?"

Kakyoin quickly stood back on his feet. "Shut up! I-... I don't have a...." His voice trailed off, his face getting redder and Polnareff laughed at him. Oh man, he can not wait to tell the guys about this. Deciding to spare him any further embarrassment for the time being, Polnareff tells him as he grabbed his bag, "Wish we could talk more about it, but we've got to get a move on. Let's go, hurry up and get ready." Polnareff walked out of the room and left Kakyoin alone.

He was still blushing from Polnareff sudden, and stupid, question. "Moron... What the hell was he talking about? I don't have a crush on her." Kakyoin says as he proceeded to change out of his pyjamas, only to stop halfway. "...Do I?" He asked himself. Then Kakyoin noticed something a little detail. He looked down at his hand and saw that it had been freshly cut. "There's a cut on my hand. But how'd it get there?" Kakyoin figured that maybe he had cut it somehow in his

sleep and got dressed quickly to meet up with the others.

He met up with Polnareff waiting for him in the lobby and once the left the hotel, Polnareff explained to him where the rest of the team were. "Jotaro, Mr. Joestar and the girls are already headed to the plane so we'll meet them there. And the way I hear it, we're traveling 500 km today."

"NOO! This can't be happening!!" A little boy cried out. Polnareff and Kakyoin turned and found a young boy, crying over the sudden death of his best friend. "Please, not my poor dog! My dog is dead! Who would do such a thing!?" The boy cried out as he kneeled over the dog that was gruesomely killed. Kakyoin took a glance at the dog and his eyes widen when a hazy memory formed in his mind. "A dog...? I could've sworn that I saw a dead dog not too long ago." The memory was so hazy and blurry, but he could swear that he seen that dog somewhere before....but other than that....nothing.

"Whoever did this is sick, but there's nothing we can do about it. Let's go." Polnareff said as he walked off. Kakyoin took another glanced at the dead animal before reluctantly walking away. When the two catch up with the others, they found Joseph arguing with a man he had planned to rent a plane from, but he has now refused to let to sell it to him. "Hey, hey, hey, hey, hey, hey! Hold on a dang sec there, Mister. What exactly do you mean you can't sell us the plane now? I seem to recall you taking my last night and saying it was a done deal." Joseph argued.

"You'll get a full refund, but first we need to see to a baby with a fever. It's 39 degrees Celsius. There's no doctor in this town, so we have no choice but to take the baby somewhere else to get help." The man gestured to a woman who walked outside holding a sleeping baby in a basket. Hikari's heartstrings were immediately tugged and she walked over to the woman. "Excuse me? Would you mind if I took a look at him, please?" Hikari asked.

The woman seemed a little surprised but nodded her head. Hikari looked down at the ill-stricken baby. He was a dark-complected baby. He has large ears, sharp canines, and wears a headscarf. Hikari felt the baby's forehead and he was indeed running a fever, she felt the baby shift and lean closer to her hand. While Hikari was examining

the baby, Joseph was in the background still arguing with the man as Kakyoin and Polnareff showed up.

"What's up? Some kind of argument?" Polnareff asked, pointing to the on-going argument. "Yeah." Jotaro answered. Kakyoin glanced over at Hikari and quickly noticed the baby in the basket. "A baby?" He suddenly recalled hearing a baby's cry is his dreams, but he had no idea where. He stared hard at the baby, trying to remember his dreams...but nothing came up. He can't remember anything from it.

Then it happened. He did remember one thing.

"Hahaha. That's Hikari for you, always wanting to help someone out." Nemuru said as she gave a small laugh. Kakyoin quickly shifted his head towards the dark-purple haired girl. His eyes widen and his heart was racing as he stared at Nemuru. Her laugh. Her smile. ....that little girl he met in his dreams... *"Kakyoin help me!"* Nemuru was still smiling at Hikari when suddenly Kakyoin grabbed her hand and pulled her close to him. He did this so suddenly, everyone was rather caught by surprise by his action, even to Kakyoin himself when he quickly realised what he did. Nemuru gave him a weird stare and blushed a faint red. "Wh..what are you doing?"

Kakyoin blushed red and quickly let go of her, taking a step back. "Oh man, I'm s-sorry about that. I don't know why I did that?" Kakyoin said as he brought his hands up in a defensive manner. He took a glance behind her and his blush deepened when he saw Polnareff whispering something to Jotaro. Ah hell...! Nemuru raised an eyebrow and took a step back as well. "You...feeling okay?" She asked. "Uh...y-yeah." Kakyoin said. He remembered that image so vividly in his mind. The little girl calling for help as she was drowning in darkness.

"That's right, hold on, I think I might have something in my bag that can help him." Hikari said as she looked through her satchel. She pulled out a small vial that had a purple liquid in it. "This is an organic medicine. It'll help reduce his fever and it contains plenty of vitamins." Hikari said as she smiled at the woman. The woman looked at Hikari and then back at the arguing men.

She then said, "Excuse me? I have a suggestion. We can kill two birds

with one stone by having these gentleman and young women take him to the doctor on their way. This young lady is already helping to reduce his fever, so I think he'd be in good hands with her."

"Nice idea, but-." Joseph began to say before the woman continued on. "The Cessna is build to carry six, but with those two young ladies being small and plus a baby, surly there's enough." The baby in the basket then gave a rather wicked smile, revealing two small, but sharp, fangs. Kakyoin let out a gasp when he saw this, but the baby's expression quickly changed back to normal before anyone else saw it. Nemuru's eye twitched. "Was that supposed to be a compliment or an insult?" Referring to the woman's "small" comment.

"You sure about this lady?" The pilot asked her. "Do you really want to leave your baby with these guys?" He asked, pointing to Joseph and the others. The pilot wasn't too sure about leaving a baby with such...questionable people. "Just a minute. We can't do that either! It's too dangerous for the baby to come with us." Joseph said.

Nemuru let out a small 'tch' before telling the elder man, "Mr. Joestar this is the only way we're getting the plane and leaving this place any sooner." She then turned to the golden-haired girl, saying, "Hikari, just take the baby and let's get on." Then Nemuru turned and began walking towards the Cessna. She hated annoying, pointless arguments. "Huh? Oh, o-okay." Hikari carefully took the baby's basket and kindly tells the woman, "Don't worry about a thing. I promise to take good care of him."

Hikari then walked over to the plane, carrying the baby and bowing a quick sincere apology to a gaping Joseph before getting settled. After everyone was seated in the plane, the group takes off. Nemuru let out a sigh. Once again, she and Hikari were sandwiched between two men. But this time, it felt a little awkward since she and Kakyoin were sitting so close to each and both were trying very hard not to look at each other, while Hikari seated in between Polnareff and Kakyoin, with the baby basket resting on her lap.

"I told them this would be dangerous." Joseph grumbled out as he started the plane. "Hey, just try and take it easy, Mr. Joestar. There's no way a Stand could catch a plane flying a hundreds of kilometres an hour. I mean, we even made sure the plane itself wasn't a Stand.

I'd say we're good to go." Polnareff said.

"I'm far more worried about the Old Man's flying than I am an attack from enemy Stands." Jotaro said. "JoJo, dear be nice." Hikari said. "I'm sure things will be okay." The plane sped down the runway and it lifted off into the air. Everyone watched the plane flew off and were somewhat relieved that the baby was getting some help. The woman sighs in relief. "Oh, thank goodness, what a relief. By the way, I wonder who that baby belong to."

"Huh?! Are you saying you're not the mother of that child, Miss." The pilot asked her in shock. "Oh no, I found it by the well with this morning. Though from the moment I heard the baby's crying, I wasn't able to help myself. I felt that I had to put him on that plane." The woman told him.

While in flight, both Kakyoin and Polnareff were beginning to get awfully sleepy. Polnareff let out a yawn and said, "Maybe it's just me but I always get so tired when I get on a plane. If it's alright with you Mr. Joestar, I'm gonna take a thirty minute catnap."

"Sure." Joseph said.

Pretty soon, Kakyoin and Polnareff had already fallen asleep and it seemed like Nemuru was next to go. She slowly closed her eyes, unknowingly rested her head on Kakyoin's shoulder and let the world of dreams claim her. Nemuru opened her eyes and saw a green sky. *"What the...?"* Nemuru questioned.

She turned her head and her eyes widened when she saw a dead dog next to her. She let out a scream and jumped bumping into something. She glanced up to see she had bumped into Kakyoin and Polnareff. She looked around to see the three of them were in an amusement park. Right now their location in the large park was a Ferris Wheel. "Polnareff? Kakyoin? Where the hell are we?" Nemuru asked.

"You tell me! Where'd Mr. Joestar go?" Polnareff asked. His eyes shifted to the dead dog and let out a horrified scream. "This is the same dream I had this morning. But now it seems we're all inside the dream!" Kakyoin exclaimed. He then looked with worry eyes at

Nemuru, now fully believing that the child and her are one in the same. "What? A dream?" Polnareff questioned.

"Yes." Kakyoin replied. Polnareff then walked over to the dead dog and took a seat next to it. "Oh! That's a relief, it's just a stupid dream. I was worried for a second, but if it's only a dream, who cares if the dog is dead?" Polnareff said. Nemuru shot daggers at him and hissed out. "You're dead to me, Polnareff."

"Polnareff, you can't be serious." Kakyoin asked. Nemuru cringed when Polnareff grabbed the dead dog's ear and lifted it up. "Dreams are only as scary as you make them, that's kind of the way it goes. Just try and relax." Polnareff said. "Are you that big of a dumbass that you don't know what's going on here?! How could all three of us be having the same dream at the same time, huh?!" Nemuru shouted.

"I supposed you have a point there. This is kinda weird, but in a dream, isn't anything possible?" Polnareff asked. "Last I check, you are NEVER in my dreams." Nemuru grumbled at the Frenchman. Suddenly popcorn and ice cream appeared in Polnareff's hands. "Oh, boy would you look at that! This dreaming thing is great! So good! See, all you have to do to make your dreams fun is think they're fun." Polnareff said as he offered the popcorn to the teens.

Kakyoin smacked the popcorn out of Polnareff's hand. "Listen! Do you remember seeing this dog's carcass this morning? Obviously the dog and I had the same dream and in that dream, that dog was unmistakably slaughtered! Once I was awake, I found this cut in my hand." Kakyoin said. He then turned to Nemuru and gripped her shoulders. "Nemuru, back me up. You must've had the same dream too didn't you?"

Nemuru's dark purple eyes slowly widen as her memories began flooding back. She thought it was just a stupid dream...but seeing this place. That dog. Nemuru let out a gasp. "Wait...no way! That was you with me?" Nemuru asked out of shock. "That was you who I was with in my dream. We were both attacked by that thing!"

"By who?" Polnareff asked them. "From the enemy's Stand, Death Thirteen!" Kakyoin yelled. "The enemy Stand?" Polnareff asked and Kakyoin nodded his head. "Yeah...I remember that freak-show...aw

man, this is bad. We have to find a way out of here!" Nemuru said. Then from the corner of her eye, she saw a familiar, cute face. What... Hovering near the edge of the cart was a white teddybear. Nemuru's eyes widen and walked towards the bear and took it into her hands. "Shiro...? Why are you here?"

"Oh, I get it now! You guys are paranoid because you had a dream about Stands? Ha, man you have got to take it easy." Polnareff leaned back eating his ice cream. "You're wrong! It wasn't a dream about Stands! A Stand was in my dreams!" Kakyoin said, trying to explain things. "That's what I said, you were having a dream about Stands." Polnareff said. Kakyoin slammed his fist on the metal frame of the Ferris Wheel in frustration. "AURGH! You still don't get it, do you!?"

"Lali-ho! Tell me, does it hurt being that stupid?!" A new voice shouted. Polnareff, Kakyoin, and Nemuru jumped searching around for the source of the new voice and their eyes landed on the dog's corpse. The corpse started to shake making Polnareff yelp and jump up as a microphone came out of the dogs head. "Oh for the love of.... Let me spell it out for you, I'm saying that you're slow on the uptake, Polnareff!" The voice said.

"It's...it's coming from the dog's wound." Polnareff said. Then a megaphone had ripped out of the dog's head, spraying blood all over the seat. Nemuru gasped, throwing a hand over her mouth. "Lali-ho! Allow me to welcome you to my humble abode. This is a dream and I'm the Grim Reaper!" The disembodied voice shouted out as the megaphone fell off of the dog's body. But it didn't stop there, the dog's body shook some more as an eyeball appeared out of the dog's wound.

"What the...!? What is that thing?" Polnareff shouted. "Polnareff, Nemuru, stay on guard and watch closely! That fiend is Death Thirteen!" Kakyoin said as he gripped Nemuru's hand, recalling the last image he saw before he woke up. He had no idea what that sequence meant. But he won't allow it to take Nemuru again. The latter stared back at Kakyoin with eyes filled with confusion and questioned why he felt the need to protect her all of a sudden.

The eye shot out of the corpse and connected to it was none other than Death Thirteen itself. Death Thirteen appears as a humanoid

cloaked in a dark purple robe. It wears a smiling white jester mask with downwards curved eyes and an eerie smile, as well as metallic gauntlets, shoulder pads, a collar, and a high hat, and is armed with a great black scythe.

"Come forth, Hierophant Green!" Kakyoin shouted. Nothing happened and Death Thirteen grabbed Polnareff by the neck. "Hierophant, attack!" Kakyoin shouted again, but nothing came. "Shadow Mist!" Nemuru shouted. But once again nothing happened. Death Thirteen raised its scythe at Polnareff aiming for his head. "Chariot!" Polnareff shouted, but he was quickly silence when Death Thirteen placed the tip of its scythe near the edge of Polnareff's mouth.

"Why can't I summon Hierophant!? What is this?!" Kakyoin shouted. "I can't get Shadow Mist to appear!" Nemuru said, slowly to beginning to lose it. *'I can't get my Stand to appear either!'* Polnareff yelled in thought. "Is it because we're in some kind of twisted dream?!"

"Lali-ho! It's romantic, wouldn't you agree? Being able to die in a dream? Lali-ho!" Death Thirteen said with a slight giggle in its voice.

Chapter 29: Death Thirteen part 2

As they were flying through the air, Joseph, Jotaro and Hikari suddenly felt a huge disturbance in the atmosphere. They didn't this would happened upon flight. But in hindsight, they should've. Joseph turned to his grandson and asked, "Jotaro, do you sense that?"

"Yeah. Clear as day." Jotaro said. "I do too...Oh no." Hikari turned to Polnareff and began to shake him. "Mr. Polnareff, wake up." She said as she tried to wake him. Meanwhile, back in Nightmare Land, was Polnareff struggling against Death Thirteen's grip. He tried to punch and kick, but no matter what did, Polnareff just fazed right through the Stand. "Are you stupid? Surly you know by now that only a Stand can defeat a Stand. It's time for you to enter your eternal sleep, Polnareff. Lali-ho!"

"Polnareff!!" "Let him go!!"

"Die!" Death Thirteen swung his scythe to cut off Polnareff's head right off. However, the curved blade went right through him and Polnareff faded from existence.

"Polnareff." Joseph said as he tossed a paper ball at the man as he rubbed his eyes. "Hey Polnareff, wake up. It would appear our little traveler has wet himself. Do us all a favour and help Chiara out with changing his diaper." Polnareff was now awake, he had no idea how lucky he had just been a mere moments ago. "Tch." Jotaro glanced back at the baby. Hmm, that's odd. He could've sworn he heard something. Hikari carefully picked the baby up and handed him to Polnareff. "Just hold him while I prepare him a fresh, okay?" Hikari asked him. "Huh...? Oh sure."

Death Thirteen slammed the bottom of its scythe on the cart as it sighed in frustration. "Curses. Someone must've woken the fool from his slumber, he's quite lucky." It said as it clenched his fist. Damn...he really wanted to gut him like a pig, but there's no helping it. "Lali-ho, I suppose it's no matter. Even if he wakes up, he won't remember a single thing. I'll just have to finish him the next time he falls asleep."

Death Thirteen then slowly turns the remaining dreamers and raised its scythe.

Kakyoin quickly moved himself in front of Nemuru to shield her from the Stand. The two students were getting scared by the whole situation. They summon their Stands, they can't fight this thing! How are they going to survive against it? "Which means your deaths have been moved up. Lali-ho!"

"Wha...aurrgh!! Hold on a second guys! What the hell is this!?!" Polnareff shouted at he undid the baby's diaper. Instead of wetting himself, the baby actually went no.2 in his diaper, much to Polnareff's disgust. "The kid took a dump in his diaper! Just look at the size of it!" Polnareff complained/whined. "Well he is just a small baby, that's why he has to wear diapers, Mr. Polnareff." Hikari said as cut out the fabric that was in the baby's basket and made a fresh one for him. "You're kidding me! That's why?!" Polnareff shouted. "What a vile, disgusting creature. And he's got it all over the place!!"

"Would you stop yapping and hand the baby back so Chiara change the damn diaper already? It stinks!" Joseph says to the whining Polnareff. He let out a groan as he hands back the baby to Hikari. "There now, it's okay." Hikari wrapped the cloth around the baby's lower half and made a great makeshift diaper. She was just about to pin when she dropped it to the floor. "Oops. Oh no, I dropped it. Mr. Polnareff, would you please?" Hikari passed the baby back to Polnareff while she bent down to pick it up.

"There we go-AHH!" Hikari had picked up pin and looked up only to see Polnareff holding the baby upside down, the cloth she had folded so neatly was already a scrambled mess. "M-Mr. Polnareff, please be more care. If you hold him that way, you'll hurt him!" Hikari cried out, taking the baby in her hands. "I'm so sorry Hikari. I had no idea how that happened." Polnareff said with a sincere apology.

Hikari had easily forgiven him and finished the work. They thought that things were finally settling down, but they head Kakyoin whimpering in his sleep.

Kakyoin and Nemuru backed up into a corner as Death Thirteen kept advancing towards them. Suddenly, the same demonic hands appear

from out of nowhere and grabbed at Nemuru. Slamming her against the cart's ceiling and dropping Shiro in the process. The hands wrapped their arms around Nemuru's body so tightly that it looked ready to snap her bones at any given moment. Kakyoin tried to save her but the hands had already grabbed hold of his arms and legs, preventing him from moving.

Jotaro, Polnareff, and Hikari all looked at the trembling redhead, wondering if he was okay.

Nemuru tried to fight her way out of it, but they were far too strong and covered her mouth. Death Thirteen raised its scythe and swung it at the dark-purple haired girl. "Lali-ho!!" Kakyoin suddenly let out a yell and began punching forward, lashing out. Hikari yelped and ducked down trying to avoid the flying fists and kicks.

"AHHHHHHHHH! Stop! Stop it! Stop it, leave her alone!!" Kakyoin yelled. still deep in his sleep. Hikari cradled the baby close to her to try and protect him, while Kakyoin continued to kick and flail frantically as Jotaro and Polnareff tried to subdue him. "Kakyoin, what's wrong?!" "Hey!"

"What's going on?!" Joseph called out. "Leave her alone, damn it! Stop it, stop it, stop it! STOP!!" Kakyoin screamed as he gave powerful a kick and his foot connected right with Joseph's face, making the man let go of the plane's controls. "Damn it!" Joseph cursed loudly.

The plane took a sharp nosedive and Hikari screamed. The baby, unbeknownst, to anyone else had a freaked out look as he clung to the front of Hikari's shirt. "I've lost control!" Joseph shouted. "Wait, are you saying that we're gonna crash!?" Jotaro shouted at him. "Stop!" Kakyoin yelled, continuing to scream and thrash around. "Kakyoin, what's the matter with you?!" Polnareff shouted. "He's been this way since he woke up!"

"I don't care just calm him down!!" Joseph shouted back. "Chiara, put a field around the plane!!"

"But I don't know if I can make one that big!" Hikari tells him. "Old Man, if you don't regain control of this thing, we're all done for!!"

Jotaro shouted at him, not liking the fact that he was putting so much pressure on Hikari right now.

Death Thirteen grabbed Kakyoin's head and slammed him against the metal pole, shutting up his screams and halting his failing. "Kakyoin!! You need to pull yourself together pronto. We're about to crash because of you! Lali-ho!" Death Thirteen slammed Kakyoin's head against the pole, but it moulded out of shape and Kakyoin found half of his body fixed to the pole. "Talk about a restless sleeper, at this rate you'll kill all three of us! You, your stupid girlfriend, and my user, that is." Death Thirteen said.

"HM?" Nemuru muffled out. This caught Kakyoin by surprise. Never minding it called Nemuru his girlfriend, he'll deal with that later, but what he said about his user. It didn't make sense, it's user has never appeared before them yet! The only person that could possibly attack them now would be-. ....No... No, it can't be...! "Y-you're user is that baby?! How in the work is that possible?!" Kakyoin asked as he was tied up even further when dark-red metal ropes came in and wrapped around him. "No way... He's only about six months old."

"Wrong! I'm eleven months, almost a year old!" Death Thirteen/the baby yelled. "It might also interest you to know that I'm a genius! I may poop in my diapers, but I know a hell of a lot more than you fools! Lali-ho....!" Death Thirteen says as he began crying **eyeballs**, terrifying Kakyoin and gripping his mouth to forced it open as the eyeballs fell into his mouth so that he can no longer scream. Kakyoin felt so sick, feeling his skin crawling and believed he was gonna throw up.

"And with that, you've lost your ability to scream. Hahahaha!!" Death Thirteen laughed. Kakyoin glanced up at Nemuru and desperately tried to think of a way to get themselves out of this or at the very least try to get the others attention and warn them about the true nature of that baby. *'A Stand within a dream... I have to find a way to let Mr. Joestar and Jotaro know.'* Kakyoin thought. *'Don't worry Nemuru...I'm gonna protect you.'* Kakyoin then pulled out his switchblade and began to cut at his own arm.

"What are you doing, Mr. Joestar?" Polnareff yelled at Joseph as he tried to regain control over the plan. Soundless Voice had been trying

multiple times to form a shield around the plane, but every time she tried the barrier would only go so far was to reach the seven of them. Hikari tried to do it again but Joseph's sudden yelling made her so scared that she popped it. "Put a shield around us now!!" "Damn it, level us out!" Jotaro shouted at his grandfather.

"Just calm! Can't you see I'm working on that while trying to stay cool and collected!?" Joseph yelled.

"I'm not waking up!" Kakyoin shouted as he put more force into the blade! How the hell wasn't he waking up?! His arm was already bleeding heavily, so why?! "Lali-ho. Looks to me like no one's going to noticed if your cutting arm with a knife that's smaller than my wee-wee. Besides, you can hurt yourself all you want in this dream but it won't wake you up." Death Thirteen/the baby said. "As long as you're asleep, I completely control every iota of your precious mind. My Stand, Death Thirteen, infiltrate the minds of its slumbering victims when they are at their most vulnerable.

Nemuru actually bit one of the hands that was holding her and shouted, "I swear to God, once we figure out the truth, you are so dead!!" The demonic hands grew in size and squeezed tightly around her body. "AHH!" Nemuru screamed. "Nemuru! Damn it, stop!!" Kakyoin shouted at him as the eyeballs sprouted legs and climb to enter Kakyoin's mouth more easily.

"AAHHH!!" Joseph screamed. "What's wrong old man?! "We're crashing!" Jotaro shouted. Soundless Voice tried once again to form a shield and she was getting close for it to surround the plane, but it still wasn't enough. "I'll control it with Hermit Purple!" Joseph said. Joseph summoned his Stand, sending Hermit Purple into the planes controls.

When it seemed like the plane was gonna crash Joseph managed to pull it out of the nosedive. "I did it! I lifted the plane just in the nick of time!" Joseph cheered. "Woo-hoo!! Yes, yes! What a close one!" Polnareff said. Hikari let out a sigh of relief as the plane started to straighten out. "Oh thank goodness." The baby in her arms also let out a breath, very silently so the others won't hear him.

"It would seem we managed to avoid crashing. That was too close for

comfort. Now then, what do you say to me killing you by crushing that heart of yours? That way, Joestar and the others will think you had a heart attack and died of natural causes." Death Thirteen said as he stretched out his hand to enter in Kakyoin's chest, nearing his heart. "Die, Kakyoin."

"Kakyoin, no!"

"Did you guys see that?! How do you guys like them apples?! My flying skills aren't too shabby." Joseph said. "Nicely done." Polnareff said to him. However, Joseph's little victory didn't last very long as Jotaro looked forward and yelled out, "Hey!" The others all looked out front and the plane crashed right into a grouping of palm trees. "What?! Why the hell is there a palm tree all the way out here?!" Joseph yelled.

"Good grief...Damn. I knew you'd do this." Jotaro said. "AAAHHH!" Hikari screamed just as Kakyoin and Nemuru let out a gasp as they both woke up.

CRASH

The plane crashed through the palm trees and skidded down the stop with everyone holding on for dear life. Once they finally stopped, they all found out that Hikari had actually put up a shield around the Cessna...well...minus the wings...but who cares?! She had done it. "Chiara! My God, you actually made it! Great work!" Joseph congratulated. Hikari, out of shock, took several, fast, deep breaths and tried to calm herself down. That was way too scary!

She looked at the baby in her arms and let out a sigh of relief to see that he was uninjured. "Oh thank goodness, you're not hurt. I'm so sorry, that must have been scary for you. You're such a brave little soldier for not crying." Hikari said as she hugged the baby. As she looked around the plane, she failed to notice the smirk on the baby's face.

Night quickly came and since their plane was more or less wrecked, the group decided to set up camp. Joseph set up a fire, Polnareff went to gather wood, while Hikari and Jotaro removed their sleeping gear from the wrecked plane. Jotaro removed two sleeping bags while

Hikari reached further into the plane to get out the water jugs. As she reached over the back seats to grab them she noticed something brown under the seat. She picked it up to discover it was a black wallet, with a violet lotus in the corner, and the initials NF on it.

'Oh, this must be Nemuru's. I should give this back to her.' Hikari thought as she hopped down from the plane. Hikari found Nemuru sitting on a rock, looking very exhausted, and walked over to her. Hikari, timidly, reached and tapped her shoulders. "Nemuru..?" She asked. The dark-purpled eyed girl looked up at Hikari and she handed the wallet. "Here. I found this in the plane and I think it's yours."

Nemuru took a quick glance at the wallet in Hikari's hands and once realising that it was hers, she let out a gasp. "Oh God, thank you Hikari." She said as she immediately checked inside. Seeing the family picture still inside, Nemuru let out a sigh and smiled in relief. Hikari glanced inside and smiled too. "Aw. Are those your parents?" Hikari asked. Nemuru's smile wavered a bit. "Yeah." She said as she placed the wallet back in her pocket. "Thank you so much Hikari, I honestly don't care if my money gets stolen, that picture means the world to me."

Hikari nodded. "I understand. Are you feeling okay? You look a little pale." Hikari asked, worriedly. Nemuru nodded. "Yeah, don't worry about it, I'm fine." Her smile seemed genuine, but Hikari was still worried about her and Kakyoin. Along with the fact that Nemuru had said that she was on this journey to save her mother. She was scared that they were losing it because of the stress this trip has been causing. Hikari gave a small smile and said, "Okay. But...i-if you ever want to talk, I'm here." Nemuru nodded.

"We survived, but..." Polnareff began as he and Joseph looked over at Kakyoin, who sitting near by holding his head. "Kakyoin, what's going on man? This is all your fault, you know." Polnareff said. Suddenly, Nemuru became really defensive and stood up, shouting at Polnareff, "Why don't you shut up and back the hell off? How could you blame this all on him?!"

"Say what?!" Polnareff shouted back. Hikari got in between them and begged, "Please you two, stop it. There's no need to fight or blame anyone. We're all okay and that's what matters." Hikari then turned

to Kakyoin and kneeled down so she could see his face. With a kind tone, Hikari asked, "Kakyoin. Is everything okay, sweetie?"

"I'm not sure... I feel like I just endured a horrible dream. And when I awoke, I was utterly exhausted." Kakyoin said. Nemuru gazed sadly at the dark-red haired teen. She could definitely share that feeling. She felt it too when she had woken up. "I think...there's something wrong with me..." Hikari let out a shocking gasp. Though she was hesitant, she powered through and gave Kakyoin a hug. "Don't say that...! Please. There's nothing wrong with you, whatever's wrong with you, we'll help you." Hikari said.

"Hikari...." Kakyoin said.

"I agree with Chiara. Try and cheer up. It's probably a case of fatigue. It's been about a month now since we left Japan. And the enemies has been attacking us not stop ever since that day." Joseph said as Hikari pulled away. She gave Kakyoin a gentle pat on the cheek before walking away to check on the baby. But she was still worried about Kakyoin and Nemuru. They both looked so tired and stressed out, she briefly wondered if there was anything she could do to cheer them up.

'I hope they'll get better after tonight. I can't stand to see them this way...but what should I do to help them?' Hikari thought. Her thoughts were interrupted by a happy giggle. She looked down and saw the baby smiling and waving his hands, trying to get her attention. "Aww! Look at that happy face." Hikari checked the baby's forehead and a bright smile formed on her face. "The baby's fever gone down everyone!" Hikari announced, happily.

"Thank goodness, he's safe and sound." Joseph said, walking over to Hikari as she lifted the baby into her arms. "If anything were to happen to this little guy, I'd never forgive myself." Joseph bent down to be at level with the baby. Joseph started playing peekaboo with the baby while making funny faces, making him laugh. Hikari smiled thinking it was cute.

"He has such an adorable smile! Don't cha think?" Joseph asked. Hikari nodded her head agreement. "I really don't get what's so funny. You're not even making any jokes, just faces. What an idiot."

Polnareff said as he walked away. "Wow, and here I thought the two of you would get along great in terms of 'idiocy', Polnareff." Nemuru retorted as she took a drink of her flask. "Oh shut it!"

'Heh! Oh put a sock in it! This isn't my idea of a perfect night either.' The baby thought bitterly. Hikari then tickled his stomach which caused him to laugh again and made an attempt to hug her. "You're really good with him Hikari." Joseph said. "You really think so? Thank you." Hikari said with a smile. Joseph smiled back and nodded his head. "You're gonna make a great mother one day." Hikari blushed bright red, while Nemuru spat out her water, at that compliment. "O-o-oh. Th-thank you..." Hikari said, deeply embarrassed.

"Hey, Old Man. The radio survived. What should we do? Should we send out an SOS? That'll mean Dio could find us, but..." Jotaro asked. "We have to. Let's call for rescue, for the baby's sake." Joseph said as he walked to his grandson. As Joseph and Jotaro went to radio for help Hikari started to play with the baby more. She lifted him up in the air, making him laugh. She then started tickling his stomach, earning even more giggles from the baby. While Hikari was playing around with the baby, Nemuru walked over to Kakyoin and sat down next to him. "How are you holding up?" She asked.

"I'm fine, I guess. Thanks...for...uh, defending me." Kakyoin said, a slight blush forming on his cheeks. Nemuru blushes as well and looked away. "Mm, y-you're welcome. I mean...I only said it because Polnareff pissed me off...it's not a big deal." She said, feeling a little embarrassment. She honestly didn't know why she got so worked up over that. Yeah, she got pissed...but this felt different. Kakyoin smiled at the girl next to him and he suddenly remembered what Polnareff asked earlier this morning.

"Do you have a crush on Nemuru?! You can tell me!!" Kakyoin had denied it at first...but now that he thought about it. Maybe he does. He did feel rather drawn to Nemuru. Yeah, she was tough as nails and as sharp as a snake, but there was something about her that made him feel so at ease. She definitely had a sweet, caring, and vulnerable side that she's obviously not that used to showing. There's also this layer of mystery about her that he's intrigued to uncover...and that made her even more charming. Which is probably why he went out of his way to help her that day.

Kakyoin opened his mouth to say something but he grit his teeth in pain as he held his arm. Nemuru noticed and quickly became concern. "Kakyoin, your arm is bleeding." She said. "Huh..? I thought I was feeling twinges of pain. Did I cut it when we crashed?" Kakyoin asked as he took out his handkerchief. Nemuru took it from his hands and held his arm. "Probably. Let me clean it and let Hikari know so she can heal it." She said. Kakyoin nodded and allowed her to clean off the blood. When she asked him to roll up his sleeve, they both quickly find the source of his injury.

There were slash marks on his arms and they form an eerie message. "Baby Stand". Seeing this left the two teens in utter confusion. "What's this? The cuts form letters. Baby...Stand? But how did they..?" Kakyoin said. "I don't know what it means, even though it's my handwriting."

"How did this even happened to you? You couldn't have possibly done this to yourself could you?" Nemuru asked in disbelief. Suddenly the both felt a sharp pain coursing though their brains and they gripped their heads. They got this tiny alarm blaring in their ears as if it was trying to force them to remember something of greater importance. "I can't remember anything!" Nemuru shouted. "Did I do this to myself..?" Kakyoin reached into his pocket and took out his switchblade and inspected it. "There isn't any blood on my knife, but it seems the cuts were made with this blade." Kakyoin said.

"But that doesn't make any sense, how could you have forgotten violently cutting your own arm!?" Nemuru asked him. As they were trying to sort their memories and understand how Kakyoin even got those wounds, the baby was staring at them with a nervous look whilst Hikari was giving him a hug. *'Damn it! I was told these he was clever. But I never thought he actually carved letters into his arm while trying to wake himself up. Aurgh!'* The baby thought to himself as he glared at the two. Feeling eyes on them, Kakyoin and Nemuru veered around and caught the baby staring at them. He flinched and looked away. However, this only added further suspicion.

"The hell..? What was that look on the kid's face just now..?" Nemuru asked. "It's as if he deliberately looked away the moment we met his gaze." Then it suddenly clicked. Baby... Stand... It was all happening so fast.... Hikari was too busy playing with the baby that she failed to

notice the strange look Kakyoin and Nemuru was giving her, or more specifically, the baby in her arms. The baby abruptly stopped laughing his expression going from happy to shaky and irritable. "Hmm? Something wrong?" Hikari questioned. She checked his diaper and he was dry. Then a thought occurred, she hadn't given the baby anything to eat or drink all day.

"You poor thing, you must be thirsty. I'll get you some water right now." Hikari said as she set the baby down in his basket. While he was alone, Kakyoin and Nemuru got up and began advancing towards the baby. It was hard to believe... It was hard to even say it out loud...it was crazy! But...Kakyoin and Nemuru were both sure for a fact that one who's been attacking all this time and nearly got them all killed, was this kid!! Kakyoin grabbed him and held the baby up by his bib. Nemuru glared daggers at the kid and, out of survival/ fighting instincts, her shadow moved on its own accord and shifted into a giant snake and was positioned over their heads, baring its fangs, ready to attack.

"WAAAAAAH!" The baby cried out, loud enough for the others to hear him and see what they were doing to him. "Kakyoin! Nemuru! Stop it!" Hikari yelled, running over to them. She took the crying baby out of Kakyoin's hands and held him close to her chest. "Shh, shh. It's okay, sweetie. You're okay." She said in a soothing voice to the baby. "Come on now! That is way too rough. You could strangle the boy, what's wrong with you?" Joseph said as he went to Hikari's side to check on the baby. "And you, Nemuru, what the hell were you thinking showing that giant vicious snake to a baby huh?"

"My apologies..." Kakyoin said. "S-sorry about that." Nemuru said as she quickly pulled down Kakyoin's sleeve to hide the message in his arm. "There, there. It's okay, don't cry." Hikari said. She gingerly bounced the baby up and down trying to calm him down. "Let's have something to eat, shall we? He should calm down once he had some food in him." Joseph said. Hikari nodded her head in agreement as they went to the packs near the fire to get some supplies.

"Hey, Jotaro. It looks like poor Kakyoin and Nemuru are really starting to lose it out here." Polnareff says to the tall delinquent. Jotaro nodded in agreement. "I wonder if either of them will make it through the rest of this trip." Polnareff said.

Kakyoin lifted up his sleeve and looked at the bloodied message staring right back at him. He knew! He and Nemuru both knew something is wrong! But...what if *they* were wrong? What if they were slowly going insane? Nemuru looked at the serious, yet frightful, expression on Kakyoin's face and she reached up to cupped his cheek. "Hey, look at me. I don't know what's going on here," Nemuru then wrapped her arms around his waist and held him. "But we'll get through this." Kakyoin let go of a shaky breath and hugged her back.

Watching them from the safety of Hikari's arm, the baby let out a sadistic laugh and smirked at the crumbling sanity of the teens, he was so pleased that his plans to kill our heroes were succeeding.

Chapter 30: Death Thirteen part 3

Eventually, Hikari had taken the liberty in making dinner for everyone. Joseph and Polnareff were greatly enjoying Hikari's cooking and while she and Jotaro had already eaten their fill, the sapphire-eyed girl glances worriedly at the other two, they hadn't even touched their food. She was beginning to worry about their health. Hikari was in the process of making food for the baby when she spotted Jotaro off to the side, staring off at the distance.

Now feeling worried for him, Hikari asked Joseph if he could handle the rest while she checks on Jotaro. Joseph nodded and took the mini pot and wooden spoon from her hands, and she walked over to Jotaro, who was lost in thought. *'So this is Saudi Arabia. About 8800 kilometres from Japan.'* Jotaro thought to himself. He then looked up to the scatters of stardust in the night sky. *'And it's been around four weeks since we began our journey. If we don't hurry, we'll be in serious trouble.'* Jotaro turned around and saw Hikari jumping away in surprise.

"Oh JoJo..." Hikari said. Jotaro's eyes soften on her and walked towards her. "Are you alright?" They asked in unison. They blinked in mild surprise. "Sorry, you can go first." They said in unison again. "Okay, now you can go." And again. "Stop it!" And again. They looked at each other for a moment before laughing. Ooh, they hadn't done that in years. "Alright, fine. Are you alright?" Jotaro asked her. "Hm? Yeah, I'm fine. Why do you ask honey?" Hikari said.

"I'm worried that the Old Man might've put out too much pressure on you to make that shield on the plane earlier." Jotaro said, still feeling a little pissed at his grandfather for that. Hikari shook her head and said, "Oh no, don't worry about that, I'm okay. Mr. Joestar meant no harm in that, it was already a stressful moment to begin with. And besides, he had already apologised for that and I had forgiven him." She walked over and held his hand. "So there's no problem." Hikari said, smiling.

Jotaro looked and her before letting out a small chuckle. "You're such

a little angel." He said under his breath with a smile. "Huh?" Hikari went. She didn't quite catch that. Jotaro shook his head. "It's nothing, come on." He said as he took hold of her hand and began walking back to the campsite. Hikari gave Jotaro a smile and a gentle squeeze before going back to the baby's food. Looks like Jotaro was feeling just fine.

When the tall delinquent sat down, he glanced over at his fellow schoolmates. They looked like hell. *'Kakyoin... Nemuru...'* There was definitely going on with them. But what? "Hey Jotaro. What do you think is up with those two?" Polnareff asked. "First Kakyoin nearly kills us in his sleep, now they're both look like they're coming apart at the seams. They even went after the baby. Something's just not right. If you ask me, they're at their wits-end. I hate to say it, I really do, but we may have to send them packing."

The baby peeked out from his basket as he stares in glee over Kakyoin's and Nemuru's predicament. He was greatly enjoying watching them slip into insanity. He chuckled in his thoughts as he smiled. *'For a second there, I thought they had actually figured me out. But now the poor louse and the queen bitch are half-doubting themselves. To top things off, we're in the middle of the desert. All I have to do is wait until they fall asleep. If there's no one to wake them up.....hahahaha..'*

"Something smells good. What kind of food is that?" Polnareff asked, interested by what Hikari was cooking this time. "This is baby food, a tiny recipe from my grandmother on my father's side. It's a tasty combination of milk, egg yolks, bananas, and bread all stewed together." Hikari said as she picked up a small portion and lifted the spoon to Polnareff. "Would you like to try some?" She asked. Polnareff took a bite and swallowed. He then got a big smile as shouted in glee, "Wow!! This is flat out amazing! Give me more!"

Polnareff took the pot and spoon away from Hikari and shovelling the food down his throat. He got about three spoonfuls before the spoon was snatched out of his hands. Hikari let out a laugh as she said, "Mr. Polnareff, stop it. this isn't for you, hahaha!"

"If you eat it all there won't be any left for the baby. Besides you were already given your dinner!" Joseph told the Frenchmen. Jotaro then let out a chuckle and called out, "Hikari's a great cook, but she wasn't

always like that." Hikari let out a small gasp as she began blushing deeply. "What's that supposed to mean?" Joseph asked. "No, don't-!"

"Back in middle school during our first year, Hikari couldn't cook to save her own life." Jotaro bluntly replied.

"JoJo, you meanie! I know I had trouble back then, but it wasn't all that bad! I learned from my mistakes" Hikari said, her face was so flustered from embarrassment. "Yeah, you learned your lesson after you burned down your kitchen the last three times." Jotaro said with a sly smirk. Hikari's face turned bright red when Joseph and Polnareff began laughing. They were both probably imagining how in the world Hikari had managed to do that.

Hikari's face turned even redder as her body shook. "JoJo, you big meanie!!" Hikari cried out as she charged at Jotaro, hitting him with punches that had literally had no effect and Jotaro just stood there, smiling down at her. Honestly, her punches were about as soft as cotton balls. But Jotaro couldn't help think she looked so adorable right now.

As they were having a good time over there, the baby stared back at them with a deadly glare, mostly towards Polnareff. *'You incompetent bastard!! How dare you eat my food, I'm wasting away over here!! So hurry up and feed me damn it! Argh!'* The baby thought as he laid back down in his basket. He then something from the corner of his eye so he turned to look. Only for his eyes to widen in fear when he saw scorpion climbing into his basket and crawling right towards him. *'What am I going to do?!'* He thought fearfully as the insect crawled closer and closer him.

He didn't know what do to, either he does something that might alert the others or have this thing sting him. Once the scorpion lunged at him did the baby made his decision. He figured that no one was watching so he better make this quick! The baby grabbed a safety pin and stabbed the scorpion with the sharp end. The baby sat up a bit and wiped his forehead, sighing in relief. *'That was a close one.'* He thought.

Crash!

The baby's heart stopped when he heard something fall to the ground. He turned around and his eyes went wide in shock when saw Kakyoin and Nemuru staring at him with shocked expressions. They way there were looking at him could only mean that they saw what he did. And they most certainly did!

'Crap baskets! They were watching!' The baby thought.

'He killed the scorpion...! So we were right..!!' Kakyoin started to think.

'That demon spawn really is a-!!' Nemuru thought.

'Shit! What now!?' The baby needed to think of something fast! If they managed to tell the others and they saw the scorpion, it's game over for him. Since Hikari was still "punishing" Jotaro for being mean, Joseph poured a tiny amount of the baby's food onto Polnareff's spoon. Jotaro had long since turned to tables on her and began gently pinching, pulling and squish on her cheeks. "You're not getting anymore." Joseph sternly told him. "Mr. Joestar, Polnareff, did you see that?!" Kakyoin yelled.

"Huh?" The two men turned their attention to Kakyoin. "We were right!! That baby's not normal! He just killed a scorpion! He stabbed it!! The brat skewered it with his own safety pin!" Nemuru exclaimed, pointing at the baby who was gazing up at them. At this point, they gathering everyone's attention. Joseph and Polnareff looked at each other in confusion before turning back. "Kakyoin, Nemuru, hold on a sec. What the hell are you two talking about?" Joseph asked

"The baby damn it! That kid isn't human! He's not even a year old yet, but knew what a scorpion was...and he killed it with those tiny hands of it!" Kakyoin shouted. "A scorpion!?" Hikari frightfully shouted. Hikari ran over to the baby and lifted him out of the basket, checking for any kind of stings. Kakyoin and Nemuru ran over and looked in the basket. But they found nothing. The basket was completely empty.

"There should be an impaled scorpion in here! It's gone." Kakyoin said. "But how can that be?" Nmeuru asked in disbelief. Kakyoin looked up at the baby in Hikari's arms and he suddenly stood up grabbing them both, "I swear it's true! He must've hidden it

somewhere!! Check his clothes!!" Kakyoin tried to pry the baby out of Hikari's arms but she pulled away with a scared look.

"Kakyoin stop! You're scaring me!" Hikari cried out. Jotaro immediately went to her side and wrapped his arms around her in a protective manner. "Hikari, drop that tiny devil now!" Nemuru shouted at her. "Knock it off you two! That's enough!" Joseph shouted, pulling Kakyoin and Nemuru away. "Mr. Joestar!" Kakyoin said. "Like I said before, you're both clearly exhausted."

"But-!" Nemuru began before Joseph quickly cut her off. "Let's table this. At least for tonight. We'll talk after you both calm down." Joseph said as he walked away. Kakyoin and Nemuru turned to the others, in the hopes that they might believe them...but they all gave such a stare and proceeded to walk away from them. These actions were only making their patience/sanity run thin.

As Jotaro lead her away, Hikari gave Kakyoin and Nemuru a worried look. What on earth is going on..? Hikari said that they would help in any way they can...but they way they were acting was scaring her. "You alright?" Jotaro asked as he gave her shoulder a gentle squeeze. Hikari looked up at him and nodded. She walked over to the campfire, placing the baby in her lap and grabbing the food. She took a spoonful and blew on it to cool it down before holding it up to the baby's mouth.

"Open up, ahhhhhh!" Hikari said. She held the spoon up to the babies mouth but he kept it shut. "Huh? What's the matter, dear? I know you must be hungry, look it's good." Hikari took a small bite and smiled. "Come on open up." Hikari moved the spoon closer to the baby but he pulled back, pushing the spoon away. *'Would you stop shoving that spoon in my face?! I can't eat right now, you blonde idiot!!'* The baby thought. Before she could try again the spoon was smacked out of Hikari's hands, scaring the poor girl. "AAHH!" Hikari screamed.

"Hikari, listen! Nemuru and I, we're not imagining things! We don't know where he could have hidden the blasted scorpion, but we're sure that he's a Stand user! And I have the just thing to prove to you that we're telling the truth!" Kakyoin yelled. He pulled up his sleeve and everyone gasped upon seeing letters carved into his arms. "Do you see these cuts?! Read what the letters spell out!!" Nemuru yelled.

"Can't you see that it's a warning!? It must've happened to me when I was sleeping earlier!!" Kakyoin shouted.

"Oh my god!" Joseph yelled. "Kakyoin, you didn't do that to yourself, did you?" Jotaro asked. "Say what?!" Kakyoin and Nemuru shouted. They gasped and looked at everyone with dismay as they saw the shocked looks on their faces. Now they done it...they officially decided that they had gone completely insane...Kakyoin even more so while Nemuru was slowly losing her mind from it all.

'You colossal buffoons. How stupid can you be? Didn't you realise that if you show them the cuts on your arm they'd think you were crazy?' The baby thought with a smug look.*'What's going on..? Did I make things even worse..?'* Kakyoin pulled the sleeve down over his wound. He then reached over and held Nemuru's hand. She laced her fingers with his. *'Then it looks like... We have no other choice..!'*

"It's time for a little force! Hierophant Green!" "AAAUGH! Give me that kid!! Shadow Mist!!" Hikari's eyes widened as her two closet friends summoned Hierophant Green and Shadow Mist and came at the baby to attack. Silver Chariot appeared behind the two Stands and gave it a swift chop to the necks, knocking Kakyoin and Nemuru out. "It's no use. Damn it...they've completely lost their minds." Polnareff said.

'This can't be happening...I'm certain of what we saw!'

'Jotaro! His Stand was the one we fought in our dreams, Polnareff!'

'We can't fall asleep Mr. Joestar!'

'Hikari, love, do not trust that thing! He's evil!'

'Believe us, everyone! If we fall asleep...we'll all be killed!'

'Please..! You have to believe us!' Kakyoin and Nemuru thought as they both landed on the ground with a loud thud. *'YES! My secret is still safe! Which means the end is near. Your petty mistrust just caused you your lives. Victory is mine, fools!'* The baby thought to himself as he gazed down the unconscious teens with a smug look. Hikari looked at Kakyoin and Nemuru sympathetically as she held the baby close. *'K-*

Kakyoin.... Nemuru.... Why?' Hikari thought thought sadly.

Hikari set the baby down and tucked him in for bed while the men moved Kakyoin, and later Nemuru, into a sleeping bag. "I can't believe it. If they're like this does that mean Kakyoin and Nemuru can't fight or travel with us anymore?" Polnareff asked. Both Joseph and Jotaro let out a sigh. "We'll discuss it in the morning. Let's get some sleep." Joseph said.

When Hikari was done tucking the baby in, she went over to the others to help them set up their sleeping bags and when their backs were turned, the baby leaned over his basket and spit out the bed scorpion he had hidden away in his mouth. *'I've got you right where I want you. I'm gonna slice you up and scatter your remains all over the desert.'*

Once that was settled, Hikari got into her own bag and drifted off to sleep next to Jotaro. Very soon, everyone had fallen asleep. Which means...the baby's playing field has finally been set and will begin his game and all the rules are made by him. A while later after he closed his eyes, Jotaro re-opened them in a quick instant and he looked up to see a green sky. It wasn't just him, Hikari and the others also awoke to find that they were sleeping in the middle of a spinning teacup ride. "Green sky?" Hikari question as she sat up.

"What in the world? Why are we in the middle of an amusement park? We were just out in the desert." Joseph said, scratching his head in confusion. That's when Polnareff finally remembered where he was. "That's right! I know this place..." Polnareff said. He then jumped and tore the sleeping bag away from as he warned the others of this horrid place. "Jotaro, Hikari, Mr. Joestar! Be on your guard! M-my memory's coming back, we've been transported to a dream world....a horrible one. This is bad...we've entered a world of nightmares!"

Jotaro and Hikari quickly stood up on the defence but Joseph just got back in his sleeping bag. "Oh, so it's a dream huh? You had me a little worried for a minute there." Joseph said, laying back down. "Don't make the same mistake that I did!" Polnareff yelled at him. "Listen! Everything Kakyoin and Nemuru said to us earlier was true! Baby. Stand. We are in enemy territory. I know none of this makes any kind

of sense, but the Stand user is that baby!" Polnareff says as the three widened their eyes in shock.

Back in the real world, the baby himself was taking his time feasting on the delicious food that Hikari had so generously made for him. *'There's no one left to wake you from your slumber now, and that means there's absolutely no way for you to escape Death Thirteen's world! I'll finish you off once and for all!!'* The baby thought as he laughed to himself. All four got off the ride and started walking around the amusement park, but Polnareff looked pale as a sudden realisation came to him.

"Why did I have to hit Kakyoin and Nemuru and knock them out. But since I did that...! They should already be here! We've got to find them!" Polnareff shouted at he jumped over the railing and ran off to a random direction. He needed to find them! Since he knocked them out, they were here long before they had arrived, and God only knows what horrors they were enduring. "Where in the world are you Kakyoin?! Nemuru, say something! I have to find a way to make this up to you." Polnareff called out. As searched desperately for his friends, Jotaro, Hikari and Mr. Joestar stared at Polnareff in both shock and bewilderment. "P-Polnareff! Good lord, what is going on with your hair?! Did you mess up brushing it?!" Joseph yelled.

"Huh?" Polnareff looked up and saw that his flattop had grown to be about two feet tall. It suddenly grew even taller, stretching out and grabbing onto two poles, yanking Polnareff away. "Polnareff!" Joseph said. "What the-?!" Then the large chain on Jotaro's jacket lifted up, grew in size and length, and wrapped around his neck, choking him. "JoJo!" Hikari cried out as she tried to pull the chain off from his neck. "AAH! What's going on?! My prosthetic hand is-!" Joseph yelled, his hand shook and then blew up tripling in size looking like an inflatable toy. "Holy shit-bricks!" He shouted as the massive weight of his prosthetic hand brought him down to his knees.

Hikari tried to remove the chain from Jotaro's neck, but then the ribbon holding up her headband suddenly came loose as it stretched out in about ten feet in length and she was yanked up from the air. Her body was held upside down and the ribbons wrapped tightly around her like a vice. Squeezing, crushing her bones and nearly cutting off any oxygen. There now, that's better. Everyone is now

asleep, the game has begun and they're all ready to be killed in their dreams. The many, cartoonish flowers and mailboxes were all laughing at their inevitable demise.

"How are we supposed to fight this, it's maddening!!" Polnareff shouted, beginning to panic. "Damn!! Anything can happen in this this world!! There are no rules here, nothing makes sense! As long as we're in this place, we're completely at his mercy!" Polnareff then let out a gasp. "Wait..! I remember there being one rule... His murder weapon. If he wants to slice us to pieces then... He'll have to use his Stand and nothing but his Stand!!"

"Lali-ho!" Death Thirteen greeted the restrained heroes with that sickening, frozen eerie smile as it glides towards them. "Lali-ho!" It yelled as it lifted its scythe and lunged at them. Jotaro glared at it and shouted, "**ORA**! Star....!"

"Jotaro it's no use! It's impossible for us to bring our Stands into this world!" Polnareff yelled at him, trying to warn the tall delinquent of the second rule of this Nightmare World.

"...Platinum!" Polnareff was left nearly speechless, greatly surprised to see that Jotaro had somehow managed to summon Star Platinum into the playing field...but how did he do that?! When he, Kakyoin and Nemuru were in here, they failed to bring in their own Stands. "That's weird...! His Stand manifested." Star Platinum faced Death Thirteen but then turned to Jotaro, and started attacking him!

Jotaro barely managed to defend himself as Star Platinum pummelled him. He gave Jotaro a strong uppercut and send him fly back to the others. Star Platinum gave a creepy laugh before pulling out a frying pan whacking himself in the face. He kept doing this over and over again, making a new, strange face every time. His head started to spin around as he began to laugh with glee, then in a puff of smoke, revealed Death Thirteen's head. "Lali-ho! Surprise, I'm a fake!" It said as it transformed back into its original body. Another puff of smoke appeared and when it cleared away there was a second clone of Death Thirteen, but as a Stand hodgepodge of all of their Stands.

"Oh the overwhelming power! The absolute terror! It's so much fun!! A Stand is a manifestation of the mind. And what are dreams if not

the mind laid bare? My Death Thirteen has trapped you within your subconscious, which is why you can't summon your precious Stands!" Death Thirteen/The baby said in a feigned, obviously faked sympathetic tone. "Although," He held the scythe's blade over the clone's neck and, very easily, scraped it across. In a puff of smoke, Silver Chariot's severed head rested on the blade. "Things might be different had you summoned your Stands before you fell asleep."

Death thirteen then pushed Silver Chariot's head down to their feet as he continued on. "Then they would've appeared here with you just your clothes, sleeping bags and your prosthetic hand. Death Thirteen will never be forced to face another Stand in battle! And as you know, the only thing that can defeat a Stand is another Stand, so I'll always come out on top!" Death Thirteen said, laughing. "Now that I have all of you in my crosshairs, how about you give me a scream. One that captures the joy and elation I about to feel at my easy victory! Lali-!"

Death Thirteen was cut off when it felt hands gripping its shoulders. "Lali-ho." Hierophant Green and Shadow Mist said in unison, appearing behind Death Thirteen. "Oh, it's one of the fakes I made." Death 13 offhandedly spoke as it reached up and both of them in the forehead. He was quickly proven to be wrong when Hierophant Green and Shadow Mist wrapped their hands around Death Thirteen's neck. "W-What?! I don't understand! These ones don't seem to be a fake! This is the real Hierophant and Shadow!" Death Thirteen shouted.

With him struggling to maintain control over the others, their restraints had come undone. Polnareff's returned to normal, Joseph's hand went back to it originally size and weight, and Jotaro's chain went back to normal. Shadow Mist's eyes glanced over at Jotaro and moved his shadow so she could pulled him back just two steps as Hikari was freed from her trap. She fell and landed perfectly in Jotaro's arms. The two looked at each other for a brief moment before Jotaro quickly put her down and they both looked away in silent embarrassment. Shadow Mist gave an amused chuckle.

"Look! It's Kakyoin and Nemuru! Kakyoin and Nemuru are right there!" Polnareff said, pointing behind them. Sitting in the teacups wearing a smile was indeed Kakyoin and Nemuru. "Obviously it

slipped your notice that we had already summoned our Hierophant and Shadow by the time we were knocked unconscious." Kakyoin said, smirking.

"What's more, Kakyoin had to burrow underground to conceal itself from detection just before he fell asleep and you should know full where I hid my Shadow Mist. The greatest things are always hidden in the dark." Nemuru said. "And since I hid her in a wide area of darkness, she's not bound to me and that's why she was able to reach you."

"You can't do this!" Death 13 shouted.

"Now, it's time for your punishment, baby." Kakyoin said. Nemuru had force herself not to shiver. God...why did that sound so hot when he said it like that? In the real world, the baby dropped his spoon as he clung to his clothes and neck, struggling to breath. *'Damn that bastard...!'* Death Thirteen started to swing it's scythe around but it couldn't get a hit its targets since Hierophant Green and Shadow Mist were on its back. "Let go!"

"Give up, Death Thirteen! We've had Hierophant and Shadow place themselves in your blind spot. If you keep up this futile struggling," Kakyoin said as he and Nemuru jumped out from the teacup ride. "We really don't care that you're a baby. You had it very clear that you intended to kill us, and we'll snap your neck like a twig if necessary." Nemuru said in an icy cold voice.

"Kakyoin! Nemuru! Kakyoin, Nemuru, the four of us owe you an enormous apology." Joseph said as he and the others ran over to them. Hikari ran up and jumped to give the two of them a big hug. "I'm sorry..!" She cried. Kakyoin and Nemuru smiled at her and hugged her back. "I thought after the hell you two been through on this trip you might've suddenly lost your sanity. I mean, a baby Stand user? You two were fighting this battle alone, and for that...I'm sorry." Polnareff said. Jotaro gave an apologetic look and lowered his head.

Kakyoin gave Polnareff a smile and said, "Don't worry Polnareff, it couldn't have been helped. You were the reason Nemuru and I found a way to bring our Stands into the dream world with us. If you hadn't

hit us, we'd be stuck here without a way to defend ourselves. So in a way, this is all thanks to you."

Polnareff then got a bit embarrassed as he blushed pretty pink and gave an awkward smile, rubbing the back of his head. "Yeah? Do ya mean that? Gee, now I feel conflicted about the whole thing, that's embarrassing." He laughed. In the real world, Polnareff was laughing in his sleep while the baby was steaming over the whole situation. *'Kakyoin and Nemuru hasn't killed me yet because I'm a baby...'* He then began laughing in his thoughts. 'Kakyoin. Nemuru. That compassion of yours is a fatal flaw, in case you've forgotten you're all still trapped inside my nightmare world.'

Suddenly the sky above them began flickering from night and day as clouds started to shift and spin around overhead rather ominously. The clouds changed shapes as they were swirling around, clumping together over Death Thirteen and the teen's Stands. "I'm warning you now, don't try anything, Death Thirteen!" Kakyoin shouted. The clouds came together and grew in size over them. Sensing that something bad was coming, Jotaro quickly yelled to his friends, "Kakyoin! Nemuru! You have to get Hierophant and Shadow away from his back before it's too late!" Jotaro yelled

The clouds formed into a large hand and grabbed the scythe from Death Thirteen. "How'd it-?!" "I'll chop you both in half!!" Death Thirteen shouted as it had the scythe sliced right through Hierophant Green, Shadow Mist and even itself! "I-Impossible!" Kakyoin shouted. "How could he do that..?" Nemuru asked. "He...he chopped himself in half..!" The Stands had lost their strength and slide off of Death Thirteen's back at the same time as their users fell to the ground, making everyone call out to them.

"Lali-ho!" Death Thirteen said happily as it opened its cloak to reveal that it was just arms, shoulders, and a head. He had no physical body to begin with. "Haven't you figured it out yet? Death Thirteen's body is as hollow as the space between your ears!" Death 13/The baby said as it caught the scythe in its hand. "My Stand is only comprised of the head, arms, and the giant scythe it wields, you gigantic ignoramuses!!" In the real world, the baby was laughing in glee as he turned to where Kakyoin and Nemuru were sleeping and gave a sadistic glee. "Let's see...given the way the Stands work, Kakyoin's

and Nemuru's body should also be split in two inside the sleeping bag."

Kakyoin stood up with a smile. "Nah, just kidding!" "HA! I don't think so, ya little brat!" Nemuru said as she jumped back on her feet. "Kakyoin! Nemuru" Everyone called out. "Hey, You sure you two are alright!?" Joseph asked in concern as the two teens dusted themselves off. "Ha. Please take a closer look. Surely you know Hierophant and Shadow aren't that careless." Kakyoin said.

"They wouldn't seriously just stay on the enemy's back without some kind of plan, right?" Nemuru asked. Death Thirteen froze as something was slithering inside his head through his ears. The torn robe was ripped out of the way to reveal Hierophant Green and Shadow mist underneath. They were unraveling the lower half of their bodies which were winding themselves into Death Thirteen's head. Hierophant Green and Shadow Mist went into Death Thirteen's head gaining more control over the Stand so that its own scythe was pressed against its neck.

"We told you before! Our Stands were in your blind spots and your scythe couldn't cut them. Now, unless you liked to be destroyed from the inside out, how about you do me a favour and heal the cuts on my arm? Anything is possible in a dream right, so healing a cut should be easy." Kakyoin said. "R-right!" Death 13 said. He was forced to admit defeat.

The next morning

"Alright. Breakfast's been made, coffee's been brewed... Now, all is left to wake the others up."

"I got it." Kakyoin said as he grabbed a frying pan and the spoon, and walked over to the still slumbering team members. "All right everyone! Time to wake up!" Kakyoin said as he bang the spoon against the pan. None of them woke of up very easy. Nemuru walked over to Polnareff and stomp her foot on his stomach. That got him to wake up. "AH, what the hell Nemuru?!" He shouted. "Haha, it got you to wake up didn't it?" She laughed as she walked away to help Kakyoin make the baby's food.

They walked over to a small pond and began to wash their faces. They didn't know it fully, but they all had one hell of a dream. "I feel like I had a terrible dream last night." Polnareff said. "You and me both." Joseph tells them. "I can't remember it, but I had the sneaking suspicion that it was terrifying."

Polnareff then let out a gasp as his memories from the previous night flooded back in and ran towards Kakyoin and Nemuru by the fire. "Are you guys okay? How are you feeling?" He asked. "We're fine." Kakyoin said, rather nonchalantly with a smile on his face. "..What..?" Polnareff went. "Are you positive? Cause the two of you were acting like deranged lunatics last night." Hikari jogged over to them and kneeled beside Kakyoin and check his arm. "Kakyoin? Sweetie, I am so sorry, I forgot to heal you-....huh?" Hikari was now confused. The wounds on his arm were gone.

"Alright, food's done. I'll change the baby, mind feeding him afterwards Kakyoin." Nemuru asked as she stood up with a bowl of baby food in her hands. Kakyoin stood up and shook his head. "Not at all." As the walked away, Polnareff's jaw nearly dropped to the ground when he saw Kakyoin casually reach over to hold Nemuru's hand...and her lancing her fingers with his..?! What the hell?!

Hikari noticed Kakyoin and Nemuru seemed much better than last night. They looked much happier. *'That must have been apart of the dream too. I guess we all just needed rest. I'm happy she and Kakyoin have gotten to be closer friends.'* Hikari thought. She smiled when Nemuru picked up the baby, she then turned and walked away as the baby reached out with is arms pleading in his head for Hikari not to leave him.

Nemuru laid the baby down on small patch of grass and undid his diaper. The baby stared at them, his face pale as a ghost, in fear as Kakyoin and Nemuru looked down at him with a smirk mixed with a glare. "Everyone's forgotten. A Stand who's very existence is completely forgotten. What a strange creature." Kakyoin said, in the most calm and near pleasant tone.

"But we haven't forgotten anything. Since we brought our Stands into the dream with us, our memories are intact." Nemuru said. While their voices was calm, that glare in their eyes sent chills down the

baby's spine. "Listen, because you're just a baby, we won't eliminate you. We won't even injure you. We'll take you to a nearby town, you need to be returned to your mother." Kakyoin said. "However, don't come anywhere near us again. If you do, you'll have to be punished."

Nemuru held out a spoon and took a small piece from the baby's freshly made faeces. "In a proper manner such as this." She said as she discreetly dumped it into the baby's food...and mixes it right in, making the baby sick to his stomach as he realise what was going to happen next. Hikari sat down next to Jotaro and the two ate breakfast. Kakyoin and Nemuru had come over to sit next to them as Joseph took up the liberty of feeding the baby with Polnareff. Hikari was enjoying her eggs when she looked over when she heard the baby scream. She tilted her head seeing as Joseph and Polnareff were just feeding him.

"Ba-dum-tss." Kakyoin smiled as Nemuru laughed.

Chapter 31: Blossoming Feelings

The group was quickly rescued and brought to the next town. Hikari had a hard time letting go of the baby, because he didn't want to let go of her. He kept crying and clinging to her but she was finally able to get him off and sent a farewell. Joseph rented a speedboat and now the group was speeding across the water. Joestar and the others have now crossed the Arabian peninsula and are currently making their way across the Red Sea as they prepared to enter Egypt. But...

"Hey, old man. Something's off. You're going the wrong direction. If you're headed to Egypt, shouldn't you be traveling directly west?" Jotaro asked. Catching the other's attention. "You seem to be heading toward that island." Jotaro said as he pointed towards the island ahead of them.

"That's right, nice deduction. I've had my reasons for keeping this to myself, but before we arrive in Egypt, we need to make a slight detour. Someone is waiting for us on the island. He's a man who is extremely important to our journey." Joseph said.

"What is that supposed to mean?" Polnareff asked.

Nemuru smiled excitedly for what was to come. Hikari, however, was a bit anxious and held Jotaro's arm. "It'll be alright...will it?" She asked nervously. Jotaro looked down at her and held her hand. "Relax. It's fine." He said. Hikari nodded, accepting his answer. "Okay." Nemuru smiled at them and sighed in content. Honestly, she can't stop watching those two.

"You okay in letting her go?" Kakyoin asked he walked to her. Nemuru playfully smacked him in the shoulder. "Shut it. You make it sound like I'm her mother or something. But...as long as Jotaro with her, she'll be fine." Nemuru said. She reached into her pocket and pulled out her wallet. "Here." She showed him the photo of her parents. Kakyoin took the photo and stared at the happy family. Her father seemed to a very well-mannered, respectable man with dark brown hair and chestnut brown eyes. Quite handsome. Her mother

was very pretty, she looked just like Nemuru, only her dark purple hair was cut short and had her dark purple eyes and transparent skin. And Nemuru standing in between them, smiling carefree and holding her white teddy bear in her arms.

"You looked so happy." He said.

"I was."

"Wha...?" Kakyoin went as he looked at her. She looked sad...but held a small smile. Nemuru took back her wallet and simply said, "I was happy...until Dio showed up." Kakyoin's heart ached for her. He recalled his own pain of loneliness, and how he never connected with anyone. But he felt that was nothing compared to what she must've been through. He remembered how she yelled that she wanted to save her mother. Kakyoin step forward and reached to wrap his arm around her, but he lost his chance. The speedboat docked on the beach of the small island.

As Hikari went to get off Jotaro held his arms out, he grabbed Hikari by the waist easily lifting her off the boat and onto the sand. Hikari's cheeks tinted pink as she thanked Jotaro and smiled. "Thank you so much JoJo." She said. Jotaro just gave a 'hmph' and patted her head, making her giggle.

As the five started walking through the island Hikari was amazed by all the flourishing plant life she saw. "Wow... It's so beautiful here." She said. "Hey, what's the big idea? Does someone actually live here? This is such a tiny little island it practically deserted." Polnareff said.

"I would have to agree. Mr. Joestar, are you sure someone actually live here?" Kakyoin asked the older man. "He's been living on this island by himself. A man he told me back in India and I'm sure I heard him correctly." Joseph replied. That caught Kakyoin's attention. "Wait a sec, you say a man..?"

"What? Mangos from India?" Polnareff questioned out loud. Making Kakyoin sigh and Nemuru groaning in annoyance. "Don't ever stop to think, assuming you can think at all, and wonder what you'll say next...might the stupidest thing you'll and make you more of an idiot?!" She shouted.

"Oh, do you want to settle this!?"

"Bring it!"

"Please you two, stop it." Hikari said as she stepped in between them. Playing the role as peacemaker as always. A rustling sound caught everyone's attention, and they all paused looking towards the sound. That's when Jotaro spotted a pair of eyes staring at them from a bush. "Hate to interrupt, but I thought you should know someone's watching us from the grass over there." Jotaro pointed out and everyone turned to look.

Once the man was spotted he stood up and quickly ran away. They caught a quick glimpse of him and four of them were shocked. "From the back he looks..." Kakyoin started. "No way that's..." Nemuru said. Hikari let out a gasp as she covered her mouth in shock. "You're right, I know that face!" Polnareff said as he took off after the man. Everyone followed suit and took after the mysterious figure following after him through the shrubbery. They eventually came upon a small house with a fence in an open clearing. The hopped over the fence entering the yard of the dwelling. He picked up a basket of feed and started feeding some chickens acting as if the group wasn't there.

"Eat up now. Are you hungry Michael? How about you Prince? I mixed in those shells you love so make sure you share with the others alright and there's lots more where this came from. Make sure to get nice and fat so you'll be a tasty chicken Lionel." The man said to his chickens as he fed them.

"It's not possible...! That man...." Kakyoin said. "It can't be... It's-." Polnareff said, attempting to move forward towards the man but was stopped by Joseph. "Hold it! I'm gonna go and talk to him. The rest of you just wait here for now." Joseph said as he stepped forward to talk to the man. Hikari was staring shock at the man and felt her heart beginning to ache. "Pardon me, my name is Joseph Joestar. My friends and I are currently travelling on an expedition to Egypt-."

"Go away! I won't hear it!" The man suddenly yelled. The sound of his voice caught everyone of guard. "His voice sounds like..." Polnareff said. "I won't say it again! Don't talk to me, got it! No one ever comes to see me when they have actually good news to report! I only get

visitors when something bad happens! Just shut up! Go away!" The man yelled, turning around to face them. Everyone's eyes widened when he saw the face of Avdol, but this man's face was older and he had greying hair. Hikari let out a gasp as tears formed and fell from her eyes.

"Mr. Avdol!" Kakyoin shouted.

"It's you, Avdol!" Nemuru cried out.

"Avdol, wait!" Jotaro said.

"Mr. Avdol, please! Come back!" Hikari cried as she tried to run to him but Joseph held her back by her shoulders before she could reach him. "I said, go!" The man ran into the house and slammed the door. "Hold on, that's impossible!" Kakyoin and Polnareff said.

"That wasn't Avdol. It was his father." Joseph told him.

"His father?" Polnareff asked.

"He withdrew from society and lives alone on this island. I'm sorry I wasn't able to tell you about this earlier. But if it ever became known to Dio that we've stop at this, Avdol's father would be put in grave danger. I would never forgive myself if that happened. But for now, my focus has to be on telling him what every parent fears most. That his son is dead." Joseph explained in a depressed voice. Hikari broke down and cried in place of Avdol's father and being reminded of that horrible day. How she wished that she could've done more to save him. How she blamed herself not being able to do anything. She wasn't alone.

"Polnareff!!" The Frenchma's grief and guilt over Avdol's death resurfaces as he remembered how hard Avdol tried to protect him. To stop him from making a huge mistake...and in return, he died because of him. A man lost his only son...because of him. Polnareff looked down sadly and turned away from everyone. Joseph took notice of Polnareff's beaten up form and gently placed a comforting hand on his shoulder. "Don't let yourself go there. Avdol's death wasn't your fault."

Polnareff slowly pulled away from him. "No it's my fault. I have to carry that burden for as long as I live." He said as he slowly walked away heading back to the beach.

"Is it safe to assume his father's a Stand user?" Kakyoin asked Joseph.

"Yeah. But I don't know what kind of Stand it is or what sort of power it wields." Joseph told him. Nemuru held Hikari close and gently stroked her golden hair as she continued to cry. "Judging by how his old man reacted towards us, I highly he'll be willing to help us." She said.

"You just leave the talking to me alright? Hopefully my words will be able to reach him." Joseph said as they all stared back at the small house. Nemuru looked down at Hikari and told the others that she's going to take Hikari out for a stroll around the beach to calm her down. They nodded and the girls walked off.

Eventually, the girls found a nice shaded area alongside the beach and sat down to listen to the constant waves. The sun was close to setting on the horizon and Hikari had calmed down from crying so much. She was now smiling softly at the ocean. Nemuru looked at her best friend and said, "You know, it wasn't your fault either. We know that you would've given anything to save Avdol."

"I know...but... It still hurts. To see him die like that... I wish I could tell him and his father how sorry I am." Hikari said as she took several deep breaths to calm herself down. Trying to hold back her tears, trying to keep herself from crying again. Once the lump in her throat had faded, she let out a sigh and stared back at the ocean. Nemuru looked sadly at her and knew that she needed something to distract her. She thought about it and thought of the perfect distraction.

"I think if Jotaro were here, it'll be a very romantic setting for the both of you." Nemuru said. No answer. "Hikari?" She said as she turned to look at her. Nemuru tried, and failed miserably, to hold back her laugh. Hikari was now sitting stiffly and her face was turning all shades of red. "U-uh..! I-I-I don't know if that's something JoJo would be interested in. I-I mean it be nice...b-but I have to know how he feels about it." She said.

"Hahaha! Sure, whatever you say." Nemuru said. Things got quiet for a while as Hikari lost herself in her thoughts. She kept it over and over in her head and decided to come out and say it. Maybe Nemuru might give the advice she needed. "Nemuru?" Hikari asked timidly. "Yeah?" She said.

"Um, you love Kakyoin right?" Hikari asked.

....what?

"You two are together...right?" Hikari asked as she tilted her head innocently.

"WHAT?! Where the hell did you get that idea?!" Nemuru shouted all of a sudden. A bright red blush coloured her face. Hikari flinched at her sudden yelling and began to immediately apologise. "I'm sorry, I'm sorry! I'm so sorry! I-I-I thought that b-because you two seem have gotten so close and I've been thinking what you've ask before so I-! I'm sorry! I knew it wasn't any of my business." She said, raising her arms to protect herself.

Nemuru huffs in anger before taking a deep breath. Turning away from her, but her blush was still visible on her face. "I don't love him...but I don't dislike him either. He's...just a good guy that's all. I can consider him a friend, but we're not together in that sense." Nemuru muttered.

Hikari nodded and apologised again. "I'm sorry. It's just that...I've been thinking of what you told me before. When you asked me if I had any feelings for JoJo?" Nemuru quickly got the idea and spread a playful smirk. "Ahh~. So you've finally noticed." She said. Hikari shyly nodded. "Uh-huh... Th-that's why I asked you. I thought that maybe you give me some advice. B-but it's perfectly fine if you don't want to, I understand."

"Well, if it's advice, why don't you tell me when and how you realised that you're liking Jotaro more than just a best friend?" Nemuru asked her. Hikari blushed red again and nodded. "...Okay. I started thinking about it after the incident with Da-...Ah, I mean the Lovers. How JoJo comforted me. How he held me the way he did. Even when I hurt him and tried to get away, JoJo didn't leave my side. He always

knows how to cheer me up, but that time felt a little different. I don't really know when I starting to fall for him, but....I think I've always been. When he became the first real friend I ever had, I felt that I must've loved him even then."

Nemuru smiled at Hikari. Before she was a blushing mess, but now she seemed so comfortable. So happy. Probably because all of the happiest memories she held were because of Jotaro. Speaking of which, how did she react when he...uh, changed? "You already care about him so much. But what about when he changed so suddenly? When he became such a hard-ass all the time? Were you scared?"

"Oh no, not at all." Hikari immediately said, shaking her head. "I can never be scared of JoJo. That day...I was surprised. I almost thought that he was another person...but..." Hikari trailed off as a warm smile appeared on her face. "I knew right away it was him."

One night, Hikari had called Jotaro and told him that she was going to make a big lunch for the two of them for school the following morning. Jotaro told her that she didn't have to do that, but he let out a chuckle and said that he'll be looking forward to it. The next morning, Hikari woke up early and prepared two lunch boxes, making sure she included what Jotaro liked. After she was done, Hikari grabbed her book-bag, but on her shoes and ran out the house to meet up with him.

She walked down the street to the spot where they usually meet up to walk together. She noticed that Jotaro wasn't there yet and concluded that she was a little early when she looked at her watch. She didn't mind. She was happy to wait for him. "I wonder where JoJo would like to eat? The courtyard? The back of the school? Hmm, it's such a nice day, maybe eating on the rooftop would be better." Hikari said as she giggled.

"Hey!" A harsh, gruff voice called out. Hikari flinched at how loud and sudden the voice was and she turned to see who it was that called out. Hikari's eyes widened in fear when she saw three, buff-looking delinquents standing over her with menacing eyes. Before she knew it, she was back up against the wall of an alleyway while the delinquents surrounded her. "You said JoJo. Do you mean Jotaro Kujo?!" "Of course she does, you moron! Know anyone else who goes by that name?" Two of them said.

The third one, most likely the leader, stepped in closer and got into her

*face. "Listen here, what's your business with the a**hole huh? You his girl or something? Where can we find him" He asked her. Hikari tried not to react to his cigarette-smelling breath. Hikari was shaking in fear. She didn't know what these guys wanted or how they knew Jotaro. Hikari shrank back and said, "I-I-I don't..." "SHUT THE HELL UP WITH THAT!!" The leader shouted as he punched the wall, dangerously close to hitting her face.*

Hikari cried out as she brought her arms up to shield herself. Her whole body was shaking uncontrollably. "Listen here, we've got a score to settle with that jackass! Got it?! So either tell us where he is or things will get very ugly, real fast! So what's it gonna be you little bitch!?" He shouted.

"What did you call her?" A familiar voice asked. Hikari stopped shaking and smiled brightly, looking to see her best friend's face. But her smile faded she saw a giant of a man, an even scary looking delinquent standing tall over all four of them. Hikari shrank back again as she stared at the newcomer. But then...she looked closer. The delinquents turned and actually tried to threaten the taller man. "Ah, so you've finally shown yourself Kujo! Well guess what, we're gonna knock that ego of yours down to size!" "Yeah! And once you've been taught a lesson, we're taking this bitch as compensation for our trouble."

"Yeah...that's what I thought." The delinquent said cooly before he slammed his fist into the smaller delinquent's face. Instantly knocking him out. Hikari stood there in silent awe as the taller delinquent beat the other two down without breaking a sweat. When the three other delinquents were down and beaten, the taller man looked over to her. "You okay Hikari?" He asked. The sapphire-eyed girl blinked and returned to her senses. She looked at him and he placed a comforting hand on her shoulder. When she looked into his eyes, Hikari smiled brightly and said, "Yeah, I'm okay." She then wrapped her arms around him and held him close. "Thank you JoJo."

"Hahaha, I see. So Hikari didn't treat you any less, not that I thought she would." Kakyoin said as he and Jotaro sat at the other side of the beach. "I kinda expected her to be scared of me, but she just took one look at me, got it out of her system, and smiled like she usually does." Jotaro said. He confided in Kakyoin that he now has feelings towards Hikari, but he had no idea on how to go about it. Hikari was a special girl and Jotaro thought he should tread this path carefully. Yet Jotaro

didn't want to cause a lot of stress for her.

"I'm not sure if it's going to work out for us anyway. Even if I decided to tell her." Jotaro said.

This confused Kakyoin. "What, why? You guys have friends for years so what could go wrong if you decided to date?" He asked.

"Because people don't like us being together. I couldn't give a crap about it... But I'm worried for her. Even if we're just friends, nobody wanted us to be even in the same room."

"I heard there's a new ramen restaurant that just opened up, want to go and stop by it on the way home?" Hikari asked Jotaro. They were standing in the school's hallway just talking with each other. Nothing bad was going on. Jotaro shrugged his shoulders. "Why not. I'm getting hungry..." He said. Hikari softly giggled at him and lightly teased, "That's why you shouldn't forget your lunch sweetie." Jotaro gave a small smile and reached forward to pat her on the head.

He placed his hand on her head when a teacher who was passing by spotted them, "Kujo!? What do you think you're doing with her?!" She shouted as she rushed over and pulled Hikari away from him. She stepped in between them as she was trying to protect the girl from him. This bothered Jotaro greatly. "We were just talking." He said.

The teacher turned to Hikari and gently asked her, "Dorotéa, are you alright? He didn't hurt you?" Hikari surprised the teacher when she let out a soft gasp and shook her head. "Of course I'm alright. JoJo would never hurt me, we're best friends. I'm sorry if we did something to make you think that." She said as she gave an apologetic bow. The teacher's words were caught in her throat as she looked between the two high-schoolers. When she did find her voice, she gave a stern look to Jotaro's way and said, "Well, you should watch yourself next time." The teacher then walked away and left them alone.

Jotaro let out a sigh. Damn it...how annoyed. That was the fifth teacher this week. What the hell's their problem anyway? Hikari noticed him becoming bothered by the situation and reach over to hold his hand. She gave him a gentle smile as she lead him to the roof, knowing that the wide space and fresh air would make it easy for him. Jotaro glanced down at

her. His face didn't show it, but he was surprised how well she had taken that.

"At the time, we didn't look like friends to the people around us. Nothing I could do about it. Again, I couldn't care less...but..."

"Hey, Dorotéa?" A girl asked once the school day. Hikari was in the middle of writing something when she lifted her head up to look at her classmate. "Yes?" She asked politely. "Are you and JoJo really best friends?" She asked. Hikari did not hesitate to smile and said, "Yes we are. Why do you ask?"

"Uh...well..." The girl said, struggling to find the right words to say. As they were talking a couple of girls off to the side were giving the gentle girl disgusted stares. As if Hikari was the literal scum of the Earth. One of the girl scoffed at Hikari's "friendly behaviour" and said, "No way, they can not be friends. They're way too different. It doesn't make any sense."

"I heard that the teachers have been keeping an eye on both of them. That blonde idiot must be causing a lot trouble for him."

"Who knows, maybe she's different outside of school and does horrible stuff in secret." One said this with a snarky laugh.

"I mean, if she's hanging out with JoJo maybe. But at least that would make sense. Look at her, she's so pathetically meek, it's almost embarrassing."

"How can JoJo even talk to her without gagging? Let alone be "friends" with her?"

"What does he see in her? She's not that great. Just look at that face."

"She claims to be his best friend, but I bet she sees other men behind his back."

"Girls like her are usually super needy.."

"Don't worry. Once JoJo's done pretending he'll drop her into the curve and look for someone better."

Unbeknownst to them, Jotaro was standing right outside their classroom.

He came to pick Hikari up, but he never thought he walked into hear something like that. At this moment, Jotaro was questioning if he should go in there. How could he? He could give a crap about what the teachers and others students say about him, but he refused to let anyone talk trash about Hikari. He doesn't want any rumours to spread about her. She didn't deserve this. Jotaro was thinking that maybe...she'd be better off without him. Maybe he should sever his ties with her...

"Aren't you worried that about what will happen to you if you keep hanging around JoJo? He's not exactly the most nicest guy." A different girl asked.

"No." Hikari said with surprising confidence. "JoJo, for so long, has done a lot for me. More than I can expect from him. He was the first real friend I ever had and I cherished the days he and I spent together. Sure, he's a bit...uh...brash...but that doesn't change about how I feel about him. Good or bad, he's still him. JoJo lives in a special place in my heart and I want to do what I can to be there for him too. Whatever he may need...whatever he needs help with, I want to be there. I love JoJo."

Jotaro's eyes widened slightly. He thought he was imagining it, but his heart skipped a beat and it swelled within him. He knew that Hikari meant a whole another kind of love, but hearing her say that...made him so happy. He felt happy, lucky, and undeserving for having Hikari as his friend.

"I think from there...I was beginning to love her." Jotaro said. Despite everything that happened, despite teachers trying to separate them, despite those bitches from school threatening her almost every day. Hikari would always shine like the sun and smile. Staying right by him and facing the day together. Why hadn't he noticed that before. Kakyoin smiled and patted his shoulder.

"If you ask me, I don't Hikari is going to care what the others have to say either. She's going to more concerned with your feelings than anything else." Kakyoin said. "I understand how it you're dealing with, I'm trying to figure out how to tell Nemuru how I feel even if she might be out of my league. Though my best bet is that if you can't tell Hikari, then show her."

"Show him?" Hikari asked in confusion. Nemuru nodded. "Yup.

Knowing you, you'd probably rambling on about confessing your feelings to Jotaro. So the best best you can do is to go in and show him. Make the first move!"

"The first move..." Hikari said as she went into deep thinking on how she's going to do that. Nemuru then laughed and said, "I wouldn't think too much on it. No matter how you do it, Jotaro's got to be a complete idiot to reject you. You're cute, nice and an amazing girl for having to put up with him all this time."

Hikari let out a laugh at that last part. But she was right. Hikari shouldn't think too much over it. She just needs to tell Jotaro how she's been feeling and if that doesn't work than make the first move....right? *'Or I'll just mess everything up.'* Hikari thought as her confidence plummeted. Nemuru glanced up at the sky and noticed that it was already dark. "Aw man, come on. We should be getting back to the others."

"Oh, right!" Hikari said as the girls stood up and began their track back towards the others. It didn't take them long to find the others. When they arrived, Joseph spotted them and called Hikari over. He mentioned that he had something very important to tell her. When he did, Hikari was left dumbstruck. At first she thought he was playing a mean joke, but one look at him said that he was very serious.

As the group was getting ready to depart, they noticed that they were lacking one Polnareff. They decided to wait on the beach till he gets back. In was only a few minutes later that they heard a rustle in the bush and out popped a very injured Polnareff.

"Hey! You guys will never believe it, guess who I ran into while out and about!?" Polnareff smiled and acting as hyper as a kid on a sugar rush.

"Polnareff, we were worried about you!" Joseph said.

"Where'd did those injuries come from?" Kakyoin asked, his eyes widen at the level of damage he sustained.

"You look like hell." Nemuru said.

"Oh my goodness! Mr. Polnareff, you must be in pain!" Hikari said as she ran towards him to heal his wounds. "Some kind of enemy?" Jotaro asked. Polnareff gently, but quickly, pushed Hikari back to the others as he hyper energy was knowing no end. "My wounds are nothing compared to my news! Now listen up and don't be too shocked, Jotaro! You're gonna have to promise you won't throw your back out in surprise, Kakyoin! Don't faint Hikari! And be sure to catch your jaw Nemuru!" Polnareff shouted as he turned to Joseph, still smiling his wide grin. "Who do you think I met out there, Mr. Joestar?"

When none answered and looked at him like he had gone nuts, Polnareff let out a giddy laugh as he jumps back to motion towards the mini-sized jumble behind him. "Now prepared to be blown away! Tum-ta-da-da! Here he is! That sly bastard Avdol was still alive, isn't that great!?" Polnareff said with a happy smile.

~Silence~

"Well we should probably get going." Joseph said picking up his bag. "Here, allow me to help you carry your luggage." Avdol said as he walked over to pick up one of the bags. "Thank you Avdol." Nemuru said. When he stood back up straight, Hikari immediately dove into his arms and began to cry. "Mr. Avdol! You're really here!! Thank goodness...!" She sobbed as Hikari hugged him tight. Joseph was telling the truth, Avdol was alive and well. She didn't think it was possible, but she was just happy to see him again. The Egyptian man smiled kindly at the young girl and stroked her hair. "There, there. No need to cry Hikari. I should be thanking you, you helped save me."

Hikari looked up at him as a few tears escape her eyes. "I-...I did?" Avdol nodded as her and began to leading her away with the others. "Avdol, how have you been doing?" Jotaro asked him. "It's been awhile, how goes it?" Kakyoin said.

"So Avdol, was Soundless Voice able to heal the wound on your back alright?" Joseph asked him.

"It's fine, though my joints do get a little stiff sometimes." Avdol told him. The six started to walk off, with Hikari holding Avdol's hand,

and leaving a dumbstrucked Polnareff. "HEY!" Polnareff yelled. The six continued to chat as Polnareff stood there, stunned. "Has it really been two weeks since we last saw each other? We're lucky to all be alive." Jotaro said with a smirk.

"Jotaro, you're still wearing your uniform? Don't you ever get hot?" Avdol asked as he let out a laugh.

"Hey...! Just hold on a second guys...!" Polnareff said, rather weakly. But then his temper rose up and his anger exploded. "Didn't you hear me, I told you to hold on a second, you assholes! What's the deal with those lousy attitudes?! A man we thought was dead just waltz onto the beach! How the hell can you just brush it off and act like nothing as changed?!" Polnareff yelled.

"Oh yeah, I'm sorry about that Polnareff. When I told you I'd taken upon myself to bury Avdol in India....I may have lied." Joseph said nonchalantly. "W-W-WHAT THE HELL!?" Polnareff yelled.

"It was Hikari who tended to the wounds on my head back in India after I was shot by Hol Horse, and Mr. Joestar and Jotaro helped me afterwards." Avdol said smiling as he pointed to his forehead. Nemuru was stroking the top of Hikari's head as the gentle girl started to cry again. "Hey now, you can stop feeling guilty. You saved him after all." Nemuru told her.

"You assholes have known Avdol was still alive the entire time, and never once did it cross any of your deceitful minds to let me know?! I'm most surprised at you guys, Kakyoin! Hikari, I expected this behaviour from Nemuru, but not you!" Polnareff shouted.

"Nemuru and I only found out the day after it all happened. But it was aperitif to let the enemy know." Kakyoin said. "And lay off Hikari would ya?! She had no idea Avdol was even alive until Mr. Joestar told her just minutes ago! We didn't tell her because there was no way Hikari could lie to you over something like this, and since you have the fattest mouth I suggested-." Kakyoin covered her mouth with his hand and he said, "Pardon her. What she meant to was, since it's not easy for you to lie on command I suggested we keep it a secret from you."

"If you'd let the secret slip, Avdol wouldn't been able to recuperate in peace." Jotaro said.

"We were planning to let you know the very moment we knew that he was safe. But we didn't think you'd run into him first." Kakyoin said.

"Oh yeah! Avdol, we found your dad living in a hut on this island! Come on let's let him know you're here!" Polnareff said running off. "Oh. That was just me in disguise." Avdol said. Cue to Polnareff face planting in the sand. "Say what? Then you were in on it from the very start, everything that happened was on ruse you created?"

"Don't talk to me, got it! No one ever comes to visit when they have good news to report! Just shut up!"

"Don't go there. Avdol's death wasn't your fault."

"You didn't have to go that far! How dare you leave me out of the loop?! I think that's the cruelest thing you ever done to me!" Polnareff said eyes watering.

"Now, now. Chin up, there's no reason for you to cry." Joseph said.

"I'm sorry Polnareff. I truly didn't think you'd be this hurt." Kakyoin said.

"Man, it's no fun seeing you cry." Nemuru said as she rubs the back of her head. "Cheer up Polnareff, it's okay. Please don't cry." Hikari gently said, patting his back and healing him of his injuries. Jotaro just groans in annoyance as he tipped his hat.

"I apologise as well. But I had a very good reason for coming to this island in disguise." Avdol said as he kneeled at Polnareff's side. "Yeah, what is it?" Polnareff asked. "It was partially so the enemy wouldn't find out, but I also had Avdol do some shopping for me while he was laying low." Joseph said

"What kind of shopping?" Polnareff questioned.

"Since it was a very conspicuous acquisition, I disguised myself as a wealthy Arab gentleman." Avdol said.

"Alright everyone! Let's climb aboard and head out!" Joseph shouted at them, and once Polnareff picked himself up, began shoving him forward. "Come on Polnareff, for the love of everything that's sacred, cheer up already! It's almost here, look!" Joseph said with a smile as he pointed out to the water.

"I don't understand what's almost here, I don't see anything. Wh-!?" Polnareff shouted as out from the ocean depths, a luxurious submarine rose up to greet them. "WHAT?! A submarine!?"

"Oh wow! Amazing!" Hikari gasped.

"That's right. From here on out, we're riding to Egypt in this!" Joseph said.

"Y-You've got to be kidding?! How did you afford this?!" Polnareff question.

Chapter 32: High Priestess part 1

The terrain has changed for Jotaro and company who've entered what divers across the globe call the most beautiful sea in the world. Flanked on the east and west by desert, the Red Sea was once believed to have been surrounded by crimson sands. Today, its general lack of pollution and inflowing river water makes it one of the most immaculate bodies of water on Earth.

Hikari felt like she was in some kind of dream. The inside of the submarine was just as impressive as the outside, it was like being in a first-class lounge underwater. Avdol was at the wheel steering the submarine. "Hang on a minute, are you telling me you drive this thing, Avdol?" Polnareff asked.

"Tsk, tsk. It's not problem whatsoever, Polnareff." Avdol said. "Wow." Polnareff said, feeling impressed. "And Avdol's not the only one!" Joseph called out. Hearing those words, Hikari instantly paled in her seat next to Jotaro. "Don't even think about it. I refused to let you push us through another crash." Jotaro said. *'That would be for the best. I hope we can have a peaceful, quiet ride.'* Hikari thought.

"Well, you seem to be in a foul mood today." Joseph grumbled.

"So this is a submarine. I have to say I'm a bit surprise, it's a lot more spacious than I expected." Kakyoin said.

"Isn't it? Rich folks typically use vessels like these when they want to get away for a while and explore the seafloor for pleasure. As you see, it even has windows." Joseph said. Quickly moving out of the way when Polnareff came running right over to the window. "Whoa there!" "Oooh! Nice! You know come to think of it, I've always sort of liked this kind of thing. Although I wish I could've ridden in one with a cute girl."

"Ugh... a real charmer as always..." Nemuru grumbled at him.

"Once again you haven't change Polnareff. Now could you please try

just once to take this seriously?" Avdol asks him before looking down at the controls the submarine held. Polnareff turns away from the window and walked over to some control panels. "Hmm? What's that?" He asked pointing at the sonar. "This is sonar. It uses reflected sound waves to detect underwater objects much like radar." Joseph explained.

"Wow...." Polnareff said. Avdol checked the sonar seeing it clear. "All clear. I'm not picking up anything in our vicinity." The Egyptian fortune teller said. "With this machine, we can detect anyone trying to attack us, no matter which direction the enemy tries to come from." Joseph said.

"But if someone did attack us in here, there'd be nowhere for us to run. We'd be like trap rats. Don't forget where we are, 60 meters below sea level." Jotaro pointed out. Hikari got a little uneasy hearing that. She knows she can create bubble shields, but she was worried that she couldn't make one big enough to protect everyone. Hikari shook her head and told herself to try and make the biggest bubble she can make. ....Hopefully, this ride goes smoothly.

A few hours ticked by and Hikari and Jotaro were staring out at a window as Jotaro pointed out various marine life. Hikari was amazed as Jotaro identified numerous amounts of sea creatures. She knew he liked marine biology and it made her smile seeing how much he enjoyed it. As they were enjoying the ocean showcase, Nemuru and the others were gazing at them for a moment before the dark-purple haired girl suddenly asked the others, "Alright, talk. Who's gonna make the first move here? Jotaro or Hikari? I'm betting 20 on my girl."

Polnareff sputtered out a laugh. "What? Are you kidding me? Hikari is the epitome of innocence and purity. Jotaro's a man, he's definitely going to make the first move." Kakyoin thought about for moment, looking over at his friends before taking Polnareff side. "Sorry Nemuru, but I'm going have to agree with Polnareff. Hikari is too shy to pull a stunt like that. Jotaro's gonna do it." Joseph let out a laugh as he looked so confident. "We Joestar men know how to win the hearts of our chosen women. Jotaro's has the Joestar charm, he'll definitely sweep Chiara off her feet."

Nemuru almost growled at the three of them, but stood her ground. She had faith in her girl. She was about to fish out a 20 on the table they were sitting at when Avdol suddenly spoke up. "I believe that Hikari would be the one to make a move. That is my prediction." He said, turning his head to smile at them. "What?!" The others shouted. "HA!" Nemuru happily, and smugly, laughed.

This caught the attention of Jotaro and Hikari as they walked to them. "What's so funny? Did something happen?" Hikari asked politely. Everyone quickly shut up and said that it was nothing. Hikari nodded but Jotaro felt that something was up. After a few minutes, things started to be at ease. "This sub is amazing. But I guess it is a pleasure cruisers for the wealthy." Kakyoin said as he explored a bit of the sub. "It has a refrigerator, a coffee maker, and it's even equipped with the latest satellite phones." Joseph looked at the phone in thought and mumbled, "Huh...I should call...."

"Hey Kakyoin, would you mind getting me a drink while you're up? I'm dying of thirst here." Polnareff said. "The hell? Go get it yourself if you want it so much. Jerk." Nemuru said to him as she stood up to help Kakyoin carry the drinks that she was aware that the others would like one too.

"I'll take one too." Avdol said.

"Us too, please?" Hikari asked.

"Sure. Is cola okay?" Kakyoin asked as he opened the fridge and handed the soda bottles one by one to Nemuru. "Old man, why are you just standing there? Something bugging ya?" Jotaro ask his grandfather who was standing right by the phone. Joseph didn't turned to the others and said, "Everyone, I need you to give a moment's quiet. I just remember I have a phone call to make." Joseph picked up the satellite phone and began making a call.

"A phone call? To where?" Polnareff asked.

"'Where' is right. Who would you need to call in a submarine in the middle of the Red Sea?" Kakyoin asked.

"Someone important I assure you. You might even call it a delicate

matter. So as I said, I need you all to be quiet." Joseph said.

New York City.

"God damn it! I'm turning into Suzi Q, this is driving me crazy!" Lily shouted as she struggled between two types of dresses in front of her. "Ugh..! Between the two, the sparkle floral print is very nice... grr, but is it even appropriate for the charity event tomorrow? The white gown is simple but still elegant enough to be professional." Lily grabbed her head and messed up her hair as the frustration of the predicament was getting to her. She prayed to God above that she wasn't being worse than Suzi. That would a nightmare for her.

Lily Joestar who, despite being 68 years old, still trained with her Hamon and maintained the appearance 30 year old woman. She turned the family butler and asked, "What do you think Rosas?"

"Both of the gowns look lovely on you Madam." Roses told with the upmost respect. Lily smiled and laughed a little at him. "Thank you Rosas." That's when the phone began to ring and Lily also thanked God for providing a distraction from going crazy and went to pick it up. "Yes, hello? Oh Joseph, darling it's you." Lily said happily while Rosas went into silent shock. "It's great to hear from you, where've you been dear? Also where are you calling from? Uh, what was that Joseph? It's a little hard to hear you."

"Uh, yeah! Sorry, I'm in a hotel. Here's the thing, I hate to say it but, uh, I have to attend some unexpected business that's come up." Joseph tells her.

"Really?" Lily let out a sigh before continuing. "Honey, I've told you to take better care of yourself. It's got to be difficult traveling on business to another country right after visiting Japan. It's been nearly a month...I miss you."

Joseph smiled warmly at his wife's voice. "Yeah, I know, sorry. I miss you too. By the way, Lily? Have you spoken to Holly?"

"Yeah I have. I just spoke with her yesterday, she mentioned catching a cold that's developed into pneumonia. She tried to convince me that it wasn't serious, but I'm considering going to visit her to see how she

is." Lily said.

"No don't, there's no need for that. I'm positive she'll recover quickly. You've become such a worrywart you know that?" Joseph said. Everyone was quite as Joseph talked. Polnareff leaned down to the others and whispered, "So this is what he meant by a delicate matter?"

"Indeed. Madam Joestar is still as free-spirited and outgoing as someone half her age, so he checks in now and again to ensure she doesn't visit Ms. Holly in Japan. That way she's protected from the truth." Avdol said, coming to them to explain the situation.

"Are you saying that she..." Kakyoin began to ask.

"I am. She hasn't been told anything. There's no need to worry her unnecessarily." Avdol said.

"Well...if you say so." Lily says as she walks down the staircase with Rosas trailing nervously behind her. "Alright, I understand. I'll hold off on going to Japan." Then a mischievous smirk spread across her face as she began to laugh. "By the way, since I have you on the line, and since you were an expert on it, which dress do you think looks good? Sparkling floral or white?"

"Oh would you shut up about that?! That was one time and you know it!" Joseph shouted, confusing the others behind him.

"Hahahaha! One time yeah, but that image is still burned into my memory. I'm still eager to tell Caesar and Phoebe about it, I just know they would want to hear about it."

"You wouldn't dare! Oh right, Lily I need to speak to Rosas, could you pass the phone to him?" Joseph asked her.

"Huh, why?" Lily asked her husband.

"Madam! Have you considered wearing your favourite cobalt blue dress to the event?" Rosas asked, rushing to her side. "If I remember correctly it's in the back of the closet. Lily thought about it for a moment. A cobalt blue dress would be perfect to wear at the charity event. Simple, elegant, yet not too stuffy. She handing the phone to

Rosas and began to walk away. "That's right. I'll have a look at it." Rosas stood there still, waiting patiently when Lily left the room.

As he heard the door shut and close behind her, he quickly held the phone to his ear and said, "Hello?! Master Joseph, it's me Rosas."

"Where's Lily?"

"She left the room sir. There's no chance of her overhearing our conversation now." Rosas told him.

"I see. I'm actually calling from the submarine that the two of us spoke of a while back." Joseph tells him. Rosas sighs in relief as he says, "Then I take it you were successful in reuniting with Master Avdol."

"That's right. Now then, tell about Holly's condition. Surely by now you've gotten hold of the doctors from the Speedwagon Foundation." Joseph says.

"Well... Actually, when speaking to her mother on the phone, Ms. Holly says that her illness is nothing more than a cold. She's quite insistent that there's no cause for alarm but her condition worsens by the day." Rosas tells the elder Joestar as he makes his way down to the second floor. "Master Joseph, don't you think the time has finally come to tell Madam Joestar the truth? I'm...f-fairly certain she'll only break one bone in our bodies."

Joseph closed his eyes and thought carefully about this. He hated having to keep something like this from Lily. But this isn't like fighting with the Pillar Men, it's something much more dangerous and he does not want to get her involved. He's doing this to protect her. He took a breath before saying, "No. There's no need to get her riled up. We're going to put an end to all this very soon. I want Holly to go back to her normal life and never know about any of this. Don't inform my wife of what's going on under any circumstances. I'll call again soon."

Rosas was silent throughout the whole thing. He knew that that was Joseph was going to say. As much as he hated to keep things a secret, he still understood why it must be. "If that is what you wish sir, I

pray for your safe return." They said their goodbyes and Rosas ended the call there. Unfortunately, he did it at a...somewhat wrong time.

"What, did you hung up the phone already?" Lily asked Rosas from upstairs as she held a tray of cups and a teapot. "I wasn't finished talking to him yet." Rosas quickly turned to face her. "Oh Madam!" The cobalt blue eyed woman laughed a bit and said, "Oh well, it doesn't matter. Why don't we have some tea? You'll join me for a cup right?"

Rosas quickly ran up the stairs and went straight to her side. "Please Madam, allow me to serve the tea for you." He said. "Are you sure? It's no trouble for me." Lily tells him.

When the call was over, Jospeh had become very somber and quiet. The others looked over to him in sympathy. "I'm sorry you have to do that. Truly." Kakyoin said. "But you can rest easy because we're right here behind you. We'll be in Egypt before you know it." Polnareff said.

"We must defeat Dio as soon as we can and save Ms. Holly from his curse. I have retuned from the brink for this very reason." Avdol told him.

"Thanks you guys...really." Joseph said. After a while, Avdol had given up the piloting position to Polnareff. Which Nemuru didn't think it was any safer than letting Joseph drive it. "Haha! Driving this is actually pretty easy, I suppose that's how you were making look so simple Avdol." Polnareff smirked. Suddenly the side of the submarine hit something making a noise rattle throughout the vessel. "For Pete's sake! Hey, don't get so carried away! Believe it or not, the sea has its fair share of rough terrain." Avdol scolded.

"Yeah, yeah, I know. All right! Let's speed this tub up a little bit-." Polnareff said before the submarine started to shake making a terrible grinding noise. "Polnareff what are you doing!?" Avdol shouted, gripping hard at the Frenchman's shoulder in anger. "I had nothing to do that you gotta believe me!" Polnareff said. "Idiot." Nemuru snickered as Polnareff was taken off the wheel. Kakyoin pulled open a drawer and counted the number of cups in it. "Oh, there's exactly seven cups in here." He said.

"Awesome. Let's make some coffee, we could use it." Nemuru said as she began working on the coffee maker. "Hey! Hurry up and make the coffee man. I want some now!" Polnareff exclaimed. "What the hell am I, your Goddamn maid?!" "Then why don't you make it yourself?!" Kakyoin and Nemuru shouted. Seeing that there was going to be another fight, Hikari quickly rose up from her seat and said, "It's okay, I'll go do it."

"W-wait, you don't-." Polnareff began to say but Hikari simply shook her head with a smile and she went to go make him a cup of coffee. Nemuru narrowed her eyes at the Frenchman and said, "If you wanted coffee so badly, why make it yourself then? Oh wait, I forgot. You're too stupid to do one simple task, my mistake."

"Shut up you-!"

"What, sorry! Can't hear you." Nemuru said as she tried around and immediately began to ignore him. He goes to call out to the dark-purple haired female but flinches, snapping his mouth shut when he locks eyes with a pair of glaring green orbs from a certain Kujo. Avdol used the periscope to look above the water and spotted dry land. "Good news! I've just spotted the coast of Africa. We'll be there soon!"

Avdol left the wheel and headed towards them as Joseph pulled out a map and laid it on the table. Avdol looked over the map and pointed to a part of the ocean. "Sea water has worn away the rocks and carved out an underwater tunnel near this coral reef. The exit is 200 meters inland and makes this the perfect spot for us to surface." Avdol explained to them.

"At long last, we've finally made it." Joseph said.

"It took long enough." Polnareff said.

"So this is Egypt." Jotaro said.

"It is, we have arrived." Avdol told them.

"This is incredible! We finally made it together!" Hikari said happily. Nemuru gave a small, relieved smile, knowing that they were almost

at Egypt. *'Mom.... Don't worry, I'm coming to save you.'* She thought to herself. She was pulled out of her thoughts when she heard Polnareff give out a laugh. "What's so funny?" Avdol asked him.

"Nothing. I'm just feeling sort of happy is all. It's been quite a while since the seven of us were all gathered together like this." Polnareff tells them. They were nearing Egypt. Once they got off this submarine, they'll be on enemy territory. But it did not matter to them in the least. They've come too far and fought many battles to be worrying about that. Whatever happens next, they'll be ready for it.

Kakyoin and the girls walked over with a tray of coffee and set the cups down for each person. As they were, Jotaro's eye caught something odd and said, "Hey, Kakyoin. Why did you guys bring eight cups for seven people?"

"Say what?" Nemuru asked, looking over the cups. "That's peculiar. I guess we didn't noticed. I could've sworn it was seven." Kakyoin said. Joseph grabbed a cup and was about to take a sip from it when the cup morphed in his hand surprising everyone. A sharp blade was formed and it cut off his prosthetic left hand. "WHAT THE-!" Joseph shouted. The blade then sliced the metallic fingers and set them flying, stabbing them into Joseph's neck. "Old Man!" "Mr. Joestar!" A creature landed on the table hissing at them.

It was that of a small creature having a tribal mask with vicious eyes and bared fangs for a face, and clawed thin, muscular arms sprouting out a mush of inorganic matter "What the hell is that?!" Nemuru yelled pointing at it, pulling Hikari behind her. "Impossible!" Polnareff shouted.

"It's a Stand.I don't know how but it managed to sneak aboard!" Avdol said. The Stand jumped on the ceiling and clung there. "**ORA!**" Jotaro brought out Star Platinum but as it took a swing at it, the enemy Stand disappeared into the ceiling of the submarine. Hikari quickly ran over to Joseph and started to immediately healed his wounds. "It disappeared!" Polnareff said.

"No, it didn't!" Jotaro shouted.

"It transformed! I'm sure of it, the Stand disguised itself as one of the

gauges! Just like with the coffee cup!" Avdol stated.

"Come again! There! The coral reef is right there and we were only a few hundred meters from reaching in Egypt!" Polnareff bellowed. Kakyoin went over to Hikari and put Joseph on his back. "On the bright side, it looks like Mr. Joestar was only knocked unconscious. The problem is his hand." As if things could get anymore troublesome the phone started to ring. "The phone! Who'd be calling us at a time like this!" Polnareff shouted. "Ignore it Polnareff! We have to stay focused!" Kakyoin said.

"It's the High Priestesses! Careful, our enemy's using a deadly Stand called The High Priestess." Avdol said.

"You know of it?" Nemuru asked.

"So how do we win?" Jotaro added.

"By knowing the user. The name of this particular Stand user is Rose. She has the ability to control her Stand from far away, so she's most likely on land." Avdol informed to the group. "What's its power?" Kakyoin asked "It can turn into almost any inanimate object as long as it comes from a mineral. Plastic, metal, glass or vinyl. Its transformations are perfect, there's no way to recognise the thing until it decides to attack." Avdol told them.

"That's freaky! But how did it sneak abroad the submarine in the first place?" Polnareff asked. Polnareff soon got the answer to his question when a gauge broke off and water started flowing in. As the water started to pour in an alarm sounded off, the lights went out and red warning lights went into motion. "I think that's our answer." Nemuru said. "I get it now, so that's how it did it. How simple, it cut a hole and moseyed on in." Polnareff said.

"The Stand found a way to damage the ballast tanks, we're sinking even faster now!" Avdol shouted as he looked over at the damages the High Priestess caused. "Not to mention we're losing oxygen! We've got to get out of here!" Kakyoin shouted. As things went from bad to worst the phone started to ring again.

"Mon dieu! Shut up! Whoever's calling has horrible timing!!"

Polnareff yelled. Hikari, who was standing right next to the phone, went to pick it up but before she could Jotaro came up behind her. "Jotaro!" Polnareff shouted as he and everyone turned to see him reaching for the phone. "Hey! Remember anything we touch might be the-!" Avdol shouted before gasping in fright when Jotaro picked up the phone and raised it to his ear. Since Hikari was so close, she could hear everything on the other end of the phone line.

"Hey there Joseph. It's me again." Lily voiced spoke through the phone. "I'm sorry, but we haven't really finished our conversation earlier so I made Rosas give me your number." She said with a smile. But then it quickly faded when she heard the sounds of rushing water and a blaring siren as well as her Joseph not responding to her. "Joseph? Why aren't you speaking? And...what's with all the noise over there? Is..is that a siren I'm hearing? And running water...? Please don't tell me you left the bathtub flowing again."

"I'm sorry, but the Old man can't come to the phone." Jotaro simply said to his Grandmother. "JoJo." Hikari whispered softly.

Lily gasped when she heard him. It's been a while and she rarely gets to see him, but she could never forget his voice. "I know that voice..! ...Is that you, Jotaro?! Where's Joseph? You should be in Japan. Why are you with your grandfather. Jotaro, answer me right now young man!!" Lily panicked over the phone. Jotaro said nothing as he contemplated his next words to calm down the older woman. Then he said, "There's nothing to worry about, Grandma Lily. He's gonna be just fine cause I'm right here with him. Later, we'll call back when things calm down."

"Jotaro-!" Lily called out but Jotaro had already hung up the phone. All she could even think was, what was going on and was her family okay?

"AHH!" Hikari screamed when the submarine shook violently, but fortunately Jotaro pulled her into his arms before she could fall over. The submarine continued to shake and rumble as it made a beeline towards the ocean floor. "Braced yourself people! We're about to hit the bottom!" Avdol shouted.

"Oh my God!" Polnareff yelled The submarine crashed as it hit the

seafloor throwing everyone around. "I knew this would happen to us somehow! It's like every vehicle we ride in, ends up getting destroyed!"

"NO SHIT, SHERLOCK!" Nemuru shouted at him.

"That is the last straw! I'm never getting in a submarine again." Jotaro said.

Back in New York, Lily stared out into the bright lights of the city as she desperately tried to call Jotaro back. But all she got in return was dead sound waves and static. She hung up the phone and looked so worried. "This doesn't make sense. I was getting through a moment ago, but not it seems that the line is dead... And why...was Jotaro there?"

Chapter 33: High Priestess part 2

Water was quickly filling up the submarine already past everyone's ankles and to make matters worse the submarine was losing oxygen quickly. It was getting so hard to breath. "You okay?" Jotaro asked Hikari. The golden-haired girl nodded as she clung on to him when he rose them back up to their feet.

"Hey you guys, the air is getting pretty thin in here." Polnareff said as Kakyoin hauled Joseph over his shoulders.

"Kakyoin, I need your help. Did you catch which one of the gauges the Stand merged with?" Jotaro asked him. Kakyoin was a little surprised but he walked over to his friend and said, while pointing to the gauge, "Well, from what I could tell, it looked like it turned into this one." Jotaro held out his arm and Kakyoin and Hikari both stepped back as Jotaro approached the gauge. He held up his fist, and Star Platinum's arms was summoned.

Everyone, including Jotaro tensed up, slowly inching his way towards it. But as it was about to make contact something moved behind Kakyoin. Avdol noticed that a light directly behind Kakyoin was flickering on and off rapidly and his eyes widened when High Priestess morphed behind the young man. "That's not it! Jotaro, it's already moved! It's right behind Kakyoin!" Avdol yelled.

"Kakyoin!" Nemuru yelled out as she moved in to save him. The Stand took a deadly swipe at Kakyoin, but quickly he dodged it. "Hierophant Green!" Hierophant Green attacked with an extreme close range **Emerald Splash**, but High Priestess was much too fast as it dodged it heading for Kakyoin. The moment when Nemuru reached him, Kakyoin took her into his arms and shielded her just as the wretched Stand sliced deep into his neck, making him cry out. "Kakyoin!" Hikari cried.

High Priestess jumps onto a wall and Star Platinum immediately went after it. He slammed his fist into the wall, creating a dent, but High Priestess dodged it and landed on another part of the submarine,

growling at Jotaro like a rabid animal before vanishing. "Everyone, head for the door, quickly. The Stand's become part of the hull's surface and is traveling through the machines!" Avdol said.

"Yeah, you say that but-." Polnareff began to say.

"If we stay in this room any longer, there's a very good chance that none of us will leave with our lives! Kakyoin, are you alright?" Avdol asked his friend.

"Yes, I'm fine." Kakyoin said as Hikari ran over to heal his neck. "Come on everyone, to the next room." Everyone one ran to the door, all the while, Hikari tried to make something in her hands. "We'll seal the room off and trap it inside!" Avdol shouted as he grabbed the handle, but as he did it transformed into High Priestess, it had already moved over and disguised itself.

"There's...! No way! It...already moved to the door and transformed itself into the wheel..!" Avdol said. He has to let go now before it's too late! Its claws were able to slice through Joseph's prosthetic hand like it was nothing! "What?!"

"Come on, come on..! Catch it, please!" High Priestess went in attack but it was quickly stopped when it became trapped in a navy blue bubble, and taking it off the door. The bubble floated itself into Soundless Voice's hands. Hikari gripped at her shirt and tried to catch her breath. "Oh thank goodness..! It worked." Hikari said. Soundless Voice looked at the High Priestess as it slammed itself against the solid bubble. She shrunk down the bubble, ceasing its movements and making sure that it was...well behaved.

"Nice Hikari! We got it!" Polnareff cheered.

"That was close." Avdol said as he sighed in relief.

"Uh, th-thank you. So...what should we do now?" Hikari asked.

"Show no mercy! Don't hesitate! Here's an idea, why don't begin by ripping off its little head!?" Polnareff shouted with a smile. Hikari paled a bit before Soundless Voice offered the bubble to Jotaro. "Maybe you should do it." She said.

"Works for me. Keep it steady." Jotaro said as Star Platinum appeared and placed his hands over the bubble. Soundless Voice dropped it and let go as Star Platinum got his hands on it. Tightening his grip on the Stand, slowly crushing it. But then, when Star Platinum began to rip its head in half, it suddenly stretched out as blood poured from its eyes, nose, and mouth. Jotaro's eyes widened in shock.

Blood dripped into the water as Jotaro growled out, "That bastard..!" "JoJo!" Hikari said. The tall teens felt pain in his hands. Hikari went up to him to see what the problem was. She gasped when she looked down and saw that his hands were bleeding due to a long cuts going across his palms. "It transformed into a freaking razor..!" Jotaro shouted. High Priestess had turned into a razor blade cutting itself free from its enemy's grasp and jumped to the ceiling again, cackling like a witch. "How are we gonna beat?!" Jotaro shouted.

"It's strong, damn!!" Avdol said.

"I can't believe it outsmarted Jotaro. What an enemy..!" In the middle of the commotion, Joseph had been dropped in the water. He sat up quickly, coughing out sea water. "Huh?! What the hell is going on?!" Joseph asked. "Whatever's happening here, I'm pretty sure that we're in a pinch!"

"Shut up old man!"

"That beast will attack us if we touch it. Which means we should to use our Stands instead!" Avdol said as fire swirled around him. "Magician's Red!!" The flame Stand emerged from the fire and went straight for its target. It shot out a stream of fire at the High Priestess but it was quick to avoid it. "Kill this bitch Shadow Mist!" Nemuru shouted as she used the darkness around her to morph hands and snakes to try and rip High Priestess apart. But no matter how many she made, High Priestess would slip right through.

"Silver Chariot!" Polnareff shouted. The knight in shining armour thrusts its sword to stab the Stand but the High Priestess quickly turned itself into solid metal. Making the sword to bang agains it. "That Stand's a tough one. Chariot's rapier can't pierce its armour. High Priestess laughed at them from the ceiling, its cackles echoing in the metal vessel. "Come on, pick up the pace! We've got to attack

before it gets away!" Joseph said.

"I need all of you to stand back!" Avdol shouted as he opened up the door, the water rushed in and Polnareff stepped inside. "There's still some oxygen over here!" He said as he ran forward. "But it's going to run out before long." Kakyoin said, following him. "Come on Hikari, let's go!" Nemuru said as she gripped her hand and ran inside. "R-right!"

"Are you alright sir?!" Avdol asked Joseph. "Yeah!" The elder man said as he ran ahead. Avdol looked behind him and saw that Jotaro was standing there in the middle of the room. Not making any attempts to move. "Forget it Jotaro! It'll only transform again. We're taking on water fast so we need to find a way to trap that thing. We'll figure out how to fight it then." Avdol tells him as he ran off.

Jotaro stood his ground and glared daggers at the Stand as it continued to laugh at him and the others at how pathetic their attempts were. Its cackling echoed through the submarine before fading away as it vanished. Jotaro sharpened his glare and vowed, "Don't get too cocky because this battle isn't over. I'll kick your ass soon enough." Jotaro ran into the other room and they locked the door behind them, hopefully trapping High Priestess inside.

"What you say?! Jotaro, why in the hell would you answer a phone call from Lily? Damn it... You know really shouldn't have done that!" Joseph said. "Whatever! We'll talk about when we get out of this mess! Leave everything to me!"

"Yeah? Do you have a plan?"

"You bet." Joseph said, a very familiar confident smirk spread across his face. "And it's a brilliant one! The one and only Joseph Joestar has been in more situations like this than he can count on the prospective hand he left behind!"

Meanwhile back in New York, Lily tried to rationalise what's going on. Her feelings right now were very mixed. She tried to drink some wine to help ease her troubles but she hasn't taken a single sip and held her head.

"I can't for the life of me begin to understand why Jotaro is with Joseph. Has Joseph said anything?" Lily asked Rosas, lifting her head up a bit. Rosas turned his gaze away and said, "No ma'am." Lily took in a breath and smiled warmly. "Although, my heart jumped with joy to hear that boy's voice after so long." She turned around to face a certain photo frame on the grand piano behind her. Though she can't see the picture, Lily knew it held a moment of Holly, Jotaro and a certain sapphire-eyed girl standing together. Smiles and warmth, remembering the younger ones entering high school.

"I've heard my precious little grandson has been quite the handful as of late. But deep down, he's a sweet child who cares very much for his family. Whatever they're doing, I'm sure he's helping Joseph as much as he can. And after all, from what he told me long ago, Jotaro's got a very dear, irreplaceable friend to take care of him." Lily said. Even though she may not know exactly what's going on, Lily knew that, as part of the Joestar family, those two are going to be just fine and face whatever challenges they might face.

Rosas turned away and covered his mouth so as to not make a sound and silent tears fell from his eyes. Bless Madam Joestar's soul. *'You have no idea how right you are, Madam. Master Jotaro and Master Joseph are most likely in the midst of battling a common enemy as we speak! They're fighting tooth and nail to save Ms. Holly, someone very dear to them, from the a curse of unbridled evil..!'* He thought to himself.

Back with the Crusaders, the group ran as fast as they could to make their way to the back of the submarine. They had to get out of this place fast because it was only a matter of time before the High Priestess claws its way out and get to them. "What do we do now?! I have a feeling that she-devil of a Stand isn't the really the one who's actually trapped here! Sooner or later, that monster's going to cut its way out of that room and catch up to us!" Kakyoin shouted.

"And to make matters even worse, as long as we're surrounded by all this machinery, we're sitting ducks! The submarine is done for anyway, we need to abandon ship and escape! We'll just have to find some other way to make it to Egypt!" Avdol said.

"Are you forgetting that we're forty meters below sea level?! I know it doesn't sound that far down but how are we supposed to get out of

here?!" Polnareff asked the group. He soon got his answer when they made it to another room where it's revealed to be storing scuba gear equipment. As the group strapped the equipment on, Polnareff said, "Are we really scuba diving all the way there? In my entire life, I've never done anything like this."

"Like we've got a choice!" Nemuru said as she pulled out a pair of goggles "Hurry everyone! Suit up on the double!" Joseph shouted. "Oh good grief." Jotaro groaned. Joseph looked down at his missing hand and said, "Ah, I just realise there's no way I'll be able to suite up in time with this busted hand. Can you help me out, Jotaro?"

"Do it yourself." Jotaro responded. As quick as they could everyone put on their scuba gear, and was ready to go. The submarine shook violently and it caused great concerns for the others. "Is anyone else here getting nervous?!" Polnareff shouted.

"Try to stay calm. Times like these requires to keep our head on straight and be prepared." Joseph tells them other. "Alright before we leave, has anyone here ever scuba dived before?" Joseph asked.

"Not me." Polnareff sounded

"No." Jotaro said

"No, I haven't." Kakyoin said

"No." Hikari said.

"Not once ever." Nemuru said.

"You have to teach us how to use this equipment right now. That thing is going to attack us any second!" Avdol said.

"Try and calm yourself Avdol." Joseph tells him as he rose to his feet. "You must never panic no matter what. That is the most important rule in scuba diving. When you're travelling underwater for every ten meters you go below the surface, the corresponding pressure increases along with you. The surface pressure starts at one atmosphere and since we're forty meters below the surface, we'll endure five atmospheres of pressure." Joseph explained. "If we surface too quickly, the pressure will cause our lungs and blood

vessels to burst. We have to ride slowly so our bodies can adjust. Since we're nearing the Egyptian coast, it's best to ascend along the sea floor." Joseph turned and went to a valve. "Now, I'm going to let water in."

Water started to flow into the room as Joseph explained how their equipment worked. "Now pay very close attention. What you're looking at is a regulator. The valve inside only allows air in from the tank when you inhale. The air you breathe out exits through the piece on the left." Joseph explained. As Kakyoin and Hikari were taking the time to practice breathing through the regulator, Polnareff turned to ask the older man, "Wait a second, how about spit? What happens if I need to drool or have to hack a loogie or something?"

"Stuff like that just comes out of the opening here." Joseph told them. "By the way, this should go without saying, but we can't talk underwater. Instead, we'll use hand signals. Let's keep things simple and only use two." Joseph started to go over hand signs to use underwater, but he was interrupted by Avdol. "Mr. Joestar, couldn't we just use our Stands to communicate underwater?" Avdol asked?

"Huh? Oh, yeah I didn't think about that." Joseph said.

"Aw man, and I was just about to say that I know a really hand signal." Polnareff clapped his hands then gave a peace sign, then an okay sign, next he put his hand over his head like he was looking for something. "He says, 'Your underwear is showing'." Kakyoin said. "Yeah, nice!" Polnareff cheered high-fiving Kakyoin. The two did some kind of epic handshake which would have been fun to watch if they weren't in the middle of being attacked and at risk of drowning. "We could be attacked and killed at anytime! Stop fooling around and let's go!" Joseph shouted.

"I'm going to drown the both of them." Nemuru said. While the water was at everyone's waist the same couldn't be said for the girls. To them, the water was just below her chest. They fixed their goggles over their eyes, then put in their regulator knowing that they were going to be the first ones submerged. The water quickly filled up the rest of the room and Joseph opened the door to the outside. He turned to everyone giving an okay sign. Kakyoin, Nemuru, Jotaro, Hikari, and Avdol returned the sign. Joseph looked over at Polnareff

but he was flailing around.

"P-Polnareff!" Joseph shouted. Polnareff's regulator had turned out to be High Priestess and it was now biting down on his lip. *"But...! When did it..?!"* Avdol shouted. High Priestess tore into Polnareff's lip drawing blood. Polnareff continued to thrash around as High Priestess tore off his goggles.

"That's it! The Stand had already integrated with the regulator!" Kakyoin said.

"That bastard..." Jotaro cursed. *"It's gonna rip him apart from the inside! We've got to drain the room while we still can!"*

"It's too late! It must've been lying in wait for just this moment!" Avdol said. The High Priestess then dove into Polnareff's mouth forcing its way down his throat. *"**ORA!**"* Star Platinum's arm came out trying to grab High Priestess but it went into Polnareff's mouth completely.*"Damn it!"* Jotaro said.

"It's already burrowing down his throat! We can't just stand here watching him like this! What should we do?!" Avdol exclaimed.

"Hierophant Green!"

"Hermit Purple!"

Hierophant Green and Hermit Purple both went up Polnareff's nose and hooked onto High Priestess, catching it before it could have a catch to damage Polnareff's organs. They forced it back up and back out of Polnareff's mouth. They held it tight and Jotaro brought out Star Platinum ready to beat it to death, but before they could do anything to stop it, High Priestess moulded and shifted its body so that it could split right through Hierophant Green and Hermit Purple's hold and began transformation into something else. Something larger.

"You've got to be kidding me?! It turned into a spear gun!" Joseph shouted.

*"**Emerald Splash!**"* Hierophant Green launched out its attack and while it was able to hit it, the spear still launched at them. Polnareff

quickly got out Silver Chariot and was able to fight against the spear, deflecting it away. Giving them time to escape.

"Let's get moving!" Polnareff called out.

"It's already reloading!" Kakyoin said.

"It doesn't quit!" Avdol yelled.

"Hurry, let's go!" Hikari said. Everyone swam out of the submarine, Polnareff being helped by Jotaro since he no longer had diving gear. They shut the door behind them just as High Priestess shot the spear at them. Successfully trapping the thing inside. Now they can focus getting to the surface. *"That was too close for comfort."* Kakyoin said as the group swam on.

"It's too soon for us to relax. Especially since that bastard knows exactly how to hit us where it hurts most." Joseph said.

"Polnareff, are you alright?" Avdol asked.

"Yeah, I'll be fine. You guys saved my life back there. Merci Beaucoup." Polnareff thanked them. Jotaro grabbed the second regulator from his tank and gave it to Polnareff. The seven of them kept swimming along the sea floor making their way closer to the coast.*" Wow..! Just look at how beautiful it is down here. This would've been a spectacular place to visit on vacation."* Polnareff said.

"This isn't time to plan your next getaway. We have to surface before we run out of oxygen." Joseph said.

"Yeah, that goes double for Polnareff and Jotaro, since they're sharing the same tank." Nemuru said.

"Think we're safe?" Kakyoin asked Avdol.

"I believe so. The High Priestess can transform into metals and glass, but it can't take the form of bubbles or fish, so I don't it'll come after us." Avdol tells him.

"Just keep your eyes peeled. If it pursues us, it'll probably transform into a screw on our gear to do it." Joseph informs them. "Be careful of moving

pebbles and stones too."

As the swam along the ocean floor, Hikari looked up and noticed something up ahead. She pointed it out to the others and said, *"Look over there. I think it's sea tunnel."*

"We're at seven meters. We've finally reached the Egyptian shore!" Joseph said.

"We can swim along these rocks to get to the surface!" Avdol said as the others proceeded to swim up to dry land. However, the more they swam closer, the more tangled in the web they became. Eyes and a mouth opened up and reveal the face of High Priestess. Growling loudly at them.*"Swim away hurry!"* Nemuru yelled. But it was too late for them, High Priestess opened up its mouth and everyone got caught in the strong water currents as High Priestess sucked in water and pulled the group inside its mouth. They wondered why and how the thing could get so gigantic when it was so small earlier.

As High Priestess rises up from the sea floor, a woman's voice began to echo around them. Rose, the Stand's user, had made her presence known to them. *"You boys and girls are slow on the uptake. Didn't it ever cross your minds, that if the rocks are mineral, it would mean the seabed is mostly mineral as well?"* She asked, in a condescending tone.

"Yes, of course! That's why the Stand has suddenly gotten stronger! It's user must be nearby and I wager she's closer than we think!" Kakyoin shouted.

"You guessed it. And to be more precise, I'm seven meters above you on the shore but since you're about to be ground to bits by my High Priestess, you'll never have the chance to see my face! So long!" Rose said, already beginning to gloat about her assured victory over them.

"OH SHE IS SO A BITCH!!" Nemuru shouted. High Priestess shot out a large jet of water shooting out all the water in its mouth. Making the others inside to land hard on the Stand's tongue. But they don't know that. Yet. "It's so dark here. I can't tell which part of the Stand we're in." Kakyoin said.

"Seems like we're still inside its mouth. But luckily weren't sucked

down its gullet." Joseph said.

Just then Rose's voice appeared again and...it held a flirtatious tone to it? What the hell?! "Yoo-hoo~! Jotaro! Believe it or not, you're actually my type, so this going to be as painful for me as for you." She said. An instant frown came upon Nemuru's face. First, this bitch was trying to kill them now she's flirting Jotaro too. Hikari felt the same way, albeit not in the manner as Nemuru, but she rose up to her feet and walked closer to the tall delinquent. "But despite my feelings, I still have to make the High Priestess digest you." She said.

That's when Polnareff develop a plan and motioned for Jotaro to lean in closer and whispered it in his ear all while Rose kept on talking. "How sad. If only our encounter had been under different circumstances. But if I kill you, Lord Dio will no doubt shower me with praise, so don't hate me." She said.

"I'm gonna tear her a new one if we get out of here..!" Nemuru hissed out as Jotaro looked somewhat disgust by Polnareff's plan. He took a quick glance at Hikari beside him, who was unaware at the plan, before saying, "Good grief, do I have to?"

"Would you just say it?!" Polnareff whispered/yelled as he gave a soft punch to Jotaro's shoulder. "Come on, hurry up and get on with it."

"Say what?" Avdol asked in confusion.

"Huh?" Joseph went.

"Ah, I see." Kakyoin said.

"Wait, what's happening here?" Nemuru asked.

"JoJo?" Hikari asked as she looked up at her friend.

Jotaro remained quite for a bit before he said, "It's a shame things turned out this way. I would've liked to have seen your face if only this once. You might've been my type too, and if you were, well...I just might've fallen for you."

"Huh?" Hikari went as her eyes widen. Things were getting brighter inside the Stand's mouth and based on the red tint, it meant that Rose

was blushing. "Oh hey, you know what guys!? I bet she's a beauty, I can tell from that gorgeous voice of hers." Polnareff said.

"She comes across as an elegant woman. My fortune-tellers' instincts senses it." Avdol added.

Hikari and Nemuru were now standing by the sidelines as they watched this unfold. Nemuru just crossed her arms and looked a bit disapprovingly at the lot. "This is pretty pathetic. Flattery does not get people anywhere, unless the skank is very narcissistic." She whispered. Hikari gave a small smile and nodded. A faint blush coloured her face, ashamed of herself for feeling the way she did. It was a fleeting experience...but for a moment, Hikari thought her heart twinged in jealousy.

"Well if you ask me, she sounds just like Audrey Hepburn." Kakyoin said.

"Man, if I were only thirty-years younger." Joseph said.

That's when things began to glow brighter and brighter, and from outside the High Priestess's face contorted to that of one filled with rage. High Priestess started to shake and Rose shouted, "You bastards didn't mean a single word of that!! I'll kill you all!" The tongue they were standing on moved and threw them up into the air. She's really mad now.

"Holy...Shit!!" Joseph shouted. "Everyone, look!" Kakyoin shouted out as the Stand's giant tongue was heading towards them! Planning to crush them one way or another. "Here it comes!"

"Jotaro!!" Rose shouted as the slammed the High Priestess tongue hard against Jotaro's back, making a sickening crack as the tall delinquent coughed up blood and knocking his diving equipment off him. The blow of the attack sent Jotaro flying to land on one of the High Priestess's massive, boulder-like tooth. "Jotaro, get out of there now!" Polnareff shouted. "You're about to be crushed!" Kakyoin yelled. "**Ora!**" Star Platinum was quickly summoned and held up the massive tooth to keep it from crushing it. Apparently, Rose saw this as a challenge. "Ooh~! You want to pit your strength against mine do you?" Rose taunted him. As much as Star Platinum tried to fight

against the tooth, the more pressure that the High Priestess puts, the more Star Platinum was being pushed back.

'Damn! What ridiculous power!' Jotaro thought. Just then a shield formed above him, pushing the tooth back a bit. Soundless Voice appeared above them as she held out her hands against the shield. "JoJo, run!" Hikari called out to him. But before Jotaro could even move, the tooth slammed down against the shield. Soundless Voice was knocked down but still pressed her hands against the shield, unfortunately it was beginning to crack. Simultaneously, Hikari felt a sharp, stinging pain in her chest as she fell to her knees. Star Platinum went to Soundless Voice's side and held up the shield as well. Even with both their strength, it wasn't enough.

"Oh give up Jotaro! Those teeth are as hard as diamonds, you'll never be able to break them!" Rose said. "Even with that little girl's help, you won't make out if this alive! It's time for you to meet your end!"

"We have to save Jotaro!" Joseph shouted as he summoned both his Hamon and Hermit Purple and ran towards his grandson while the others summoned their respective Stands. Before they could do anything to save their friend and ally, High Priestess tongue came swinging at them again, blocking their chances to get to Jotaro. "Stay out of my way!" Rose shouted.

"That damn tongue again!" Polnareff shouted. The tongue swiped at them, but luckily Kakyoin's Hierophant Green wrapped itself around its user and the others, lifted them away from the impeding danger. Unfortunately, due to the sudden liftoff, Hikari lost concentration and her shield and Stand vanished. Avdol brought Magician's Red and the flaming-wielding Stand turned its body into a fire torpedo and aimed straight towards the tender flesh. Rose screamed and moved the tongue away, but it was too late. Jotaro's whole body was being blocked by the teeth, with only his arm and part of the oxygen tank sticking out.

"We're out of time!" Joseph yelled. "We have to free him!" The elder Joestar shot out Hermit Purple and stretched out the vines to reach his grandson, but it was no use. The vines couldn't get to him in time and the moment where the tank began to let out air, everyone was left shocked as the tank exploded. The teeth slammed down and

crushes Jotaro's body underneath.

"JOTARO!!" Everyone screamed out.

Chapter 34: We finally made it

"No, those giant teeth pulverised him!" Polnareff said in shock.

"J-Jotaro..." Joseph said.

"J...JoJo..!" Hikari said as tears formed in her eyes and clenched at her heart. No way....he can't be... Jotaro is.... "This can't be real...." She said as she nearly collapsed to the ground if Nemuru hadn't caught her. She held the girl close as she stared back at the black imprint of the tank's explosion. Avdol cursed under his breath as he turned away. "We didn't make it in time." As the group fears for the worst, Joseph suddenly hears something strange in the distance. It was muffled. But he was sure he could hear it.

".....!" "Hm? Hold on a sec. I think I can hear something." Joseph said as he lifted a hand to his ear. Listening carefully, straining his ear so that the sound could be more clearer. The sounds get louder and louder with each passing second. "It's definitely coming from far away." Avdol says.

"Listen again, I think it's getting closer." Kakyoin said.

"Doesn't it sound oddly familiar?" Nemuru asked. Hikari lifted up her head as she quickly recognised the sounds. She began to smile as it kept getting louder and louder. "Wait, that voice belongs to-!" Polnareff said, a smile growing on his face.

"ORA! ORAORAORAORAORAORAORAORAORAORA!!"

"The teeth! It's coming from inside the teeth!" Polnareff shouted as he pointed towards the source of the sounds. Joseph's eyes widened slightly and instantly duck down, covering his head. "Everyone! Get down and brace yourselves!" He shouted. "Huh?" Polnareff went. As soon as he did, a huge chunk of the teeth burst out and out comes Star Platinum, busting through the teeth and revealing an alive and well Jotaro.
"**ORAORAORAORAORAORAORAORAORAORAORAORAORAORA!!!!**

"Those teeth were as hard as diamonds but he managed to punch his way out!" Polnareff said. "OH MY GOD! And would you look at that, he's breaking the other teeth while he's at it!" Joseph shouted. "JoJo! He's okay!" Hikari cried out with an overjoyed smile. "That's show off." Kakyoin said with a smile. "That guy must like looking cool doesn't he?" Nemuru said. "His Stand's immense power never cease to amaze me." Avdol said.

"Come on. I'm getting us out of this hellhole." Jotaro tells the others. "**ORAORAORAORAORAORA! ORA!**" Star Platinum shouted as he destroyed all of the Stand's diamond-hard teeth, and they all break free from High Priestess' mouth. As the group heads back up to the water's surface. Jotaro turns his head back the High Priestess and said, "Oh good grief. Well, you were right about those teeth being sturdy but they weren't sturdy enough. Too bad, I guess your so-called diamonds were a little low on calcium." With that said, Jotaro rejoins with the others and the High Priestess dissipates from the seabed and was reduced to that of sea-foam.

When the group reaches the shore they took the time they have to breath in the fresh air and relax before continuing on as they took off their diving gear. "You couldn't pay me to do that again." Joseph said as he and the others took notice of a woman lying on the beach unconscious. She looks to be a woman of average height and build, dark brown hair and wearing a simple dress.

"Hey there's a woman passed out over there." Joseph said.

"I assume it's Rose, the user of the High Priestess." Avdol said.

"She doesn't seem dangerous, should we just leave her?" Kakyoin asked.

"Sounds like a good idea to me." Nemuru said.

"I think I'll go see if she's hot or not." Polnareff said walked over to the woman. "From the looks of it, she's got a pretty nice body. Let's see...." Polnareff walked closer to take a peek at her face.

"How's it going over there Polnareff?" Joseph asked. Polnareff inspects the body...but regrets doing so immediately, as her face took

quite the beating from Star Platinum. "AHHHH! Nothing to see here folks, no comment whatsoever!! Trust me you don't want to see her! Her teeth are all....URGH!! So there's no point looking!" Polnareff shouted, shocked and was grossed out at once.

"I see." Joseph said. Nemuru smirked behind her hand as Hikari looks worriedly at the woman. Should she go and heal her a bit...? Or not...? She did flirt with Jotaro....but that doesn't mean it's okay to leave her like this. ....Right? Hikari was pulled out of her thoughts when she felt an arm wrapped around her shoulders and then looked up at Jotaro who was smiling down at her. Hikari didn't look away getting lost in the moment with Jotaro, but felt her face grow warm. She turned away, trying to not show her blushing face. *'How am I supposed to show JoJo that I....?'*

The group then all looked at the rising sun and enjoyed the warmth it brought. The start of a new day and signifying their safe arrival to Egypt. "What a sight for sore eyes." Nemuru smiled.

"It hasn't been easy, but we've finally made it to Egypt." Avdol said.

"Indeed. A trip would've taken a mere twenty hours by plane ended up taken up a whopping thirty days." Joseph said.

"I knew it. I just knew that we would all arrive here to together." Hikari giggled.

"It's been quite the adventure. We've gone inside a brain and even inside our dreams." Kakyoin said.

"Our dreams? What do you mean Kakyoin?" Jotaro questioned.

"Why are you talking about dreams, it's morning. Wake up already." Polnareff said.

"Oh, right. You guys don't remember that." Kakyoin said, reaching over to hold Nemuru's hand. Which had caused the latter's face to turn bright red from the sudden gesture, but she didn't take her hand back and just turned away from him. Jotaro just gave a small chuckle and said, "Whatever. Let's go."

Seven mysterious, and other worldly Stands. Five powered by the

mystically and symbolised by the Tarot. Joseph Joestar once described their journey as 'Around the World in Eighty Days'. From Tokyo to Hong Kong, they faced Tower of Gray. In southeast Asia, they tackled Dark Blue Moon and Strength, but gained a friend and ally in Shadow Mist. In Singapore, they encountered Ebony Devil and Yellow Temperance. In Calcutta, India, it was Hang Man and Emperor. In Varanasi, India, the Empress and near the Pakistani boarder, they fought Wheel of Fortune. In the mountains of Pakistan, they battled Justice. In Karachi, Pakistan, the Lovers. In the desert of the United Arab Emirates, the Sun and Saudi Arabia, Death Thirteen. On the small Island in the Red Sea, Judgement and now they've just defeated High Priestess.

With several of Dio's assassins vanquished, they have finally arrived in Egypt. However, only a few of the Tarot cards still remain. But little do Jotaro and company know, new threats lay away in Egypt. Ready to take our heroes on.

In a unknown part of Egypt, a spy from the Speedwagon Foundation sat quietly in a room. It was dark, so he wouldn't be easily spotted from the building. He sat at the window and held up binoculars. Watching the streets for any suspicious movement. His eyes blinked when he caught sight of something odd. He counted. "That's...one, two, three... Nine. There are nine in all, both genders." He said. Looks like Dio had made his own move.

Bubbling. The sudden sound of water bubbling caught his attention and the spy looked behind him to see where the sound was coming from in the room. He saw it, but he didn't have a moment to process it or even let out a scream or a yell as it instantly attacked him. Then, everything fell silent. The thing was gone, and the spy was left in a state of confusion.

"What the..? What the hell...was that?" The spy managed to say before his head slid off of his neck. Rolling on the wooden floor and blood squirted out from the stump. The body moved towards the floor but a hand grabbed the shoulder before it could fall.

"Have the meddlesome flies swarming around been swatted?" Dio asks as he goes through one of the books of his personal library with one of his servants kneeling before him from a distance. "That

Speedwagon Foundation...for pity's sake, I can't let my guard down for a minute." He said with a slight chuckle as he put the book and walked past another decapitated body of a Speedwagon spy.

"I must say, I've gotten quite used to this body. Tell me Jonathan, can you feel it? Your descendants are inching ever closer. It can be so cruel and unforgiving...this wretched little world of ours. Know this....no matter what...no matter how long it takes... Viola Rose will belong to me. She will be mine, and if I have to use different vessel to have her...so be it." Dio said.

The next day

The group arrived in a small town to get some supplies and to rent a car to travel along the desert. As they were walking through the shops, Hikari kept looking at Jotaro and every time she did, her heart would be twisted, heavy with nervousness and her mind would get fuzzy. They've been together for so long...they've been best friends for so long... It would make sense for her to fall in love with him, right? It's perfectly natural for her to love him, right? Hikari thought about it a lot and felt that she needed to tell Jotaro how she feels. She looked over and saw Nemuru looking at her with a smile. Nemuru gave her friend an encouraging nod. Hikari took a deep breath before walking towards Jotaro.

"U-uh, JoJo...?" She asked, timidly. Jotaro stopped walking and turned around to face her. "Yeah? What's up?" He said. He blinked when he saw how anxious she looked. He placed a hand on her shoulder and asked, "You feeling alright? You looking a little red." Hikari nodded and held onto his hand. "Mm-hmm. C-...Can I talk to you?" She said, looking up at him with sweet, innocent eyes. Jotaro couldn't, not that he'll ever be able to, say no to those eyes and nodded. He allowed the smaller girl to lead him away while the others, subtly, watched them leave. Once they turned the corner to an alleyway, they quickly ran to catch up. Hiding behind the corner to watch the events unfold.

Hikari let go and walked a few inches away before stopping. Her heart was pounding inside her chest, it was few seconds away from bursting out. Hikari never felt this nervous before in her life. Suddenly she felt a little sick. What if she messes this up? Would

Jotaro hate her? Make fun of her? Break off their friendship? The thought of Jotaro leaving her in any way terrified her.

"Hikari?" Jotaro asked, a little more concerned now that he was seeing that she was shaking. Hikari took another deep breath before turning around. With her hands clenching the end of her skirt, Hikari looked at Jotaro and said, "I...don't want to be friends anymore."

.....

.....?! WHAT?!

What?! What the hell was she talking about?! Did she really just say that?! Wha-?! Why?! Why would she-?! Was this because of Dan? The trip itself?

Jotaro's eyes widen in shock. "The hell...?" Jotaro said. Hikari quickly noticed the shock and confusion in his green eyes and felt her face heat up to a nice shade of crimson. She instantly became flustered and tried to clear herself from any horrible misunderstanding.

"No, no, no!! No, honey! It's not what you're thinking! It's nothing like that! Not at all! We...we've best friends forever! Since we were kids! I've always cherished you and what we've done together! I've always appreciate all the things you've done for me and I really hoped I wasn't an inconvenience on you! I never wanted that! A-And I know that you care about me too, but I know that you'll never really like girls like! But that's okay, really. I'll be more than happy to keep being your best friend! I care so much about you that in fact, I consider you to be my hero! I want to grow to be confident and tough like you! You're cool and strong, and everyone likes you! The whole school admires you! Even I-!"

Jotaro just stood there, looking more confused than ever at Hikari as she tried to explain herself. More like go into a rambling. He didn't know what she was trying to say or what point she was trying to make. Even so, Jotaro can NOT allow things to end like this. Hikari was his whole world! His angel! He loves her! He clenched his fist as he took a step forward. Hikari seemed to realise this and shut up when she knew that she was just making things more awkward and confusing for the both of them.

"I'm sorry....I'm making this uncomfortable for you am I?" Hikari asked as she hung her head in embarrassment. Jotaro now stood in front of her. Her heart kept on beating at a rapid pace.*"The best thing you can do is to go in and show him. Make the first move!"* Nemuru's words echoed in her head. Very slowly, her nervousness drift away. Her heart was still uncontrollably beating. "Make the first move..." Hikari whispered. Jotaro placed his hands on her shoulders. "Hikari-."

Before he could say anything else, Hikari gripped at his uniforms collar and pulled him down. She stood on her tiptoes and kissed him. Jotaro's eyes widened in pure astonishment and let out a muffled yell. "MMH?!" Fireworks went off inside him. Jotaro didn't know what happened. One minute he was trying to tell Hikari he loves her. The next she was kissing him. He couldn't believe this was happening. Her lips were so soft against his. They reminded him of rose petals. Her kiss tasted sweet, like strawberries.

Meanwhile, Nemuru and Avdol were quietly celebrating that they were right!! While Kakyoin, Polnareff, and Joseph shocked, baffled and genuinely surprised that Hikari would be brave enough to do that.

Jotaro's shock went down and calmed down once he realised that this was truly happening. He was about to wrap his arms around her and deepen the kiss, but because he didn't react in time, Hikari suddenly pulled away from him and backed off. Her face was beet red and covering her mouth. She can't believe she just did that. She can't believe she was so stupid to even do that!! What was she thinking!? Tears fell from her sapphire blue eyes as she backed away.

"I-I-I'm so sorry..! I-I didn't mean to do that... I thought that maybe you'd... I'm sorry..." Hikari said as she run away, crying in shame. Jotaro couldn't even say or do anything to stop her before she ran off. Hikari ran past the others, unaware that they were watching them the whole time, but Nemuru did chase after her, leaving Jotaro stunned.

An hour later

"So that's what's been going on? Why didn't you just tell me little JoJo was helping you with your work, hon? That's fantastic." Lily

says.

"Hmph! The boy still has a long way to go compared to me." Joseph says as he glances towards Jotaro with a small glare. He was calling his wife through a pay phone. The tall delinquent stood a ways off to the side, barely listening to his grandfather's conversation and was way too deep in thought about what happened. For the past hour, he had been trying to get Hikari to talk to him but when she even looked at his direction, her face would flare up and walk away and stand by Nemuru. She wouldn't even respond to him when he called out to her.

"So this work is important enough for you to ask for help?" Lily asked him.

"That's right. It's my important mission yet and it's imperative that we don't mess up. But as long as we work together, we should be get it done without too much trouble." Joseph says.

"Hm. Oh, Joseph? Can I talk to Jotaro?" She asks.

"Huh? Sure, but what do you want to talk to him about?" Joseph questioned.

"Nothing much. Why, is it a problem for me to hear my darling grandson's voice?" Lily asked with a slight tone.

Joseph's voice got caught in his throat as he says, "Well, no." The elder Joestar then turned to his grandson and held out the phone. "Jotaro, it's for you." He said. "Hm?" Jotaro went as he walked over to him and took the phone in his hand. "Hey it's me." Jotaro said.

"Grandpa told me everything Jotaro. Work hard and take good care of your grandfather for me." Lily tells him with a gentle voice.

"Will do."

"I know in my heart if you work together, you Joestar men can overcome just about any hardship that comes your way. I truly believe that." She said, surprising Jotaro. "Grandma Lily, you..."

"What's wrong? You sound so serious all of a sudden."

"...It's nothing."

Lily gave a small laugh as she said, "Alright, I'm hanging up now. I look forward to good news. Oh yeah, Jotaro? Be sure to take extra good care of Hikari. I know how much she means to you. Ciao!" When she ended the call, Rosas stepped up to her and said, "Madam. It's hard to believe it but...at this point, it's already been thirty years that I worked for the Joestar family. But I can honestly say that we've never faced something of this magnitude...!"

"Oh come now, you're overreacting. Didn't he say it was just a little business trip?" Lily asked Rosas with a carefree smile. The butler of the Joestar family nearly jumped back in surprise. Guess he dropped the gun a little bit. "Oh! Well I suppose so?" He said.

"It's so annoying when men act selfishly and refuse to tell us anything." Lily says as she walked over to table that held the precious memories over the course of the years. She picked a special photo. One of her daughter with her child. Holly had her hands on Jotaro's shoulders while he held one of her hands. All smiling brightly at the camera. Lily smiled lovingly at the photo. "But I've grown accustom to it. The Joestar family has been like this for an entire century. I'm sure if she were here, she'd say the same thing and laugh it all off."

In the silent night in Japan, Holly still laid asleep in her futon as a nurse watched over her. While she was burning up a fever and sweat fell from her face, in her sleep, Holly gave a smile. Because in her heart, she had hope. She fully believed that her father and son will save her and the world.

When Jotaro put the phone back on the receiver, Joseph noticed the serious, yet humble look on his grandson's face. "Hm? What's the matter Jotaro?" He asked him.

"Hm? It's nothing I'm fine." Jotaro said. Joseph looked at him weirdly before deciding to just leave things at that. "Alright, it's time to head out! After a century, it's time for us Joestars to bring an end to Dio's grip on our family."

"We don't have to do it alone." Jotaro said with a real smile as he motioned his head behind him. Then a car honking its horn caught

Joseph's attention. "Hey, Mr. Joestar! We got the car that you asked us to buy!" Kakyoin called out from the dune buggy-like car.

"Let's hurry up and hit the road." Polnareff said.

"Come on, let's move it!" Nemuru said.

"We should probably get to where we're going before it gets to dark!" Kakyoin tells them.

"Well old man." Jotaro said.

"Okay you're right. Guess we're pretty lucky huh?" Joseph said with a smile.

"If you don't get a move on, we'll leave you behind!" Polnareff called out.

"Yeah, yeah! Hold your horses, we're coming!" Joseph called back with a smile. It was almost time. Now that they were in Egypt, the battle against the supernatural that the Joestar Family has carried out for a century will soon come to an end. But they won't do it alone. They have it get done with their trusted allies along the way.

This is the land of Egypt, A nation that's 97% desert. However, thanks to the blessings of the nile, beautiful fertile green spreads across the entirety of its riverbanks. In addition to the culture of the ancient Egyptians. Egypt is also home to Persian, Greek, Roman, Muslin and Arabian cultures and all have left their indelible marks. What bizarre adventures and challenges await Jotaro and the others in this eternal land as they continued their perilous journey?

Chapter 35: Iggy The Fool and Geb's N'Dool part 1

The group had driven out to the middle of the desert where they were waiting for a rendezvous set up by Joseph. A loud sound caught everyone's attention and they looked up to see a helicopter.

"They've arrived." Joseph sated with a smile.

"It's a helicopter!" Polnareff said. "Thanks for the update Captain Obvious." Kakyoin mused.

"They're here from the Speedwagon Foundation and they're looking

for somewhere to land." Joseph explained.

"Speedwagon Foundation? Correct me if I'm wrong but aren't they the group that's looking after Mom back in Japan? They're old friends of yours, right?" Jotaro questioned. "Yeah, that's them all right." Joseph said. Everyone shielded their eyes as the helicopter landed, kicking up sand. "So what? Are we taking a helicopter from here on out?" Jotaro asked.

"Not quite. As much as I'd like to, the guys working for the Foundation aren't Stand users, so we'd be putting them at risk." Joseph said.

"Well if they're not here to give us a ride, what's the occasion then?" Kakyoin asked.

"They've brought us a new ally." Joseph said.

"Turigol. An ally?" Polnareff pondered.

"I have to warn you, he's a bit of a handful. Which is a primary reason it took so long to fetch him." Joseph said.

"Mr. Joestar! You aren't seriously considering taking him with us are you?! His presence here would only hold us back." Avdol exclaimed.

"Huh? So...do you know him too, Mr. Avdol?" Hikari asked the Egyptian fortune-teller. "Yeah, very well." Avdol said.

"Not only that, but are you saying that he might actually harm us?" Kakyoin asked.

"Correct." Avdol said, nodding in confirmation. "So be careful."

"Not so fast. This ally of ours, are you saying that he's a Stand user too?" Jotaro asked.

"Yes, that's right and his Stand is represented by the card known as, The Fool," Joseph said.

"The Fool?"

"Wait, 'The Fool'?" Polnareff laughed. "Hah! It sounds like a pretty stupid card if you want my opinion."

"You should count your blessings that he's on our side. You can't beat him." Avdol stated. Polnareff let out a small growl and walked over to grab Avdol's shoulder. *'Oh no not again.*' Nemuru groaned in thought. She knew where this was going. "I suggest watching your mouth if you know what's good for you Avdol." Polnareff said. "It's true Polnareff. Now move your hand, you're hurting me." Avdol said.

"Who died and made you the boss!"

"Stop it, please. Stop fighting." Hikari said as she got in between them and separated them. "Enough, you two. The helicopter's here." Kakyoin interrupted. The front door of the helicopter opened and two men in the Speedwagon Foundation uniforms came out. Hikari had to admit the men were a little intimidating and hide behind Nemuru. The two pilots stepped out of the helicopter and walked over to Joseph. "Mr. Joestar, good to see you." He said, shaking the elder man's hand.

"Thank you for bringing him here. Must've been rough." Joseph said.

"So. Which one of you is it? Who's the Stand user?" Jotaro asked. The two men looked over a Jotaro, but they didn't say anything. "Well, are you gonna answer me or not? Is it you?" Jotaro asked, looking over at the younger looking man. "No, sir. Neither of us is the user. He's actually in the back." The younger man answered, pointing over to the back seat of the helicopter. The other guy opened the back door but there's nothing in there, except for a blanket. "In the back huh? I don't see anyone." Jotaro said.

"No, he's there." The young pilot said. Polnareff walked forward to the helicopter, "Hey, hey hey! Cut it out! Come on quit joking around! What's the deal, the guy's really short or something? Come out, come out wherever you are!" Polnareff slaps his hand on one of the seats, while the pilot shouted out a warning at him to watch out. Then Polnareff's hand hits something warm and sticky. "Huh? That's weird, what the hell is this stuff?"

"Please be careful! It was a rough copter ride, so he's in a foul mood!"

The pilot shouted again.

"Step away! I already told you this guy is trouble!" Joseph said.

"Get back Polnareff, you cannot beat him." Avdol said.

"What's the big deal? All I'm doing is asking where he is!" Polnareff shouted. The blanket starts to rustle and something shoots out from under it hitting Polnareff in the face. "H-H-H-H-H-H-He's...." Hikari's and Nemuru's eyes widen with stars in them as they both stared at the small creature on Polnareff's face. "A Dog!" "Aw, what cute puppy!" The dog was barking at Polnareff baring his fangs. He started to rip Polnareff's hair out by the mouthful. He was a small, black and white Boston Terrier. His paws, stomach, chest, and neck are white, as are the area around his mouth and forehead. His eyes are blue, and he has loose jowls.

"A dog?!" Kakyoin shouted.

"Don't tell me this dog is-." Jotaro said.

"Mmm-hmm." Joseph said as he slightly hung his head. "Yes, this dog possesses the Stand of The Fool. His name is Iggy and he's crazy about ripping chunks of hair out of people's heads. To be honest with you, I'm not sure where he's from but Avdol found him in New York after none of the dog catchers could wrangle him. And it's thanks to him that he's not roaming the streets now. Oh, there's something I probably should've mentioned. When he's in the middle of ripping out someone's hair, he likes to-"

POOOOT

Iggy let a huge fart rip out while he was still attached to Polnareff's face. "-pass gas in their face. It's a disgusting habit really." Joseph finished. Nemuru bursted out laughing and held her sides to keep them from splitting. "Hahahahaha!! I like him already!" She laughed. Iggy jumped away from Polnareff just as the man collapsed onto his back. Probably from the smell. When he recovered from him, Polnareff jumped back onto his feet and glared at the Boston Terrier. "You little mutt, you're gonna pay for that! Damn you....Chariot!" Polnareff shouted, bringing forth his silver armoured knight.

Iggy's eyes widened and the sand around him started to pick up, then it formed into a metal monster like dog. It took its form by manipulating sand and dust particles in the environment. It takes the form of that of a mechanical, quadruped creature, combined with something like a car chassis, with thick wheels for hind legs, and pawed mechanical front legs equipped with two to three cables, each linking the paws to the body. Its head and face are comprised of a growling tribal mask with eight or nine feathers sticking from its head.

"He *is* a Stand user....how cute!" Hikari said happily. "If he does somehow managed to work with us, I'm going to really love having him around." Nemuru said.

"Holy cow!" Polnareff shouted.

"So that thing is The Fool." Jotaro said.

"When we were in Singapore, we fought an orangutan Stand user....but this is-!" Kakyoin said.

"Who does this stupid mutt think he is?! Bastard, don't make me turn you into dog meat!" Polnareff yelled. Silver Chariot struck The Fool but it split in half turning into sand, making Silver Chariot unable to cut him. It then moved around Silver Chariot's sword, solidifying itself and holding onto it. "Is that..?" Kakyoin asked. "Yes, the dog's Stand is made entirely out of sand." Avdol said.

"Hm. As simple as the design is, it's so powerful I'm not sure if I could land a punch." Jotaro said. Iggy was once again on Polnareff's face, ripping out his hair. "Guys! What are you doing?! Help! Get this dog off of me!" Polnareff shouted. "Oh hell no, I'm too busy thoroughly enjoying this." Nemuru laughed. "I'm sorry, Polnareff. But it's all the same to you, I like to keep my hair." Kakyoin said.

"You monsters!" Polnareff screamed.

"Did you happened to bring his favourite snack with you?" Avdol asked the pilot. "Of course I did. He wouldn't have come with us otherwise." The Pilot said, he reaches into his pocket and pulls out a small rectangular package and hands it to Avdol. Iggy immediately

catches a whiff of the treat and starts barking running over. "The dog's sense of smell is simply incredible." Avdol said.

"And that is?" Kakyoin asked. "It's Coffee flavoured chewing gum and Iggy will do just about anything to savour this tasty little morsel." Avdol said, pulling a stick out of the box. "No! Mr. Avdol, quickly! Hide the packet before he-!" The pilot shouted to warn him but then Iggy jumped up and was able to snatch the whole box out of Avdol's hand and starts tearing into it. "Blast it, he grabbed the whole thing!"

"He can't get enough of his coffee-flavoured gum as you can see. People on the other hand are different story, unfortunately." Joseph said. "The least he can do is take the wrapping off." Avdol muttered.

Hikari smiled brightly and makes her way forward to Iggy. She stands right next to him and reaches down. "Hikari, wait!" Avdol shouted. Hikari puts her hand out over Iggy's head. Iggy pauses chewing and looks up at Hikari whose smiling down at him. He lifts his head up and allows Hikari to pet him. "So cute." She said. Nemuru walked over as well and began rubbing Iggy's back. "You're not so bad, are you little guy?" Nemuru said.

All of the men are stunned to see Hikari picking Iggy up and holding him without any issues. He's still chewing on his gum as the golden-haired girl continued to hold him and the dark-purple haired girl scratched beneath his chin. "Iggy's not so bad if we be nice to him. He's was just in a bad mood that's all." Hikari said. "Seriously, I'm more of a cat person, but I can't say no to a handsome dog like this." Nemuru said, petting Iggy's head.

"I-Incredible. Hikari's holding him." Avdol said.

"I can understand Nemuru. But I'm impressed with Hikari. Maybe she's got a way with wild beasts." Kakyoin said, his eyes drifting to Jotaro. Jotaro gave him a 'shut up!' look and the purple-eyed teen held in a laugh as he looked back at the girls. "But in all seriousness, how is a gum-obsessed, feral dog supposed to help us?" He asked.

"Good grief..."

"Damn that little menace...!" Polnareff shouted standing up, fixing his

hair and glaring at the dog. "He's completely ruined my picturesque hair!"

"He'll be distracted while he's chewing his gum. Let's get the supplies." The pilot said. Soon after, the men unloaded the rest of the supplies, and Joseph even got a new prosthetic hand. Jotaro, along with the pilot, took out a couple of bags. "Here's the food and water you'll be needing for your trip sir."

"Oh thank you."

"They're are medical supplies and a change of clothes too. We also took the liberty of buying a new camera to use with your Stand."

"Yeah, I supposed it'll be a lot easier than using a T.V right?" Joseph said as he took the camera from the pilot. A thought ran through his mind and called out to the rest of the time. The group got together and posed for a picture. Hikari, much to her uneasiness, stood next to Jotaro but still smiled brightly with a faint blush on her cheeks while Nemuru stood between Kakyoin and Avdol, with Kakyoin's arm wrapped around the girl's shoulder.

"Fantastic. This is a perfect memento." Kakyoin said.

Jotaro took the copy of the picture and smiled at it, but was pulled away from it when he heard Polnareff screaming again. "AHHH! Avdol, hurry up and give him of the stupid gum!" Polnareff yelled as Iggy chased him. Avdol and Nemuru looked at each other and laughed. "Now why in the world would I do that when the two of you are already such good friends, Polnareff!" Avdol laughed. Feeling bad for the poor Frenchman, Hikari plucked Iggy off the ground holding him. Polnareff stopped running catching his breath. "Please be nice to him sweetie." Hikari tells him.

"Thank you, Hikari!" Polnareff said with a smile. He went to go pat Hikari's shoulder but Iggy snapped at Polnareff's hand making him pull back. With their work already finished, the pilots started up the helicopter and made preparations to leave. One stood outside and said to Joseph, "Well, if that's everything, I think we're going to be heading back now Mr. Joestar."

"Answer this before you leave, it's regarding my daughter's condition. And I want you to be straight with me, how's my baby girl holding up?" Joseph asked.

The pilot looked hesitant to answer him, but knowing how serious this was as well as knowing a part of the reason why they're fighting this battle in the first place, he told him. "Well...to be perfectly frank with you sir, it's not looking good right now. She's rapidly losing strength and nothing seems to help her condition. Our doctors at the Speedwagon Foundation say, she has two weeks at best."

Everyone became worried from that. Two weeks. They have just two weeks left before their deadline. Not only do they have that much to save Holly, but also to kill Dio before his spreads his evil all over humanity. "Oh God...." Nemuru said, breathlessly. "We're all out of time." Kakyoin said. "This is bullshit." Polnareff said.

Hikari looked at Jotaro and saw the scowl on his face, knowing that he was really worried. Jotaro looked down when he felt something grab his hand. Hikari held Jotaro's hand tightly, hesitating slightly, but managed to give him a reassuring smile. "I know you're worried....but we're gonna find Dio and save your mother. I promise JoJo." Hikari said kindly. Jotaro looked down at Hikari then nodded his head, squeezing her hand back. Jotaro then pulled her in a little closer, causing her blush madly as he began to say, "Hikari, I-."

"I also have some other information sir." The pilot suddenly said. "Our investigator say that two days ago, nine unidentified men and woman gathered in a building believed to be Dio's hideout. Apparently, they came and left together."

"Dio has rounded up nine more people!?" Joseph shouted in shock.

"We have no clue who they are. The spy who reported this was killed shortly after and the mansion where they met has been vacated. We've had no luck in locating these individuals. We thought about tailing them but since our spies aren't Stand users, we decided it would be too dangerous." The pilot informed them.

"So these people are Stand users?!" Polnareff asked.

"Hold on." Kakyoin said. "Think about it for a minute, that would be impossible. Other than Hol Horse's Stand the Emperor, the only Tarot card that still remains is The World. I've been suspecting that one belongs to Dio, but now I'm not sure. Avdol?"

"I... I don't know. I just can't wrap my head around this, nine more Stand users?" Avdol said.

"From what I can gather, it seems that Dio's head hasn't been able to adjust to his new body yet." Joseph said. "But that monster would never run from us, he's far too conceded for something like that. He'll do everything within his power to keep us out of Cairo."

"Good freakin' grief, we have to take out nine Stand users in two weeks huh? Man, that is one hell of a whirlwind tour." Jotaro said.

"Have a safe trip Mr. Joestar. We await your return." The pilot said as he clasped hands with the elder Joestar. "Thanks for you help. Look after my Holly." With that said, the helicopter took off, leaving the group. As they left, Iggy caught a scent and began sniffing. He looked at the large plateau with a small structure from a distance and stared at it.

From the very top of the plateau, sat a man of athletic build and medium height, keeping unkempt dark hair and whose blank eyes are shut. He wears a simple T-shirt over which he keeps a stripped overshirt and a drape to protect himself from the sun. He also wears armbands and simple trousers and shoes. He wears a headband and two earrings which look like bracelets. He chuckled down at the group and said, "That mutt. So it sniffed out the great N'Dool from that far away?"

He then reached over and felt around for his cane. After taking it in his hand, N'Dool stood up and began to walk, tapping the ground with his cane as a fly flew around him. Stopping a bit when the fly sounded closer. Once it flew past his ear, N'Dool swiftly reached up and grabbed it between his fingers. However, it barely managed to as it slip out and freed itself from his hold. But N'Dool simply laughed at this, not bothered by it at all.

"So close... What do you know, I almost caught it this time. Just a bit

more practice. All of this because of the Nile Ue Ue Fly. If not for those insects, Joestar and his band of meddlers would never have known Master Dio was in Egypt." N'Dool said as his cane touched upon a pebble. He raised his cane and slammed it down on the stone. Sending it flying to smack it against the pesky little fly, killing it in an instant.

Hikari gave an apologetic look to the others as the car drove. Hikari and Nemuru's space in the car had doubled and that's because it was just the girls and Iggy in the back seat. The dog's head was resting on Nemuru's lap as he chewed on his gum. He wouldn't allow anyone but the girls to sit with him, which meant Avdol, Polnareff, and Kakyoin were all crammed into the very back.

"Mr. Joestar, why are letting him get away with this?! It's not fair he gets to be in the back seat with the girls while we're stuck in the trunk! And in case you didn't know it's not exactly spacious back here, I'm gonna need a chiropractor!" Polnareff complained.

"Look, I know it's not ideal but you'll just have to wait until the gum runs out of flavour. When it does, throw another stick of gum into the trunk to lure him back there. Then you can al switch seats with him." Joseph told the Frenchman. Polnareff reached down into the seat causing Iggy to snap at him. "Alright, alright calm down already flea-bag! Damn, you're annoying." Polnareff said. Suddenly Joseph let out a gasp and stopped the car, he hit the brakes so fast that the back of the had car lifted up.

"Whoa!! What the hell as that?!" Polnareff shouted.

"Hey! Quickly, look over there!" Joseph said. Everyone looked out of the car to see the wreckage of the Speedwagon helicopter. Neither of them could believe what they were seeing. The tail was mangled up, the helicopter blades were busted and overall looked like they went through hell. "There's no sign of an explosion or gun fire." Avdol said.

"It seems like it just fell out of the sky for no reason at all." Kakyoin said.

"Could it be...?" Polnareff began.

"Careful men! I bet my life it was attacked by an enemy Stand!" Joseph said.

"Over there, it's the pilot!" Jotaro shouted. The Pilot was crushed under the plane his mouth wide open with a look of horror, his fingers were bloody having had dug into the side of the metal remains. "He's already dead. Whatever happened to him, it wasn't pretty."

"The poor bastard. Approach carefully, whatever did this could still be hiding in there." Joseph said. The group walked cautiously to the downed craft. Jotaro walked over to the deceased pilot and his eyes widened. "What is it JoJo?" Hikari asked. Jotaro bent down and picked the pilot's head up. "Its water." He set the man's head back down tilting and water along with a fish drained out of his mouth. "There's no way all that water is just from his mouth. Must be flowing from somewhere else....it must be from his lungs."

"A-and the fish would mean....h-he drowned!" Hikari gasped fearfully.

"He drowned in the desert! This is getting weirder and weirder!" Jotaro said.

"What is going on?" Joseph asked.

"H-Hey! We found the other guy over here! He's alive!" Polnareff shouted out to the others. Jotaro, Hikari, and Joseph ran over to see the second crew member, but he looked like all the liquid had been drained out of his body. "Hang on! You have to talk to us, tell us what happened!" Joseph said to the dehydrated pilot. The man weakly turned his head, shakily raising his hand pointing at something as he said with a weak, raspy voice, "Wa.....Water...."

"What? Are you saying you need water? Hurry Polnareff, hand me the canteen!" Joseph shouted, holding his hand out. "Huh? Oh yeah!" Polnareff handed Joseph a canteen that was lying on the ground. Joseph lifted the man's head up and held the canteen up to the weak man. "Here, you just hang in there. Drink this, drink it slowly." Joseph tells him and tires to pour the refreshing water into the man's mouth to regain some amount of strength. But when the man looked inside the canteen, his eyes widened and screamed in utter terror.

"AHHHH! No! The water attacked us!"

In an instant, a blue liquid in the shape of a clawed hand flew out of the canteen and grabbed the man's head ripping it off and sucking it back inside. "Men, watch yourselves, it's a Stand! The enemy's Stand is inside the canteen!" Joseph shouted jumping back. Everyone ran back trying to put as much distance between them and the canteen. Joseph, Jotaro, Hikari and Avdol landed on the left next to the car. Polnareff, Nemuru and Kakyoin were on the right laying behind a small sand dune. Hikari stared worriedly at the canteen as blood flowed out of it.

"Aurgh! Damn it all! They were just innocent bystanders, what reason did it have to kill them!?" Joseph shouted as he looked between the corpse and the bloodied canteen. "Avdol, did you see what kind of Stand we're dealing with?" He asked.

"I just say the shape of a hand. But I'd wager it's still inside canteen, I don't believe I saw it leave." Avdol told him. "Who could the user be? The Foundation members informed us Dio had a meeting with nine men and women. Is it possible that one of them is the assassin?"

"Hey! I need you to find the Stand user." Joseph told his grandson, but he didn't need to. "Yeah, I know. I'm already on it...that said." Jotaro had the same idea and pulled out a pair of binoculars and used Star Platinum to look around, by the expression on his face he found nothing. That meant the Stand user was so far away that even Star Platinum couldn't locate them.

"I don't see anything around us, let alone the Stand user. When we duked it out with that Sun Stand, he was hiding behind a mirror but this time the enemy seems to be so far away that we'll never be able to find him from here." Jotaro said.

Back from behind the sand dune, Kakyoin eyed the canteen carefully. He took a small glance at Nemuru beside him and notice she was trying to provide some shade over herself. Right, the heat from the sun in this desert must be getting to her. In that case, Kakyoin turned his sights back on the canteen and asked the Frenchman, "Polnareff, slice up the canteen would you?"

"Why me? Besides, didn't you see what happened to the pilot? His entire head got sucked into that tiny little container! Think about it, if I so much as poke a hole in that thing..!" Polnareff trailed off as he swallowed a bit of his fear down his throat. "No way, why don't you slice it up Kakyoin?! You're closer anyhow! You can just your **Emerald Splash** and call it a day can you!?"

"Yes, but I don't want to." Kakyoin told him in a matter-of-fact tone. This irritated Polnareff more and began yelling again. "Don't make me do something just because you don't want to do it! What the hell man, what's going on with you!?" With the yelling and back and forth they were doing, it was slowly pissing off Nemuru. "I've said no and that's final." Kakyoin said sternly. "Well, like I said I'm not gonna attack the damn thing either!" Polnareff yelled. Nemuru let out a small growl and shouted, "Both of you need to shut up before I break your-!" She was cut off when she and the others suddenly noticed a small pool of liquid forming right in front of them, a hand materialised out of the liquid. "Th-that's the-." Nemuru started to say before it bolted towards her.

"Nemuru! No!" Kakyoin shouted as he sprang up to protect the girl he was falling in love with. Kakyoin grabbed her shoulders and pushed her out of the way. The Stand's claw-like fingernails raked themselves up Kakyoin's face. Slashing his eyes. Nemuru was left in deep shock as Kakyoin started to fall back as blood spilled from his face. Why...? Why...?! She felt her heart stopping as she just stared at him with wide, fearful eyes. Only when he fell back onto the sand, did she scream out his name. "**KAKYOIN!!!!**"

"Kakyoin!" Polnareff shouted.

"It's the water! The Stand left the canteen disguised as water and hid in the blood!" Joseph shouted.

"No, that's wrong! The Stand wasn't disguising at all! I think the Stand *is* the water!" Avdol said. Nemuru quickly went to Kakyoin's side and lifted his head up. Being extra careful with him. "Kakyoin?! Kakyoin, can you hear me!? Please say something!" Nemuru shouted as teardrops fell and landed on his face. Why!? Why would he do something like that?! For her?! "No! It got Kakyoin! Augh! It clawed out Kakyoin's eyes!" Polnareff screamed.

"Polnareff! Panicking isn't going to help anything! Summon Chariot for protection!" Joseph yelled. That's when the Stand formed underneath Polnareff's hand. It poised itself ready to attack but before it could move a loud beeping went off. The Stand turned around attacking the dead Speedwagon crew member's hand. Chopping it off.

"This doesn't make any sense. Why would it go after the pilot's corpse?" Joseph asked in confusion.

"It wasn't the corpse. The target was the watch." Jotaro said as he eyed the now shattered watch beside the body. "It attacked the watch because of the alarm."

"That's it! The Stand stalks its victims by sound!" Avdol exclaimed.

"You're kidding!" Polnareff said. Polnareff looked down at Kakyoin who was now in Nemuru's arms. Kakyoin's face was bleeding heavily and the blood dripping from his face landed on the ground catching the attention of the Stand. "Nemuru! Get out of there Polnareff! It's coming after you now!" Joseph yelled. Polnareff picked up Kakyoin and the two started running to the vehicle as the Stand struck where they were just standing. "Hurry and get to the car!" Joseph shouted. Polnareff and Nemuru ran as fast as they could, especially since Polnareff had Kakyoin in his arms but the enemy Stand was quickly catching up to them.

"It's so fast!" Polnareff shouted.

"Just keep running!" Nemuru yelled. "Don't look back, it'll slow you down!" The water Stand whipped around the air was about to slash at their feet when a large shield appeared and bounced the attack off! "Hurry!" Hikari called out as both hers and Soundless Voice held out their hands. The two picked up the pace and once they were close enough, Joseph shot out Hermit Purple and wrapped his vines around them and pulled them to safety on top of the car. When everyone was on top of the vehicle, the Stand went under the car and vanished.

"The Stand disappeared into the ground." Avdol said.

"I see now, it detects sound through vibrations in the ground and it

moves through the Earth so that there is no way to find it. That puts us in a major disadvantage. Since we can't see it, the Stand has the ability to attack from above or below at any moment it choses." Joseph said. "To make things worse, the Stand user could be kilometres away."

Meanwhile, at a great distance away, N'Dool had the end of his cane deep in the sand while he had the handle beside his ear. He listened close to the rapid footsteps running across the sand. To the near harmonic frequency from the shield. And of course, the loud thuds.

"So the prey has sought refuge a top the car. Seems they've realised N'Dool is using the power of sound to hunt them down one by one." N'Dool said, chuckling. "No matter, it won't be long before they're all eliminated. Her abilities to create shields and to heal may be a bit of a nuisance... Perhaps, I shall begin by snuffing out the little girl's life first."

Chapter 36: Iggy The Fool and Geb's N'Doul part 2

The Joestar group watched on top of the car. Wondering when and where the enemy would come attack from next. The others carefully placed Kakyoin on the front of the car where Avdol inspecting Kakyoin's wounds, with Nemuru right beside him, holding his hand. "Hey, how Kakyoin doing?" Polnareff asked.

"Not good. From the looks of things he may have blinded." Avdol told him. Nemuru's heart dropped when he said this. Polnareff looked especially worried. Hikari looked over and said, "Let me see if I can heal him." Avdol nodded and made some room for Hikari to sit beside her friend. "Try to clean his wounds and heal him as best you can, but he needs to see a doctor as soon as possible. I'm not sure if Soundless Voice is capable in fully healing something like this." Avdol told her. Hikari nodded and began to wipe the blood away from Kakyoin's face, trying to be as gentle as she can. She prayed that she could save his eyes.

"Kakyoin..." Nemuru whispered.

"But if we try to move from this spot that Stand will attack us." Joseph pointed out. "We can't afford careless mistakes." The group put their heads together but they seemed to hit a mental brick wall. While this was going on, Iggy was sound asleep inside the car. But he did slowly wake up when he caught that scent again. He took a few good whiffs around before jumping onto the car's open window. "Okay, I got most of the blood cleaned off. I'm going to try to heal him now." Hikari said as she placed her hands over Kakyoin's eyes. However, just as Soundless Voice's hands appeared over hers, the car started to shake and then the front portion was pulled into the sand.

"What the hell?!" Joseph yelled. The car was sticking straight up out of the sand. Avdol and Nemuru caught Kakyoin from falling while Jotaro held Hikari close to him as he dangled off the back. Iggy simply hoped out of the car.

N'Dool caught the sounds of tiny paws hitting the sand and

recognised it as Iggy's. "That sound, it's the dog. Interesting. It leaped out of the car before I could attack. It anticipated what my Stand was going to do, seems like this dog is also going to be quite the nuisance." N'Dool said.

"The tires are in the water! Shit! What now!? The whole car's about to be pulled in!" Jotaro yelled. "We can't hold him for long." Avdol said, adjusting his hold on the unconscious Kakyoin. "Everyone, we have to move to the back!" Joseph said as they climbed to very back of the car.

"Hey you good-for-nothing mongrel! Aren't you supposed to be helping us or something!" Polnareff yelled at Iggy. Iggy just stayed unmoving laid out on the sand.

"I see. That accursed dog is too perceptive for his own good. It knows I'm four kilometres west of Joestar's group. What to do...?" N'Dool said to himself as he began to shake. He knew he needed to eliminate Hikari first if he wants to ensure the others demise, but with Iggy...he just might be a bigger problem. "Perhaps I should do away with the dog right now."

Iggy let out a yawn and stretched before laying back down closing his eyes, falling back asleep. "Yeah, sleep while we fight to survive! You're a bastard you know that?!" Polnareff yelled, really pissed.

Hearing that Iggy had actually fallen asleep on them, N'Dool let out a laugh. "Never mind. The dog is of no concern. Joestar and the others can't control that mongrel anyway. The mutt's harmless if all it does is nap. Now for the kill!"

The car rocked as the front wheels were severed off and then split in half by the enemy Stand. "Son of a bitch, the water's sharp enough to slash through our front tires!" Joseph yelled. The car shook more and then fell back. "Lean to the other side on the double! If it's trying to do what I think it is then we need to hang on for our lives!" Joseph shouted. The car hit the ground causing everyone to fly off it landing on the sand. Jotaro kept a tight hold on Hikari as they landed on the ground, making sure to keep the golden-haired girl off the sand.

"It sunk into the sand. We should all be alright as long as we don't

move and don't make a sound." Avdol said to everyone. They took his advice and stayed perfectly still. Trying desperately not to make any sudden noise. One small little peep, and they're all dead.

N'Dool chuckled at their pathetic attempt. "It's much too late to try hiding from me at this point. I know where each of you landed. There's no escaping now." He said. Then he heard it. A foot stepping in the sound. His whole body stiffed up and concentrated on the sound. Another footstep.

Hikari sat frozen in Jotaro's lap as she watched Avdol move. He removed the thick metallic bracelets on his wrist and started to toss them into the sand mimicking footsteps. It was a smart idea. Avdol would know exactly where the Stand would strike and he could attack it with Magician's Red.

"Four... No, five steps. I get it, you're walking quietly to avoid detection. But you can't hide from me." N'Dool said with a smile.

"Tsk, tsk." Avdol went as he moved his finger. *'It appears these steps have thrown him for a loop. Go ahead, you accused water Stand, just try to attack to us. Because the moment you reveal yourself, I'll vaporise you with the power of my Magician's Red.'* Avdol thought to himself. Everyone waited with bated breath for the Stand to emerge. *'He's here!'* Water started to bubble to the surface as Avdol summoned Magician's Red.

"Hold on..! What's this? He only moved five steps forward." N'Dool said, slowly realising that something wasn't right here. "How strange. Why's he suddenly stopped moving?"

"Now! Magician's Red!" Avdol said. Magicians Red sprung forward with a fiery fist but the enemy Stand dodged the attack, just barely grazing it and whipped itself around attacking Avdol.

"What?!"

"Avdol!" Joseph yelled

Avdol nearly clenched his teeth as he become very still. A bead of sweat ran down his face and began to say, "How can he be so...?"

Blood sprung out of Avdol's neck as he fell back."So quick..?!"

"Avdol!"

"Mr. Avdol!" Hikari yelled reaching forward.

N'Dool let out a breath as he fought through the searing pain of the burn mark left on his left arm. "I have to admit, that plan was actually a stroke of brilliance. I have to pay more attention to their vibrations from now on." He said. "Those weren't footsteps at all. It would seem as though he threw some kind of metal rings and judging by these burns...heh, I'd say Avdol did the deed. Well, it's time I take care of that little girl now."

Avdol laid out on the sand gasping for air as more blood poured out of his neck wound. "Mr. Avdol! The Stand got his neck! He needs medical treatment now!" Hikari cried out. She almost got up to run to Avdol's aid but Jotaro kept a strong grip on her. "Don't be stupid, it'll get you too!" Jotaro said.

"But Mr. Avdol is-!" Hikari began to say before her sapphire eyes caught sight of the water Stand reappearing and it reformed into a hand hovering over Jotaro. Her eyes widened in fear as its set in position to attack him. She let out a broken gasp as she did the only thing she could do.

"Say goodbye..." N'Dool said, smirking.

Hikari gripped Jotaro's jacket and shouted, "JoJo! Look out!" With Soundless Voice's help, Hikari was successful in pushing Jotaro away to the side. "What the hell-?!" Before Jotaro could finish his sentence, Hikari felt the water Stand slammed into her chest, taking the air out of her. Her vision went red and all the sounds seemed to disappear from the world. She strangely didn't feel any pain. Only a haunting numbness and a feeling of falling.

Through her fading vision, she saw Jotaro's expression go from shock, horror, to outrage. There was a looked of rage and murder in his eyes that she had never seen before.

A rapid stream of water suddenly past by Jotaro and before he could blink, a giant hole appeared on Hikari's chest, just above her heart. He stared in shock at the hole, not believing what he was seeing. He saw nothing but black. Blackness that was starting to rapidly pour out blood.

Hikari just stood there. Her eyes were dilated and her skin quickly pale as the life drained out of her. She didn't grab the wound. She didn't seem to be completely aware of it. She didn't even look to be in pain. A single tear fell from her eyes as her knees gave way and she began to collapse. Jotaro quickly tried to grab her but she slipped out of his fingers and she fell onto the sand.

"HIKARI!!" The others screamed out.

Jotaro was deep shock as he stared, wide-eyed at the girl. He quickly dropped to his knees when he saw her eyes glance over to him. "Hikari...! You...!! You idiot...why?!" Jotaro said, trying his best to hold it together as he looked between her pale face and the giant

hole in her chest. "...." "Listen to me, you're gonna be okay..! We'll get you help..!" He saw her mouth moving ever so slightly, trying to convey a message to him. "Hikari, stop! You need to save your strength."

"....You...." She said.

What....?

Hikari stared up at Jotaro. Based on what she could see, it didn't look like he had gotten hurt from the enemy's attack. Thank goodness... He wasn't hurt. She was so happy... For once, Hikari was able to protect him. She was finally able to protect her beloved JoJo.

"I..... Love..... You....." She said, very weakly. Hikari wasn't sure if Jotaro had heard her. But she didn't have a chance to dwell on that. Before long, she felt herself fade away and soon, there was nothingness. Jotaro felt his heart racing out of control. Both from Hikari's words and seeing her close her eyes, her head falling to the side. "Hikari...? Hikari, wake up... Wake up, right now...this isn't funny." Jotaro said. But Hikari wasn't responding to what he was saying. No. She couldn't be... She just can't...! He won't allow it!

With great hesitation, Jotaro placed a hand on her chest and his jaw clenched. There's no heartbeat and she isn't breathing... She's...

"**AAAAAAAAUUUUUUGGGGGGGGHHHHHH!!!!!!**" Jotaro screamed at the top of his lungs. He didn't hear much of anything else after that. No sound past through his ears except for the pounding of his own rapidly pounding heart. The air felt stall and cold as he attempted to breath.

THAT BASTARD KILLED HIKARI!

His angel! The great love of his life..! Hikari's dead... Hikari was dead... And he couldn't protect her!

"**DAMN YOU**!" The screamed ripped through his throat as Star Platinum appeared and let out an anger and pained roar. Jotaro, without any warning, took off running. "Jotaro, what are you doing?! Stop! You're being an idiot!" Joseph yelled, trying to get Jotaro to

stop whatever he was about to do. But Joseph knew that nothing he says will matter or even get through to him. He caught a glimpse of Jotaro's eyes. He was out for bloody revenge.

'His stride says he's about 190-no. 195 cm tall. There's a youthfulness in his stride, so he's not Joseph. It must be Jotaro then. But where exactly is he going?' N'Dool thought to himself as he the tall delinquent's rapid footsteps. The water Stand dove back into the stand taking chase after Jotaro. "It dove in! I it's going after Jotaro." Polnareff pointed out.

"This can't be happening. I'm grateful he's not attacking Avdol or any of us...but with Chiara...! Jotaro! He's catching up to you!" Joseph said. Jotaro ignored everything Joseph was telling him. He was too angry and filled with rage. He couldn't think...he didn't want to think. Thinking would make him think of Hikari, who was now lying cold and motionless on the ground. How dare this asshole kill her!? How dare he pierce her gentle heart with his filthy water!? He will pay! He would make him ***suffer***!

'I hear Jotaro's Star Platinum is the fiercest of the enemy Stands. Master Dio would be beside himself with joy if I take care of him here and now. In the name of Master Dio, I'll use every fibre of my being to finally vanquish Jotaro.' N'Dool thought with great confidence. Jotaro ran towards Iggy, who was wide awake now, and grab the dog by the scruff of his neck.

"I finally figure you out mutt. I know you jumped out of the car before the Stand attacked it." Jotaro said, his voice more cold and threatening than normal. "You can smell it, can't you? You know where's it going to be before it gets there." Jotaro stopped running and stared Iggy down with eyes filled with hatred. He was growing impatient. "Now Iggy, I think it's time for you earn your keep." Jotaro said as he shoved Iggy into the ground holding the squirming dog firmly in place.

"Where's the Stand coming from? Just show me already. Show me, or we die. And how would you get your gum then?" Jotaro said. Iggy kept struggling to get out of Jotaro's hold but it was a futile effort. Iggy finally stopped struggling and sand started to form around him and Jotaro. A cyclone of sand surrounded the two and when it died

down Iggy was no longer under Jotaro's hand but up in the air being held by The Fool.

"Iggy!" Jotaro yelled. Iggy used his Stand to escape and created wings to keep himself afloat above the ground. *'You've got to be kidding me?! He can fly too!? Not so fast!'* Jotaro jumped up and grabbed onto Iggy's Stand as it floated in the air, just as the water Stand attacked. The Fool glided away taking Jotaro and Iggy with it.

"Go ahead and pan all you want, you're not getting out of this one. Star Platinum's as fast as they come. If you're thinking of dropping me, I'll snap your neck before you can blink." Jotaro said. He means it. Right he doesn't care how he'll get there or what he'll do to ensure that. Jotaro wanted nothing more than to rip that Stand user limb from limb with his own two hands. He killed his innocent angel. He was going to pay! Jotaro was going to make sure that he did.

Meanwhile N'Dool growled in frustration. He had heard Jotaro picking up Iggy before, but now nothing. *'What?! It's like he jumped and suddenly disappeared.'* He thought. *'This is impossible. They've must've landed somewhere.'*

"That's brilliant. We can't move around, so to bypass that handicap, Jotaro's using Iggy to find the Stand user. If we can find whoever's controlling the Stand, we might actually have a chance at defeating him." Joseph said.

"Hikari-!" They heard Nemuru shout and turned to her kneeling at the girl's side. Quickly remembering what happened, the two shouted out towards the dark-purple haired girl on the condition of the kindhearted Stand user. Nemuru's shoulders shook as she turned to them with tears flowing from her eyes.

'He's vanished. I can't hear Jotaro footsteps.' N'Dool thought as he strains his ears to try and hear the tiniest sound to indicate Jotaro's whereabouts. But he still found nothing. He was getting increasingly worried by the second. 'Where is he? Where did he go? Why can't I hear his footsteps?!'

As N'Dool was getting worried by the lack of sounds, Jotaro and Iggy were beginning to lose altitude. Jotaro raised his legs, trying to avoid

touching the ground. It looks like The Fool can't traveling long distances. The damn thing was gliding worse than a paper airplane. *'My legs are about to touch the ground.'* Jotaro thought. He let out a small growl when he saw a large sand dunes coming into view.

'No choice. We need to get more air and at this point, there's only one way to do it.' Jotaro thought. Once the sand dune was right in front of them, Jotaro's, along with Star Platinum's to gain extra strength, used his leg to jump from the ground. "**ORA!**" He shouted. That one step had Tip N'Dool off. The kick had gotten a lot closer to their destination for sure. But the sound of it definitely gave away their strategy, now the user will know that they're to avoid detection.

"So that's why I wasn't able to locate them! The dog's Stand has the ability to fly, but now I know what they're up too. They're heading directly for me!" N'Dool shouted. "I have to eliminate Jotaro before he gets any closer!" Knowing that the tall delinquent was inching closer to him, he called back his Stand and it traveled along the sand, right beneath Jotaro and Iggy.

'He's coming. I know he was able to bring down a helicopter, but he shouldn't be able to find our exact location since Iggy's Stand barely makes a sound. I just have to get to the Stand user and it'll be lights out.' Jotaro thought as they glide through the sky. As they flew, Jotaro spotted something from in the distance and used Star Platinum's eyes to get a better look. That's when he spotted N'Dool sitting on the sand in a rather relaxed manner.

'There he is! The Stand user's about 400 meters away. And from the looks things, our enemy is blind.' Jotaro said. As he was thinking of a plan in his head, he began to hear something. And this something is going to get him killed. He looked up at the makeshift wings of The Fool and saw that tiny bits and pieces began to crumble away. Creating sounds that were more than enough to gain N'Dool's attention.

'Damn it..! Sands falling from the sky!' Jotaro thought as he glance back down the water Stand's trail. *'Of course, the Stand user must be trying to find us. He's using the sand bouncing off the wings like a submarine using sonar.'*

N'Dool chuckled as he finally caught "sight" of Jotaro and Iggy. He

was lucky, any more closer and he would've been defeated. "Because of the falling sand, I can hear you now." He said as his Stand had positioned itself directly under them waiting for its master's orders. "And I've discovered your exact location, Jotaro! Time to die!"

The water Stand shot out of the sand and aimed like a torpedo towards Jotaro. Jotaro summoned Star Platinum to try and defend himself. Fortunately, while he didn't strike the Stand, all he was able to do was avoid a fatal attack as it brushed past Star Platinum and cut right over his shoulder, leaving a pretty bad slash mark and break a hole through The Fool's wing.

"Hahahaha! Star Platinum's speed won't be of much use, I'm afraid. If you can't tell where my attack his coming from, then my Stand has the advantage!" N'Dool said, laughing as he got ready to attack again. "Hahahaha! Here comes another!" As if things couldn't get worse for Jotaro, Iggy stared down at him as he knew things were only going to be threatening from here on out. He wasn't going to die here because of a jackass like him! He wanted no part of this! In order to save himself, Iggy glides down to the ground, causing Jotaro's legs to drag across the sand, making very clear to N'Dool to discover where he is!

"Shit! You damned mutt!" Jotaro shouted.

"Hahahaha!! What a dog, he's dragging Jotaro right into my trap! It seems like he'll do anything to save his own hide, hahahahaha! Even abandon his master, hahahahaha!!" N'Dool laughed. He found it a bit ironic that the dog that was supposed to be helping the Joestar was in turn helping him in killing one of Dio's most hated adversary.

"Bastard, just you wait..!" Jotaro growled at Iggy as the water Stand awaited nearby in the open, positioned and ready to cut Jotaro to bits. "That's what you get for relying on such a fickle creature, Jotaro." N'Dool said. "Your end has come and now it's finally time to put you out of your misery." N'Dool was about to launch his attack, but Jotaro had quickly formed an idea. Besides, he wasn't going to die here! He still needed to make this bastard pay for what he did to her...!

Star Platinum rose up and grabbed Iggy by the scruff of his neck, making The Fool dissolve into sand. "**ORA!!**" He went into a

professional baseball player form and threw Iggy with much force and speed in N'Dool direction. The sudden movements had made the blind man very confused and frazzled.

"What's this?! It feels like he just threw something at me! I can't make out what it is at that speed!" N'Dool said.

"I tossed Iggy at you. Get a move on, you better use your Stand to defend yourselves or else you two are going to be closer than you ever wanted to be." Jotaro said with a smirk.

"Such insane velocity!" N'Dool shouted as his Stand quickly slithered back to defend its master from getting hit. "Damn it, it's going to hit me!!" With the speed on how he was going, Iggy was forced to protect himself and summons his Stand to do at the same time as N'Dool's water Stand came to defend him. The collision of both Stands causing their users to be blown back a bit. "I can't believe it! He actually threw the dog..." N'Dool said. "Argh! Blast it, I was so close to putting an end to that wretch once and for all!"

That's when fear began to sink in. Since N'Dool was so distracted by Iggy, he had lost track of Jotaro. He has no idea where he is or how close he was now. N'Dool frantically searched for his cane as he tried to quickly located the tall delinquent. He placed the handle against his ear as he tried to hear him, but so far...nothing.

'It's like he vanished and he's staying absolutely still. That must've been his plan! Where the hell are you..? You can't hide forever..! Show yourself, Jotaro!' N'Dool thought, getting nervous all the while.

Little did he know, Jotaro was standing right behind him. Glaring down at him with the most vicious, murderous look a human was able to give. *'I'm right here....'*

How badly did he wanted to destroy him right there and now. However, he couldn't touch him...yet. Not with his Stand surrounding underneath him. Quickly, N'Dool caught on as he sensed Jotaro's presence behind him. Iggy panicked a bit and ducked down to the ground, covering his head.

"I see... I didn't realise you'd slink so close. If I hadn't had the

foresight to protect myself with this water shield, you would've already knocked me out from behind. I suppose I should count myself lucky it makes for such a good defence. Given that we're now in such close proximity, I no longer need this cane to hear you. However, I will acquire its use...when I return home."

N'Dool held out his cane and lets it go. Everything seemed to go into slow motion. Jotaro and N'Dool were completely still as the cane slowly fell to the ground. Iggy seemed to be having a nervous breakdown as he watched them, standing like statues. They waited for the right moment to strike. The first to attack will win. The cane was only a mere inches away from the sand before Iggy couldn't take it anymore and let out a loud cry.

That was it! Star Platinum and the water Stand attacked and met midway in their charge. But Star Platinum seemed to be a little more faster and went straight for N'Dool. With all the rage, anger, hate and agony from within his master, Star Platinum bared his teeth at the blind man and punched at his rib cage with every last bit of his strength, enjoying the feeling of his bones shattering beneath his fist. N'Dool coughed up blood as his Stand swiped at Jotaro head, knocking his hat off as he collapsed onto the ground. Star Platinum let out a roar before disappearing.

Jotaro walked over and stood above him. Still glaring daggers at the man as he twitched in pain. "It's hard to believe but you actually managed to knock my hat. You can relax a little for now...I was holding back. You're not going to die....yet!"

N'Dool, instead of looking fearful as most of their enemies would do...instead of begging for his life, he gave an eerie smirk. Without warning, he drove his Stand right through his skull, committing suicide! "What the-!? Why the hell would your Stand too-?! Explain! Why did you do it?!" Jotaro asked, shocked that he would actually do something like that, and kneeled down to him.

"Jotaro... You... You thought you could... You thought you could manipulate me and force me to tell you information regarding the other eight Stand users, didn't you? Ugh! I'm very well aware... that Joseph Joestar's Hermit Purple can view into the minds of others... Ugh! You'll never get inside my head, and I'll never tell you anything

that you could use against my master... Ah ha ha ha...!" N'Dool says, growing weaker and weaker as his life began to fade.

Dio.... It always leads back to him. It's because of him that all this insanity even exists in the first place. But what Jotaro never understood was...why? He can understand Polnareff, Kakyoin and Nemuru being manipulated into following orders... But why would he, why would anyone, choose to follow someone as evil and monstrous as Dio?!

" Dio... I don't understand why you're so loyal to him. Are you honestly telling me... that you'd die for him?" Jotaro asked.

N'Dool simply gave a smile. "Jotaro... You're right, you don't understand. Fear of death holds no place in my heart. Hah! Because of the power of my Stand, I've always been able to live a life unencumbered by such inconsequential fears like death. I could always win any fight. I could have and do whatever I wanted... Killing and stealing were absolutely meaningless to me. You should talk to the mutt about it. I'm sure he knows how I feel. Dio was the first person, who was able to look deep within my soul and find something more. He was the one who gave me a desire to live."

When he first met Dio inside that building, N'Dool didn't know what to think. But the sheer power he felt from him was unlike anything he had ever felt before in his life. He never faced such an otherworldly being as he. "That glorious force of nature, he was so strong, so wise, so beautiful! He was the one and only person in my life to ever see a purpose for my existence." All Dio had did was place a hand on his head, but from his touch alone, N'Dool felt such a wave of pure energy. "I waited such a long time, for an opportunity to meet him. I will gladly die for my master's sake. (coughs) But no matter what, I refuse to do anything that would disappoint him..."

N'Dool paused for a moment as vomits out blood. "And after all, evil or not, a scoundrel needs someone to put his faith in..." He chuckles. I'll tell you this before I go; You should know what my name is N'Dool, and, unlike the extra two, my Stand hails from Egypt, the birthplace of the Tarot; It's referred to as one of the Nine Gods of Egypt, Geb of the great Ennead. We call it the God of the Earth..."

"Nine Egyptian Gods? What does that mean? Hold on, there are two more of you?!" Jotaro asked, shocked about this information.

"Ha ha ha! Sorry, but I'll only tell you about my Stand. It's only fair since you're the one who ended up stopping me, but info on my compatriots goes with me to my grave..." N'Dool says as he takes in his breath as his Stand dried up, his soul leaving his body. N'Dool died with a smile on his face.

The sun was setting in the horizon when Jotaro finished things up. He had buried N'Dool and placed his cane on top of his grave, paying his respect to a worthy opponent. Though he had hated him, there was still some honour in him. When he was done, Jotaro began to walk away.

"Dio brainwashes people like a cult leader. Just who is this guy exactly? And what's this crap about the Nine Gods of Egypt? It's all a mystery...but for now, we just have to keep moving forward. .....Hikari...." Jotaro said to himself. Now that he thought of it, how was ever going to move on from that...? What was he going to do without her...? He eventually stopped walked when he noticed Iggy standing off to the side growling at him.

"Hey you don't have to be defensive, it's not like I'm angry you or anything." Jotaro told him. "Makes sense you'd be pissed. I doubt you wanted to dragged out into the desert and forced into some human crap. Your position must suck ass. No can blame you for being upset." Jotaro dug through his pocket and pulled out a stick of Iggy's favourite gum.

"Iggy, here, you want some gum?" He asked. Iggy seemed to get more angry as he began flailing and rolling around the sand in anger as Jotaro just stood there. "Would you calm down already, I'm trying to apologise. Take it." Jotaro bent down a bit to give the gum to Iggy so he could have it, but Iggy just got up and run off.

"Good grief, that dog is a pain in the ass. You can stay out here in the desert for all I care." Jotaro said as he pockets the gum and began to leave. He only made a few steps before hearing Iggy again. He turned around and saw that he had actually gone to bring back his hat.

"Huh, well what do you know. You went back and fetch my hat for me." Jotaro said as Iggy walked up and tosses his hat back to him. Laying down and waging his tail. Jotaro smiled at the Boston Terrier as he picked up his hat. "Maybe Hikari was right...maybe you're not so bad after all. Thanks." Jotaro put his back on....but his eyes widen when he heard a small squish.

Iggy spread a mischievous smirk and Jotaro quickly realises that Iggy has soiled his hat. "You...put gum in here?! You good-for-nothing little....! You're no ordinary mutt." Jotaro growled at the dog. And just like that, all the respect he had developed for the dog had been squashed.

"Hey! Jotaro!!" Joseph called out as he and the others drove up towards him. "Jotaro! Are you alright!?" Polnareff called out as Iggy ran up and began howling at them. Jotaro let out a sigh as he cleaned off the gun from his hat. "Good Grief." He said as he waited for the others to arrive.

That's when Joseph called out to him, sounding much more happier this time and what he said next, made Jotaro's heart skipped several hundred beats.

"Jotaro! It's Chiara! She's still alive!!"

Chapter 37: The Moon and Stars are meant to be...

With how fast Polnareff was driving it took the group only about an hour to arrive at the nearest town. They immediately checked all the injured into the hospital with Kakyoin and Hikari been rushed to the emergency room. With Avdol, his injuries weren't too serious so he finished up quickly but he still needed to rest up for a while. But with the other two, it was uncertain if anything good news will come around. Hours passed by while the rest of the Joestar awaited for any information.

Out of all of them, with Nemuru being a close second, no one was more worried or tensed up than Jotaro. And for good reasons. They often glace at him with sympathy as he struggled in keeping himself together. He was still as a rock but his hands were clenched and were shaking uncontrollably.

They had tried to get him to relax for even just a little bit, but he refused. He wouldn't rest until he knew Hikari would be alright. They sighed and decided to leave him be, besides they couldn't force him to do anything. They understood why he was on high alert. As the night progresses, the others eventually fell asleep in the waiting room with Jotaro the only one still awake. He fought off sleep, although he did doze off several times. It wasn't long, though. Only cat naps that lasted ten to twenty minutes. His body was asking for food, but he wasn't hungry. However, he did drink some water from time to time.

He knows this wasn't exactly good for him, but...with her being inside of that room with doctors trying desperately to save her...his personal health didn't mean a damn thing until he learned Hikari's fate. He couldn't relax until his beloved angel pulled through or she died where she laid. How much time had passed? Was it hours, he wasn't sure. He was so tired and out of it, that time meant nothing to him.

He then noticed a doctor walking up to them and he immediately stood up. "How are they?" He asked. "Well, the young man had gone through the operation just fine and the lady had finally made it

through the worst of it," the doctor spoke the words he longed to hear. "Yes... She should be alright now." He told him. "I'm not sure what exactly caused this to happen, but whatever it is, it narrowly missed her heart but it had nicked her left lung. If you had not rushed her here, nothing would have been able to save her."

Jotaro didn't stay to listen to what the doctor had said and instead nearly sprinting away to go find her. He needed to see her. Jotaro forgot to ask the doctor where she was resting but he was far too focused with just finding her. Eventually, he found her room and quietly opened the door. There she was. Laying on her bed with several tubes attached to her and wearing an oxygen mask. Her heart rate monitor was the only thing that filled the room with sound. The curtains in her room were drawn, allowing the full moon's light in.

Jotaro walked into the dark room and immediately went to Hikari's bedside. Looking down at her, he gently ran his fingers over her face, brushing away a few stray hairs. "My beautiful angel..." He said quietly to himself. Thanking God that he did not take her away from him. He cannot believe how fortunate he was. In life, someone loses someone they love every day...but he was so fortunate that he still has her in his life. Hikari hadn't been stolen from him just yet. He couldn't believe how close it had come to that.

This was all his fault... It was all his fault that she was lying in this hospital bed in the first place. ....what...? What the hell is wrong with him?! He swore that he would protect her! From the very beginning, he promised her that he would always be there to protect her no matter what!! And this is the result?! Her innocence was nearly tainted! She had a breakdown! She was nearly killed!! ALL BECAUSE OF HIM! HOW THE HELL COULD HE LET THIS HAPPEN?!

For the first time in a while, tears came to his eyes as he watched her peaceful face. She looked so...content. Breaking down, he fell to his knees and grasped her hand, pressing it against his cheek, feeling her warmth invade his senses. "Wake up soon... I want to see your eyes..." Jotaro said. He didn't know what he would do with himself if he ever lost her. If he did, there was no way he was ever going to trust or love someone again.

Love.

Did he love her? Of course, he does! More than anything in the world! But could he love her? Could *he* love *her*? Why shouldn't he? Who else was more deserving of his love? But how could she love him? How could *she* love *him*?

That's right...he didn't get the chance to tell her. Twice he had tried but failed to tell her exactly how he feels...but right now...he could say it a thousand times and would make sure she knows it every single day. He would do anything to see her get up and smile like the sun. Jotaro let out a sigh and he closed his eyes. Within seconds, he allowed the darkness to take him away.

"Hey, JoJo? How come you want to eat lunch on the roof again? Especially since it's a little cold right now. It's kind of funny, it's April but there's still some snow left." Hikari said as she gave a small giggle. It was lunch hour at school and the two, as always, went up to the roof to eat. After they have eaten their fill, Jotaro took out a cigarette and rested his head on her lap. Of course, Hikari didn't mind. "You know this is the only place I can smoke." Jotaro told her. Hikari giggled again. "Yes, yes. I know. But, um, maybe you can use this as an opportunity to quit smoking? Oh, you started reading."

Hikari smiled down at her friend and he read through his book while looked up at the clear skies above. It was such a nice day today despite the mildly cold weather. She, in all honesty, didn't mind coming up to the roof every day. It also was the only place where the two of them can spend some peace together without the teachers and the other girls hovering over them all the time.

Soon Hikari checked her watch and saw that there were fifteen minutes left until lunch was over. "Sweetheart, we should be head inside now. Next class is going to start soon." She said as she gave him a gentle nudge. "Come on. Let's go." Jotaro let out a "Tch." and got up, taking out his cigarette before saying, "After one more, alright?" Hikari blinked before smiling and nodding her head. Jotaro lit up another cigarette as they leaned against the railing, overlooking the whole schoolyard. His green eyes trailed over to the golden-haired beauty standing right next to him. Suddenly he felt his heart swelling, a strange urge became to take over him.

What was this strange feeling? He blinked when he saw Hikari shoulders

beginning to shake. "You cold?" He asked. "No, no. I'm alright." She said. She was like an open book. When she began rubbing her arms, Jotaro tossed away his cigarette and brought her into his arms. Warming her up in his embrace. Hikari blushed red from the sudden action but smiled as she leaned against him. "Better?" He asked, moving his hand up her arm and tucking a loose strand behind her ear.

Hikari nodded. "Yeah... I feel much better now. I always do whenever you hold me like this... You're always warm, right?" Hikari lifted her head to look at him. Jotaro gave a "Hmph" and smiled at her. "I guess... Hikari, listen to me... I want to tell you something."

"Yes?" Hikari said. But her eyes slightly widened when she took notice of something concerning. Jotaro cupped her cheek and began to say, "Hikari, I love-." "Why are you crying?" She suddenly asked, taking Jotaro off guard. "What? What are you talking about?" Jotaro asked her, confused to why she would ask something like that. Hikari reached up and, sure enough, wiped away a tear from his eyes. "You... You have red-rimmed eyes. You're crying. Is...is it because of me?"

Play Music here

Jotaro eyes widen as he quickly realised that tears were flowing freely from his face. In an instant, the school, the town, everything around them had disappeared. Leaving them in a world of deep space...cold, dark, and black. Hikari was still in his arms, but she was engulfed in a gentle light as she looked up at him in sadness. "Have I done something to make you cry?" She asked.

Atataka na kaze no naka de
Dareka ga yonderu
Kurayami wo oshimu you ni
Yoake ga hajimaru

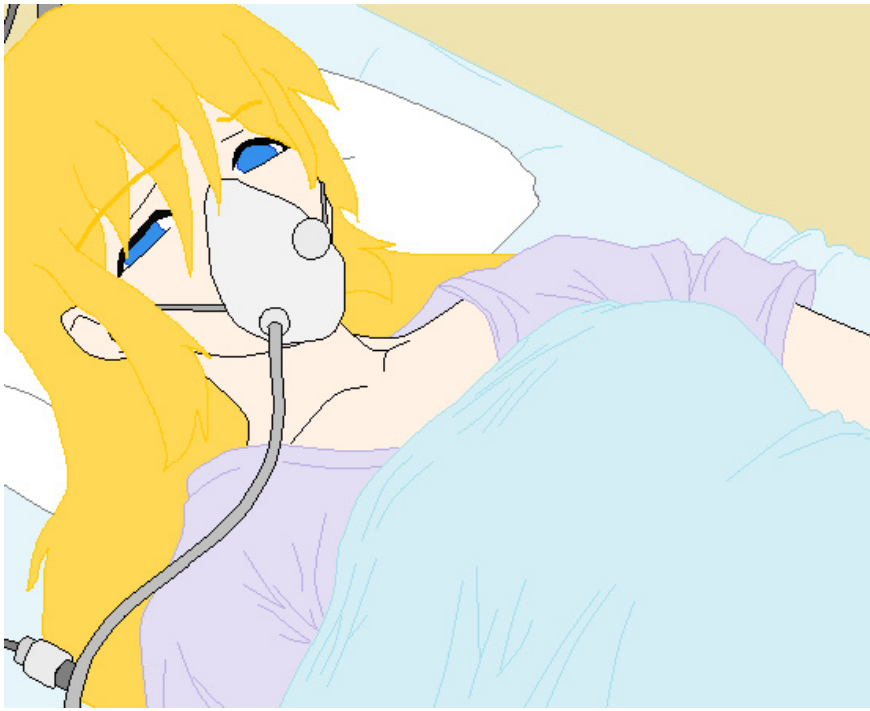
Jotaro's whole body shook uncontrollably and grit his teeth. His angel...his beloved little angle... "It's my fault... I couldn't keep my promise...I couldn't protect you... You got hurt because of me...you've got to hate me now... I'm sorry..." Jotaro said with a near broken voice. How could he ever forgive himself? Hikari was a kind, innocent girl who had the worst luck in meeting him. He did not deserve such a girl to love him.

Then, a pair of gentle hands reached out and cupped his face. Hikari wiped away the tears away. She gave a sweet smile as her body begin to float above him. Enormous angel wings formed on her back as she wrapped her arms around him. "JoJo... Please don't be sad...don't blame yourself for what happened...There is nothing that will ever make me hate you. What happened wasn't your fault, I know this for a fact. There's nothing for you to apologise for. All that matters is that I'm still here...and we can have a chance to be together, right? No matter what, I will always love you."

Ashita wa kitto
Kirei na sora ni
Giniro no niji ga kakaru deshou

By the time awareness had set back in, Jotaro immediately felt something on his head. His hat was taken off and he felt a hand caressing his head, moving its fingers through his hair. His heart skipped several beats as he slowly lifted his head. He quickly jumped to his feet the very second he saw Hikari's beautiful eyes looking at him. Despite the mask in the way, Jotaro knew she was smiling at him.

Konna kanashii keshiki wo
Kimi Ga Hikari Ni Kaeteiku
Chiisana namida no tsubusae
Houseki no you ni ochiteku
Mirai no naka he



"JoJo... You're okay. How's Kakyoin and Mr. Avdol..? Are they alright? Have they gotten treated yet?" Hikari asked him. Jotaro struggled to breathe. She was still alive. She was still here with him. He wanted to open his mouth and tell her something, anything. But he couldn't. Jotaro couldn't get his lips to move, her words just kept echoing in his mind.

I love you. Over and over again. He did love her. Her smile. Her life. The way she could just sit and smile and be happy. The way she was patient with him. The way she smiled when he gave her attention. Everything about her. He loved it all. And yet...as he tried to move his mouth, nothing came out to profess this.

Kokoro niwa himitsu ga aru
Sore demo furetakute
Fureaeba kowarete yuku
Tamerai wa rasen no naka he

Jotaro hovered over her as he just continued to stare down at her in silence, however. *I love you. I love you. I love you.* He thought, again

and again. He willed his mouth to move, knowing Hikari wanted, maybe even needed, to hear those words. But they wouldn't come. No matter what he tried they wouldn't come. Damn it! Tell her, she deserves to know, he had yelled at himself. "Hikari..." He softly said before embracing her.

Hikari smiles behind her mask as she wrapped her arm around Jotaro's shoulders. He was holding onto her for dear life. It was as if he was afraid to loosen his grip even slightly. It wasn't painful, but she wasn't going anywhere anytime soon. She got the impression that he was worried if he let her go, she'd disappear in a puff of smoke and that made her heart ached on his behalf. "I love you..." Jotaro finally managed to say. He pulled back to see her face again and saw fresh tears forming in her eyes.

Hashi wo watatta kawa no mukou made
Ashita wa kitto...
Mahiru no naka de
Haru wa amaku fukaku kaoru no deshou
Yume kara samete
Hito wa nani wo sagasu no

"Thank you... I had hoped you felt the same way." Hikari said. She looked over at the oxygen tank and then back to Jotaro. "I think I'll be fine for a while... You can take my mask off." Jotaro carefully took off her oxygen mask as they stared deeply into each others eyes. A few more tears fell on Hikari's face before Jotaro began to lean down. They were just a breath away before closing their eyes and letting their feelings to take control.

Konna ni akarui sekai he
Kimi ga watashi wo tsurete yuku
Mabushisa ni mada tachisukumu
Senaka wa sotto dakishimeru

Jotaro and Hikari shared a loving, yet passionate kiss. This time, it was more pure and genuine. Finally, at last, they were able to realise just how much they cared for one another beyond that of simple friendship. This was the point of return and they didn't care.

They were together and they each made a vow to themselves, to each

other, to the very gates of Heaven that they will protect each other. To fight for each other. Jotaro swore on his life that he would never allow another bastard to ever hurt a single hair on her head and Hikari swore that she would become his strongest shield. The two pulled away for a quick in take of air before immediately going in for another kiss. Then another. And another. And another.

It felt...so right! So natural. Being together like this, was the greatest feeling in the world to them. The moon can not be feel complete without the stars and the stars can not feel complete without the moon. They needed each other to make the night sky beautiful. The moon and stars were meant to be together as one. The soundless voice of the moon had gained vast admiration and comfort from the platinum star, who in turn, gained the purest form of love and kindness. They may have been different... they may be polar opposites... No one had wanted them to be together.. But that didn't stop them from falling deeply in love.

Shinjiru koto no hakanasa
Kimi Ga Hikari Ni Kaeteiku
Kezameta asa niwa namida ga
Houseki no you ni ochiteku
Mirai no naka he

Chapter 38: The Zenyatta Mondatta Brothers part 1

Although Jotaro wished it wouldn't come so soon, the sun rose from the horizon and the warm light, and the heat came back to the land of Egypt. Jotaro had fallen asleep beside Hikari's bedside, holding tightly onto her hand when the doctors and the others came to check on the girl. The doctors wanted to run a few tests to make sure Hikari didn't have long-lasting effects from her injuries, so seeing as how their friends were in good hands, Polnareff, Nemuru, Jotaro, and Joseph were now walking around town getting a feel for the area as they waited for the update on the conditions of their friends.

As they walked Jotaro caught a glimpse of his grandfather cheekily grinning at him. Ah, he knows. Jotaro sighed in near annoyance, damn it. The old man is going to get annoying about it.

"Well, are they gonna pull through?" Polnareff asked smoking a cigarette. "Luckily, Avdol's major arteries weren't damaged, so he'll probably be released by tomorrow. But Kakyoin and Chiara, on the other hand, have serious injuries. There's a chance that he could go blind. With Chiara, while her heart had avoided damage, her lungs might become very weak. So extreme physical activities might be out of the question for her." Joseph explained

"That's a raw deal," Polnareff said.

"I hate to say it, but if their conditions doesn't improve soon, we might have to leave them behind," Jotaro stated. Though, now that he said it out loud, he figured that it might be best for Hikari to sit things out for a little while.

"Well, I'm just hoping they rest up and heal at a steady pace," Nemuru told them.

"Hey, since there are so many cafes nearby, how about we get ourselves a drink?" Polnareff said.

"That's a great idea. Which one did you have in mind?" Joseph asked.

Polnareff took the cigarette out of his mouth and flicked it forwards. It landed on the ground pointing at a cafe called MAXIM. "There you have it, the cigarette has spoken." The group walked in and took some seats at a table. As they settled in, a tall man walked up ready to take their orders. He was a tall young man with a muscular build, having dark hair and a long face. His attire consists of a T-shirt over which he wears a jacket, jeans, and a cap with an oversized visor.

"Hello there. Tell me, sirs and madam, how may I be of service?"

"Well, tea sounds good right about now," Polnareff said.

"I haven't had that in a while. I'll have one too," Nemuru said.

"Same," Jotaro said.

"Right, so four teas. Be back in a jiffy." He says before walking away. But then Joseph spoke up, making him freeze. "Actually, scratch that order if you would." He said. "Huh?" Polnareff went as he was a little confused about why Joseph would cancel their order. "Hear me out. We're in enemy territory here. This is Dio's dominion, and since we don't know when enemies will attack we have to be cautious. If we let our guard down, even for a second, someone could poison us. From this point on, we're only drinking from bottles and cans."

"Come on. Are you serious?" Polnareff questioned.

"Completely. Hey there, you can forget the tea and bring us colas instead." Joseph said.

"Cola?!" The young man exclaimed.

"That's right. Something wrong?" Jotaro asked.

"N-Not at all. Okay, four colas coming up. I'll just go and grab them." He said as he walked over to a case that filled with Cola Bottles. "Oh, by the way, if you don't mind, we'll open them ourselves. And to make sure we're not falling victim to any funny business, give us the third, fourth, fifth, and sixth ones from the far right side." Joseph declared.

'Now they want unopen colas? How am I supposed to put poison in those?'

The young man thought to himself. 'Was the prediction wrong? No, that can't be it, my brother's comic is always right. Damn it, I've got to get it together. I just have to believe! If I don't have absolute faith in little bro we won't stand a chance.'

While the young man was getting the drinks, his younger brother was hiding in the back out of sight overseeing the cafe. He held his stand close to him as he waited patiently for his prediction to come true. *'Yes, my predictions are full proof, brother.'* He thought. Just then a man stood up in his seat holding up the soda. "Hey, you in the apron! Is this warm cola your idea of a cold drink? You must assume I'm a real halfwit or something to think I'd pay for this excuse of a beverage!" He shouts as he slams the bottle on the table and storms off.

"Wait, what? The cola's really not cold?" Joseph exclaimed.

"Sorry, but the fridge is down so..." He responded.

"Hey, you don't think you're being a little paranoid. Let's say for the sake of argument that guy was our enemy, and if he was trying his damnedest to slip a little poison into our drinks, how would he have known to come to this exact cafe? I mean this city's not lacking in places to get a drink and I chose this one on a whim. I'd understand if this were the only cafe but there are tons of them." Polnareff affirmed.

"My point is we can't be too careful around here," Joseph replied.

"Well if you're that worried, let's go somewhere else then. Maybe the place across the street." Polnareff said. The four got out of their seats and were about to head on to a different cafe, only for them to look out to the cafe across the street and saw that it was on fire. "What do I do?! My cafe is on fire! Some fool left a burning cigarette in the road and ignited the trash!"

"Oh boy..." Polnareff said. Nemuru shot the Frenchman a look as Joseph turned back to the "manager". "You know what? I think we'll take those teas after all." Joseph said. The young man had a wide smile as he laughed quietly to himself as his brother smiled behind his book. *'Yes! We did it!'* He thought. The group sat back down at their table and their tea was quickly served. "Zut alors, what kind of

jerk would toss a lit cigarette near the trash. Really, the nerve of some people." Polnareff said.

"Wait...he seriously doesn't know it was his fault?" Nemuru thought. Everyone lifted their cup to drink as the two brothers watched on intently as the prediction was steadily coming into fruition. *'Finally, they're drinking it!'* The older brother thought. *'Drink it! Drink it! Drink it until it's gone!'* The younger brother thought. They lifted the cups to their lips and the tea slowly seeped into their mouths. *'They drink it!'*

"Aah! A dog just took my cake!" A woman screamed, catching the group off guard. "Who the hell brought a mangy mutt to the freaking cafe?" Her boyfriend shouted. The group all spit out their tea in surprise of the Boston Terrier's actions. Iggy jumped down from the table and ate the rest of the cake while the group glared at him. "Iggy!"

"Who's dog is this?" She shouted. "Will somebody please get this dog out of here?" Her boyfriend yelled. The woman that Iggy stole food from started to throw dishes at him, but he easily dodged them running out of the cafe followed by the group. "Damn it, Iggy!" Joseph yelled. "Get back here you, Flea Bag!!" Polnareff yelled. The first assassination plan has been foiled.

"Damn it! They were just about to swallow the poison!" The elder brother exclaimed. "Dumb mutt! So what the hell is supposed to happen next?"

"Well, thing is...the page hasn't appeared yet. Also, while off, it wasn't entirely wrong. Be patient." The younger brother tells him. "Tohth only has the ability to see the near future, so the patient is key."

"Next time then. When the next premonition is revealed, we'll use it to destroy them!" The elder brother proclaimed as he took his younger brother and propped him on his shoulder. "This is what we were meant to do. Together we're the bestest brothers ever baby!" The newest enemies aimed to take down the Joestar Group were the Zenyatta Mondatta brothers. Zenyatta being the elder brother and Mondatta, the younger brother.

Mondatta is a young child of ordinary build, but his characteristics

include an unusually largemouth and a large afro held together by a topless cap, leaving a few stray hair locks. His attire consists of a bright shirt and trousers over which he wears shorts and a jacket, plus a coat he ties around the waist and simple shoes.

Their Stands were represented the Egyptian Gods Khnum, the God of rebirth and creation and Tohth, the God of knowledge. Khnum was Zenyatta's Stand. It was a Stand that confers the ability to change shape to its user. Thus, it doesn't have an appearance or a personality. Meaning it grants Zenyatta the ability to reshape his body in any way he sees fit. Tohth was Mondatta's Stand. Tohth appears as a comic book which even non-Stand users can see and interact with. The comic is called "Oingo Boingo Brothers Adventures," and adopts a peculiar, whimsical art style, comprised of distorted representations of the characters and the environment complete with abstract symbols or similar stylistic quirks. It can predict the near future.

The comic book also childishly narrates the future with enthusiastically and childishly written texts punctuating the comic-book. *"We failed to kill because of that darn dog!" "We were so close!" Fumed the brothers. The brothers were beside themselves with anger cause their plan failed. But the brothers didn't give up, and soon they decided to follow the four guys and their dog. While following them, they met a man had a very annoying face. The kind of face that was just begging to be hit. In fact, it was the kind of face the brothers hated!"*

"I must've hated that face in a past life," Zenyatta said, narrowing his eyes at the man who was casually walking down the pathway minding his own business. "And a face like that deserves... A knuckle sandwich!"

"Even though he was a perfectly nice man, big bro punched his anyway."

"UGH!"

"Thus the man with the bad face ran away. But fortunately for them, he dropped a wallet full of money. "Yeah, we're rich! Whoopie!!" Cried Mondatta."

While they were happy about the money they had earned from

assaulting the man, Mondatta looked down at his comic-book Stand and saw that another prediction was coming into play. "Hey brother, check it out. The new page is coming." He said with a smile as Zenyatta kneeled to his younger brother's height and looked at the page. It tells them that if they continue in their pursuit after the group, eventually they'll get into their car and hurried over to the hospital to check on their friends Avdol, Kakyoin and Hikari.

However, they'll have no way in knowing that Zenyatta had made a bomb, placed it an orange and planted it in the car. Jotaro was blown into a million piece, his head was split in two and his blood was splattered everywhere! The brothers were grinning ear to ear at this new prediction. It was so vividly detailed that there was no way it could fail!

Shortly after, they came across the group's car. It didn't look like they were around but they knew that they had to make this quick. Zenyatta pretended to walk casually down the pathway and when he was right beside the car, he took a quick look around before breaking into the group's car with a wrench. Once the car door was open he dropped the wrench and kicked it under the car. He reached inside his pocket and pulled out his handmade bomb. He made it so that it'll detonate three seconds after Jotaro sticks his finger in to peel it. Meanwhile, Mondatta hides behind a fire-hydrant and laughs to himself as he looks at the prediction.

While the boy was aware that his Stand can only see into the near future but he also knows that once the prediction has been printed, it can not be changed no matter what anybody does. Not ever. Zenyatta smirks as he glues the top part of the orange to conceal the bomb and went inside the car to plant the bomb inside. However, he is caught off-guard by the sudden return of Joseph, Polnareff and Nemuru. As they walked up to the car they noticed someone at the car, someone neither of them didn't recognize. Whoever it was they were halfway into the car, so they could only see the lower half of their body.

"Who the hell is in our car!? Do you recognise this bozo?!" Polnareff shouted.

"What?! Isn't Jotaro?" Joseph asked.

"No! Jotaro said he was going straight to the hospital!"

"He's right. Jotaro looked pretty damned eager to check on how Hikari's doing too!" Nemuru said.

"Damn it..." Zenyatta cursed under his breath. He can't let them see him. "Be careful!" Polnareff said. "Don't let him get away!" Joseph shouted as they ran to the car. "Yeah, yeah, I'm not an idiot." Polnareff said. "That's debatable." Nemuru said.

"Whoever you are, come out this instant!" Polnareff demanded. "What he said, out of the car!" Joseph shouted. They revved themselves up for a fight when the saw the top part of the person's head. "Quit your stalling and get out of there already!" Polnareff shouted. "Make it snappy!" Joseph shouted.

Soon the person lifted their head to face them. "Hey, hey. What's the matter with you guys? It was me couldn't you tell?" "Jotaro" told them. Seeing that it was only the teen delinquent, the two men breathed out a sigh of relief and relaxed. However, Nemuru had a bad knot in her stomach when she sees him. There was something about Jotaro that didn't sit well with her.

"Oh, so it was you Jotaro." Joseph said as he and Polnareff walked over to him while Nemuru stand where she was, narrowing her eyes at "Jotaro". Zenyatta gave a small smirk as he let out an internal chuckle. *'My Stand, Khnum, gives me the power of transformation. I can alter my height, weight and scent however I see fit. I even use my hair to recreate this hat!'* Zenyatta says, feeling proud of himself.

"Wait, I don't get it. Last I heard you said you were going to head straight to the hospital." Polnareff said.

"Huh? I did..? Ah, the hospital. I forgot something, so I decided to come and get it. Oh, that's right, I left my wallet in the car. Good grief." Zenyatta copied Jotaro's signature saying. Nemuru walked over and maintain a cool face, but her eyes were blazing. "Really?" She asked casually. Zenyatta internally flinched under Nemuru's glare. He was beginning to worry...could she see through his disguise? Joseph looked at his "grandson" with a slight confusion. "Jotaro, where's your school uniform?" Joseph questioned.

"Uh, uniform?" Zenyatta asked. *'What's he talking about? What school uniform?'* Polnareff walked over and grabbed Zenyatta's jacket. "Nothing personal friend, but that's not really a good look on you. You should consider letting Hikari pick out all your clothes." Polnareff said with a short laugh.

"Uh... Ah, my outfit. I mean, uniform. Well, it's actually at the dry-cleaners! I took it in for a wash but then I realise I didn't have any money." Zenyatta said, leaning against the car. *'Yeah, that'll convince them. I'm in the clear!'*

"That so?" Polnareff walked to the driver's door. "Alright then, you can go ahead and hop in the car, time to go." As Polnareff opens the car, a sudden, and horrifying, realisation befalls the brothers. If Zenyatta enters the car with them with Jotaro's face, that'll mean that the real Jotaro won't be the one who'll get blown up. Instead, it'll be him. *'Shit!'* "Y-you know, it's a beautiful day out, so I think I'll go ahead and walk." Zenyatta stuttered trying to walk away.

"Hold it..! Why go and walk to the hospital? Don't you want to see Hikari as soon as possible?" Nemuru asked, gripping hard on Zenyatta's shoulder. While her grip was fierce, her face was frighteningly calm and her smile was both sadistic and teasing. "Nemuru's got a point there. We don't have time to wait for you to walk there Jotaro. Thing's will go a lot faster if you just get in the car and ride over with us!" Polnareff said he and Nemuru pushed Zenyatta into the car.

"Brother, you have to get out of there now!" Mondatta cried as he watches the car drive away with his brother and the bomb inside. Throughout the car ride, Zenyatta was freaking out in fear of being found out and in fear of the orange shaped bomb he had hidden. He was sweating bullets. *'Crap! This is bad! I've got to undo my Jotaro disguise before it's too late. If I don't...I'll be the one who gets blown to bits!*' Zenyatta thought. If the bomb and being found out wasn't stressing him out already...he glanced over to the dark-purple haired girl who was just staring out the window. If she were to speak now he'd be in trouble for sure, she'd rat him out quickly to Polnareff and Joseph. And that smile she had given him earlier didn't help at all.

'That's it! I just need to throw it away! I'll covertly get rid of this one and put another one in the car later so it can blow up the real Jotaro, thereby saving my ass!' Zenyatta thought as he carefully reached for the bomb without the others noticing and simply tosses out the window and on to the streets. Zenyatta finally let out a sigh of relief as he sees the bomb roll away into the distance. He sits back into his seats and wiped the sweat out of the way. *'I did it. What a relief. I'm safe.'*

"Hey what do you know, it's Iggy. He's chasing our car. He's got an orange in his mouth. Did you steal that Iggy? It'll be nice a gift for Kakyoin and Avdol. Hey, Jotaro, Hikari likes oranges doesn't she?" Polnareff said. Zenyatta's smile falters a bit and opened his eye. To his horror, Iggy had came back jumping in the car window with the orange in his mouth. "WHAT?! YOW!" Zenyatta screamed out.

"Come again?" "The hell was that?" Joseph, Polnareff and Nemuru said, turning to look at him with confusion. Mostly suspicion from Nemuru though. Okay...that was more than enough to tell her that this wasn't her friend...he was acting much too like an idiot than the guy she knows. ...Although... Nemuru spread an evil smirk as she gazes at the imposter. *'It might be kind of fun to torture this dude for a bit.'* She thought as she chuckles to herself.

Zenyatta, realising his mistake, quickly covers his mouth. Joseph and Polnareff looked at him weirdly, wondering what was up with him. "Everything okay? Never thought I hear you say something like that." Joseph said. Iggy climbed into the car and sat on Nemuru's lap. "Oh really? That's weird. Yow? You know, yow? Actually, I was pointing out that there was a cyow over there." Zenyatta nervously says as he points up ahead.

"A cow?" Polnareff asked. When the others looked up, they did indeed see a man walking down the street with a large cow beside him. Polnareff turned back to Zenyatta and says, "Man, you sure are acting pretty peculiar today Jotaro. You're usually a lot cooler. I hate to say this but I got to wonder." Polnareff narrows his eyes and says, "You're not really a fake are you, Jotaro?"

Everything got quiet. Zenyatta's heart was in his throat, wondering what he should do next as the others looked at him with intense eyes. Waiting for him to answer. Nemuru was smiling a bit as she was

enjoying this thoroughly watching whoever this was with them suffer. Maybe she should turn it up a bit. Eventually, Zenyatta found his voice again and adjusted his hat. Rubbing the back of his neck. "G-good grief Polnareff, what the hell are you even talking about, man? By the way, are we at the hospital yet?" Zenyatta says, laughing a bit nervously.

Nemuru grinned widely as she says, with a really good fake sweetness in her voice, "Hey, let's cut him some slack. Jotaro here's probably a little nervous because his best friend had become his girlfriend overnight, right? Just a little jittery is all." The two guys busted out laughing at that. Oh, was that all that was? Why the hell didn't Jotaro say that in the first place? Zenyatta turned his eyes on Nemuru and flinched when he saw an evil look in her eyes. It was like she was saying, *"I'm going to make you suffer for my entertainment."*

"Jotaro, bubby, you should've just told us. But we understand. Hikari is one special little lady. Any man would be lucky to have her, but you must've blessed by the Goddess of Luck herself for her to chose you of all people." Polnareff said.

"I'll admit, Chiara isn't like my lily, but I honestly didn't expect to see you two together like that. However, I am proud of the two of you. But you will treat her right, won't you?" Joseph asked with all seriousness. He'll support his grandson's blossoming romance with Hikari but as a proud Joestar man, he won't stand by while Jotaro struggles on how to handle his relationship. Zenyatta had zero idea what they were talking about. Girlfriend? Jotaro has a girlfriend? When did he ever have a girlfriend?!

"U-uh, y-yeah! No, definitely. I'll treat her like a princess if I have to...?" Zenyatta says. The guys laughed again but approving his answer. "That's the spirit!" Polnareff said. Nemuru tried not to laugh at how pathetic this guy was being. If he was their enemy, then this must be the sorriest excuse of a bad guy she's ever seen.

Polnareff then lit a cigarette and smiled. "Hey, Jotaro. I'm super broad, so how about you show me that trick again?" He asked.

Zenyatta tensed up. "A trick? Which one is that?" *'What's he talking about?'*

"The one you taught me a while back? You know, this one here." Polnareff said as he demonstrated the trick Jotaro had taught him. He opened his mouth and, while using his tongue, slide his cigarette into his mouth. Nemuru spread a smirk as she sent an evil stare at Zenyatta's way. Joseph smiled, impressed by Polnareff's improvement on it. "Hey, you've gotten a bit better at that Polnareff." He said. Polnareff crosses his arms and smiles, letting out a victorious laugh as smoke blows from his nose.

Nemuru laughed and said, "Hahaha! Oh, man! I still can't get that image from my head. Remember how Hikari was when you guys did it?"

Polnareff spit out the cigarette while he and Joseph laughed with her. "Oh yeah! The poor girl nearly had a heart attack. I don't think I've seen anyone THAT freaked out in my life."

"Oh..! That's the trick you were talking about." Zenyatta said with a strained smile. *'Oh thank goodness, I know how to do that one! It's risky but I can pull it off!'* "Why didn't you say so from the beginning, that's an easy one."

"Alright, in that case, do the one with five cigarettes then!" Polnareff smiled as he declared his little challenge.

"F-five cigarettes!?" Zenyatta shouted in complete surprise. What the hell is going on here!? Polnareff smiled as he held the orange bomb in his hand, waving it around slightly. "Hurry it up already would ya? I want to see the trick again." Nemuru grinned. "Yeah, Jotaro. Do it..!" Oh, she was going to enjoy this.

'Why is this happening to me?! Damn that Jotaro and damn his stupid party tricks! What does this Hikari chick see in him if he does crap like this!?' Zenyatta screamed in thought. *'But if I don't at least try to do it, they'll really think something is up. They're already becoming more suspicious of me by the minute! Nemuru is already scaring me and Polnareff, lonesome idiot that he is, is seconds away at setting off the bomb! Alright, fine! Damn it! I'll do it!'*

Zenyatta placed five cigarettes in his mouth, heart pounding fast in his chest, and lighted them. Ready to perform Jotaro's trick. "Have it

your way, five cigarettes." Even though he said he'd do it, Zenyatta was already freaking out like crazy. Joseph and Polnareff laughed playfully while Nemuru still gave him the evil eye. "That's the way, now come on, do the trick!" Polnareff encourage.

'Alright! It's now or never! I'm gonna do it! I'm gonna do the trick damn it! Here goes nothing!' Zenyatta shouts. He opened his mouth to try and set them inside. Despite the small setback of the intense heat almost burning him, he managed to get all five cigarettes in his mouth and clamped it shut, holding them in place. *'I did it! Hot damn, I did it!'* Joseph and Polnareff were impressed that he had done it so well.

'There! Did you see that? I did it! A man can do anything when his life is one the line!' Zenyatta thought. Just he thought it was finally over, Polnareff suddenly opened up a bottle of juice and hands it to him. "Here! Last time you did this super cool move where you drank a bottle of juice without putting the cigarettes out!" Polnareff said. Zenyatta gave a muffled scream. He breathes rapidly through his nose as he tries to stop shaking and calm himself down as he takes the bottle into his hands.

"Come on. Drink up." Polnareff urged. Zenyatta felt himself growing sick. He was seconds away from throwing up but he tried to hold out as best he could, fighting against his body's emergency to seek some relief. And soon, it did. "AAAAAUUUUGGHH!!"

"AW, YOU BLEW IT!"

"HAHAHAHAHAHA!!!"

"JOTARO, ARE YOU ALRIGHT?! OH MY GOD!"

'Brother! Brother, please! Little bro! Make that prediction go away right now! Tear out that page!'

While Zenyatta was being put through hell, Mondatta ran down the direction of the group's car, desperately trying to rejoin with his older brother. He knows that his brother must be going through great hardships but there wasn't anything he could about it. Neither of them can. *'Sorry big bro! But the prediction can't be changed! Hurry and go back to your regular self, if you can undo the disguise, the real Jotaro*

will get blown up instead! I believe in you brother!'

Chapter 39: The Zenyatta Mondatta Brothers part 2

"Jotaro, I know we've said this already, but you're acting really weird today." Polnareff said.

"It's nothing. I just feel a little under the weather is all." Zenyatta says. Polnareff and Joseph gave him an unreadable look. Nemuru calmed down after her laughing fit and stared out the window. Zenyatta began to grow worried again as he clasped his hands together. *'Crap... This couldn't get any worse! I know their type since I put them on guard, they're gonna interrogate me and realise I an impostor...that is if Nemuru here is finished with her sick thrill and tells them! If they figure me out, they'll kill me and if I don't undo my disguise, I'll blow up just like the prophecy said!'*

Zenyatta was seriously on edge now. Their stares were intense and he was scared of either outcome. Blow his cover, they kill him. Continue with the charade, he'll blow up. He didn't know what to do. At this rate, he was sure he was going to get physically sick. Wait..! That's it! Sick! That's the perfect plan. *'Th-that's it! I'll just pretend I'm sick and make them let me out of the car to relief myself! Brilliant!'*

"Jotaro, I couldn't help but notice the way you're clasping your hands." Polnareff suddenly says as he points down. Zenyatta looks down in slight confusion at his hands before Polnareff grips them and held them up for the world to see. "Ah-ha! Are you aware you've got your left thumb on top of the others, well are you!?" Polnareff shouted. Zenyatta let out a small gasp as Polnareff gave him a tense staredown. Panic quickly seeps in. *'Damn it! I wasn't prepared for this! Does Jotaro have some weird tick that causes him to clasp his hands with his right thumb on top?! WHO EVEN NOTICES SOMETHING LIKE THAT?! What am I gonna do?!'*

Zenyatta tried to say something that would be a valid excuse but then suddenly, Polnareff busted out laughing. "Hahahaha!! That just proves beyond a shadow of a doubt that you were a woman in a past life!" He said with a wide smile. His smile gets even bigger and his clasps his own hands together except his right thumb was on top.

"And since unlike you, I always put my right thumb on top it proves that I was a man in my past life!"

"Wow, now how about that? I always put my left thumb on top as well." Joseph commented as he clasped his hands too. "Sorry, Mr. Joestar but that proves that you too were a woman in a past life."

"Says you, how does it prove anything? How do thumbs factor into reincarnation? That's so stupid!" Joseph shouts as he and Polnareff share a laugh while Zenyatta couldn't stop his body from shaking and feels a severe stomach ache roiling in. He didn't know how much longer of this he'll take. *'Uuuggghh... Now I really do feel sick. These rabit lunatics are driving me up the wall! Alright, I'll tell them I've got a stomach ache.'*

"Jotaro, what do you say we find out which one of us can eat an orange the fastest?" Polnareff says with a smile as he held up the bomb in his hand. Zenyatta's heart stopped entirely. "Say what?!" He shouts. Polnareff kept on smile on his face as he rubs the orange a bit as Zenyatta tries to stop him. "Hey, maybe you-." He said. Polnareff held the orange and was about to stick his thumb into it before Zenyatta fully panicked and shouted, "Stop it! Don't you that you idiot!" Zenyatta lunges forward to take from Polnareff's hand but his sudden yell and actions made the Frenchman jumped away from in surprise and confusion.

"Whoa there! What the hell are you doing Jotaro?!" Polnareff shouted.

"What's going on with you today Jotaro!?" Joseph asks his grandson. Growing concern over his strange behaviour. "I can understand that you're a little anxious about you and Chiara being a thing, but this is ridiculous!" Nemuru quietly chuckles to herself as Zenyatta regains his composure, somewhat, and sit back in his seat. "Oh...it's nothing guys."

"But this isn't like you at all." Joseph said.

"I just don't think it's good for you to eat that particular orange." Zenyatta says at he points to it, already sweating. Polnareff raises an eyebrow at the fruit and asks, "What's the problem with it?" Thinking

fast, Zenyatta notices Iggy fast asleep on Nemuru's lap and answeres, "Well, it's obvious, isn't it? Who knows where the heck Iggy found that thing! For all we know, he could've dug it out of the gutter. You should eat a different one."

"Thanks for caring but it doesn't bruise or dirty so I think I'll be fine." Polnareff says as he spread a smile and prepares to peel the orange, making Zenyatta 10x more fearful and was ready to get the hell out of the car. He can't take this hell space anymore! Zenyatta stumbles for words as Polnareff says, "I'll eat this one and you can have one of those, I can't wait to see the look on your face when I win."

"Ow, the pain!" Zenyatta practically screams out as he hunches over, clutching his stomach. "Please, stop the car! I have to go to the bathroom! Come on, stop the car, hurry!" Zenyatta shouts, faking a severe stomach ache. Though it might also be possible that he could be serious. "Does your stomach hurt really hurt that bad?" Polnareff asks him.

Nemuru smirked down at the guy and says, "If it does, then just wait a couple more minutes. The hospital's in sight and I can't wait for Hikari to get a look at you. I'm sure that'll be fun..." Zenyatta's eyes widen at her as she reaches towards him, attempting to hold him still till they reached the hospital. He heard a bit about this Hikari girl. She's incredibly close to Jotaro and if she were to see him, no doubt about it, she was going to expose him that very second. "I can't hold it anymore!" Zenyatta screams as he lunges himself to the front seat, almost flopping around trying to get himself out the window. His was wiggling worse than a worm on a hook.

"Let me out! Let me out! I'll go behind that rock!" Zenyatta shouts as he tries to get a move on.

"Watch where your kicking!" Nemuru shouted at him.

"The hospital's right there, just hang on." Joseph tells him as he gestures towards the hospital, only a couple of feet up the road.

"No, no! Go on ahead without me! I'll catch up once I'm done!" Zenyatta shouts and shoves himself through the window, tumbling down to the ground as he finally got out of that thing. Now he just

needs to get behind that large rock, undo his disguise and- "Not so fast Jotaro!" Polnareff shouts and Zenyatta flinches, staying perfectly still as he felt their unnerving stares on him. He stayed still and held his breath. Polnareff dug through the car and pulled out a roll of paper. "Take this, it's-." Polnareff began to say before Zenyatta snatches it out from his hand and took off running. He was practically crying tears of joy as he ran off with a huge smile on his face.

'Yes! I did it! I can't believe I did it! I actually managed to get out of that metal death trap alive! I'll go behind that rock and undo my disguise!' Zenyatta thought with so much happiness.

Back at the car, Polnareff was giving a distant look at the orange in his hand and inspected it closely. Nemuru glanced at him and asked, "What's up? Aren't you going to eat it?"

"Mmm... He brought up a good point. Who knows where Iggy found this orange, for all we know it *could've* been lying in the gutter." Polnareff said, considering Jotaro's words. "Do you guys want to eat it?"

"I'm good, thanks." "Nah, you can toss it." Nemuru and Joseph said. Polnareff took one last look at the orange before throwing it out of the window as they drove away. Zenyatta was hysterically laughing with himself as he quickly makes his way over to the rock. "Success! Now I can use Khnum's powers to transform back to normal! After that, they'll get what's coming to 'em! And it's Zenyatta Mondatta Brothers will have won again! Hahahaha, we win! Hahaha-!"

Squish

Zenyatta little victory parade was cut short when he heard something hard and soft, crack and squish, under his foot. His "happy" grin was plastered on his face as he slowly lifted his foot out of the way. To his horror, Zenyatta realises that he had stepped on the bomb and had triggered it. "ARE YOU KIDDING MMEEEEEEEEE?!" He screams as he's caught in the blast with Jotaro's face on him. Turns out he was the one blown after all.

"Huh? Did you hear that sound?" Polnareff asked.

"Just forget it. It was probably construction." Joseph tells him.

Soon, Mondatta finally rejoins with Zenyatta and was overcome with worry over his older brother. He was smouldering. His clothes were tattered and was badly bleeding. Oddly enough, he was still alive. Mondatta runs to his side and kneels before him, clutching his Stand to his chest. "Ah! Big bro, are you okay! Speak to me!"

"Hey... Little Bro." Zenyatta said, weakly. "I think we lost this battle. Bad. Really bad."

"No big brother!" Mondatta says, with surprising confidence. "No way! Those wannabes haven't beaten me and my Stand Tohth yet. I...I'll destroy them all brother! By myself, if I have too!" Zenyatta became fearful at that and tried to reason with him. "No, don't. Don't do this brother. These guys aren't some rookies you push around. You'll die."

"I've already decided. And I can beat them on my own. I know I can!" Zenyatta looks up at his younger brother in awe. Pride swelled within him as he gazed upon the most confident expression Mondatta has ever made. "You were always so shy, you've really grown up little bro." He says as tears formed in his eyes and smiled at his brother.

"I'm gonna kill them all. What does the book of Tohth say next?" Mondatta says as he opens up his book and goes on to read the next page but was interrupted by an unexpected voice. "This is them all right!" It was the man they had assaulted and mugged earlier. And this time he has returned with some thugs at his side. "They're the ones who punched me and purloined my wallet while they were at it!" He shouted. "Alright men, beat them to a bloody pulp and I'll make sure you're rewarded handsomely."

"It's him again!" "I'm scared brother! This doesn't look good for us!" The brothers cried out as they held each other for dear life.

Despite his intense yet short-lived burst of bravery. Mondatta would have to wait a while to avenge his brother. But try not to lose heart Mondatta. Life is full of wonderful ups and terrible downs. Says Tohth.

Meanwhile back at the hospital,

"Excuse me, Miss? Where are you going? You're not being discharged today." A nurse said with worry in her voice as she tried to stop Hikari from walking out of the hospital. Hikari turned to the nurse and kindly shook her head. "Oh no, I'm not leaving. The doctors are finished with the tests and said I should sit outside to get some fresh air." She told her. The nurse looked uncertain but she nods and tells her not to go too far.

Hikari smiled at her and walks outside. She closes her eyes and slowly breathes in the air and soaks up the warm sun's glow. It felt so nice being outside. She walks to one of the pillars of the entryway and leans her back against it. Relaxing a bit as she does the breathing exercises the doctors told her to do. Hikari looks back up at the hospital and her smile falters a bit. She was worried about Avdol and Kakyoin. She had wanted to go and visit them but the tests had run much longer than expected and told her that she shouldn't disturb them right now. Still...she hopes they would be alright when she gets the chance to visit them.

'I wonder if JoJo's coming back soon.' She thought with a shy smile. And just like that, her mind had gone back to the event last night. Her cheeks flared at up as she covers her face in embarrassment. She cannot believe what had happened. But she knows that it was real. But it didn't make things less embarrassing. "I wonder if this means we're together officially. I mean...we did...k-kiss. ...I-I d-did kiss him first...but last night was our first real one. Does that count?" She said to herself, trying to think of where she and Jotaro go from here.

"I never would've imagined that JoJo and I would be together like that. But... It felt so wonderful. I almost didn't want that feeling to go away. JoJo...s-said he loved me...s-so, he wants us to be together right..? R-right! I'm going to do my very best to make him happy! I'll be the perfect lover for him! ....That's how it works, right?" Hikari rambles to herself as her face getting hotter and hotter.

Hikari took several deep breaths and tries to calm herself down. She hopes she doesn't mess everything up. She eventually calms down and closes her eyes to relax again. Thinking of a song to ease her worries, she smiles and began humming the first song that came to mind. While she was humming Jotaro was making his way towards the hospital's entrance when he immediately took notice of a certain

beautiful girl in light pink pyjamas.

Doko e tsuzuku natsu no hotori

Mayoi nagara tooi basho e
Keredo watashi kowaku wa nai
Kimi ni okuru kono hana kotoba
Awai awai jyasumin ni wa
Tsuyoi tsuyoi omoi ga aru
Donna tokimo kage wo agete
"Zutto watashi wa tsuite yuku wa"

She sang softly to herself as voice concerned cut her off. "Hikari." The latter turned her head and saw that Jotaro was running towards her. She smiled brightly once she saw him and walked to greet him. "JoJo, how are-?" She started before Jotaro came up and pulled her into a hug, not too rough but still firm. He pulled away and check her over. "What are you doing out here? You should be resting." Jotaro said as he was about to carry her back inside.

"JoJo..! Sweetie, wait, I'm fine. I'm done with my tests and the doctors told me to go outside for some air. I'm fine...I'm okay." Hikari said as she gave him a kind smile. Jotaro looked at her for a moment before breathing out a sigh. He took her into his arms and held her close. As Hikari wrapped her arms around him, Jotaro asked, "Did they tell you what's going to happen with your lungs?"

Hikari nodded. "Uh-huh. The attack nicked my left lung, but after a few tests, they found it to be not as serious as they had believed. But they did say I shouldn't run too much or do any strenuous activities for a while. Seeing as how I can still walk, they said that I'm going to recover just fine."

"So...you're going to be okay?" Jotaro asked. Hikari pulled back and smiled brightly at him. "Mmm-hmm." Hikari's smile fell from her face when Jotaro cupped her face and stared deeply into her eyes. "I'm sorry. I never should've let that happen to you..." He said.

"JoJo. It wasn't your fault, Sweetie. The fight was out of control...we didn't know what was going to happen next. I don't blame you for what happened, so, please stop blaming yourself." Hikari said kindly. Jotaro shook his head. "I know... But you can't imagine how I felt when you almost died... I don't want to relive that ever again. I don't want you to experience that ever again. I'm not leaving you all alone. You're mine now." He said.

You're mine now. Hikari's face flared up again as she is reminded of last night. Jotaro looked to be very serious by saying that. As much as that proclamation made her heart flutter, a few questions still arise. Hikari lowered her head to hide her flustered face. "U-uh, a-about that... I felt very happy when w-w-we k-kissed...but what are we going to do now? It feels kind of sudden, even though..." Jotaro gave a smile and lifted her head. "We'll just do what we feel like now." He simply says as he leans in and kisses her. Surprised by his gesture, Hikari turned away and said, "W-wait, we're out in public...people might look at us."

"Do you think I care? I'll help you forget them." Jotaro said as he cupped her face to kiss her again. This time with a little more passion and Hikari was swept away by it. She shyly returned it as the world seem to disappear around them. It was such a tender moment for the two as they knew that from now on they are couple, not just best friends anymore. It was going to take some time getting used to, but it'll worth it. Jotaro's instincts were starting to kick in as he leaves her soft lips and began leaving a trail of kisses down her neck. Hikari let out a soft gasp and got shivers running down her spine. "J-JoJo..." She said as she clenches his jackets.

"Huh?" Polnareff went. "Well, if it isn't Jotaro." Joseph said. They had finally arrived at the hospital and were both grinning like idiots at the sight of them, much to Jotaro's bitter annoyance and Hikari's embarrassment. "I see you've gotten over your jitters." Polnareff said. Nemuru simply smiled and gave a wink towards Jotaro's way. Damn it, he'd deal with this later. Cursing under his breath, Jotaro turned to them and asked, "Hey, what took so long?"

"Forget that! How'd you take a dump behind that rock so fast!?" Polnareff asked him, bewildered at how fast Jotaro managed to do his business and make to the hospital before they did.

"Huh?" Jotaro went, completely confused at what he was talking about.

"I can't believe you got here before us. You even found time to go to the dry-cleaners." Joseph said, and he and the others walked towards them. "What the hell are you two talking about?" Jotaro asked just as an ambulance came up from the road.

"Hey, it's an ambulance."

"Someone must be hurt."

"Aw man, that's unfortunate."

Jotaro then spotted Polnareff carrying a full bag of oranges. Hm, those look good right about now. "Oranges, huh? I was just getting thirsty. Want one?" Jotaro asked Hikari. The golden-haired girl happily nodded as Jotaro took one of them and began to peel away. The paramedics opened the ambulance and started to help their patients out of the vehicle. Joseph, Polnareff and Nemuru looked inside and saw two individuals that were severely beaten up. They noticed that one of them was wearing a strangely familiar outfit. "What's this...?" Joseph questioned. "That man's clothes..." Polnareff examined.

"You recognise him?" Jotaro asks as he feeds Hikari an orange slice. Polnareff took one look at the man and casually shrugged his shoulders. "Nope, can't say that I do." He says as he walked on ahead. "Right, let's go find out how Avdol and Kakyoin are doing. I'm happy to see you're walking Chiara. You can explain your condition inside." Joseph says as he followed the Frenchmen. "Okay." Hikari said with a smile. Nemuru glanced back at the duo and spread a smirk. "Well, you were fun to torture, I'll give you that much." She said softly to herself as she followed the others inside the hospital.

And so the brothers eventually gave up on their mission. The battle was over and after all the chaos and the pain, Jotaro and the others were none the wiser. Ba-dum-tss.

Chapter 40: Anubis part 1

The hospital was rather quiet as Polnareff, Jotaro, Hikari, Nemuru, and Joseph went to visit Kakyoin and Avdol. Avdol was being released today but the same couldn't be said for Kakyoin. As the conversation ensues, Nemuru couldn't stop looking at Kakyoin with eyes filled with guilt and worry. Though she was grateful that his injuries weren't as serious as they had thought, she kind of hide in the back. But kept her eyes solely locked on him. "Have your injuries improved any Avdol?" Kakyoin asked. "Hikari, are you feeling well enough to go?"

"They have. As relieved as I am, I'm even more relieved to know that you and Hikari are alright." Avdol says with a smile. Unfortunately, Kakyoin wouldn't be able to see as he has bandages wrapped tightly around his eyes. "Oh, please don't worry about me. I'm fine. What's even more important is that your injuries are fortunately healable." Hikari says as she placed a hand on her heart. "Yes, well, I'm fortunate there was no significant damage to my cornea. I'm expected to make a full recovery." Kakyoin says.

"Ah, thank goodness." Nemuru softly says to herself. Unaware that Hikari had curiously looked her way, having heard her words. Hikari said nothing but smiled all the same. "This takes me back to middle school. During, what should've been an ordinary game, one of my classmates took a baseball in the eye. He was good as new the next day and, as it turned out, his eye had only lost a bit of fluid." Kakyoin says, recalling his old school days. He couldn't forget that day even if he tried.

"Wait, are you serious!" "No...!" Polnareff and Joseph said in disbelief and near disgust.

"Hikari, don't worry about having to heal me. I'll get these bandages off in no time and I'll catch up with you in a few days." Kakyoin said, promising his friends. Nemuru felt something hitting her. "In 800 kilometres are Cairo and Dio. Everyone, you must remain vigilant." Despite having promised that he would meet up with them once he

was healed but that still didn't mean they weren't going to miss him. They left his room, after giving their voices of getting well soon, Hikari looked back and noticed Nemuru lingering at his door.

"Nemuru? Are you okay?" Hikari asked her, walking up to her side. Nemuru looked through the window, gazing at dark-red haired teen before turning to her best friend. Without even thinking, she said, "I'm gonna stay here with him until he recovers." Once she had acknowledged what she had said, and seeing Hikari's face lit up, Nemuru's face burned up and cleared her throat. "I-I mean, I owe him one for saving me! And since there's still enemies after us, I need to make sure that they don't come around here to attack him that's all."

Hikari continued to smile and giggled while Nemuru kept on getting redder and redder. "Shut up! I'm not staying here because I like him!"

"If you don't like him then why are you staying here?" Hikari asked innocently with a smile.

"B-because, I-... I...I'm doing him a damn favour." Nemuru said defensively. She then growled and began shoving Hikari back towards the others. "Shut up and go!" Hikari giggled before leaving the dark-purple haired girl in the hallway. Once she arrived back with the rest of the Crusaders, she explained to them about Nemuru's decision to stay and keep watch on Kakyoin.

As the group paid for the hospital bill a group of nurses had gathered outside admiring Iggy. Who was just sitting there chewing his gum as the women huddle around and gushed over him. "And here I thought Iggy was waiting for us outside." Avdol said.

"Good grief."

"Looks like he's a hit with the ladies." Polnareff said in annoyance as he went outside to set the women straight and let them know that Iggy hated people but things ended up with Iggy jumping on his face and getting a face full of Iggy farts. Much to the amusement of the ladies. "Such a cutie!" "You get along so well!"

"In your dreams, we don't get along at all! Damn it, Iggy, would you get the hell off of me!" Polnareff shouted as the others came outside,

taking a side glance at them before just walking away for him to deal with it on his own. "We'll catch you guys later. See ya lovebirds." Joseph said as he gave a passing wave. "Mr. Joestar, please help me! Hey, hang on a minute would ya!?" Polnareff cried out as Iggy continued to torture him. "What the hell!? YOU NASTY LITTLE MUTT!!"

The Joestar group continues with their journey and they embark across the Nile River by boat to Kom Ombo. In ancient times, Egyptians were in the habit of burying their dead on the west bank of the Nile where the sun sets. That's the reason Egyptian cities stand on the east side of the Nile. On the west side, however, you're likely to find graves and mortuary temples scattered about. "But our enemies don't care about east or west, they'll come from whatever direction is most advantageous," Joseph tells his teammates as they're arriving at the docks. Jotaro wrapped his arm around Hikari and brought her closer to him. Hikari gazed at him before leaning against him. They're getting close to their destination, but they have to be even more careful now with their enemies lying in wait for a chance to strike at them. Their only hope is that they make out of this alive.

Meanwhile, as they cross the river, a group of four men walked alongside the river with their cow. One of them was a young timid and soft-spoken farmer named Chaca. He was tall with brown skin, black hair and bold lips. He wears a ragged tunic that would suit a poor farmer of his stature, and he wore his hair in a ponytail and is bare-footed. He was walking a little slower than the others and was lugging a large sack and a rake.

"Look, I know you didn't ask my opinion but your cows are far too lethargic. Although they're strong, I'll give them that." One of the men said making the bald man laugh in amusement. Suddenly the man up front turned around and started shouting at Chaca. "Hey Chaca, move your ass, boy!" Chaca flinched at his father's harsh tone. But he didn't seem to care about that. "And would you stop dragging the rear already!?"

Chaca, poor guy, looked a bit nervous just by looking at his father as he hurried up to catch to the others. "What a disgrace, some man you are! How are **you** my son?!" Chaca's father shouted as he and his friends walked ahead. Feeling completely embarrassed that this

pathetic, meek boy is his son. He can already tell that no matter how many years go by, Chaca was never going to be a real man. The bald man began to laugh again as he said, "Looks like your son and your cow have something in common." Chaca felt his whole self-confidence and self-worth slowly crumble as the men laughed and mocked him.

As sad as it is, he knew that there wasn't much he could do about it. Then Chaca took notice of a mysterious sword laying on the ground. It was a thin scimitar with an elaborate, jewelled-encrusted cross-guard complete with a scabbard. "A sword?" Chaca asked in slight curiosity as he sets his things down and kneeled at the scabbard. "What's something like this doing out here?" He asks himself as took the sword into his hands when his father and his friends suddenly came in and immediately take it from him. Acting as if they were the ones who had found it.

"Look at that. Must've been dropped." Chaca's fathers says as he holds the sword up.

"I can't believe no one's come back to claim it." The bald man said. Chaca's father then spread a greedy smirk as he thinks that the sword might be valuable enough to sell for a profit. "Their loss is our gain cause this sword is probably worth a fortune." He says. The other man, the one who decided to become the reasonable one, says, "Hey what if the owner still in the area? Poor guy must be panicking right about now." He even looks around the area trying to catch sight of the person.

"On the off chance, it's some kind of fancy-schmancy artefact shouldn't we give it to the police?" The bald man asked Chaka's father. But the father greedily says, "You idiot, this sword could be the end of our money troubles!" As he began laughing to himself, Chaca simply stood in the background watching in silence. *'But I'm the one who found it...'* He thought to himself. But he couldn't say something like that out loud.

"It won't be worth a damn thing if it's blunt. Pull it out so we could take a look." The bald man said to his friend. "Right." Chaca's father said as he gripped the hilt of the sword and tried to pull it out. But try as he might, no matter how hard he pulled on it, the sword

appeared to be stuck inside it. "What's wrong?" His friend asked him.

"The damn thing won't budge! Why the hell won't it come out?!" Chaca's father shouted as he stopped to take several deep breaths. "That's weird. Let me try it." The other man said. "Kay." Chaca's father handed him the sword, but even with all three men pulling at the sword with all their strength combined, the sword refused to budge. Chaca shyly stepped up and asked, "Father, let me have a go."

His father, being a rude, greedy man he is, snaps at him. "OH SHUT UP! IF I CAN'T FREE IT, WHAT CHANCE DOES AN IDIOT LIKE YOU HAVE?!" As he shouts, one of his friends drops the sword and he clutches his hand in pain. On his palm, a large cut had suddenly appeared and started spewing blood from the wound. He and the blad man were getting scared now. They didn't even get the sword out from the sheath, he was only grabbing the handle but somehow still got injured. The bald man proclaimed that strange about the sword.

Chaca took one step towards them and timidly asked again. "Hey, uh, you think now's a good time for me to try?"

"You know what, fine!! Go ahead and try it you want!" His father shouts at him. Chaca walks up to the discarded sword and picks it up. He grabs hold of the hilt and he effortlessly unsheathes it. Much to the shock of others. It looked so easy. Chaca hardly used any strength to pull it out. "It... came out so easy. I didn't put the slightest bit of effort into it." Chaca says. He starts becoming a bit fearful of the sword as for some reason, he could hear the blade ringing. The sound was echoing through his head. What made him even more terrified is that he felt something swirling around his soul... Something crawling inside his body.

"I'm by no means an expert when it comes to swords or things of that nature, but I don't think I've ever encountered a blade this beautiful! It's like a rare Japanese katana, it glistens like it's cloaked in ice-cold water." The bald man said as he stares in slight awe at the sword.

"We've been graced with an amazing discovery!" Chaca's father says as he rushes at his son and goes in to steal it from his son again. "Hand it over my boy! A dolt like you has no business wielding such a

valuable treasure!" He shouts as he practically shakes his son around. Through the struggle, the sword suddenly moves on its own, killing Chaka's father by stabbing him through the chest. Chaca stares at his father in complete horror as he's dying right in front of him. "Oh God! Chaca, why!? Why would you do this to your own father!?" He screams as he falls to the ground, dead. A pool of his blood flows from his wound, staining the ground.

"I don't know what happened! You were standing behind me and before I knew it, the sword...! It's not my fault, I swear!" Chaca cries out. His whole body was shaking in terror, he didn't know what was happening and he grows even more so once he locked his eyes on the blade. He wanted to scream. He wanted to run from that thing as far as he can. But the longer he looked at the blade...the more powerful the urge to grab hold of it grew. As his father's friends ran to him to help, the sword moved on its own again and instantly kills the blad man by cutting right through his head.

The other man screams and backs up in fear as he yells, "This sword is evil! It's almost as though the blade has a mind of its own!" Chaca's first thought was to run away, but his own body fails to listen as he walks towards the sword and frightfully takes it. And just like that, his fear and shaking ceases when a voice suddenly spoke in his head.

"Be calm... Still your heart, Chaca. Their deaths mean nothing. Nothing whatsoever, Chaca." The voice tells him. "Just...just who are you...? I can't see you but I can hear your voice..." Chaca says as his mind is slowly being corrupted by the sword...or rather... The Stand, Anubis!

"I am the Stand of the God Anubis. Ruler of the Underworld. Diety of the Embalming and Lord of the Dead. You have unsheathed me... you will be my Stand user... you will be my body. I will make you a master of the sword. No one in the world is stronger than you... You shall use me and you shall **kill**!" Anubis proclaimed. Successfully corrupting the young man's mind and possessing him. Chaca spread an uncharacteristic sadistic smirk as he stands up and wields the blade like an expert.

"Father and that man deserved to die so they should be thrilled that I killed them! I think I'll hack you to pieces while I'm on a roll." Chaca says as he turns his sights on the last of his father's friends. Despite

the man's pleas for Chaca to spare him, even when hiding behind the cow, Chaca, without hesitation, kills him. Cutting him down through the cow and slicing clean him in half. "Slaughter Joseph. Slice Polnareff. Cleave Jotaro in two. Cut out Hikari's heart. You are a fighting genius, a master of the sword! No one in the world is a match for your blade, no one!" Anubis says. Chaca spreads a smirk and goes off to kill the Crusaders.

The Joestar Group's boat had settled at Kom Ombo's dock and they decided to stop there for a time until tomorrow morning. "Kom Ombo? Come on, do we really have time to lounge around in this place?" Polnareff asked.

"Would you quit complaining?" Joseph asks him.

"They've been kind enough to allow us passage on their ferry, so we must show our respect." Avdol said. Polnareff let out a huff and said, "I don't know about you guys, but I'm starving so let's get something to eat."

"Wow, you never stop do you? Here, this'll tie you over for now." Joseph says as he handed Polnareff some of Iggy's coffee-flavoured gum. "You know damn well that's Iggy's!" Polnareff shouted. "Would you just take the gum already? Hey, where's the bathroom, huh?" Joseph said, turning back to the others.

"Shall we look for it?" Avdol asks. As the group walked around Hikari ogled at some of the items that the vendors were selling. Jotaro followed closely behind the distracted girl making sure nothing happened to her. While that was happing Polnareff was stuck on his own and, incidentally, a local goes up to him and offers him a sweet deal. "Hey, Mister! Over here. Want to buy some papyrus?" The man asked with a wide smile. "This papyrus is the original paper! Want a piece of Egyptian history? Here take a look, this is 100% bonafide papyrus!"

"Papyrus huh?" Polnareff asks with interest as he takes the paper into his hands, looking at it more closely. "I'll give you a good price!" The man offered.

"Are you positive this is the real thing?" Polnareff asks him with a

hint of scepticism.

"Of course, I'll have you know a famous Egyptian craftsman drew this so it's quite genuine." The man says, his smile widens as he rubs his hands together, thinking that he has gotten hold of a genuine sucker. Polnareff looks at the papyrus a bit more closely before tearing it up. He was wise enough to see through the con artist's act. "This crap is fake and you know it. If this were actual papyrus it wouldn't rip so easily. I'm no fool, you should try a little harder next time." Polnareff says as he tosses the pieces over to the man as he anxiously tried to get them. He turned around to see the others but realises that he's by himself.

"What the-? For the love of-! Where'd Mr. Joestar and the others go?" Polnareff asks himself as he looks around the place, trying to catch any sign of his teammates when Iggy suddenly came in, jumped up and snagged the gum packet right from Polnareff's hands. He turns to give Polnareff a dog-like smirk before running off. "Was that Iggy?! Why you, get back here you little mutt!!" Polnareff shouted as he chases after the Boston Terrier. During the time he spent chasing after Iggy, Polnareff finds himself wandering into the ruins of a temple.

"Stupid dog. He managed to get away." Polnareff says. Then he suddenly felt a chill in the air. He carefully, but calmly walked up towards the temple, and just like that he felt someone following him. Following in his footsteps. Eventually, Chaca makes himself known by walking beside him. They calmly walked through the ruins until they eventually made it to a secluded area where no one would be in the way or be caught in the crossfire. The two men stood on opposite sides but they did not face the other. Not yet, anyway. Though Polnareff did took notice of Chaca's sword being wrapped in a cloth.

"Gotta say, if my hunch is correct then you've got a lot of balls, my friend. Seems like your planning to attack me while we're in a crowd of innocent bystanders. Guys like you are a rare breed, Stand users don't usually show themselves, let alone face their attacker head." Polnareff tells Chaca. "It's kind of noble, I didn't think you guys have that trait. Tell me your name."

"My name is Chaca, and my Stand is known as Anubis, the one true

ruler of the underworld. Now then Jean Pierre Polnareff, prepare to surrender your life to me." Chaca said with a menacing tone. Polnareff had given out a laugh and says, "You want me to surrender my life? Man, oh man, you sure don't mince words do you Chaca? If nothing else your confidence is more impressive than your other companions."

Polnareff walked just a little further up ahead with Chaca following behind. Once Polnareff was sure that they were far away from innocent people, he decided to face Chaca and beat him down. And leaving one less enemy Stand user to worry about. Polnareff turned and readied himself for a fight. "Give me your best shot. Let's see your Anubis Stand is all it's cracked up to be." Without further ado, Chaca unsheathes his sword and steadies himself. The blade gave an ominous dark glow.

"Come out, Chariot." Polnareff says as he summons forth his Stand. The shining knight of the chariot thrusts out its sword and entered the offensive stance. But Polnareff found it strange that Chaca wasn't bringing out his Stand. Is his intention to fight him with only his sword? *'He's brandishing his sword, but is he really planning to fight me with that instead of his Stand?'* Polnareff thought. But those concerns have to wait for now. because the moment he began to move, the battle had begun.

Polnareff and Chaca ran down the ruins, but as Chaca takes the first swing Polnareff was quick to notice that something was off about this fight. Chaca swung his sword at him. Silver Chariot held up its sword and deflected it. But the more the young farmer waves his sword around, trying ferociously to attack him, the more Polnareff notices that the way Chaca was handling things didn't seem right. This fight didn't feel like the ones he's fought before.

Polnareff quickly dodge the sword's oncoming swings and kept moving farther away from his range. *'His movements. His grip. His stance. They're the dead giveaways of an amateur. But that doesn't make sense! I need to keep my distance from him.'* To make matters worse, Polnareff has no idea what Chaka's Stand even is. When Polnareff jumped back from Chaca, the young man suddenly jumped behind a stone pillar. But why would he-? Polnareff got a bad feeling about all this. That's when Chaca shows the power of Anubis and cuts Polnareff

across his chest through the stone pillar. He screams as blood poured from his wounds.

"JoJo, what do you think of this? Isn't it pretty?" Hikari asked, picking up a silk bandanna. Jotaro nodded his head. Hikari smiled kindly and giggled as she put the bandanna back. She wasn't looking to buy anything, she just wanted to look around and acknowledge the many trinkets that were out for display. As the two kept wandering around, Hikari started to get lost in the crowd before she could completely be swallowed by the sea of people her hand was grabbed. Hikari blushed and looked up seeing Jotaro had grabbed her hand. "Don't get lost." Jotaro said.

Hikari shyly nodded her head and softly gripped his hand. It was a little strange. Before they would always walk side-by-side together, enjoying the peace of each other's company...but now...this felt different. But the two didn't mind it one bit. It kinda felt like a date. If only the circumstances were a bit different. Still, they'll take what was offered. After looking at a few more vendors the two met up again with Joseph and Avdol. Iggy was walking up beside them.

"It seems like we're missing Polnareff." Avdol said.

"Let's go find him." Joseph said

"Oh goodness, I hope he's alright." Hikari said with worry in her voice. She scooped up Iggy into her arms and the group set off. The group wandered around looking for Polnareff but were unable to find him in the large crowd. Suddenly Iggy started to growl and turned his head towards some ruins. "Everyone, I think Iggy might know where Mr. Polnareff is." Hikari said. Iggy kept growling and barking as everyone shifted their attention to the ruins. The group decided to listen to Iggy and made their way to the ruins.

"AAAUUGHH!" Polnareff screams as he holds his wounds. Collapsing to his knees. What the hell was that?! *'What the hell is going on here?! His sword passed right through the pillar and if that wasn't enough, it got me without leaving a single tear in my shirt! If I hadn't stepped back when I did I would've been killed!!'* Polnareff thought. His eyes widened when the sword back around again. "You bastard! Chariot!" Polnareff shouted as Silver Chariot appeared and engages in a rather bizarre

sword fight with Chaca's sword which was still phasing through the pillar.

Even with Chariot's speed, Chaca was able to keep up with them. "Argh, damn it! Why don't you show yourself and face me like a real fighter, you coward!!" Polnareff shouted as Silver Chariot continued to fight, with the last deflection causes him to be pushed back. When Polnareff gets back up on his feet, Chaca moves back. Polnareff only watches in silent shock as Chaca swiftly moves from one pillar to the next. Polnareff couldn't keep track of him as he moved like a shadow. Later he loses track of him.

'This can't be happening..! I lost him, he could be hiding behind any one of these pillars. Judging from his attacks, his sword can pass through solid objects and unfortunately for me, my Chariot's striking range is only about one meter.' Polnareff thought to himself as he tries to think of a way out of this. *'Damn it! He's tougher than I thought. I honestly can't believe this asshole's actually giving **me** a run for my money in a sword fight. But mark my words, you won't have the upper hand for long.'*

Polnareff looked back and he jumped on top of a half-broken pillar. Polnareff could oversee the whole area, if Chaca was hiding around, he would be able to spot him and attack. "Hey Chaca, are you listening? I've got a nice view so let's see what you've got!" Polnareff called out from the vantage point. "There's no way you can sneak on up me if I'm not behind a pillar unless you're planning on popping out of the ground! Hahahaha!!" Polnareff said as he began to laugh but quickly stops when he heard Chaca's laughter echoing.

Polnareff quickly looked all around him, trying to find the source of where it was coming from. But his laugh only got laugh only louder and louder, and he wasn't able to find him. Polnareff just stayed still where he was. His heart was racing. Where was he? Where was he going to attack?

Swish!

Polnareff quickly turned around and his eyes widen when he saw a large pillar heading straight towards him. Chaca had figured Polnareff would try to get to higher ground to avoid him so he cut down a pillar and planned to make it fall on him, with that he'll use

the stone as cover as he cuts the Frenchman down. But Polnareff wasn't going down that easily. He summons Silver Chariot and just as Chaca brings down Anubis, Silver Chariot points at another pillar and deflects a piece of its sword at it, right into Chaka's neck. The attack didn't kill him, but merely, knocked him unconscious. With that being a success, Polnareff calmly stepped to the side as the pillar came crashing down.

Polnareff jumped down from the pillar he was standing and walked over to check on Chaca. "Man, that was a close one. That technique is so secret not even Jotaro knows about it. Silver Chariot can launch its rapier. The downside is that I only get one shot, if my opponent dodges, I'm history. A last resort once I've exhausted my other options." Polnareff says as he looks down at the young farmer. Somewhat relieved that he was still alive based on the subtle twitches he was giving out.

"While it's true I didn't kill you, I highly doubt you'll be getting back up for another round." He says. Then his eyes shifted to the sword that was off to the side. Though he felt a slight chill when he saw that sword was back in its sheath. Polnareff goes over and inspects the sword for himself. "That's peculiar. How the heck did it get back into its scabbard? Did it slip in by chance?" Polnareff asks himself as he slowly removes the sword, only him to be swayed by its influence. His eyes widened. His whole body shakes. Such...such a beautiful sword.

"I didn't notice before...but now that I see it up close, I fully appreciate the sword's beauty. I have to unsheath it..." Polnareff says softly to himself. He has to unsheath it. He has to see the sword for all its beauty. He has to know how it feels like to wield it. Before Polnareff could become fully influenced by the sword's evil power, he was pulled out it when he heard Iggy barking, making him seal the sword back.

"Hey there Polnareff, thought we lost you." Jotaro said.

"We were worried when you up and vanished by yourself. We thought you'd been ambushed by the enemy." Joseph scolded. Iggy continued to bark towards Polnareff which made Hikari a little concern. Sure Iggy and Polnareff didn't get along as well as she hoped

they would, but this seemed different. Polnareff turned around grabbing his head, he suddenly looked very faint.

"Wait, are you okay?" Joseph questioned.

"Huh..? Oh...Oh! It's you, Mr. Joestar." Polnareff said. 'I'm so fuzzy, I can't think straight. Maybe it's from being tossed around. My injuries are worse than I thought...' He thought as he sets the sword down beside him. Iggy was still on high alert and was growling. Hikari then took notice of the blood on him and she gave a gasp. "You're hurt!" Hikari ran over to Polnareff. Quickly bringing Soundless Voice out to treat Polnareff's wound as the rest of the men walked over. "Polnareff, how did you come across that sword?" Avdol asked him. "Did something happen out here?"

"Yeah...I had a showdown with some dirtbag that attacked me." Polnareff said.

"What? An enemy Stand user?!" Joseph says as he and others quickly looked around before Polnareff calmed them. "It's all over now." Polnareff pointed to Chaca who was laying in some rubble. "He said his Stand was known as the God, Anubis. It was able to literally phase through objects and cut them once it had a target in its crosshairs. He was a strong foe."

But despite its formidable power, when all was said and done, he was no match for the likes of me, Polnareff reassured himself. "I'm just happy these wounds aren't too serious, thank goodness you're okay." Hikari said with a relieved smile. "There you go, dear. All done." Soundless Voice removed her hand and left the light -blue energy flow within his body, had finished healing Polnareff's wound.

"Thank you Hikari!" Polnareff smiled as he reached down next to him, "He was using this sword as his wea-." Polnareff paused when he felt nothing beneath his hand, "Where did...it go?" He looked over to see a gaggle of mice carrying off the sword. "Where'd those rats come from and why are they making off with the sword?! Get out of here!" Polnareff shouted.

"It's okay I got it!" Hikari had Soundless Voice create a bubble shield around the sword and she levitated to have it float back into the

sapphire-eyed girl's hands. As soon as the bubble dispersed and the sword touched her hand Hikari felt a strange feeling wash over her. It was dark and looming, it felt like a fog was washing over her mind. "Hikari." The sound of her name being called snapped her out of her dazed state. Hikari looked up to see Jotaro standing over her. "Let's go." Jotaro said. "O-oh, right. Okay." Hikari whispered as she stood up gripping the sword close to her. The group then heard a boat's blowhorn go off, signalling that their boat was making preparations to leave without them. They quickly ran to get to the boat in time and make it to their new destination of Edfu

Chapter 41: Anubis part 2

The group had managed to make it onto the boat in time and head of to Edfu. It was already night time, so they checked into a hotel, and sneaking Iggy inside, and Hikari had finally let go of the sword. Once she let go of the sword Iggy jumped into her arms growling towards the weapon. Hikari's mind was a little clearer but her mind still felt a little hazy. Since it was getting late, the group decided to get some sleep and decided to hold on to the sword until they can go to a police station and have it secured.

Jotaro looked over at Hikari and noticed that she looked a bit enervated, her eyes were foggy, and he was worried that she must've been feeling some kind of relapse from her operation. The sword was being already being guarded by Joseph and Avdol, so... He grabbed Iggy and opened Polnareff's door and just chucked him inside. "What the-?!" Polnareff managed to shout out before Jotaro closed the door behind him. He then made his way over to Hikari and guided her to their room, setting her down to the bed.

He kneeled before her and asked, "Are you alright?" Hikari wordlessly nodded her head before looking him up with a small hint of fear in her eyes. "JoJo..? Honey, I may just be imagining it...but I think there's something wrong with that sword. I can't explain it...but...when I touched it, I felt like it was talking to me. I never want to hold that sword again." Hikari said as she gripped her arms and began to shake like a leaf.

Jotaro listen closely to her and considered her worries. He'll admit, that sword did give off a bad vibe, but he knows that it would stay with them for long. He reached up to caresses her cheek and he says, "Don't think about it too much. By tomorrow, it'll be gone and far away from us. Okay?" Hikari gave a nod, but she still held a fearful look. Her mind was still haunted by how cold she suddenly felt. The ominous whispers in her head. The chilling, horrible urge of wanting to unsheathe that sword.

Having to see her like this, Jotaro didn't want her to keep on thinking

about that sword and tried thinking of a way to distract her from it. He had a couple of ideas...and since he **was** her boyfriend...it shouldn't be that much a problem right? As long as it's him, Hikari would allow it...right? He hoped so. Sigh. He just has to go for it. If she turns away, he'll stop.

Jotaro nudged her until she was laying flat on her back on the bed. Hikari was momentarily confused before she blushed deep red when Jotaro climbed on top of her. He kisses her cheek. Then her lips. And started a trail of kisses along her jaw, and down to her neck. "JoJo?" She blushes as she looks up at him. Wondering what he was doing? This was so much to process for her, she hadn't thought that Jotaro would ever this bold. But she should've. "Wh-what are you doing?" She asked, looking up at him with those shy and trusting eyes. A light pink blush decorating her face.

Ever since what happened with Dan, Jotaro was worried if he tried to comfort her the way he was doing right now, she would be reminded of that pansy-ass and his sick threats. However, seeing her looking at him with those eyes, and how he held her protectively in his arms that night. He knew. That as long as it's him...as long as it's **only** him... Hikari will accept it. She was so innocent. So pure. Painfully so. And that's one of the many reasons Jotaro loves so dearly about her.

"I know you're still worried about that sword...but I want to help distract you from it. At least for tonight... Do you want me to?" He asked, moving up to look at her. Hikari shyly looked away for a second before reaching up to cup his cheek. "Y-yes, please... I trust you." Her voice was barely more than a whisper.

"I'll try my best to make this easy and simple for you. I won't go any farther than I have to." He says as he leans down to continue kissing her neck. Hikari feels herself blush more at his words. She didn't know what she was going to say or do to any of that. But she trusts Jotaro with every fibre of her being. She places her hands on his shoulders as he lavishes her with kisses and a few caresses here and there.

Once he knew that Hikari was much calmer than before, Jotaro believed that she wasn't thinking about the sword anymore. He kissed

her forehead and got up to remove his jacket and hat, setting them off the side before turning off the lights and tucking themselves underneath the sheets. Jotaro cupped her cheek and gave a small smile. "Feel better?" He asked. Hikari leans over and lightly brushes her lips against his. "Uh-huh... Thank you, JoJo." She said with a smile and a soft blush. After sharing one last kiss, the two slept in each others arms peacefully throughout the night.

When morning came, Hikari was the first to awaken. She smiled as she gazes at Jotaro's sleeping face. He always looked so cute and peaceful whenever he sleeps. *'I'm so thankful I have him with me...'* Hikari thought, slowly lifting herself from the bed. She thought about washing up early to allow Jotaro some extra time to sleep when she caught sight of the tall delinquent's school jacket and hat. Hikari continued staring at them as a small, playful smile appeared on her face. Hikari got out of bed and tiptoed over to Jotaro's discarded jacket, putting it on.

Once she got adjusted to the large trenchcoat-like school jacket, Hikari put on his hat and began giggling to herself. "Okay... So, how does he do it? Like this..?" She asked herself. Hikari thought very carefully on how to perform before clearing her throat. She then made a tough expression. "Good grief." She said, poorly imitating Jotaro's voice, as she tilted the hat. "Star Platinum..!" She said, copying Jotaro's pose. "Ora..!" She threw a very weak punch. When she was done, Hikari covered her face with hands as she began to laugh at herself. What was she even doing?

"Hahahaha... That's so dumb, why did I do this..? Hahaha. I better take this off before JoJo wakes up." Hikari says softly to herself when she suddenly felt a pair of strong arms wrap around her waist and pulling her back. She looked, and her face turned bright red. Jotaro was fully awake and smirking down at her. He had seen and heard everything! "J-JoJo?!" "Not bad, but you've got to work on your punches." He said. Hikari tried to run away but Jotaro kept his firm hold on her, seating her between his legs. "I-I-I'm sorry, I was just-."

"I don't mind." Jotaro chuckled at her adorable flustered face. Hikari looked away in embarrassment as Jotaro plants a kiss on her head. After...that had finished, Jotaro and Hikari met up with the others in Joseph's room to discuss the matter with the sword. "Polnareff.

What're you gonna do with that sword?" Jotaro asked him. "I'm gonna turn it in to the police, this thing is a dangerous weapon you know." Polnareff said, make sense since it Polnareff who had in hand when they found him.

"Tha's a good plan. Anyone could pick it up at those ruins, so we can't take any chances." Joseph said. "It's probably worth a small fortune." Avdol says. Iggy started barking loudly at the sword making everyone looked at the Boston Terrier. "Quiet, Iggy! You can't make noise in here!" Avdol harshly whispered trying to get the dog to be quiet.

"If you keep this up, we can get kicked out." Joseph said. Hikari pets Iggy's head but that did nothing to calm the dog down. He just kept barking and growling, moving closer to Polnareff and the sword. "What the hell is wrong with that mutt today? Ah well, since the damn dog won't shut up, I guess I'll just take the sword to the cops now." Polnareff said picking up the sword and began walking away.

"Polnareff, weren't you listening when we told you not to go off on your own?" Avdol said. "Seriously, we talked about this earlier." Joseph exclaimed looking exasperated, "Jotaro, tag along and keep him out of trouble would ya?"

"Gotcha." Jotaro replied. Hikari gazed at the sword and saw the jewel on the hilt glint. She felt a sudden squeeze on her heart before saying, "I-I'll come too." Iggy continued to growl as the group left the room. Polnareff said they were going to go the police station to drop off the sword so why was their current location the inside of a barbershop, with Polnareff humming to himself in a chair as he's getting his hair cut. Jotaro and Hikari sat by a wall reading magazines.

"Hey, shouldn't our first stop have been the police station?" Jotaro said.

"Hehe, oh take it easy Jotaro." Polnareff said.

"A man's got to look his absolute best, as the saying goes." The barber said. He possessed a rather imposing stature. He has very broad shoulders and a muscular build. He has brown skin, black hair and bold lips, all typical features of real-world Egyptians. He wore a

simple light blue tunic and a small hat that covers the crown of his head. "Oh, before I forget. Old man, you mind putting this over there out of the way?" Polnareff asked.

"Sure." The man said as he took the weapon. "That this is a dangerous weapon. Alright, back to I what I was saying earlier, I did my fair amount rolling around and ended up getting kind of dirty. Make this face gorgeous again Mr. Barber." Polnareff said to the barber who was putting shaving cream on Polnareff's face. "Will do." The barber says as he began to shave Polnareff, who the latter was crying out in discomfort.

"Ow! OW! Hey, would you watch it!? In case you haven't noticed that razor's dull! Come on Mr. Barber, sharpen that thing! This is supposed to be the most relaxing part of the haircut!" Polnareff complained to the barber. Jotaro sighed and closed his Marine Life magazine and rolled it up. "Oh, good grief. You're such a prima donna." He said.

While the barber sharpens his razor and Polnareff relaxing under a heated towel, Hikari leaned her head on Jotaro's shoulder and dozed off in a light sleep. If the young girl was awake she would have blushed pretty pink and noticed Jotaro shifting his arm around her putting her in a more comfortable position against his shoulder. He pulled down his cap closing his eyes relaxing too. As he was setting up his supplies to give Polnareff a proper shave, the barber finds him growing very curious for the sword. He has an appreciation for blades, which is why when he sets his supplies to the side, he unsheathes it out of curiosity because he believed it to be very beautiful and well crafted. The poor, simple fool never knew just how much of the evil the sword held within.

The barber put some shaving cream on Polnareff's face, who was blissfully unaware of what's to happen next. "Better. Much better now that's a shave, Mr. Barber. That's what I'm talking about." Polnareff says, relaxing as he gets his shave. "Thank you. I'm glad to hear it." The barber says, his voice sounded more...darker than before. "Très bien, barber, très bien! And now if you would mind getting under my chin."

"Sure. Right here... Under your chin, yes?" He asked. Polnareff

opened his eyes and was stricken with shock once his eyes set upon the mirror. The barber had a malicious smile on his face while he held the sword close to this throat. Anubis had now taken full possession over the man. "What the hell?!" Polnareff shouted.

The barber licked his lips in anticipation on slitting his throat. "Remember me, you fool!? I'm the Anubis Stand you fought earlier and this time you're going to die!!" He declared. "Goodbye, I'm gonna shave your jaw clean off!" Polnareff acted fast and pulled the lever on the chair and leaned back to avoid the attack. The sudden movements cause the possessed barber to accidentally pushed the blade into his chest. With the sudden yelling and loud thuds, Jotaro and Hikari had quickly woken and were surprised to see the barber holding the sword facing off with Polnareff.

"Who-... Who the hell are you really?! And what have you done with the barber?!" Polnareff shouted. The barber gets the sword off him and blood slipped onto the floor with the man glaring at him. "Wait... Could it possibly be that...the sword is actually the Stand? Could it be controlling the barber? So the guy at Kom Ombo wasn't a real user!" Polnareff said.

"Polnareff!!" The barber charger forward at Polnareff swinging the sword. Silver Chariot came out and blocked the attack. "But in the end, it doesn't matter. I'm still way out of your league, bubby!" Polnareff said in a cocky manner. The barber glared daggers at Polnareff as his eyes glowed an ominous light purple colour. But Polnareff was somehow overpowered by the barber. The edge of the sword cutting into Polnareff's head a bit, causing a trail of blood to flow down his face. "H-how are you so strong?!"

"If you must know, I took the liberty of learning Chariot's moves during our last fight." The Barber/Anubis tells him. "I won't lose to the same adversary...DO YOU UNDERSTAND ME?!" It quickly became a one-sided battle. Polnareff fought back against Anubis with all his strength and tried every technique he knew against him, but with every strike, Anubis kept getting stronger and managed to counterattack each one. Eventually, Polnareff tried launching his rapier again, but even then Anubis deflects the blade it and Polnareff is left vulnerable. Pretty soon the barber was standing over Polnareff. "I'm not gonna win this without my rapier! Oh no! Jotaro! Hikari!

Help me out here!" Polnareff yelled.

Jotaro pulled Hikari behind him. "Star Platinum." Star Platinum came out as the barber charged at Jotaro. "**Ora!**" Before the man could even swing his sword Star Platinum punched him sending the man flying out the window. "Think that finished him off?" Polnareff asked.

"No, that punch was shallow. Even though it took just about everything I had. Shit. This guy's strong. It's been quite a while now since we've seen a Stand like this one, it only relies on strength." Jotaro said. Jotaro, Polnareff, and Hikari all stared out the window as people gathered around the fallen barber. Suddenly the man's body rose from the ground surprising everyone.

"Not bad, Star Platinum. The rumours of your speed were true. But now I've seen it, I can easily defeat it." Anubis smirked standing up. "Hey Khan, what's wrong with you?" A man on the street asked. "Stay back! Your friend is being controlled! If you don't wanna get sliced to ribbons, go back inside and hide!" Polnareff yelled. The man let out a yelp as he ran away. Polnareff and Jotaro stood in front of Anubis having a staredown while Hikari went off to the side to make sure that no one else gets involved and to give the guys some cover.

"We're in major trouble Jotaro. The more we fight this Stand, the faster it gets. And its next attack will probably be it's fastest and strongest yet! We have to be ready for whatever this glorified butter-knife throws at us." Polnareff said. Anubis crouched down before leaping into the air as he back came down he swung his sword in a high arc. "Move, Polnareff! I'm the one it's really after!" Jotaro shouted pushing Polnareff away.

"Get out of there, Jotaro!" "JoJo!" Polnareff and Hikari yelled out. "DIE!" Anubis shouted. Hikari was about to form a shield around Jotaro when Star Platinum came out and caught the sword in between its palms. "What?! With his bare hands!" Anubis said in complete surprise. "**ORA!**" Star Platinum snapped Anubis's blade in half. "Amazing! For him to take that great of a risk..! Now it's become abundantly clear...the true source of Star Platinum's strength isn't its speed or precision... It's Jotaro's nerves of steel and ability to make quick decisions. Yes...now I know it...for sure." Anubis said.

He slowly fell to the ground and the mand passed out dropping the sword. Star Platinum then tossed the other half of the blade aside. Hikari, relieved, ran over to Jotaro. "JoJo are you okay?" She asked. Jotaro nodded his head before bending down to the fallen man. "Is he dead?" Jotaro questioned. Hikari checks the man's pulse and finds he still alive. "No, he's alive just unconscious. Thank goodness." Hikari notices the hilt of the sword and turns away from Jotaro reaching over for it just as Polnareff came over with the sword's sheath. Hikari doesn't hear anything that Polnareff was saying as hand grasps the hilt, her vision started to grow blurry then everything went black.

"You snapped it in half but the Stand's powers might still be lingering. It controls anyone who touches while unsheathed. Let's get the blade back inside without touching the hilt." Polnareff said to Jotaro.

"That's going to be a little hard now, isn't it?"

Jotaro and Polnareff's eyes widen when they hear the familiar voice of Hikari. They turn around to see Hikari holding Anubis with an unsettling calm smile on her face as her eyes glowed pink. "Hahahahahahahaha! Such a nice vessel. For such a small little girl, I can sense that she has a good amount of power in her." Anubis-Hikari cackled. Her hand flexes, and then she stretches it out, a navy-blue sizeable shield appeared over her arm. "Let's test her out shall we?" Anubis-Hikari said.

"Hey, you stop!"

Hikari's body stopped and her neck craned to look behind her to see an officer running to her. "Drop your weapon now!" The officer commanded.

"Oh? You want me to drop my weapon, and leave myself defenceless?" Hikari had a roguish smile on her face, unfitting for a girl of her nature, as she looked at the officer. Anubis-Hikari ran forward at the officer and the man screamed closing his eyes. When he opened his eyes he saw Hikari body standing casually behind him a smirk on her face. "Take care now." Anubis-Hikari said walking past him.

"Wh-AHHHHH!" The officer let out a scream as blood started to pour out a long cut in his stomach. "Now Jotaro, Polnareff, it's your turn," Anubis-Hikari smirked pointing her sword at the two. Hikari gasped as her eyes snapped open. She was laying on her back in a dark room. She sat up looking around her but saw nothing but an empty void.

"H-hello?" Hikari called out. She got no response, not even her echo could be heard. "JoJo! Mr. Polnareff!" Hikari called out. What is this place? How did she get here? Why is she here? She clasped her hands together as she tried to calm herself down. Her body began to shake and she took in several deep breaths... *'Gotta be calm. Gotta be calm. You're okay...you're okay...!'*

"Hahahahaha!"

Hikari snapped her head and looked around her only to find no one. "W-who's there?!" She yelled.

"Hahahahaha!"

Hikari took a deep breath. "Y-you don't scare me! Show yourself..!" A shadowy figure started to form under Hikari and the girl gasped jumping back as the shadowy figure rose from the ground becoming solid. "Hahahaha! It is I the Stand with no user Anubis!" Hikari looked at the figure as it stood in front of her. It was clear where the Stand got its name from, Anubis appears as an approximate version of the mythological Egyptian God himself. A human body and a jackal head. Befitting its namesake, Anubis possesses a flesh-coloured body with a black-head and a yellow headdress.

"What do you want? Where are we?" Hikari questioned it.

"Why, we're in your mind." Anubis smirked tapping the side of his head.

"In my mind?" Hikari gasped.

"That's right. Once you touched the sword I slowly started to take control of your body. I couldn't fully control you, that is until you grabbed the sword unsheathed. To have full control over I have to

seal your consciousness away in here." Anubis explained to her. Hikari stared in shock at Anubis, but she still tried to be brave and said, "Th-that may be! But...but even without Star Platinum, JoJo can easily handle me. Just because you have my body doesn't mean anything, I don't even have any offensive attacks to hurt someone."

"Oh? Is that so?" Anubis quirked a brow with a wicked grin, "Let's take a look shall we." A portal seemed to appear in thin air and Hikari could see what was happening in the real world. Her eyes widened when she saw her body attacking Jotaro, in one of her hands was the sword Anubis and in the other held one of Soundless Voice's shields.

Her body kept slashing and stabbing at Jotaro but what surprised was that Jotaro was only dodging, he wasn't making any effort to fight back. Anubis-Hikari smirked as she missed hitting Jotaro but cut right through a tree cutting it in half. The situation got even worse when Polnareff brought out Silver Chariot and went to attack Hikari's body but Jotaro pushed him out of the way preventing him from attacking her. When he pushed Polnareff out of the way that gave Hikari's body the opening to slash at him cutting into his arm.

"Ahhhh, it seems like Jotaro cares a great deal for you. Haha, he won't even attack in fear of harming your body, he even risked his own life to prevent your friend from harming you. Haha, it seems like the person he cares for the most will be his downfall!" Anubis chortled. "No... JoJo..." Hikari ran closer to the window and desperately begged for her beloved. "JoJo! Please! Attack me! JoJo!"

"Haha, stupid girl! He can't hear you," Anubis said. Polnareff let out a grunt as he was knocked to the ground. "Jotaro! What the hell?!" Polnareff yelled. Jotaro didn't look at Polnareff as Hikari's body laughed pointing his sword at Jotaro. "Haha! So you care for this girl that much huh? I wonder what were to happen if I was to do this?" Anubis-Hikari held up the sword to her neck and Jotaro's eyes widened, he quickly reached forward grabbing the blade of sword preventing it from moving closer to Hikari's neck. Jotaro's hand dripped blood as he kept a firm hold on the blade.

"Hahaha! This is too much fun!" Anubis-Hikari laughed. Jotaro glared down at Hikari's body. "Ahhhh...enduring such pain for her....I'd say

you care more for this girl than just mere friendship, dare I say it you're actually in love with her." Anubis-Hikari smirked.

"Let go of her, you bastard." Jotaro growled. "Now where would the fun be in that?" Anubis-Hikari glared at Jotaro. "I can't wait to see the look in your eyes when the woman you love takes your life!" Jotaro was about to move when he felt something pressed up against him, he looked down to see the shield against his stomach. It pulsates against him for a brief moment Anubis-Hikari slammed it against him, sending flying back. Anubis-Hikari moved quickly and had him pinned. Stepping on his neck and grinning down on him. "Time to end this, Jotaro!" Anubis-Hikari struck moving the sword towards his neck.

Jotaro was about to bring out Star Platinum to block the attack but the sword stopped. "W-What?!" Anubis-Hikari let out a heavy breath as if she was straining against something. The sword in her hand was shaking and her body was quivering. Warm droplets of water fell on Jotaro's face as Anubis struggles to gain control.

"What are you doing?!" Anubis-Hikari yelled to no one. Jotaro looked at Hikari's face, even though a glare was still prominent on her face, tears leaked from her beautiful sapphire eyes. "What are you doing?!" Anubis yelled. "I won't let you hurt JoJo!" Hikari yelled. A shadow formed underneath Hikari and it started to take the shape of Soundless Voice. "This is impossible! You're under my control, your body is mine." Anubis yelled.

"I'm not going to stand around and let you control me! I promised to protect him!! I'd rather die than let you hurt JoJo!!" Hikari yelled.

"I'm not going to stand around and let you control me! I promised to protect him!! I'd rather die than let you hurt JoJo!!" Hikari yelled. Polnareff and Jotaro watched as Hikari seemed to be arguing with herself. "S-she's going crazy," Polnareff said.

"I won't let you hurt JoJo, because.....he's the one I love the most!" Hikari yelled. Polnareff's eyes widened at the declaration but Jotaro just smirked pulling his hat down. "I won't let you hurt Jotaro, because.....he's the one I love the most!" Hikari yelled. Hikari let out a cry as Soundless Voice shaped shadow fully formed lifting from the

ground becoming solid.

Soundless Voice quickly ran towards Anubis and the Stand was shocked to find the look of powerful determination expression on her face. Soundless Voice slammed her hand on his stomach before unleashing a ginormous ball of energy. Causing extreme damage to Anubis and causing total whiplash. Anubis-Hikari let out a scream as the blade of Anubis started to crack. It was more than enough.

"AHHHHHHHHHHHH!" Hikari screamed as the blade of the broke off from the hilt. Hikari's eyes closed as she dropped the hilt of the sword and fell forward. Jotaro ran forward and quickly caught Hikari preventing her from hitting the ground. "She did it! Incredible!" Polnareff cheered. Jotaro held Hikari close to him as the girl started to stir. She slowly opened her eyes and looked up. A way of relief washed over her when she saw her Jotaro.

She gave a tired smile. "...Jo-." Hikari was quickly cut off when Jotaro locked lips with her, making her eyes widen and blush brightly stunned with the action. Polnareff gaped at the two's sudden kissing. Hikari closed her eyes and relaxed in Jotaro's grip kissing him back. The two slowly pulled away and Hikari gazed up at Jotaro as he gazed down at her. Jotaro smirked at Hikari as she flushed, looking away embarrassed, but still smiled all the same. Jotaro helped Hikari up as Polnareff walked over.

The girl became even more embarrassed when she realised that Polnareff had been watching. If his smirk didn't make it obvious enough. Polnareff smirked down at Hikari, holding in a laugh. He turned to Jotaro giving him an okay hand sign, "Great catch Jotaro!" Hikari looked away embarrassed as Polnareff started teasing them. "Good grief." Jotaro said.

While they were just beginning to ease up a little, a young boy eating a lollipop in the crowd looked to the side and his eyes fell upon the tip of the sword that Star Platinum snapped earlier. "Wow...it's so shiny." He says as he walked over to it and picked it up. Immediately, Anubis takes full possession of the boy.

"Now, I've learned that trick. My original Stand user was the swordsmith who forged me 500 years ago. He may have perished centuries ago, but I

survive as a Stand with no master. Master Dio liberated me from the gloomy shadows of a dusty museum. And speaking of Master Dio, his Stand, The World, is far more powerful than I. That's why I pledge my undying loyalty. Jotaro, I swear on liiiifffeeee... I WILL MURDER YOU!!! I know your strength! Your speed! Your weakness! You won't see it coming until it's too late to stop it!!" Anubis shouts as he positions the boy to throw himself at Jotaro. *"I'LL STAB YOU IN THE BACK!! NOW DIE, JOTARO!!"*

As the boy was about to launch Anubis towards Jotaro, by chance, Iggy comes running in and makes the boy trip as he pounces on the boy's lollipop. *"What just happened?!"* Unbalanced, the boy loses his target and throws the blade way past over the others. *"Son of a-! I missed! I was tripped by a dog?! Where the hell did that mutt come from!"*

The three heard a loud thump and looked over to see Iggy eating candy with a twitching boy next to him. "Hey, Iggy what are you eating? Wait a sec, is that a nasty old sucker? Eating right off the ground again, you filthy mutt." Polnareff said. Hikari walked over to Iggy and picked him up, "We should go back to the hotel. I'll treat your wounds right away."

"Hehe, I bet you want to treat Jotaro's wounds alone huh?" Polnareff teased. Hikari's face once again turns red as she hides her face behind Iggy.

"AAAAAHHHHHH!!" Anubis screams as he quickly realises on where he's headed off to. Straight towards the Nile River. *"You've got to be kidding, it's the Nile River! Augh! No, this can't be happening! What did I do to deserve this cruel fate!? If I fall to the river I'm done for! I'll rust away! Somebody stop me!"* Anubis screams and cries as he gets closer to the river. A small bit of luck seemed to grace him as he sees an oncoming stone archway. *"AH-HA! I'm heading for a wall! The wall will stop me! Lucky me!!"* However, that small streak came and went as Anubis passes right through.

"What?! Shit! I was so panicked about falling into the water that I accidentally phased right through the wall! I'm gonna fall in!" Anubis screamed. Another streak of luck came in when a small ship came sailing through. From there Anubis planned to possess the man sailing but ended up piercing the behind of a cow. Which, from the

pain, starting thrashing around uncontrollably until it broke through the wooden railing of the ship and falling into the water. The man rushed over to help save his cow as it eventually kicked of Anubis, sending him to the bottom of the Nile.

"Hey! Yoohoo! Oh, fishies, look down here! Come on, swim over to me!" He called out. The small school of fish simply swan away from him. "Hey, wait! Where are you going?! Hey, Mr. Crab! It's a pleasure to meet ya'! Would you mind doing me a favour and taking me ashore? I'll give you something yummy." The crab, along with its youngling, crawled away. "WAIT, Mr. Crab, you just can't leave me here! I'll be rusted through in a couple of days! Please, help me! DON'T LEAVE ME HERE! OOOOH HO HO, I'M SO ALONE!

With nobody else taking notice of the sword, Anubis was now condemned to rusts to ruin and erases from existence. At the bottom of the Nile River, forgotten by time.

Chapter 42: A Soundless Voice Cries Out! Part 1

Avdol and Joseph were perplexed as they saw the battered teens return to the hotel, they were even more surprised when they saw the looks on the teen's faces. Polnareff was smirking and snickering, Hikari's face was as red as an apple, and Jotaro had a small smirk on his face. What could have happened to have made them looks this way?

"What happened to you all?" Joseph asked

"Well...uhmm...." Hikari stuttered and looked away, deeply embarrassed. Polnareff started laughing again and beckoned Joseph over to him. Once Joseph got close enough Polnareff whispered something in his ear. Joseph gaped at the news and quickly snapped his head to his grandson and Hikari. "Oh my God!"

The redness from Hikari's face started to spread to the rest of her skin. Joseph walked over to his grandson with a smile, and he clasped a hand on his shoulder giving him a thumbs up. "Great job! Now when's the wedding? I want great-grandchildren as soon as possible." With that joke being said, Hikari's face exploded and went into a frenzy.

"What?! O-oh no! I d-don't know what to say to that! Why would say that?! I mean, I love JoJo so much, but w-w-we've just started to become o-o-official, but I'm not mentally prepared for something like that! I'm so happy that we're together, b-b-but the thought of actually getting m-m-married to him and having babies...!! Oh dear, what should I say?! Will I make this weird!? I have to say something! I have to say something, right?! But can I!?" Hikari soon spouts out incoherent rambling before it became too much for her as she immediately passes out easily being caught by Jotaro.

"Good grief." Jotaro said.

By the time Hikari had woken up the sun was setting. She was outside with the others watching the beautiful sight of the sunset. She

smiled as she saw Iggy enjoying the sunset too.

WHACK

Polnareff had whacked Iggy on the head. "Stupid mutt. What are you staring at? There's nothing to eat over there, fleabag." Polnareff said. Iggy growled and turned around jumping on Polnareff's face before farting. "Why you stinking little-!! What the hell have you been eating?!" Polnareff cried. "Come on, Polnareff..." Joseph sighed staring at the two.

"Hikari get him off," Polnareff said. Hikari was about to go and help him, but an arm reached and grabbed her. Pulling her down and pressed against a muscular chest. Hikari gave him an apologetic look as she glances between him and a certain delinquent. "I-I'm sorry. I would love to help...but I'm a little stuck at the moment." She says with a blush, gesturing behind her, Jotaro's arm was wrapped firmly around her waist. "H-Hikari!" Polnareff said. The girl could only give bow in apology and a small promise to make it up to him later.

"To think, all of that happened without us." Avdol said. "You fought with the Anubis Stand. That must've rough you two." Joseph said.

"Yeah, it was." Jotaro told them as they glanced back at the pitiful Frenchman. "That's the last time I ever go anywhere with him." He said. The other two men nodding in agreement. "Stop it already you stupid mutt! Get the hell off my face!!"

After the rather eventful day from yesterday, the group had made their way to Luxor in southern Egypt. To the ancient Egyptians however, it was the sight of thieves. And it is in this location, on the west bank of the Nile, that the pharaohs of old were laid to rest. It is known as the Valley of the Kings. "Have you heard of the tomb of the great King Tutankhamun? It lies here in the Valley of the Kings." Avdol pointed out in the horizon. "Wow, this place is chockfull of history." Polnareff whistled gazing at the scene before them.

"If what I heard is true, some of the residents of this area still dig beneath their houses in search of treasure without permission from the government." Avdol told them. "Really? Oh my, don't they know they'll get in trouble if they're found out?" Hikari asked, out of

concern for those who search for gold and riches without the government's approval. "Think those ancient guys left behind any undiscovered treasure?" Polnareff pondered.

"Perhaps they did." Avdol said with a slight laugh.

"You guys see where the old man ran off to?" Jotaro asked.

"Oh yes. To the bathroom and he took Iggy since he can detect enemies." Avdol said.

"Is that so?" Polnareff questioned.

"Do you need to go?" Avdol asked.

"Hmm...I might if it's a normal bathroom." Polnareff said.

In that case, then Polnareff wouldn't want to go there after all. Because right now, Joseph was regretting ever setting foot into the stall. It wasn't a normal bathroom in the slightest. All there was were two smooth stone footholds, a decent-sized hole and a sizable can of sand in the corner. Joseph pressed his back against the door as he clasped his face in absolute shock. Intimidated by this choice of style of a restroom. "**OH MY GOD!**"

"Oh my. Was that Mr. Joestar?" Hikari asked as they heard Joseph's outcry in the distance.

Soon a breeze blew in and sweep away the leftover crap, it quickly faded into dust as it was carried away. "The climate in this place is so damn arid, the crap dries up, turns to dust and blows away! Which means instead of using water, this toilet relies solely on wind. And I don't see any toilet paper. Hm? Is that?" Joseph pondered as his eyes caught sight of the can full of sand in the corner. He knelt to it as Iggy walked up to it.

Joseph reached in and picked a handful of it and it proved his thought right. "Exactly as I thought. Some sort of sand basin. So you wipe your ass...with sand?!"

Desert sand is as sterile as it gets. "**OH MY GOD!**" Joseph yelled out a second time as he quickly stepped out of the stall. On second thought,

he can wait for a while longer. "I think I'll pull a Polnareff and wait till we get back to the hotel. What's the point of a shack if you're going in a hole? You might as well just do your business behind a rock. This thing is weird even for a place like Egypt." Joseph says. He then turned his head and found something...bizarre. A rock with an American electrical socket. It was yellow with green borders.

Curiosity took the best of him and Joseph walked over to examine the unusual "electrical" rock. But no matter how he looked at it, he couldn't understand it. Why would someone put an electrical outlet on a rock? What was it use for? There was no electricity here? Joseph had barely brushed his hand against the outlet before he was suddenly hit with a powerful volt of electricity and was knocked back.

"The damn thing electrocuted me!!" Joseph shouts just as Avdol walks up from behind him.

"Mr. Joestar, is everything alright? We should probably get a move on." Avdol told him.

"Huh? Oh right. Just give me a second..." Joseph groaned out as he got up to his feet. "That scared the living daylights out of me. I can't believe it's still live, I guess the cables must run underground of something. You can never tell with this place, it's like travelling through a fantasy land." He says as he walks back to the group. Little did Joseph know, he had encountered one of the enemy's Stand. Watching them from above a nearby cliff where two young women.

One was an extremely attractive, long-legged woman with dark skin and short, white-coloured hair and brown eyes. Her attire consists of a yellow with orange stripes near rack which reveals her midriff black miniskirt and velvet-red hood, along with brown gloves, dark pantyhose, bow-knotted, velvet-red leather shoes and sunglasses on her head.

The other one also had dark skin and long black hair tied into a high ponytail and had orange-coloured eyes. She wore a cream-coloured, puffed sleeved shirt, a dark green shirt tied around her waist with a sash, and black slippers. Wore four gold bracelet were around each of her wrists and had dangling ruby earrings.

Card of the Goddess, Bast. Stand user, Mariah. And wielder of a warrior's fury, Stand user, Carrie. Mariah puffed out smoke from her cigarette and said, "Now how did that old saying go? "Curiosity killed the cat"?" She snapped her fingers and the outlet on the rock disappeared in a puff of pink smoke. Carrie just shrugged and said, "That's how it usually goes. Now come on, let's get going. The sooner we get done with them, the less annoyed I have to be. That stupid little slut just pisses me off."

Her heart burns with hatred as she watches Hikari being "pampered" by the men. All she has to do is be "sweet" and "innocent" and suddenly men treat her like she's the Goddamned queen? Oh no, Carrie wasn't going to let her get away with that. Mariah tossed away her cigarette and she and Carrie walked off and followed the group in secret.

Later on, the group ventured to a small riverside cafe where Joseph ordered them all some cola. What was odd was the radio that the owner had set out to play music for his guests, but while it had been working just fine, it was now constantly giving off static. Plus, Joseph's metallic hand has been acting up.

"We could make it to Cairo in two days, but since all of us are injured and exhausted, why don't we spend tonight and tomorrow in Luxor and use that time to recuperate? That'll also give Hikari some time to be at ease, due to her injury." Avdol suggested.

"Oh, no, no. Please, I don't want to cause a delay for anyone. I'm doing okay, and I can still heal all of you if you want me to." Hikari said.

"That may be true, but you've suffered injuries greater than most of us. You haven't been taking time to take care of yourself and you can't heal yourself either. Plus a good night's rest couldn't hurt." Avdol told kindly and he reached out to pat her head. Hikari bashfully lowered her head and nodded. "Okay...if that's what you think that's what we should do."

"Sounds good to me. Ever since we got to Egypt, the enemy Stands have been getting stronger and stronger. We've been winning these battle by the skin of our teeth." Polnareff said. Hikari noticed Joseph

kept looking at his prosthetic hand. "Is something wrong, Mr. Joestar?" She asked. "I'm fine. My prosthetic hand is acting funny, that's all. It's nothing to worry about, I probably just need to oil the joints." Joseph flexed his hand.

"Hey there, shop keeper, can you please do something about that radio? It's busted." Polnareff tells the owner. The man walked up to it with the most perplexed look on his face. "Man, that's peculiar. It was made in Japan and I just bought the darn thing. Gah!" He said as he banged his fist on the radio.

"Well, it's just static now, turn it off!"

As that was going on, Joseph noticed that one of the cola caps was stuck on his left hand. He was confused when he took it off. "Mr. Joestar?" Polnareff said, catching his attention. "Yeah, you're right. It probably be in our best interest to rest up before heading to Cairo. Remember, we can't let our guard down. Okay, let's find a hotel." Joseph says as the group got up and left to find a place to sleep for tonight. As the group walked on they passed by a man who was hammering some nails into a box. Suddenly the hammer flew out of the man's hand and almost hit Joseph in the back of the head but luckily it was caught by Avdol.

"Th-Th nails... Ugh! Oh, God, it hurts..." The man cried hunched over. "Hey, old man? Did you bang your finger with the hammer? You got to be more careful! You can't just go throwing hammers around, it's dangerous. Geez..." Polnareff scolded. The group continued on but if they had stayed just one more second they would have seen the metal nails had painfully embedded themselves in the man's cheek.

The next morning

Hikari let out a soft, content sigh as she stretched out in her shared bed, turning in the warm covers. It had been a while since she had slept in one and she never knew she could miss a bed so much. Still, she also couldn't deny that sleeping underneath the stars and roughing it was a lot of fun too. She let out a small giggle when she felt Jotaro wrap his arms around her waist, pulling her closer to him.

Hikari turned to smile lovingly to her handsome delinquent before

setting her gaze out the window. As she stared out the window, her mind went to Nemuru and Kakyoin who were back at the hospital. *'I hope they're doing alright on their own. We're still in enemy territory, but I have faith that they'll okay until we meet up again.'*

Hikari felt some movement behind her and looked back to see Jotaro waking up and stretched a bit. She smiled and sat up on her knees. "Good morning JoJo." She greeted. "Sleep well?" Jotaro sent a small smile her way and leaned down to place a kiss on her lips. "Yeah." He said as he got up from the bed. "Come on. We're going out for breakfast."

"Okay." Hikari said. She got up, put on her shoes and headband on, and made some time to make the bed before joining Jotaro in the hallway. Hikari was slightly surprised when Jotaro offered her his arm, but she smiled and gladly took it as the two walked outside to the front of the hotel where Polnareff and Iggy was waiting.

After about 20 minutes of waiting, Polnareff started to complain since Joseph and Avdol weren't down yet, Joseph hadn't even come out of his room yet. "Polnareff is going on and on about the five of us finding somewhere to eat breakfast." Avdol said through the second-floor window.

"Hurry and wake him up, Avdol! He's got five minutes before I come up there! You know, I thought old people were supposed to get up early!" Polnareff yelled up. Pretty soon Avdol had come outside and joined the three but they were still missing Joseph. After about 20 more minutes and still, no Joseph. Avdol went back inside to fetch Joseph. As the rest of the group waited Polnareff and Jotaro took this time for a smoke break. Hikari made sure to put out any of Polnareff's buds to prevent any more unexpected fires based on what Nemuru told her before.

While the guys were taking a smoke break, to pass the time as well, Hikari's mind went to that incident with Anubis. While she was inside of her mind, something had happened during the last few moments of that fight. She had no idea what had happened or how she even did what she did to beat him. But she could feel it. She knew that Soundless Voice was capable of doing something more. But...how can she do it again? Maybe... Maybe if she were to try...

Hikari stretched her hands out. A faint sphere flashed in and out of existence in her palms while the guys converse with each other. "What's the hold-up?" Jotaro said, getting annoyed by the second.

"That's what I like to know. Avdol went inside to find him, but he hasn't come back either. Oh no! What if those snuck off!?" Polnareff said.

"What?"

"They're probably having an amazing breakfast as we speak!" Polnareff exclaimed. Jotaro sighed. He just can't with this guy sometimes. "It's more likely he's taking his time in the bathroom. But if they don't show in the next five minutes, we'll go look for them." Jotaro stated.

"Yeah. The bathroom. Guess that makes sense. You know, come to think, the bathrooms in this hotel are spotless." Polnareff said.

"AAH!" Jotaro and Polnareff immediately turned to Hikari as soon as they heard her scream and heard something equivalent to a small explosion. They turned to see a small flash a bluish-white light and Hikari falling flat on her behind. "Hikari, are you okay? What happened?" Polnareff said as he and Jotaro rushed to her side. Hikari rubbed her sore bottom as she said, "I'm sorry. I was...just trying to see if that could work?"

"If what could work?" Jotaro asked her. Helping her up to her feet. "This...thing I did with Soundless Voice during the fight with Anubis. I did something that defeated him, but I don't know how to make it appear."

"Hm, is that so. That probably means your Stand might be evolving in some way." Polnareff tells her, thinking it over to that fight as well.

"You think so?" Hikari asked.

"Probably. But whatever it was, try not to force it on yourself." Jotaro said as he petted her head. Hikari nodded and decided to take it a bit slower instead of going right off the bat. She waits along with Jotaro and Polnareff while she cups her hands and began making the sphere

again. This time, taking her time on it. And instead of it blowing up in her face, it just sputters out. After a while though, neither Joseph or Avdol have yet to come back. A few moments ago several people ran by saying that someone had cut some rail-lines and the authorities had to cancel any train activity for the time being.

"Those two are taking forever...! As long as they've been in there, you'd think they were putting on makeup and dressing for a gala." Polnareff said

"I'm getting rather worried...should we go check on them?" Hikari asked.

Jotaro pulled out his watch and said, "And it's almost 9:00 am. They may have run into an enemy on the way here."

"You think we should see where they ran off to?" Polnareff suggested

"I guess. Ugh, good grief." Jotaro said.

"It's time to go, Iggy." Polnareff called for the dog.

"We should hurry and find them. I'm worried about what could have happened to them." Hikari said. Jotaro, Polnareff, and Hikari made their way back into the hotel to check on Joseph and Avdol's room. "Polnareff, Hikari, keep your guard up." Jotaro said.

"Have you forgotten who you're talking to?" Polnareff said. Jotaro pushes open the door but sees no one inside. "Hmm... Seems Mr. Joestar and Avdol already left. And it doesn't really look like there was a struggle." Polnareff said. "Old man. Avdol. You here?" Jotaro called out.

"Hey, Jotaro. Hikari. I'm starting to get a bad feeling about this." Polnareff said.

"Me too." Jotaro said.

"This isn't good. Maybe we should check around town." Hikari said. "Yeah." Jotaro agreed. Jotaro, Polnareff, and Hikari were now in a small plaza as they searched for Joseph and Avdol. Hikari and Jotaro had kept walking not realizing that Polnareff had stopped. "Hey,

Jotaro! Hikari! It's the enemy, I'm hot on his trail!" Polnareff yelled. Hikari and Jotaro quickly turned around but saw no sign of the Frenchman. "Mr./Polnareff.....?" Hikari and Jotaro said.

"Polnareff, where did you go?!" Jotaro called out.

"Over here, Jotaro!"

Hikari and Jotaro looked around but couldn't pinpoint where Polnareff's voice was coming from. "Let's split up and look for him." Hikari said. Before Jotaro could answer Hikari had run off in the direction to where she thought she heard Polnareff's voice. Hikari kept running around searching for silver hair but couldn't spot any sign of Polnareff. "Excuse me? I'm sorry to bother you, but have you seen a tall man with silver hair?" Hikari asked a man. The man shook his head no.

Hikari asked several more people but no one had seen Polnareff. *'Oh goodness, this isn't going nowhere.'* Hikari kept wandering around when she spotted a woman with long black hair tied in a high ponytail walking just ahead of her. Hikari ran up to catch up to her and politely tapped her on the shoulder. "Excuse me? Miss?" She asked. The woman turned and stared at her. Hikari shrunk back and was disturbed by the cold look in her orange-coloured eyes. "What do you want?" She asked cooly.

"Oh, um, I'm sorry for bothering you. But I'm looking for my friend, have you seen him. He's about this tall and has silver hair?" She asked her.

The woman stared her down before shaking her head. "No, haven't seen anyone like that."

"Oh, okay. Thank you very much, Miss." Hikari said as she gave a small bow and began to walk away.

"God, you're such a worthless little bitch, aren't you?" The woman suddenly says, making Hikari stop in her tracks. She slowly turned back to her with a shocked and confused face. Wha...what did she...? "I-I'm sorry...? B-but...what did you say?" She asked tentatively. The woman turned around to face her and held a look of unbridled rage.

"RAGH! That innocent, nice act of yours turns my stomach!" She screamed as a sudden gust of wind had come out of nowhere and knocked Hikari back.

"If you think you can be all sweet and delicate to get yourself out of this then you got another thing coming!" She screamed. Hikari hastily got back up and moved to keep herself at a safe distance. The rage coming from this woman was almost impossible to understand. *'She must be an enemy,"* Hikari thought, *"Is she the one Polnareff was chasing and now is coming after me?'*

Her eyes widened when she saw a massive Warhammer appear on her hand and the look in her eyes was clear that she was going to kill her. Hikari looked around her and saw that there were a lot of people around. If she was going to start a fight, and no doubt she was, Hikari can't let innocent people get involved in this. She turned and made a break for it. The woman growled as she chased after her. Hikari ran off until she found herself in a deserted street. "This should be safe for a while...at least no one will get hurt." She said.

"No one except for you that is." The woman as she stalked down her victim like a wild predator. Hikari whirled around and brought out Soundless Voice, ready to conjure up a shield if she were to attack. "I guess I shouldn't ask, but you're working for Dio, aren't you?"

"Ha, what do you know, you aren't as stupid as you look. You're right for once. My name's Carrie and my Stand, Viking's Wrath is going to knock you down to the dirt where you belong!" Carrie shouted as she shot out forward with amazing speed. Hikari's eyes widened as Soundless Voice pulled up a shield to defend herself. Her Warhammer struck the shield.

However, instead of sending the attack back at her, Carrie smirked and burst of wind pierced through it and slammed her back. What made it worse was that the moment she struck, Hikari felt agonising pain in her body. "AUGH! It...hurts!!" An indescribable pain reigned supreme in her heart and she writhes to the floor, withering in the agony. Hikari gripped at her chest as tears trickled down her face. She desperately wanted to know why her heart was in so much pain. She could barely move and tried to open her eyes.

Carrie stood above her with a condescending, smug look on her face as she enjoyed the pitiful sight of Hikari. "Aw, what's wrong? Does it hurt?" She asked in a mockingly sweet tone.

"H-H....how did you-? I had put out..." Hikari questioned. How did she managed to hit her when she had made her shield? Almost nothing could break or go through it. Was that part of her Stand's abilities? Hikari made a small squeak of pain as she tried to move away from her. Carrie's smirk widened and raised her hammer. "You look like you're in a lot of pain... Here! Have some more!" She shouted as she swung her hammer, aiming straight for Hikari's stomach. Hikari coughed up blood and saliva as she was sent flying before skidding, tumbling, to a stop.

Carrie let out a sadistic laugh as she made her way over to the golden-haired girl. "Hahahaha!! Oh, this will be more fun than I thought. Putting down pathetic, little weaklings like you is the best entertainment I can get these days." Carrie laughed as she watched Hikari struggling to get back up again. Just as she wanted. Hikari can try to get back up as much as she wants, it'll just make knocking her back down all the more exciting for her.

Hikari wheezed and hunched over as she coughed up blood. She gripped at her chest where she felt zero air coming through her lungs. Her wounds...her lungs... She can't breathe... Oh, no....this isn't good. Hikari lifted her head to see Carrie making her way towards her again, smirking at her. What was she going to do? How was she supposed to fight against a Stand that can go through her defences? Hikari shakily rose back up to her feet and tried to think of a plan.

Carrie rushed in and swung her Viking's Wrath down again. Soundless Voice appeared and create a barrier to protect her master. The hammer had struck much hard this time that it makes the Stand of the moon shake just from the impact, as it sends a burst of wind inside of her barriers after striking, which in turn makes her go flying back again. "Quit trying to be tough and just let me kill you already! You're only making things worse for yourself. It's not like you're gonna last long in life anyway."

Hikari gasped for air as she says, "B-but I can't...do that... JoJo... E...everyone's needs my help to beat Dio... I can't just give up."

"Hmph. Right, they need you...is that what they've been telling you? Is that what *Jotaro's* been telling you ?" Carrier asked her.

"N-no...but I believe I play an important role to help them as best I can." Hikari said as Soundless Voice traps her opponent in a bubble. Soundless Voice motions her hands and begins to make the bubble smaller and smaller, enabling Carrie to move freely. But the black-haired woman didn't look to be all that concern. "Oh, sure. You play an important role...does that mean that you're more important than any of them? That you're better than them? Is that it?!"

That struck Hikari. "What?! No, of course not! I would never think that." Why is she saying such things? She...she had no idea what she was talking about? She doesn't know anything about her or her friends. That weakened her concentration and it causes Soundless Voice to stop her actions. It was only for a brief moment, but it was more than enough for Carries to swing Viking's Wrath and smash the bubble into a million pieces. The strike was even more powerful and it send sharp pains in Hikari's body. Soundless Voice turned her head and stared at her master with worry-filled eyes.

"You know what? You're right, you wouldn't think that at all. No one would. Because they know that you're completely useless in every level imaginable. You don't contribute nothing to your team and nothing you do will ever amount to anything. I'm pretty sure that you're *friends* think the same way." Carrie said.

"That's not true." Hikari told her. That was a lie... There was no way JoJo and the others would ever think that about her. They know that she does what she can to help. Don't they? Hikari let out a frightful gasp as she barely managed to avoid getting struck in the head by Carrie's hammer. Hikari moved back as she tried to avoid the onslaught of Carrie's attacks. With each swing she took, the more set she was on seeing her die. Hikari ducked and Carrie's hammer broke through the side of a building. Hikari moved out of the way and went to trap her again. But she was prepared this time. Carrie swung her hammer and a gust of wind blew, picking up dust and dirt of the ground, sending it Hikari's way. Hikari coughed as she tried to clear her vision and Carrie rushed at her again.

Chapter 43: A Soundless Voice Cries Out! Part 2

Carrie swung Viking's Wrath at her head again but fortunately, Soundless Voice manifested behind her and kicked at her feet, causing her to lose her balance and fell to the ground. Hikari trapped her in her bubble shield again and said, "Please, stop this! I don't want to fight to anymore. Tell me where Dio's hiding and I'll let you go."

Carrie smirked and said, "Or else what? What can you even do? Do you even have the guts to hurt me? Seriously, what role do you to be here?"

That struck her to the core. "I can... ...I...my role is too..." What...why was she here? Why did she come here again...? Hikari isn't a fighter.... could she do that? Can she hurt another person? But Carrie was an enemy. She was sent to kill her and her friends...! She...she has to fight back...but... how was she supposed to do that?

That trick from before isn't going to help as it'll just go against her. Wha...what reason does she have for travelling all this way? What is she good for? What else can she even do to help support her friends? As self-doubt was beginning to seep into her Carrie continued.

"Of course. You have been tricked into thinking that you were something very special. I'm sure they said many supportive and sweet words to you to make you feel better. The reality of the matter is quite different than the lies they are presenting you with. I shall open your eyes though," She says as she smashed through the bubble with Viking's Wrath. Whenever Viking's Wrath hits, with every time it makes contact, each strike is as powerful or more as the last. Another gust of wind blew in and knocked Hikari back. Every time Carrie would destroy her shields, it weighs down heavily on Hikari's mentality.

"You're so-called "friends" were more than happy to have your skills on their team, at first. But that was only because they thought you could be useful to them. Instead, they have to keep saving you

whenever something happens. You can't do anything to protect yourself without them helping you." She says.

"N-no... You're wrong... I am useful...!" Hikari said as she struggles to get on her knees. She's lying. She has to be. She can't listen to her.

"It hasn't happened yet. But it will. Sooner or later, they're going to either dump you or send you packing if you can't get your shit together. Hell, even a mutt is a competent assent than you. You're becoming way to pathetic to keep around. Do you honestly believe they'd allow you to go up against Lord Dio with them? Ha! You'll die within seconds before you could even try. Even Jotaro knows how weak you are. That is why he is constantly by you. He believes you will snap under pressure if he doesn't hold your hand every five seconds." Carrie continues.

"Stop it! Please...! Why are you saying such things?" Hikari asks her but was quickly silenced when Carrie kicked her down and began to stomp all over her. Her head, chest, stomach, legs. Anywhere that will hurt. "You know that I speak the truth," She murmurs and kicked violently on Hikari's stomach.

"I know you must think of me as some kind of monster. But I am saying and doing this for your own good. Better you see things as they will happen if you continue being alive. It would make life so much better if you were to die. Just of how many people will be relieved knowing their biggest burden is no more." Carrie explains to Hikari.

"No! You're lying...! I...I'm not a burden...!" Hikari cried out, tears fell from her face.

"I know the truth can be difficult to accept. But accept it you must," She states and continues her mental/physical assault. Carrie grabbed a fistful of Hikari's hair and began to punch her repeatedly in the face. "You're a waste of space! You're nothing but a failure and a big mistake! A stupid, worthless little slut like you should have never been born in the first place!"

Carrie then drops her and spreads a smirk. Enjoying the bruises forming on her face and the blood flowing from her nose. "Oh, right.

There's one thing I forgot to mention." She leaned down and whispered into her ear, "Jotaro couldn't care less about you. He'd rather get you out of his life than spending another day with you."

Hikari's eyes widen in shock at that. She didn't know what exactly happened, but her body moved on its own. Hikari had kicked Carrie off of her and tackled her to the ground. More tears fell from her eyes as she began hitting Carrie with weak punches with the occasional hair pull. "That's a lie! JoJo would never do that! He cares about me! Stop saying things that aren't true!" Hikari sobbed as she tried to hit Carrie. The black-haired woman gripped her wrists and delivered a solid headbutt and shoved Hikari off.

Hikari tried to scrabble to her feet when Carrie got up and summoned Viking's Wrath again. She swung down and made contact with her back. Making a very sickening cracking sound. The winds were more fierce this time and it had left small cuts on her arms and legs. Hikari went spiralling into the ground. Coughing up blood. "Oh, does he now!? Right, I forgot! Men don't want to see a real woman like me! They want to see a little bitch who just acts like she's an innocent, perfect ***angel*** like you!!" Carrie says, spewing venom at the word 'angel', as brought her hammer down.

Soundless Voice appears to defend her master and pulled up a shield. Viking's Wrath slammed against her defences, but it didn't break as easily but it did leave a massive crack on it. That's when the shield deflected the hit back at her. Carrie was hit by the force created by her Stand and knocked her back. Hikari lifted her head to lock her eyes with hers. Everything Carrie's been saying aren't true. Her friends care for her. Jotaro loves her. There's no way they'd be faking it this whole time! ....Right?

Hikari got up on her feet and ran off to get away from her. But she had only run for a good thirty seconds before her lungs and her injuries were getting to her. She nearly toppled over. Began wheezing and coughed up blood. She had to hide. Hikari looked around and saw an alley with a bunch of boards and crates. She went over and hide behind some of the crates just as Carrie ran up. She was seething with rage and was spastically looked around. Looking for the golden-haired girl.

"Where are you?! How dare you do that to me!? I'm gonna find you, bitch!" Carrie shouted at the top of her lungs. She was furious that Hikari had used her Stand's strength against her, her wimpy punches didn't count. Carrie slammed her hammer on the ground which causes a mini earthquake and creates a crater where she stands. Hikari ducked down, trying to regain her strength, while Carrie continued to smash and destroy everything in sight. Her hand brushed up against a plank board and thought that it might be useful. Hikari peeked up and saw the destruction Carrie had caused and was facing away from her. She was breathing heavily but she was still enraged.

"Now's my chance." She whispered to herself. Hikari got up from her hiding spot and quietly walked over to Carrie. "I know you're here...." Carrier seethes. As Hikari gets closer, she raises the board over her head. Ready to knock her out and get away. Hikari swung the board, but Carrie let out a sadistic smirk. She swiftly turned around and slammed Viking's Wrath against Hikari's stomach and brought it back by slamming her right shoulder. When Hikari dropped to her knees, Carrie smirked and delivered a strong kick underneath Hikari's chin.

"HAHAHAHA!!! That's it!? That was your best plan!? That was pathetic! God, you are such a disappointment!! I almost feel sorry for you!" Carrie laughed as she began to beat down Hikari while she was down. After being berated, pushed to her limits, and now experiencing serious pain... Hikari is pretty much out of options and is tired... Stressed... And just an utter mess. She's crying, wishing Jotaro was here.

Carrie finished beating her and smiled down at the crumpled, sobbing mess. "Worthless and weak... A complete failure. Can't do anything right. A pathetic, waste of life that shouldn't have lived this long. Admit it, the only reason you're even still alive is that Jotaro and the others keep having to save you over and over."

"N...no." Hikari cried and coughed out as she tried to get back up. But the pain shot up in her arms and fell back down. She can't listen to her... Carrie was a lier... She's just trying to get in her head.

"Look at you, you don't even know to fight! You are nothing without Jotaro by your side to protect you. Every one of them is out here

fighting for their lives while you're just slowing them down, making Jotaro's mother suffer more."

"Not that true..!" Don't listen. She's lying.

"Above all... you're holding Jotaro back in almost every category. Hahaha...! Do you honestly think he loves someone like you?! A small, weak, annoying little girl who hasn't done anything meaningful for him? You are not special just because you're with him. You are not a beautiful or unique snowflake just because he *"loves"* you. He's just playing with you. ***I*** could be a much better lover to him than you will ever be!"

SHE'S A LIAR! "That's a lie!! JoJo... Jotaro's not like that!! He would never do something like that to me! He.... wouldn't. Would he?"

Jotaro... Jotaro was her best friend. Her hero. Her inspiration...

He was there for her whenever she needed him.

He's always looked after her.

And she'd tried her best to do the same...right? She did...right...?

Jotaro would never have toyed with her, right?

After all these years...right??

"Aw, sweetie. Don't be sad. He might've not liked you at all to begin with. You were just someone who he took pity on. After all, hasn't everyone else been doing that your whole life? Pitying you? Mocking you? Manipulating you?"

"Pitying me...? JoJo doesn't love me...? I...I...thought that we...were..." What has she done for him anyway?

What good did she ever bring him?

He had no reason to step in that day. He could've walked off.

Maybe he didn't want to feel responsible for walking away and only helped her and become her friend just to make himself feel better.

"Sorry. But there's no doubt about it. He hates you. None of it was real. You were just a charity case to him. To Joseph. To Kakyoin. To all of them. A sad, pathetic, worthless little girl who needed to be babysat with no real payoff."

'Jotaro doesn't love me. The others aren't my friends. Because I'm not like them. I'm not strong. I'm not smart. I don't have any real talents... I'm just....dull compared to them.'

"You needed to hear the truth sooner or later. So I thought I'd be nice enough to do it for them."

It's was all a lie. Their friendship. Their happy moments. Their sad moments. The feelings she had. Their kiss.

"It was a lie... It meant nothing...." She cried.

"Time to die now." Carrie raised her hammer over her head with a malevolent smile on her face. Ready to bash in her skull.

"I'm sorry...for being such a burden." Hikari gazes blankly at her. Awaiting for the finishing blow. If she was going to die... then she wants to see Jotaro one more time. Even if their friendship was fake...it meant a lot to her at least. That's when her life flashes before her eyes a bit. She was about ready to give up on her life as the final hammer swing was coming down upon her. But then she has a memory of when they were in middle school, one she hasn't remembered in a long time.

"I'm so sorry..." A twelve-year-old Hikari sadly says as she and a fourteen-year-old Jotaro walked back home. Jotaro looked back at her with a confused expression. He had bruise forming on his left cheek and had a bandage above his right eyebrow. He had gotten into another fight in school. It started normally, but then some boys were harassing Hikari and were pressuring her to go out with one them. Jotaro quickly step in and defended her, and one thing lead to another and the four boys got into a brawl. In the end, the boys and Jotaro were suspended for a few days.

"Hey, what's with that look? It wasn't your fault that this happened." Jotaro said turning around to look at her. Hikari shook her head. "But it is. It's my fault you had got in trouble, I'm so sorry. If I had the strength to

defend myself then...I wouldn't be a burden to you." She said.

Jotaro narrowed his eyes and bonked her on the head. "Ow." Hikari went. "What was that-?" "That's for thinking of yourself like that! You listen to me, you aren't a burden! You're my best friend. Whatever happens, I'll be here to protect you. It doesn't bother me." Jotaro said. He said this is with boldness in his voice. Hikari was slightly taken aback by it. He was her best friend too, but that didn't mean he has to deal with her all the time.

"But...I'm nothing like you... I don't know how to do the things you do." Hikari said.

"You don't have to be anything like me. You'll learn to build confidence eventually but stay the same too. I love the way you are now, but I'll teach you how to be strong if you want." Jotaro said.

"You will..?" Hikari asked. She smiled, but then it fell. "Oh no. I'm sorry, I shouldn't be asking you to do things for me."

"It's alright. I don't mind at all. Because," Jotaro said as he patted her head. "Seeing Hikari's smiling face makes everything worth it. It makes me happy knowing that I can bring a smile to your face."

Jotaro smiled at her when he said this. Hikari felt love in her heart and gave him a big hug. She felt so lucky to have him. Jotaro... He wasn't lying to her. He wasn't pitying her. If he was...why would he step in and get himself in a fight?

"Hikari..." Jotaro's crying face flashed in her mind. Seeing him looking down at her with tears in her eyes, broke her heart. The pain he felt when she was hospitalised must've been unbearable. *"I know... But you can't imagine how I felt when you almost died... I don't want to relive that ever again. I don't want you to experience that ever again. I'm not leaving you all alone. You're mine now." He said.*

"Stay behind me, got it?"

"You bastard, let her go!"

"You're mine now."

"I love you..."

Hikari's eyes snapped open. She quickly held up the palms of her hands and a pure white, full moon shield manifested to protect her. This time, it didn't break. Not a single gust of wind blew through. "What-?! What the-?!" Carrie asked in shock. She slammed her hammer again, but it still didn't break. Hikari got up back to her feet and Soundless Voice appeared and maintained the shield. Hikari closed her eyes and took in a deep breath. "That's enough... I'm...done with this fight." She said. Staring right into Carrie's orange-eyes.

Carrie bared her teeth and glared daggers at her. "Bitch, don't you dare look at me like that! Don't think you're hot shit because you suddenly got a new shield, I'll just keep bashing it until I break you!"

"I don't think that at all. You're right. I'm not as strong as my friends. Maybe I am still around because of them. Maybe I shouldn't be here at all... But...I am!" Hikari said. Walking over to Carrier. The Egyptian woman growled and slammed her hammer against her shield. But no matter how much force she put it, the shield wouldn't break.

"I'm still here. Because I made a promise to JoJo and the others that I would help them to take down Dio. But also because this time, instead of JoJo protecting me, I wanted to become strong enough to protect him!" Hikari said. Her voice becoming more strong and confident. Jotaro. Kakyoin. Nemuru. Mr. Joseph. Mr. Avdol. Mr. Polnareff. After everything they've been through, not one of them had ever treated her the way Carrier had claimed they did.

None of them ever made her feel that she was worthless, or a burden. None of them had EVER blamed her for anything that's happened. Instead, they have supported her, care for her and inspire her to be strong. Hikari owes everything to them. She wasn't going to let them down. She will fight and stand proud till the end.

"I never should have listened to anything you have said. Why would I listen to someone who doesn't know me or my teammates? You don't know anything about us. JoJo loves me. Mr. Joestar and the others are the greatest friends I could ever ask for. And I'm not going to listen to what a big, dumb bully says otherwise."

"Shut up! What the hell is up with this?! You should be crying for me to spare you!" Carrie shouted. She swung her hammer again.

"If I did, would you have listened? You're not a nice person at all. I have been letting so many others just do and say what they want to me and I've never dared to stand up to them. But now, I'm won't be pushed around anymore." Hikari said.

"Damn you!" Carrie swung Viking's Wrath again, in another attempt to break her shield, but the force from in caused the hammer to break in half, the top half landing somewhere behind her. Leaving her to hold the broken bottom half. Now that she was without a weapon, Hikari step up and looked at her dead in the eye. "I won't be silent against someone like you."

Soundless Voice and Hikari pressed their hands against Carrie's shouted and both shout out their attack. Her true strength and power awakened. "**Stardust Moon Pulse!**" A ball of energy formed in their hands and blasted Carrie far away. The attack and the force Hikari put into it, broke her ribcage, knocked the wind out of her, and caused internal damage. Carrie skidded to a halt and was twitching before being rendered unconscious.

Hikari let out a sigh of relief as it was finally over. She felt a small form of pride within her from what she did. Pride and happy. She gave a small smile as she felt some weight being lifted off her shoulders. "I should go find JoJo and Mr. Polnareff. They must be looking for me." Hikari said as she turns to walk away. But stops and turns her head to the unconscious Egyptian woman who was lying on the ground. Hikari turns around and walks over to her. She kneeled and healed the woman. Not *too* much though. She was sure that someone will find her and call an ambulance sooner or later. With that in mind, Hikari walked away to find her teammates.

She wasn't sure how she was going to explain the bruises to her boyfriend, but hopefully, she can calm him before he goes into a berserker rage. Eventually, after walking for five minutes, spotted a familiar black jacket walk by in the distance. "JoJo!" Hikari happily said as she took off running after Jotaro. She hadn't realised how much she wanted to see him again. "JoJo! JoJo! Jotaro!" Hikari called out as Jotaro turned a corner.

Hikari ran as fast as she could trying to catch up to Jotaro. She heard a loud crash as she ran towards the corner Jotaro had turned down.

As she turned the corner she saw a man with dozens of cuts on his face laying before Jotaro.

He was a man of short stature and height, easily being dwarfed by Jotaro. His biggest hallmark is his bizarre brown hairstyle, which resembles a dust mop decorative with silver beads that hung underneath. He wears a loose-fitting lavender dress shirt with purple stripes and dark purple straps, blue undershirt, brown arm warmers, Khaki pants with brown accessories and brown shoes.

Alessi groaned in pain when he fell from the window. Damn it! Once he gets his hand on Polnareff he's gonna-! Alessi paused as he noticed someone standing above him. He looked up and froze in fear when he saw the delinquent of the Joestar family. *'EEEEAHHHH! Jotaro!?'* Alessi whimpered in fear. *'Crap! If he's here then I'm done for! How'd he find us?!'*

"Hmm..." Jotaro went as he stared down at the odd-looking man. Wondering how he is and how he got those injuries. He crossed his arms as Alessi breathed heavily. Trying not to look terrified right now. Jotaro looked up from the second-story window and said, "Someone falling from a window covered in blood...you don't see that every day."

'Stay calm. Stay calm! At times like this, the winner is the one who stays calm. Just think about it Alessi; Jotaro must be looking for the adult version of Polnareff, he has no clue who I am. I'll do what I always do, play dumb till the last minute than attack when he least expects it!' Alessi thought to himself. He painfully gets back up and takes a glance at Jotaro and clasped his hands together. Looking so worried and innocent.

"Uh! Oh no! My boss is going to be so very angry with me when he finds out! Here I was cleaning the window when I suddenly slipped and fell through! What am I going to do, what am I going to do? I am in so much troub-!" Alessi whined as he pretending to be a harmless citizen and began walking on head when suddenly Polnareff, who had been reduced to a small child, came up from the broken window. "Hold it right there, you frizzy-haired freakshow!!"

Jotaro quickly looked at saw the small silver-haired boy. But

unfortunately, he wasn't aware that he was Polnareff. Polnareff had taken noticed of Jotaro as well. Although he knew that he knew him, his mind had also been reduced to that of a child and could not remember his name. "Hey, mister! Eh, uh...what was his name again? Come on, what was it?" Polnareff says as he struggles to remember.

"JoJo!" Hikari called out as she began running towards him. Jotaro turned around and was surprised to see Hikari. His surprise turned to anger when he saw bruises on her beautiful face. WHO THE HELL TOUCHED HER!?!?

But Jotaro had bigger worries to deal with. Because his attention was taken away by his friends, Alessi took this to his advantage. "Gotcha now, Jotaro!" Alessi shouted as he sent out his Stand, Set. Set is bound to Alessi's shadow, taking its form but with a distinguished shape, the most prominent feature being its round head, a pointed crest, and large eyes. "Mister, watch out for his shadow!" Polnareff yelled out.

Alessi's Stand moved and Jotaro jumped in the air but it was too late. Set had already touched Jotaro's shadow. "I did it! I really did it! I managed to touch Jotaro's shadow!" Alessi yelled elated. "Mister, no!!" Polnareff yelled out.

"Hahahaha! So, Jotaro?! How does it feel to be placed under the spell of my Stand?" Alessi yelled. Suddenly Jotaro felt his body quake. The world around him started to get bigger as he felt himself get smaller. "This feeling... This is..." Jotaro says as he gets smaller and smaller.

"This is bad! He's turning into a kid just like did!" Polnareff yelled out.

"Oh, Jotaro! I heard through the grapevine that you've only recently developed your Stand, Star Platinum. Then that means, you didn't have the ability to use your Stand when you were a kid! So now you're nothing but ordinary! Hahahahaha!!" Alessi laughed out. Jotaro started to shrink his school coat engulfing him. "Oh no! He's been turned into a little boy! He looks like he can't be any older than a seven-year-old!" Polnareff yelled out as he watches from the window.

"Guess I'm the winner! I hope you're watching Master Dio, Cause I'm about to kill Jotaro!" Alessi yelled as he pulled out an over-sized hatchet. "You better give me a good reward for everything I've gone through! Now Jotaro, it's time to die!" Alessi roared, lifting his hatchet. Before his hatchet could make contact with him, Alessi was met with a swift and solid punch to the face by the child Jotaro. "Whoa! What a hit! He decked him using only his little kid fist!" Polnareff was astounded by the sight.

Alessi fell to the ground cheek already swollen and blood dripping from his nose. "Oh, good grief. Don't underestimate me just cause I'm a kid." Jotaro spoke with his prepubescent voice. Jotaro walked towards Alessi raising his fist. "**Ora! Ora! OraOraOraOraOraOraOra! Ora!**" Jotaro hit Alessi multiple times, sending the man flying. Doing a cool pose when he did so.

"WHAT?! You're seriously telling me that Jotato can kick ass even as a little kid?!" Alessi said.

"I knew he was tough, but he was that strong as a kid? Badass." Polnareff smiled in amazement at Jotaro's raw power.

"Aaah! So cute!" Hikari squealed as she dropped to her knees and pulled the tiny Jotaro in her arms. Engulfing him in a, near suffocating, but loving hug. "Aw, I've forgotten how small you were as a kid! You're so cute I can squeeze you!" Hikari giggled as she hugged him closer as Alessi passed out. Now, when it mentioned near suffocated, it was because Hikari was hugging him while his face was buried in her breasts. Child Jotaro was taken aback by this and was momentarily stunned before he started to grow to his normal size.

Hikari froze when suddenly the child felt a bit more...bigger...bulkier...and broader. She looked down and saw that Jotaro had returned to his normal, teenage size...and also saw that she was hugging his head...which was buried between her breasts. Hikari face heated up and she instantly lets him and backs away. "Ah! I'm so sorry!" She says as she bows her head in shame. Jotaro turned away, tilting his hat. "...Whatever, no big deal." Yeah, no big deal. Then again, Jotaro couldn't stop the smirk creeping on his face.

Shortly after, a full-grown Polnareff came over. The three stood over

Alessi as he began to stir. As the man opened his eyes he let out a scream seeing the two men glaring down at him. Polnareff smirked and bent down. "You've got off easy friend, but I can fix that." Star Platinum and Silver Chariot came out scaring Alessi. For those who have forgotten; When Star Platinum smiles...not even God can save you. For when you see a usually stoic and angry entity smile like this... you better run like hell for your dear life!

"**ORAORAORAORAORAORAORAORAORA! ORA!**" The two Stands proceeded to attack Alessi blowing the man away. "Attaboy!" Alessi screamed. Stand, Set. God of chaos and storms. Alessi, thirty-eight years old, single, and an unfortunate projectile. Out of Commission!

Now that that's over,

"Hikari, what the hell happened to your face?!" Polnareff cried out as he panicked when he saw the bruises on Hikari's face. "Ah...well, I..." Hikari said as she looked between Jotaro and Polnareff. They were on the verge of being concerned for her injuries and beating the shit out of the one who dared to lay a hand on her. Hikari hid a small smile as she watches their actions. They were genuine. They did care about her. Carrie was nothing but a lier. She knows that now.

"I...had an encounter with a Stand user and-."

"SO SOME DIPSHIT THOUGHT IT WOULD BE FUN TO STRIKE AN INNOCENT MAIDEN?!" Polnareff shouted.

"Let's go kill him." Jotaro said in a dark tone.

"Agreed." Polnareff said in a split second. They turned around to go find the Stand user who had dared to leave those bruises but Hikari quickly ran in front of them and stopped them. "Wait, please. You don't have to worry, she's already defeated. I won." She said. This took the men by surprise. She what? "You...won?" Polnareff questioned.

"Are you saying you took down an enemy Stand all by yourself?" Jotaro asked her with a shocked expression. Hikari gave a soft blush and nodded her head. That's when Jotaro, to her complete shock, grabbed her and lifted her in his arms. "Hahaha! That's incredible! Our little girl's all grown up!" Polnareff cheered as he patted her head.

"Nice work, Hikari. I'm proud of you." Jotaro smiled as he placed a soft kiss on her cheek. Hikari's face heated up again and tried to hide herself. She may have developed some new confidence but there was no way she'll be used to the affection Jotaro hands down to her. Eventually, Jotaro puts her down and he wanted to know everything that had happened. As Hikari begins telling Jotaro of her fight, a woman ran out of the home.

She was a fairly beautiful Egyptian woman with long hair kept in a ponytail. Her attire consists of a polka-dotted cloak covering a cream-coloured, sleeved dress. She also wears large metallic earrings and wristbands. Polnareff was surprised to see her but smiled. A faint blush coloured his cheek. The woman took notice of Polnareff and started talking to him. Hikari let out a kind smile as she watched the two and she leaned on Jotaro.

"Pardon me for asking, but have the two of us met before?" The woman asked. She and Polnareff had encountered each other when he faced against Alessi. The woman showed no hesitation in taking him in and tend to his wounds and was kind and genuine throughout the entire time.

Polnareff looked at her with the most gentle, loving look imaginable. Her kindness towards him. The fact that she was willing to take care of him, an unknown person, had caused Polnareff to care for her. But instead using the opportunity to flirt with her as he had done with other women in the past, Polnareff said, "No, I didn't see a kid come through. Sorry I couldn't help you." And turned away and walked off. It was for the best if she didn't know.

"Let's go Jotaro. Hikari." The woman tried to stop Polnareff. She felt as if she had seen him before, but she couldn't say anything more before they walked away. Still...somewhere in her heart, she hoped the two of them would meet again someday. As the three walked off Jotaro and Hikari kept looking at Polnareff, whose cheeks started to flush. "Not a single word from you two. I don't want to hear it." Polnareff said Jotaro smirked as Hikari giggled behind her hand.

"OH! Jotaro, Hikari, Polnareff! Where in the world have you slackers been?!" Joseph shouted.

"Ah, Mr. Joestar and Avdol!" Polnareff called out.

"How many times have I told you the three of you not to go wandering off on your own?!" Joseph said.

"Oh, you're in a position to talking! You're the ones who just disappeared!" Polnareff shouted pointing at Avdol and Joseph. Hikari quickly ran and placed herself between them. "Please don't fight. We're back together, so everything's fine." She said. "Now, now. Why don't we focused on getting something to eat?" Avdol said.

"Oh my God! Chiara, those bruises!" At that moment Iggy reappeared coming from around the corner of a random street. "Huh?! Hey Iggy! Where the hell have you been all day long?" Polnareff yelled. Iggy just let out a bark before turning away from the Frenchman causing him to clench his teeth in anger.

Afterwards, the group settled down for something to eat in a nice restaurant. Finally getting some food.

"Can I take that for you?" A waiter asked as he took away the plates and utensils.

"Yeah, thanks a million. It's about time, we're finally getting a bit of relief." Joseph said.

"It was quite the late breakfast, but I suppose it couldn't be helped." Avdol said.

"Yeah....." Polnareff said.

"Since we've almost made it to Cairo, I think it's time we've figured out where Dio is hiding out." Joseph held out his hand and Avdol placed a camera in it. "Oh, we're doing this?" Polnareff asked.

"Will it appear?" Jotaro asked.

"I'm not sure. But given that we're so close, the result should be more precise." Joseph said.

"It wouldn't hurt to try. Let's go ahead and do it." Hikari said. "All right, here we go!" Joseph yelled lifting his hand. He summoned Hermit Purple and brought his hand down on top of the camera effectively smashing it. Everyone around the restaurant froze what they were doing, one man even froze mid-bite, to look over at Joseph who just smashed a camera. A waiter ran over. "Excuse me, sir, i-is there a problem over here?"

"Everything's fine. Mind your own business." Avdol said as he waved the man off.

"Uh, yes sir...." The waiter stuttered before leaving. Finally, the broken camera produced a picture and Joseph grabbed it examining it. Behind him, various restaurant-goers still gave Joseph strange stares. "Old man, tell us. What is it?" Jotaro asked.

"Just a little longer. I see something...it's getting clearer...Hmm?! Take a good look!" Joseph slammed the photo onto the table so everyone could see. "There you have it gentlemen, our final destination!" Everyone looked to see that the picture had revealed the top of a large mansion.

Edit/ Author's note: Hello everyone. I'm writing/creating for a fellow

reader of mine, @Wofulbadge2. They had asked me if I were to make a drawing of Soundless Voice, however, I was unable to create a form to send it personally to them. So, as an alternative, I thought it would be better if I upload the picture here. What they said makes sense, by doing this it'll help those that are visual readers like themselves. ^-^

Chapter 44: Shadows vs Flames

"AAAUUGHHH!" Nemuru screamed as a streak of fire burned across her back. Her skin burned as blood trickled down her back. She fell to her knees as she glared at the bastard who struck her in the back. Seeing his smug face just pisses her off! How the hell did this even happen?! One minute she and Kakyoin were in that awkward situation, the next she's fighting with an enemy Stand user! How the hell did it come to this?!

A few hours ago

For the past couple of days now Kakyoin had been resting up in the hospital. Though he was worried that if he stays here any longer he wouldn't be able to catch up with the others. One the other hand, he was thoroughly enjoying his time as Nemuru had been very attentive to him. Whenever he needed something or had to go outside for air,

she would be on it in a heartbeat. He'll admit, having a beautiful girl like her tend to him like this was incredible, but he was worried that she wasn't taking time for herself as well.

Meanwhile, Nemuru was *really* hoping that Kakyoin wasn't being weirded out by her sudden change in behaviour. She wasn't normally this...eh, nice(?). But she wanted to show her thanks to him when he saved her from that water Stand, so she did what she could to make sure he was comfortable. Making sure he was warm, ate well, got some air, converse with him, and make sure that his eyes were healing correctly. As the days passed, Nemuru had been slowly realising that strange feelings have been developing within her.

These past few days, Nemuru had been so calm and at peace just by being with him. She had never felt this way before in a long time. She had only felt like this when her... ...Her parents were still around. Her father, a strong, intimidating man with a kind heart who would do anything for his family. Her mother, a kind, loving woman but held enough fire to tell people off to keep them from hurting her child. They were amazing people and had raised her with love.

Nemuru was utterly destroyed when her parents were violently taken away from her... Initially, she couldn't care less about him and wouldn't hesitate to put him down. But after taking Hikari's advice, and that incident at the pool in Singapore, made her think differently about him. His kindness, righteousness, and loyalty had charmed her. Nemuru wondered if she had developed feelings for him since their fight with Death Thirteen. Maybe even since Singapore. Sure, she liked him...but she wasn't sure if it was just some high school crush. Nemuru had contemplated about telling and/or asking Kakyoin how he thought of her but she was afraid he would take it as a joke and would just say that he liked her as a friend.

Nemuru made herself feel disappointed when she thought this. It would probably be best if she just kept that to herself. Currently, Nemuru had incidentally fallen asleep by Kakyoin's bedside and he knew this when he felt a patch of hair near his hand. He gave a faint blush as he carefully moved his hand and placed it on top of her head. Kakyoin laid on his bed as he enjoyed the comfortable silence. *'I'm glad Nemuru's stayed here with me. If she hadn't, I don't know what I'd be doing right now.'* Unfortunately, his peaceful moment with his

crush was sadly interrupted when a knock came through the door. The sudden noise had startled the dark-purple haired girl as she woke up with a jolt. "I'm awake!"

A doctor and a nurse came into the room with kind smiles. "Rise and shine, sir, Mr. Kakyoin. Are you feeling any better today?" Kakyoin sat up from his bed as he sighed. "To be perfectly honest, this new way of life isn't exactly agreeing with me. I'm feeling a little on edge." He tells the nurse.

"And have you had any discomfort?" The nurse asked.

Nemuru shook her head. "No, he hasn't actually. The painkillers must be working."

"Good. Excellent news." The nurse says as she and the doctor walked over to them. They had something important to tell them. "We're thrilled that you're feeling better." The doctor says.

"So Doctor, about these," Kakyoin began touching his bandages. "How long will do I have to keep them on? The thing is...I can't afford to wait any longer." He says. As much she was eager to rejoin the others as well, Nemuru didn't want to go rushing headfirst into things. For his sake, she'd much rather have things in peace for a while. The doctor and nurse looked at each other with concerned glances before turning back to the teens.

"Look Kakyoin, while your eyes will recover, your condition is nothing to be taken lightly. You'll be in our care for quite some time so please be patient. The fact of the matter is we just don't know how long you're going to remain here." The doctor tells him with all seriousness. That didn't sound good. Kakyoin held his breath as he tensed up. He was worried now. If they don't know how long he'll be there, then it might too late for them to catch up to the rest of the team. Nemuru took notice of this and went to reach for his hand to try and comfort him...but she hesitated and pulled away.

"Just kidding!" The doctor said in a much chipper, happy tone. Causing the teens to look at him with surprise. "It's true that your body still needs time to properly heal itself, but from some strange reason, doctors from the Speedwagon Foundation recently contacted

us out of the blue." The doctor explained. "And they asked that we entrust your medical care to them. Though I have little doubt their state-of-the-art medical treatments will prove to be more than effective. But tell me, who are you behind that schoolboy facade? Surely you must know that Foundation is world-famous. I can't imagine they'd want anything to do with an average high school student."

"Let's just say, I'm fortunate to have a very dependable friend." Kakyoin said with a smile as he chuckled. A dependable friend indeed. He knew full well who sent the Speedwagon Foundation his way. 'Thank you for everything Mr. Joestar. I suppose we'll be seeing each other again sooner than we thought. Jotaro. Hikari. Polnareff. Avdol. Iggy. Just hang in there.' He thought to himself.

"This is amazing! You're going to be okay!" Nemuru said as she suddenly got up from her chair and gave Kakyoin a loving hug, leaving him shocked. She gave him a soft squeeze before quickly realising what she was doing. The doctor and nurse let out a laugh and she quickly let go of him as if he burned her skin. "We'll just leave you two alone now. Play nice." The doctor playfully said.

"Hold on-!" Nemuru's face was strawberry red.

"Have a fun time with your girlfriend, Kakyoin." The doctor said. "I am NOT his-!" Nemuru began to say but the doctor quickly left before she could finish. Nemuru became even more embarrassed when Kakyoin started laughing. Most likely at her. Ugh! Stupid, stupid, stupid!! Why did she do that?! What she even thinking?! Was she thinking?! Nemuru glared at the dark-red haired man and growled, "Shut up!"

"Hahaha, sorry! B-but that was so unexpected. I didn't think you cared about me *that* much." Kakyoin laughed. But he was very flattered that she did. Nemuru was so happy he couldn't see her face right now. She could only imagine how he'll react if he saw how embarrassed she was. Nemuru cleared her throat and said, "W-well, at least this means that you'll be getting better treatment and can get out of here."

Kakyoin laughed a little more as he said, "Yeah. It was fortunate

enough that I don't have to worry about losing my sight, but with the help of the Speedwagon Foundation, I won't have to worry about anything else now." Kakyoin felt his bed dip down a bit and heard Nemuru let out a laugh of her own. "That's true. I'm so relieved that you're going to be okay..." She said softly. Thank goodness...he'll be able to see again. Nemuru has been all she can for him, but she can't stop feeling guilty.

She blamed herself for what happened to him. It was her fault for letting her guard down. It was her fault that he almost lost his eyes. It would be better...if he went home. Then she won't have to worry about him getting hurt ever again. It probably would've been better if they had never met at all. She... She couldn't afford to lose another person she cared so deeply for.

"Nemuru..." Kakyoin began. He thought about this carefully, thought about the words he'll say, and while this wasn't exactly the best place for it, there was no time like the present. Kakyoin searched until he reached her fingertips. "Listen... I, uh... I want to say-."

"I'm sorry... For causing you so much trouble." Nemuru told him. "It was my fault that you're here. I'm holding you back in a place like this... At that time, I was negligent...." Kakyoin quickly took hold of her hand when he felt her clench the sheets, shaking uncontrollably. "It's not your fault. I chose to jump in and save you. And I would do it again a hundred times over if it meant I can protect you."

"I don't want you to protect me..." Having someone protect her could only lead to despair.

"Nemuru, listen, I want to protect you. I don't care what happens to me as long as your safe." Kakyoin said.

"I don't care what you do to me...just please don't hurt my family." "Don't say that..." Nemuru said, barely a whisper. "The reason why I would gladly do anything to protect you is because I lo-."

"Kakyoin, I think it might be best if you retire from this journey. You've been through enough and I don't want to see you put into any more danger. By the time your wounds heal, I'll be preparing everything for your leave so you can-."

"NO!" His sudden yell threw Nemuru for a loop as she stared at him in shock. Silence filled the room as Nemuru backed away and Kakyoin clutching his sheets. Nemuru sadly turned her gaze away. Kakyoin knew he shouldn't have yelled at her like that. But...he can't just up and leave like this. He had a mission to complete. He had to help take down Dio and redeem himself for the crimes he committed. He wanted to stay with Nemuru until the very end. "I'm sorry...I shouldn't..." Nemuru began.

"No, I'm sorry. I shouldn't have yelled at you like that. Even though I was injured, I was happy to know that you were safe, and it may be absurd to say this now... But if these wounds finish healing one day earlier...both you and I will return. I want to stay and fight alongside everyone else. Including you." Kakyoin told her. Nemuru gazed down and saw how much his hand was shaking. She let out a sigh and said, "Alright. I get it. However, don't do anything recklessly. I won't be as considerate next time."

"Yeah... I'm sorry."

"I'm sorry too." Another awkward silence filled the room. This wasn't going as well as he wanted it to. Nemuru got up from the bed and said, "Well, I'm sure you must be feeling hungry. I'll go find some food for you." She was just about to leave when she was suddenly grabbed by the arm and pulled back. She landed right on top on Kakyoin and was shocked at why he would just grab her like that. Kakyoin seemed to get that as well as he felt his face heat and immediately let go of her. "Ah! So-sorry...!" Nemuru got off of him and took several steps back. Her face was deep red. "Uh... D-don't worry about that. I...I'm gonna go." She said as she quickly took off.

When Kakyoin heard the door open and close, he grabbed his pillow and buried his face into it. Letting out a muffled screamed. "Idiot! Why did I have to do something that stupid?! What was I thinking?! I had one chance to tell her how I feel and blew it."

Nemuru sped walk down the hallway as she tried to calm her fast pacing heart. Trying to make sense at what just happened. Why did Kakyoin suddenly grab her like that? Not just that, but wasn't he going to say something before she told him to retire from the mission. Now that she thought of it, but was he going to say to her?

Nemuru shook her head as she tried to keep it together.

Now she was even more confused. She did like Kakyoin, but she wasn't sure if she should be with him. She wanted to tell him, but she didn't know how he feels about her. What if she ends up embarrassing herself? What if he doesn't feel the same way? All these thoughts rang in her head, distracting her so much that she didn't noticed bumping into someone. "Ah, I'm sorry. Excuse me." She said as she walked around the individual. The person she bumped into turned his head and watched her go with a sinister look in his eyes.

Nemuru went into town to get some food for Kakyoin as she knew that hospital food wasn't that good. She went through the marketplace and chose options that she thought Kakyoin would want to eat and some drinks. As she walked back to the hospital, her mind went to Hikari and the others. Wondering how they were doing right now. If they're still in one piece. If they got any leads on Dio. How Hikari's doing with Jotaro. *'I probably shouldn't worry so much but we're in enemy territory. I'm sure they're doing okay and are waiting for us to come back.'* Nemuru thought to herself.

She was nearing the hospital when she noticed a man leaving the hospital and walking directly towards her. Nemuru got a bad vibe coming from him and kept her guard up. He had a smile on his face, but his eyes didn't match. They were cold, malicious and the way he carried himself he was looking for trouble. Nemuru wasn't sure if he was just some asshole-looking guy or not, but she had to be careful. When he was closer he said, "Hey there. Hi, I just wanted to say I'm sorry for bumping into you like that. It was my fault."

"Oh? Really? Well, don't worry about it...I was at fault too. So let's just forget about it." Nemuru said as politely as she could. Now that he was this close, the feeling intensified and she didn't want to spend another second with him. The strange man nodded and his smile widen. Nemuru bid him a good day and walked around him. Wanting to get back to Kakyoin as soon as possible. She suddenly stopped when the man suddenly said, "Why waste your time with some blind f***ker when you could be spending it with me?"

Nemuru stopped in her tracks as she felt her heart skip a beat. She felt her anger rise and her blood boil. Both for hearing this guy insult

Kakyoin and the way he said that in the most condescending tone she had ever heard. "Excuse me?" She said, trying to hold in her rage as she turned her head to look at him. The man didn't seem to be apologetic at all about what he said and continued to smile. "I'm just saying. I saw who were with. You're really pretty, and I'm confident that I can treat you better than he can."

"Okay, first off, we aren't even dating. And second, even if we were, there's no way I'd go for some arrogant shitbag who thinks he can get with any girl he meets."

"So am I taking this as a "no"?" He asked.

"Take it as a "hell no". I'm out of here, leave me alone." Nemuru said as she turned to leave.

"You're disobeying me...? That's no good. Looks like I have to discipline you." He said. Before Nemuru could process what he meant by that she felt something wrapped around her ankle and pulled her back with intense strength and speed. It lifted her high in the air and slammed her back down, knocking the air out of her lungs, and placing her back in front of the man.

"Oh, so sorry about that. But I cannot stand when women, especially cute looking ones like yourself don't obey me like they're supposed to. But that's alright, I am a patient man and I'll discipline you soon enough. You may call me Ramses, by the way." He says as he took back his 12-inch long whip. Nemuru gasped for air as she glared daggers at him. He had dark skin, long dark down hair that was shaved at the sides, had cold obsidian eyes, wore a short-sleeved dark red shirt, brown pants, and black shoes.

"See, I've been sent by my master, Dio, to kill you and the rest of your little group. I am willing to do this, but I want to keep you around for myself. Five out of six shouldn't be too bad." Ramses said with a cold smirk on his face. "You... bastard...!" Nemuru shouted. If this guy was looking for a fight, then she'll give it to him. Nemuru bounced back up her feet and Shadow Mist emerge herself from the ground, let out an angry shriek and dove for him. Ramses stepped back slightly alarmed, Nemuru waited for this hesitation then turned Shadow Mist into a wolf and sank his fangs into his exposed neck. Ramses

screamed and shook off the black wolf from his hide. Nemuru rushed at him and tried to throw a punch but he grabbed her wrist and shoved her away. She almost fell backwards but regained her balance.

"You miserable little bitch! You will not disobey me like this! I shall not give up easily, you shall see!" Nemuru grinned, but then as suddenly, she frowned, her eyes narrowing at the space before her. *'Where is he?'* The Egyptian man had simply vanished into thin air. "What the...?" He cursed loudly, looking around wildly for the invisible enemy. Suddenly he went rigid, as he felt hot, even breath on the back of his neck.

"Like my trick, beautiful? I bet you do." He laughed and quickly struck her from behind. Nemuru let out a surprised shriek, as he raked across her skin. "AAAUUGHHH!" Nemuru screamed as she felt a streak of fire burned across her back. Her skin burned as blood trickled down her back. She fell to her knees as she glared at the bastard who struck her in the back. Seeing his smug face. "Did you like that? This here is my Stand, Hellfire." Ramses says as he shows her the whip in this hands. The long strip of leather was completely on fire.

"You are much more fun than most I've come across. I deeply hope I get to keep you a lot longer than any of those little misses." Nemuru gritted her teeth as she struggled to get up. "Attacking someone from the back is a dick move. If you aren't going to kill me without using some cheap trick, then you might as well be ready for me when I have you begging for mercy!" Nemuru shouted at him. Shadow Mist ready at her side. Ramses only chuckled. "Such a dangerous little vixen you are! So very dignified! I think I shall keep you. You are quite amusing, cute and possibly a splendid lover. But as I stated before...dangerous. It's a hazard to my health."

Ramses cracked his whip again at her but Nemuru managed to dodge it and run from its range. She snarled at him angrily. She transformed Shadow Mist into a panther, and, with a well-placed swipe of her claws, raked a deep cut down his arm. Ramses screamed and manoeuvred the whip so that it slapped her right across the face. A burn mark appearing on her cheek. Nemuru screamed out, but with another well-placed hit, he silenced her screams. "Idiotic woman."

Ramses huffed.

Nemuru moved her hand and took control of his shadow and a pitch-black copy of himself rose above him and pulled him into a chokehold. Ramses chocked as he gripped at his copy. Nemuru sat on her knees and added more pressure into her clone. "Once you pass out, I'm dragging your sorry ass out into the desert to the bugs to feed off you." Nemuru told him as she slowly got back up on her feet. Ramses narrowed his eyes at her and unravelled his whip. He lifted it the air and its length increased. He whirled it around until it trapped them in a circle. With a flick of his wrist, fire erupted from the whip and it rose high up towards the sky.

The fire and its intensity was madness. Nemuru found herself gasping from the lack of moisture in the very dry air while Ramses stood there, unaffected by the change. Nemuru gasped for air and it caused the Egyptian man's clone to waver a bit. But was more than enough. He took his whip back and struck down his shadowy lookalike. "AAAHH!" Nemuru screamed as she felt the burn ran down her body. "It hurts, I know. But trust me, disciplining you like this is necessary for you to be obedient towards me. Can't have a woman with her own mind, now can I?" He says as he began to whip her. Simultaneously whipping her with the stinging leather and the scorching fire cord.

"AAAAHHH!!"

"Enjoying the heat yet?!"

Nemuru couldn't breathe. With each strike from the whip, her throat and tongue became parched and she felt as though her eyes were on fire when she opened them. "Ready to give up, my pet?" Ramses asked in a sickeningly sweet tone. "Pet? I am not your pet!" Nemuru managed to choke out. "As soon as I get my hands on you, you're dead!" Ramses laughed loudly, clearly showing her amusement.

"My, my. You are an amusing one, aren't you? You see whenever I find a cute thing like yourself, that lady becomes my little pet." Ramses says as he gave a cruel, sickly sweet smile. "But because they tend to disobey me, my poor little pets do not live long. Just when I thought that they're finally becoming to love me...they are no longer

alive to prove that to me. I honestly thought I picked the right one, but..." He rolled his shoulders. "I hope with you, I have found a strong one who can survive a bit longer than a single year."

"Son of a bitch! I won't become your freaking jester!" This brought upon more laughter. "You do not have much of a choice, my dear. I have chosen you. You belong to me, now. Not that piece of shit in the hospital. You shall soon become but a memory to those who knew you. You shall be forgotten, and for the first time in a long while, I shall finally have entertainment." Nemuru began to panic. Who would look for him? She had become so distant... except for Hikari... Mr. Joestar... Jotaro... Polnareff... Kakyoin...but he... they would never... There was no one, not even for her so-called family, would ever come look for her. She had to find a way out of here herself.

"Bastard." She glared at him. Then an idea struck her. "Like the nice wound I gave you? I will only give you more if you keep me around!"

"Hmm...I suppose you would if you had a chance. That is why I shall discipline you if you ever try to hurt me."

"Discipline?" She hadn't expected that. He keep on saying that. Ramses laughed, deep and richly.

"But of course. How else would I teach my little pet manners?" Before she could say a thing, he grabbed her with his whip and it wrapped around her body. He pulled his whip and started squeezing her tightly, cutting off the air to his lungs. At first, he could barely make any sound other than tiny gasps, but with what little wind she had left, she managed a long, shrill scream as Ramses let out a calm, amused laugh.

Nemuru screamed as she slowly began to lose consciousness. The heat. The fire. It was far too much for her to keep a clear head. Was...was she going to die here? All alone? With no one around who will take notice once she was gone. When she thought about it. Nemuru had always been alone. Ever since that night three years ago. The night where her happiness and innocence were stolen.

Three years ago, and many years before, Nemuru was once a kind, cheerful, and happy girl. She was deeply loved by her parents, who would

anything they could to make sure their child gained a bright future. Nemuru loved her parents. They were her best friends. She wasn't nearly as close to her relatives, but she did try to be friendly and polite towards them on family gatherings. Her parents worked hard in their lives and had managed to create a business of medical research and recourses and high-technology. They run a successful corporation, but they preferred to live more of the simple life.

She had everything she could ever want. Amazing parents. A nice home. A good school. Great friends. She was happy. She was at peace. But Nemuru held a deep secret. One that she could never tell her parents or any of her friends about it. See, when she was about eight years old, Nemuru had discovered that her shadow was alive. Alive and would listen to her will. Nemuru had no idea how to deal with this newly-found discovery. She was afraid of what her parents, what her friends, would think of her if they found out.

Nemuru was scared of how they would react, so, while it hurt her, kept it a secret from her loved ones. This decision would later become a grave mistake. During one of the school holidays, Nemuru and her parents took a trip to this very place. To Egypt. It was also for a business trip, but they wanted her to have fun on their trip. Nemuru was happy nonetheless. Until after five days into the trip, her life and her happiness came to an end. One night she was walking with her mother carrying groceries for tonight's dinner when Nemuru had spotted someone in the distance. Standing there underneath a streetlamp was a young man. A young man with blond hair.

Of course, Nemuru didn't think nothing by it and went inside the home her father had rented. Everything seemed normal after that. The small family smiled, laughed and enjoyed dinner. They cleaned up and were ready to get dressed for bed. But when all was said and done, the family stopped dead in their tracks when an unfamiliar voice echoed through their home. The turned and suddenly saw a man standing in their home as if he owned the place. Nemuru was in shock when she realised that it was the same man she saw moments ago. Her parents were left in silent shock. They knew... They could tell that this man was extremely dangerous. Nemuru's father didn't take his eyes off him as he told his wife to take their child and hide somewhere.

"Daddy?" Nemuru called out as her mother grabbed her and ran upstairs.

Leaving her father alone with the strange man. "I don't care what you do to me...just please don't hurt my family." She heard him say. Her mother ran up to their room and placed Nemuru in a closest to hide her and told her to never come out. Nemuru stayed in that closet for what seemed like an eternity. Alone in the dark with no one but her teddybear, Shiro to keep her company. Nemuru took a deep breath and cautiously step out into the open. Everything was quiet. Unnervingly so. "Mommy? Daddy?" Nemuru called out. No answer. She held Shiro closer to her as she walked down the stairs. "Mommy? Daddy?" When Nemuru walked down the last step and turned the corner, she felt a part of her die.

Her beloved father was dead. He was killed so brutally. His body was crumpled on the floor as his remains were splattered on the wall. The man was looking down on his corpse. His back facing her. Nemuru's eyes caught the sight of a star-shaped birthmark on his left shoulder. "This was your fault, you know?" The man...Dio said. "Your father's death was entirely your fault. You held enough power to protect him, but you sat back and did nothing. I can sense you have the same kind of power as me...but you have done nothing with it. Isn't that right?"

Nemuru couldn't move. She couldn't breathe. She looked on in absolute horror at the man before her. The murderer that took her father. But...where was her mother. As if reading her mind, Dio had told her that he has her mother. She was his prisoner. And the only for her to save her was to get stronger with her Stand and kill the men who had the same mark as he does. And if they had any allies, then kill them too. Within an instant, the man disappeared. Leaving a young, orphaned girl to let out a scream of despair. Nothing became the same after that. Nemuru lost everything that night. Her parents were gone. Her family were more concerned about her father's will and their inheritance than to comfort her about the loss. Her friends turned to jerks and bullied her for being an orphan. She was left all alone. No friends. An empty cold house... She had died that night as well. Nemuru fell into a pit of agony and loneliness.

Nemuru cracked an eye open. Her sight caught the hospital that was just up ahead. She moved her sight towards a particular window. That window leads into Kakyoin's room. Her eyes widened once a powerful realisation came to her. Kakyoin was waiting for her. Her team...her friends were waiting for her. Joseph, Jotaro, Polnareff, and her little Hikari were all waiting for her. They were fighting the same

man. And they were just as determined to kill the monster named Dio. Nemuru realised that up until now, she was no longer alone. She had people who cared about her and had stayed by her side. Kakyoin...she... She wanted to see him again!

Nemuru narrowed her eyes and clenched her hand. Ramses's grinned widely as he tightens the hold he had on her. Just a few more seconds. Then she'll pass out, he'll kill Kakyoin and go after the others. All while having a lovely pet such as her. "Almost there-." He started to say. But then that arrogant smile had finally fell from his face as he suddenly felt serious pain. He looked down and saw that his shadow had formed into a sickle and stabbed through his leg. "Wh....what the...?" He sputtered out as he glared at the purple-haired girl. "What the hell?! I thought you finally got submitted to me!"

"...Despite what you think, I know my limitations. And if I thought I couldn't beat you, I would have backed out long ago. But that's just the thing. I know I can beat you! I have something on my side, you don't have!" Ramses raised a brow and continued to glare at her as he tried to ignore the pain. "And what is that? What could you possibly have, that I lack?"

"My family...and Kakyoin..." Nemuru took a shuddering sigh. "A reason to fight with all my heart! Because I am no longer alone. I never have been. Not since I met my team." With that, Nemuru used Shadow Mist to destroy his whip and took to the air. She flipped her body twice as she sailed through the air, before landing heavily on her right foot. She was almost directly under Ramses body. "What the...?" But Ramses never had the chance to get the entire sentence out.

Nemuru stared coldly at him. Shadow Mist raised one arm, her hand spread out, right below the Ramses's chest. Shadow Mist loomed over the man and after snapping her fingers, many spikes protruded from his body. But not enough to kill him, but enough to keep him from moving for a long time. Ramses couldn't even react to Nemuru's onslaught. His agonizing screech echoed loudly for anyone close to hear, all his pain expressed in one single action.

Shadow Mist took her arm back and Ramses's body fell to the ground. Limp and unmoving right where he had stood, his bleeding body

staining the ground a dark red. However, he was still alive, but he had simply passed out from the pain. The flames disappeared, and the burn marks had vanished, but her body still hurt. Yet it was nothing to worry about. Nemuru left Ramses where he laid and made her way back to the hospital. She wanted to see him. She needed to see him. Nemuru limped her way inside, ignoring the worried stares and words from the nurses and doctors, down the hall and made her way back to Kakyoin's room.

Kakyoin's head lifted when he heard the door open and called out, "Nemuru?" The girl smiled. "Yeah, it's me." Kakyoin sighed in relief. Oh, thank goodness. "That's a relief. You were gone for so long I was getting worried." Nemuru continued to smile at him as she made her way towards him. Kakyoin took in a deep breath when he felt Nemuru take a seat on his bedside. He exhaled and was about to speak when Nemuru suddenly asked, "Kakyoin? What do you think of me?"

This caught Kakyoin by surprise. He wasn't expecting this. "What do you mean?" He asked. Nemuru softly blushed as she continued. "Lately... I've been feeling odd about you. It wasn't a bad feeling, far from it... I... I've been alone for so long...that I never thought I could be happy again. But...now..." Nemuru scooted closer to Kakyoin. Placing her hand above his own and placing the other on his cheek. "You've been making me happy..."

Both hearts were beating rapidly. Their feelings were blossoming right there and then. Kakyoin laced his fingers with hers and leaned against her hand, taking in her warmth. "You've been making feel happy too. You're tougher than most girls I've seen, but you also have a sweet and caring side that helps gives off the feeling that anything will be alright. You make me feel at ease. I love you, Nemuru. I have for a while now." Nemuru smiled brightly as tears fell from her eyes. "I love you too." Nemuru closed her eyes and leaned in. The two share a sweet, passionate kiss.

Chapter 45: D'Arby the Gambler, Part 1

Ponder this. What walks on four legs in the morning, two during mid-day, and three in the evening? So goes the riddle of the Sphinx. The legendary guardian of the pyramids. The answer? Man. Travellers who answer the riddle incorrectly are devoured by the ravenous Sphinx. Now, thirty-thousand kilometres from Japan, Jotaro and crew have finally reached their destination. Cairo.

Hikari stretched as she stepped off the train. It seemed like forever but the group of Stand users finally made it to Cairo. Avdol took out the picture of the mansion and said, "Cairo is massive. It's in our best interest to systematically search the city, working our way towards the centre." With that strategy set, the group grabbed a vehicle and drove to the outer city limits determined to find Dio and take him down.

"We're finally here." Joseph said as he and the others looked into the city. Jotaro and the others have reached Cairo. However, before the team can reach Dio, they must first navigate their way through the many Sphinxes that stand before them.

Four large men walked into a cafe in Cairo. They looked pretty intimidating, scowls upon their faces as they escaped the desert heat. All eyes were turned on the men as they walked up to bar, but their focus soon shifted from the men to their companion. A delicate-looking young lady followed the men with a dog in arms. Compared to the men she was with she looked like a rather easy target, but there was more to her than meets the eye.

"Vey nice to meet you, gentlemen and lady. What'll you have to drink?" The bartender asked. "There's something we'd like to ask you," Joseph said as he dropped several pictures on the counter. "My associates and I are trying to locate this building. Any idea where it

is?"

Hikari was hoping that someone here would know of the place in the photos. She and the others were utterly exhausted. They had been searching for the building in the photograph ever since their arrival in Cairo. Taken with Joseph psychic photography, the Image revealed Dio's whereabouts. Dio had recently moved to a new hideout and the Speedwagon Foundation couldn't find him. Where was Dio hiding? Failure to locate him as soon as possible would spell certain doom for Holly.

"I'm sorry stranger. But this is a cafe. You should order a drink before asking questions." The bartender said.

"Then iced teas. Five of them." Jotaro ordered as Avdol put some money down. As the bartender poured the drinks he took a closer look at the pictures. "Never seen the place." He said before turning away. Hikari was startled when Joseph, Jotaro, Avdol, and Polnareff all picked up their drinks simultaneously chugged them down before slamming their glasses back onto the counter.

Cairo is a city of six million. So there has to be two or three million buildings. How are they going to find him? They knew he was here. There has to be at least someone who can help them. The pictures were passed around the cafe but each patron gave the same answer. They didn't know about it or it didn't look familiar. Joseph collected the photos, "Let's go. We'll try somewhere else."

"I happen to know where your little building is located." A voice said.

The group turned around at the statement looking for the person who said those words. As their eyes searched the cafe they spotted a man sitting alone at a table shuffling a deck of cards. He was a man of average to above-average height and slim to middling build. He has black hair, flowing slightly back and apart from his face, and a trim moustache of medium length. A light surface trails from the bottom of his eyes to points aside his mouth; scored by thin, black, horizontal lines. He wore a light shirt, dark tie, and a vest of a medium colour, printed with spirals.

"To be honest with you. I'm quite familiar with it." He says.

"W-Was that you? Were you the one who said that? Do you actually know where the building is?" Joseph asked him.

"Yes. The exact location of the building in question is information readily available to me." The man said. Joseph excitedly walked over to him and said, "Are you serious? That's incredible!"

"What remarkable news!" Avdol said. "Amazing! What are the odds that we would stumble upon somebody who knows exactly where the building is." Polnareff said as he and the others walked over. Hikari and Jotaro stood back, not saying a word. *'It does seem lucky...but...It also seems a bit too easy. Out of everyone here, he would be the only one who knows it.'* Hikari thought

After the adventure she's been through, there's no way that a random man in a random cafe knew what they wanted to know. Hikari was a trustworthy person and sometimes could be a little naive but this trip has made her way more insightful to the dangerous world around her and this man screamed danger. She gripped at Jotaro's sleeved as she kept her eyes on the man. "Well don't keep us in suspense, Where's it located?" Joseph asked the man eagerly.

"Are you really expecting something for nothing?" The man asked, almost smugly.

"Uh... Yes, you bring up a good point. My apologies." Joseph says, reaching into his pocket going for his wallet. "Ten pounds for your help? Now then, where is it?" The man chuckled at Joseph, putting his hand up. With a flick of the wrist, an Ace playing card appeared in between his fingers. "Thing is, I'm something of a gambling man. I've been known to be a sucker for cheap thrills, and some would even go so far as to say I'm an addict. However, when is said and done, gambling's how I make my living. Tell me, any of you boys like to gamble?" The man asked

"I'm not sure I fully understand what you're trying to get at." Joseph said.

"I thought I laid it out plainly if you don't like gambling than say so." The man told him. He believed what he said was more than obvious what he wanted from them.

"For the last time, I have no idea where you're going with this." Joseph tells him.

"Oh, alright. What I'm asking is if you and your friends would like to play a little game. Win and I'll tell you the location of your building. It's as simple as that." The man said.

"A bet? Look, friend, I'm as lucky as the next guy but I'm afraid that we don't have time for poker right now. If I throw in another twenty pounds will you tell us?" Joseph asked.

"No need to worry, a bet can be anything after all. It won't very long. For example, take a look at that wall over there. Do you see that cat?" The man pointed out of the cafe to where a cat was walking on a wall. The man picked up two pieces of fish and threw them outside. "So, two pieces of dried fish. Question is, which of the two will the cat eat first? The right one or the left one? I must say, there's something thrilling about its simplicity."

Hikari felt her heart skipped a couple beats as she watches the man. The only thing running through her mind was suspicion for this man. She was growing ever so worried for her team. This wasn't right...they should get out of here. Polnareff slammed his fist on the table and shouted, "Hey! I've had just about enough of your games! So take the money and tell us what we want to know you bastard!"

"Take it down a notch Polnareff, that's not the way you ask someone for a favour." Joseph said, trying to calm the Frenchman down. Seeing the man chuckle made him even more annoyed. "Fine! If it'll make you shut up, I'll make the bet! The cat'll choose the peice the fish on the right!" Polnareff said. "Okay...Now it's getting interesting. I'll be placing my bet on the left." The man said.

"Polnareff..." Joseph said as Polnareff stares the gambling man down. While this was going down, Avdol walked over to the teens and whispered to them, "Say, Jotaro, Hikari. Are you getting a strange feeling from him?"

"Mm-hmm. I have." Hikari replied. "I am. He might be an enemy Stand user. That or, he could just be a compulsive gambler." Jotaro said. "Both are pretty dangerous though." Hikari added in. Hikari had

been told, thanks to her father, to always be wary of conmen and gamblers. They'll use whatever trick necessary to take advantage of good people. "If he does anything at all that seems suspicious, you should immediately attack him with Star Platinum." Avdol said.

"Understood." Jotaro nodded

"Let's say I lose. It's fairly obvious that I'll owe you a hefty amount of money. So will a hundred pounds do?" Polnareff asked.

"I've no use for money. But what would you say to giving me your soul? That should do just fine." The man said, chuckling. Polnareff looked at the man confused. "Huh?" Polnareff slaps a hand on his forehead as he was getting even more annoyed with this gambling man. *'Now the bastard thinks he's a comedian. I wish we could get the hell out of here and away from this freak.'*

"Well?" The man asked. "Yeah, yeah. That's fine with me. We'll do things your way." Polnareff answered offhandedly. Foolishly accepting the man's penalty if he were to lose. The group watched the cat jump off the wall finally noticing the fish. "Ah, it appears the cat has taken notice of the fish." The man said as the cat started running towards the fish.

"Like I thought. Ha, he's going after the one on the right." Polnareff said. *'If I were a cat, I'd picked the bigger piece of meat. And lucky for me, that's the one on the right.'* Everyone watched as the cat got closer to the fish and it seemed like Polnareff's bet was right on the money that is until the cat suddenly veered left and took the fish from the left before grabbing the piece on the right. Polnareff looked stunned as the cat ran away with its meal.

The man let out a chuckle. "And there you have it. Our feline friend took the left and the right then ran. I win this round gentlemen."

"Boy, you've outdone yourself this time, Polnareff. I hope you're thrilled. How exactly are we going to get the information on the building's whereabouts out of him now?" Joseph inquired to a stunned Polnareff.

"Well, if there's nothing else, as per our agreement, it's time to pay

up." The man said.

"Huh? Pay? With what?" Polnareff queried. "Your soul, of course. Surely you didn't forget about our wager, Polnareff. I want your soul! As I am a Stand user who prides himself of stealing them. I find it that it's far easier to take a person's soul if they lose it in a bet, which is when my Stand's power activates and collects what's mine!" The man announced. Suddenly Polnareff's eyes went white as a Stand appeared over him snatching his soul from his body. The Stand was a humanoid Stand with large, muscular arms marked by lines of a vascular pattern, a thick brow, and fingers capped by suckers. It has a light and dark green body and red eyes, only appearing from the chest up; mist obscuring its lower half.

"What the hell?! My God, what's happening?!" Joseph yelled.

"It's stealing his soul!" Hikari yelled. "Polnareff!" Jotaro shouted before turning to the man. "Now, now, I wouldn't be so quick to lash out if I were you! I know you desperately want to kill me, but if I die, Polnareff will meet the same end." The man declared. Polnareff's body fell back and it was caught by Avdol. "Polnareff!" "N-NO!" Avdol and Joseph shouted as they set Polnareff down. But with his soul taken away, Polnareff was nothing more than an empty husk.

"He...He has no pulse. He's dead! Polnareff is dead!" Avdol yelled. "Polnareff!" Joseph screamed as the soul-sucking Stand started to stretch and morph Polnareff's soul as if it were dough. It made the soul into a round ball before slapping it in between its hands. It opened its hands and out of them fell a poker chip. As it hit the table everyone gasped seeing Polnareff's face in the middle of the chip.

"Have a look, Polnareff's soul resides in here. Now Lord Dio has one less meddlesome fool to interfere with his plans. And what a fool he was." The man says as Avdol angrily growls at him for what he did to his friends. "Please allow me to introduce myself. My name is Daniel J. D'Arby. D-A-R-B-Y. There's an apostrophe after the D." D'Arby introduced. Another one of Dio's assassins. Gambler, stealer of defeated souls and user of the Osiris Stand. D'Arby smirked as the cat from before hopped onto the table next to him before climbing onto his shoulders, shocking the others and infuriating Avdol.

"I believe you've had the pleasure of meeting my cat," D'Arby smiled petting the cat. In anger, Avdol reached forward and grabbed D'Arby by the front of his shirt lifting the man out of his seat. "What is this, you bastard!? You call that a bet?! How dare you-, You vile, cheating son of a-!"

"A cheater, you say? Have you considered Polnareff lost because he lacked insight to consider all the possibilities?" D'Arby simply stated. Avdol growled at the man clenching his teeth, the rage radiating off the Egyptian man. "Hear me out. Gambling is nothing more than a simple analogy for man's relationship with his brethren. A dance of deception where the loser cries first. Are you planning to kill me with your own two hands, Avdol? Go right ahead, if you don't mind your friend's soul being lost forever. The choice is completely up to you." D'Arby said holding up Polnareff's soul.

"Know this! We're not just going to let you waltz out of here in one piece." Avdol threatened.

"Try to think back to September 22nd, 1984 at 11:15 PM? Remember what you doing during that time and date?" D'Arby asked

"What does that even mean?" Avdol asked perplexed by the random question.

D'Arby pushed Avdol away as he begins to explain himself. "I remember it quite clearly. I was in California, gambling against an American that went by the name Stephen Moor. He said the same thing you just said a moment ago." D'Arby took out a book and opened it revealing dozens of the poker chip souls, like a coin collection. "But now he's singing a more silent tune. The chip below him is his father, and the one next to him is his wife. If you want Polnareff's soul back, you have no choice but to continue our game. How much is his life worth to you?"

'This man is evil incarnate.' Avdol thought.

"So that's it, he wants to capture our souls." Jotaro says.

"How horrible..." Hikari said, looking at the innocent people D'Arby had captured and placed in a sick collection. "So what's it gonna be?

You can leave if you're too scared to play. I'll hold Polnareff here for safekeeping." D'Arby chuckled. "Why don't you fine gentlemen have a drink and think things over a bit. Care for a piece of chocolate?" Joseph walked over to the table and threw everything off with one swipe of his arm. He slammed a glass on the table before pouring a bottle of alcohol into it filling the cup to the brim.

"W-what is this, Mr. Joestar? What are you trying to accomplish?" Avdol asked concerned. Joseph sat at the table across from D'Arby. "I'm curious, do you have any idea what surface tension is, Barbie?"

"My name's D'Arby. You know it, not Barbie. And I assume you're referring to how the liquor appears to almost overflow but stays in the glass. So is there a point to all this buildup?" D'Arby questioned. Joseph held up a handful of coins. "We're playing a game. The rules are simple, we take turns dropping coins into the glass. Whoever makes the liquor spill loses."

"Old man." Jotaro said.

"Mr. Joestar, you're not going to...!" Avdol said.

"Please, wait a minute, Mr. Joestar," Hikari said trying to stop the elder man. "Exactly right! I'm going to bet my soul!" Joseph said.

"Okay!" D'Arby smirked.

"You've got to be kidding?!" Avdol yelled, freaking out. "You can't go through with it, Mr. Joestar! This man is a good-for-nothing cheater!"

"He won't cheat me this time! I've decided on the rules myself, so I'll be fine! Jotaro, you watch for funny business." Joseph said. Jotaro narrowed his eyes in confirmation. "Okay! Since you're so determined, I'll accept your conditions. However, before we begin, would you mind if I inspect the glass and coins?" D'Arby said.

"Sure, have at it. You have the right to ensure that I'm playing on the up and up." Joseph said. Everyone watched intently as D'Arby grabbed the glass feeling around it, then he picked up a coin examining it. "A question. What guarantee do I have that you'll return Polnareff's soul if you lose the game?" Joseph asked. D'Arby picked

up a coin and flipped in the air before catching it. "Give my word as gambler, that I'll keep my promise. If I lose, I assure you that I will pay in full. But I won't lose."

"Well, in that case, you can go first. Go ahead and drop a coin in." Joseph said.

"Please stop!" Avdol cried.

"Just leave everything to me." Joseph stated as he takes off his right hand's glove. The old coin and glass trick is one of Joseph's specialities. Surface tension is a surprisingly strong force. There's room for at least eight or nine coins in the glass. Joseph just has to stay calm and make sure his fingers don't shake. This held a bad feeling. Joseph was confident in his skill, and he'd probably win it easy against some average joe off the street, but this D'Arby had already proven to be a master gambler. A professional gambler was a dangerous person indeed, they had an infinite amount of tricks up their sleeves.

D'Arby held up a small stack of coins in between his thumb and forefinger and asked, "Is it alright if I drop in more than one coin at the same time?"

"As long as they go in at once." Joseph said.

"Well, then....." D'Arby held five coins over the glass. "What?! Five coins?!" Avdol shouts. "Hey, that'll create a wave on the surface." Joseph said. "Quiet, please!" D'Arby shushed. The gambler slowly lowed the coins inching them closer to the drink. "Take your hands off the table." D'Arby said, making Joseph remove his arms from the table. The tension rose as the man lowered the coins before finally depositing them in the glass. The top of the drink rippled slightly but the surface tension did not break.

D'Arby let out a laugh. "It looks like it's your turn."

"It takes nerves of steel, to put in five coins at once. I think I'll go with one coin. It's too close to call." Joseph said as he hovers the coin over the liquor. As he does so, Jotaro's eyes caught something. He looked at his grandfather's hand and saw what he was doing. *'Typical*

old man. He's squeezing a cotton ball between his finger and the coin to leak liquid into the glass. So that's how he's going to make the glass overflow. And he told me to watch for cheating. Clever bastard. Not bad.' Jotaro thought.

Joseph dropped the coin into the drink without breaking the surface tension, meaning it was once again D'Arby's turn. D'Arby growled looking down at the glass as Joseph looked up with a passive face, everyone could feel the confidence radiating off the man. *'Hahahaha! The glass has reached its limit! One more coin and the booze will spill! Victory is mine, haha! It's like he said, we'll see which dance partner cries first.'* If Joseph could be compared to any animal, it'd be a peacock. Loud, proud, and always the center of attention.

"Oooh, man that was a close one. I thought it was gonna spill for sure." Joseph said nonchalantly. "Well, it's your turn. Good luck Obie," Joseph said. D'Arby then suddenly grabbed Joseph's arm, anger written on his face. "It's D'Arby. Don't make me say it again! I told you my name is D'Arby! Not Obie, not Barbie!"

"Hmmm, apologies." Joseph said. Jotaro let out a soft chuckle. *'He's screwing up his name on purpose to get him riled up and throw off his game. I've got to hand it to the old man, he's a natural.'*

"So what do you say we keep playing? I believe it's your turn to drop a coin in, D'Arby," Joseph said. D'Arby did not look at the group but got out the chocolate bar he had previously and started eating it. The man then suddenly stood up from his seat. "The shadow makes it difficult to see from here. I'll lower the coin in from the right side of the table." D'Arby announced.

"Drop it in from whatever angle you like." Joseph said. 'What he doesn't know is that the glass is already at its limit thanks to my little trick. There's no way the liquid can take another coin. Even the slightest touch will cause it to spill over. Hahaha!' Joseph thought to himself, thankful for the years of experience he has under his belt. He'll win this easy for sure. D'Arby picked up a coin and held it over the drink.

"You're probably thinking the glass has reached its limit. That dropping in another coin would be impossible. Well, you'd be wrong

about that." D'Arby dropped the coin in the drink and everyone's eyes widened when they saw the surface tension hadn't broke. Joseph stood up in his seat. "There's no way! How the hell did he do that?! Why didn't it spill over!?" Joseph planned that trick perfectly! His plan was foolproof, how did D'Arby managed to get past it?!

"Your question's confusing. What do you mean 'why didn't it spill'? You saw the result with your own eyes." D'Arby said. Joseph quickly turned to Jotaro, desperately wanting to know what happened. "As far as I know, he didn't do anything devious. I was watching him with Star Platinum. It's hard to believe, but he dropped it in fair and square. There's no doubt."

Hikari looked at D'Arby with shocked eyes. She had also seen Joseph pull his stunt and held confidence that he would come out as the winner. But now...she had no idea how D'Arby managed to drop in another coin without causing the liquor to overflow. Panic started to overtake Joseph as his face sported a dismal expression. *'But..! How did he do it?! I'm positive I added enough liquid to the glass that one more coin would make it spill! I don't get it! There's no it shouldn't have spilled! What's going on?!'*

"Make your move. It's your turn, Joestar. Hurry it up already or are you trying to wait until it evaporates?" D'Arby said. Joseph sat back down in his seat. His whole body was shaking, showing how nervous he was. The older man was taking heavy breaths as he picked up a coin and hovered it over the glass. "No... No, this can't be happening..." Joseph gasped. The man kept hyperventilating as he looked at the glass not knowing what to do. His mind and heart were running rampant. Everything they went through. The hell they had to endure. Polnareff. His beloved daughter. Was it all going to end here? Was he this weak that he wasn't able to save them? If he couldn't defeat a gambler like D'Arby...how was he ever going to match up against Dio? He...couldn't do it... He failed his family.

"Mr. Joestar!" Avdol yelled. Joseph's soul was leaving his body. As he fell forward his soul was grabbed by D'Arby's Stand. "Deep in his heart of hearts, Joestar had already come to the realisation that he lost this game! That's why his soul emerged so easily! I, D'Arby, have won this bet like all the others!" D'Arby declared.

"Polnareff, I...I failed you. Holly, I'm so sorry my beautiful girl, but daddy's let you down." Joseph's soul said, shedding a few tears before it was turned into a poker chip.

"Mr. Joestar!"

"Old man, no!"

"Nnnoooo...!"

"Two down! Now, let's continue where we left off. That is, unless you three have decided to abandon your friends and slink away with your tails between your legs." D'Arby said. "You bastard!" Avdol yelled lunging forward. He grabbed D'Arby by the neck throwing the man to the ground. "You don't get it, do you? I keep trying to tell you that if you take my life, your friends will die with me." D'Arby said.

"Damn you!" Avdol yelled raising his fist.

"Avdol, stand down!" Jotaro yelled.

Hikari placed down Iggy and hugged hold of Avdol. "Mr. Avdol, please stop it!" She cried. That's when the bartender came from behind the counter and walked up to them. "Hey! If you're gonna cause trouble then I'm gonna have to ask you to leave!" The bartender shouted. "Shut your mouth! And stay out of this!" Jotaro said. The bartender flinched back. "Right!"

Hikari then glanced back at the glass and noticed something strange. She walked over to it to investigate it. She took the glass and spilt its contents outside of the cafe. Her eyes widened at what she found. "JoJo? ...Look." Hikari said. Jotaro turned to Hikari who was holding the glass upside down. Stuck to the underside the glass was a piece of chocolate. The same one D'Arby had been eating moments ago. "You two have noticed it too late." D'Arby said.

"What?! Something's wrong with the glass?" Avdol asked.

"This is the reason the coin didn't make the booze spillover. If you look at the bottom of the glass, you'll see that there's a tiny bit of chocolate on it." Jotaro said. "He must've found a way to stick it on when he was inspecting the glass and coins at the very beginning of

the game."

"Surely you know the rules by now. It doesn't count as cheating if you never get caught in the act." D'Arby stated pushing Avdol away. "What? I don't understand, how could a piece of chocolate allowed him to drop in an extra coin?" Avdol asked.

"Well at this point, it's melted. But it used to be a solid chunk stuck to the bottom of the glass. Just enough, to slightly tilted the glass but not quite enough for us to notice the change. Once the chocolate started to melt, the glass came to be levelled with the table. With the glass levelled out, the booze began to settle. Which made enough room for another coin." Jotaro explained

"Wh-What the hell?! B-but that doesn't make any sense! How could he have known the chocolate would melt right when he needed to?" Avdol said.

"He influenced things by using the sun. It slipped my notice." Jotaro said.

Hikari let out a soft gasp as she finally understood. "I get it now. That's the reason why he moved to the other side of the table. His body was blocking the sun but once he moved the chocolate started to melt." Hikari said. D'Arby stood up and dusted himself off smirking at the group. "Alright. D'Arby, get your cards cause we're playing my game. Hope you're ready for some poker." Jotaro declared.

"Say what?! Jotaro!" Avdol exclaimed mouth agape.

"JoJo, you can't!" Hikari cried out.

"Interesting! You couldn't have known this, but poker is my absolute favourite game!" D'Arby said.

"Are you out of your mind? You're playing poker with a man who outsmarted Mr. Joestar! It's too dangerous!" Avdol yelled. "Yeah, I know. Even though he doesn't use physical strength, he's the most dangerous Stand user we've ever faced. So now," Jotaro said as he turned to D'Arby. "There's no turning back and we're playing for keeps!" Despite Avdol's protestations, Jotaro is determined to win

back the souls of his friend and grandfather. Even if meant betting his soul in the process.

Chapter 46: D'Arby the Gambler, Part 2

Jotaro pulled a chair out and took the seat. Ready to get the game started as he started D'Arby down. As he spoke Avdol and Hikari moved their fallen friends and sat them on chairs until this was over. "Before we get things started, there's something I want to get check. How about you go and shuffle those cards." He tells him.

D'Arby obliges and picks up the deck of cards on the table. Like an expert dealer in a casino, D'Arby shuffled the cards expertly and efficiently. Jotaro kept his eyes locked onto both his hands and the cards the whole time. "And shuffle they are. What pray tell do you have in mind next?" He asked.

"Now draw a card from the deck. Which one it is doesn't really make a whole lot of difference. But don't show anyone." Jotaro tells him. D'Arby let out a small scoff but did what he said and picked up a small pile of cards in his hands. "Very well."

"And now I'll call it. It's the Six of Hearts." Jotaro said. In D'Arby's hands, the first one facing him was indeed, in fact, the Six of Hearts. "Next, I think I'll name the cards from the top down. Five of Spades. Queen of Diamonds. Jack of Spades. Ace of Hearts. Seven of Diamonds. Plus the Six of Clubs. King of Clubs and Two of Diamonds." D'Arby was caught off guard by all of this. He laid out all the cards in his hands to reveal to the others. Jotaro had gotten all of the cards right in perfect order.

"You guessed them all! And that's after D'Arby shuffled the deck! How did you do that?!" Avdol asked, shocked by this.

"I could rattle off the entire deck if I wanted to." Jotaro says. Star Platinum appearing beside him. "Remember my request from earlier? While you were shuffling the cards, Star Platinum was busy memorising their order in the deck."

"Quite the interesting strategy. That said, defeating your plan is a simple matter of shuffling the cards in a manner that obstructs your

vision of them." D'Arby says.

"Are you that dense? Cheating is gonna be damn near impossible as long as you have me as an opponent. Just something I thought you should be aware of." Jotaro tells him. Letting know is one of the few gracious things the tall delinquent will grant him. "Okay." D'Arby said.

Open the game

D'Arby brought out a pack of cards the security seal intact. The security seal was unbroken, irrefutable confirmation that the deck has not been tampered with in any way. Jotaro reached over and grabbed the pack opening the cards. As he taking the cards out, D'Arby reached over, without looking, began flipping through pages of a bible. Jotaro laid the cards out on the table and examined them. "Well, there's only one Joker here. Don't see anything unusual. It's a normal deck." Jotaro said as he started to put them in a stack.

D'Arby stopped flipping the pages and stopped at a certain one. *'The page number is 538. 540. No, 556.'* D'Arby thought. He glanced down and saw that the page his thumb was holding was page 556 exactly. *'I still got it. My ability to discern page number by touch is as sharp as ever. It's true that Jotaro's Star Platinum has incredible visual prowess. But can remember the placement of anything simple through the use of touch. Shuffle them all you want, I still know the exact location of every card.'* When Jotaro was finished, he placed the stack of cards on the table.

"Okay! Open the game!" D'Arby declares as he reached forward lifting the stack of cards in half and flipping the bottom card over. "Looks like it's the Ten of Hearts." Jotaro also reached for a card. "I drew the Seven of Clubs."

"Then it seems like I'll be dealing." D'Arby says as he chuckled. *'Alright. I need to shuffle so Star Platinum can't see.'* D'Arby grabbed the cards. He shuffled the cards before placing them back on the table. "If you would cut the deck." Jotaro grabbed the cards and cut the stack into two sections and placing the bottom half over the top. When he finished, D'Arby picked them up again. "Thank you and now I'll deal." D'Arby said.

"One for Jotaro. One for me. One for Jotaro. One for me." He started to deal out the cards one by one, that is until Star Platinum appeared and broke his finger! D'Arby let out a scream as his pointer finger was bent backwards and felt his bones snap. "Oh my goodness..!" Hikari gasped out. "Huh? I...I don't understand, what happened?! Jotaro, his finger! Why the devil would you use Star Platinum to brake D'Arby's finger?!" Avdol yelled.

"Like I said. You're not gonna cheat when you're playing against me." Jotaro affirmed.

"He tried to cheat just now, JoJo?" Hikari asked, looking towards D'Arby. She didn't see anything that indicated that he was cheating, but after what he did to Joseph, she figured that he would try to use another underhanded tactic. And to be fair, Jotaro did warn him. *'No one is going to cheat my JoJo.'* Hikari thought to herself. "Huh? He tried to cheat? But he was only dealing the cards, wasn't he? I didn't notice him doing anything suspicious." Avdol said.

"That's what he wanted us to think. But take a good look at the cards in his left hand," Jotaro pointed out. Avdol and Hikari looked down at the gambler's hand and the Egyptian man gasped when he saw the deck. "I see now. The second card is sticking out."

"That's the card he tried to deal me. The entire time he was pretending to deal the top card. But the truth is he was dealing me the second card from the top." Star Platinum appeared again and took the top card from the deck while Jotaro flipped over D'Arby's cards. "That being the case, it means the top card would've gone to him. If he had gotten his hands on it, the cheating bastard would've had a total of three tens!" Jotaro explained.

This manoeuvre is known as "second dealing". It's a devious sleight of hand technique involving the dealer throwing out the second card in the deck instead of dealing the top card as one would expect. When the technique is executed by a professional, the cheat is almost undetectable to the naked eye. And if that wasn't enough, D'Arby can discern the location of every card in the deck by touch.

D'Arby was shaking, holding his broken finger as he glared at the tall delinquent. "You...brutish imbecile! How dare you break my finger?!"

Star Platinum tossed the card back to him, the card stabbing through the table in front of D'Arby. Surprising the man. "I was playing nice with that attack. You should count yourself lucky I didn't rip it off. Ugh, good grief, I guess I can't let you cut the deck anymore. Someone else is going to do it from now on." Jotaro says. Everyone's attention turned to a small boy playing with a ball just a little ways from them.

"That boy in the hill looks up to the job." Jotaro says.

"Have it your way..." D'Arby growled out.

"Hey Avdol, ask him over." Jotaro said.

"Right away." Avdol said.

"Most impressive. Successful cheating requires the element of surprise. And it takes more than sharp eyes to prevent that." D'Arby brought out a handkerchief and tied the cloth around his broken and middle finger creating a makeshift splint.

Jotaro narrowed his eyes when D'Arby picked up Polnareff's and Joseph's soul chips. "It appears I underestimated you as you saw through my second deal. I'll accept my fractured finger as proper punishment. But from here on, I'll devote my full concentration to winning the game, Jotaro. I've not done so since my colossal gamble on May 17th, 1986. I was playing against a Japanese man named, Shozo Miyama. As the victor, my spoils included his eight Tokyo properties and his soul. I will say this for Miyama, wealth didn't dull his gamblers instinct."

D'Arby's Stand, Osiris, hovered over him as he tossed up the two souls in front of it. "It's only fair that warn you, I'm not here on behalf of Lord Dio. I am here due to the simple fact that I am a born gambler!" He yelled as Osiris began to move its hands around the soul chips.

"W-What do you think you're doing?! Those souls are Mr. Joestar's and Polnareff's!" Avdol yelled. Osiris lifted its hand then sliced it through the air and through Polnareff's chips. The poker chips multiplied making two. The Stand then moved its hand rapidly in the air slicing through the two souls. When it was done, two stacks of

poker chips fell neatly onto the table.

"I've done nothing more than split their souls into six chips each. I'm sure you know this but in poker, if you're on the verge of losing it's perfectly acceptable to fold. However, if you use up all the chips for the ante there's no way to bet and the game doesn't work." D'Arby explained. "To put it plainly, winning back six chips is the equivalent of winning the soul of one of your friends. Make sense. Alright then, Jotaro. If you still want to play, you'll have the opportunity to win back the chips. But before that, I need to hear you say the words."

Without hesitation, Jotaro placed a hand on his chest and said, "With pleasure. I'll bet my soul on the game's outcome."

"Okay." Now the games had truly begun. With Jotaro betting his soul, there's no getting out of it.

"Jotaro!" Avdol said. "Take him down, JoJo." Hikari said, placing a hand on Jotaro's shoulder, letting him know that he has her support. Hikari tried to keep her body from shaking, but some shivers got loose. She was getting scared by this whole thing. Jotaro was right, D'Arby may just be the most dangerous Stand user they came across. But even so, D'Arby hasn't scared her off yet. She has full faith in her JoJo. No matter what she knows he'll win.

D'Arby then reached towards a cart beside him and pulled out six white blank chips and placed them in front of Jotaro. "The pure white chips in front of you are a physical representation of you soul. Once I procure all six of those chips, your soul will be added to my collection." D'Arby says.

Avdol had brought the boy over, and he looked rather confused as to what was happening. Jotaro shuffled the cards before handing them to the boy who dealt the cards out like asked. "For my opening action, I shall bet one chip of Polnareff's soul." D'Arby said throwing out a chip. Jotaro threw out one chip of his soul as well. "Let's begin!" D'Arby said, holding up his cards.

When beginning a new game of poker, each player is dealt a total of five cards. Players can improve their hand by swapping out cards. While it may seem straightforward on the surface, it's the betting

aspect that makes poker a game of determination and psychology.

"Now then, what to do? Nah, I think I'll raise." D'Arby said. Discarding his two of cards and throwing down another chip, "Jotaro. You should bear in mind that those six chips beside you are your soul. Make sure you think carefully before making a move." The boy looked even more confused, maybe a bit frightful, as he wondered what it is D'Arby was saying. Avdol took noticed of this and placed a comforting hand on the boy's shoulder. "Listen. It's okay if you don't understand what's going on. Don't worry yourself. You just focus your attention on cutting and dealing the cards, alright?" Avdol said

"Uh...mm-hmm." The boy said, nodding his head in understanding.

"Give me three cards." Jotaro said, putting in a chip. Jotaro picked up his cards then looked up at D'Arby. The man was expecting a frightened look but was taken aback by his stone-cold expression. "Would you look at that, such a serious glare. Behind it must be an outstanding hand. I suppose I'll play it safe for now and bet one Polnareff." D'Arby said. "Call. One." Jotaro said, tossing in another chip of his soul. There were six chips on the table. Three Polnareff's and three blank ones.

Avdol and Hikari gave each other a worried glance as they looked at the game in front of them. *'If you don't fold, you'll need three chips per game at the very least.'* Avdol thought.

"Alright. Bring it one Jotaro." D'Arby challenge.

Jotaro laid his cards down. "Two pair with eights and nines."

"Hmm, that's too bad. Two pair, Jacks and Queens." D'Arby says with a smug smile on his face.

"Oh no..!" Avdol gapsed out.

"My, that was a close one. I was on the verge of a crushing defeat." D'Arby chuckled. "But as it stands..." D'Arby placed his arm on the table and took all three of Polnareff's and Jotaro's soul chips. Chuckling darkly at them.

'He only has three left...' Hikari thought.

"Jotaro, what are you-?" Avdol began to ask.

Jotaro picked another piece of his soul and tossed it. "Okay, next game. Deal the cards." D'Arby tossed back one of Jotaro's soul. He shuffled the cards again before handing them to the boy who dealt them out. As the game progressed, the odds of who will win are beginning to weight down on them. "You should be careful what you wish for. The next game may well be your last." D'Arby said before looking at his cards and tossing in a blank chip. "I'll change one card." D'Arby stared at Jotaro but then looked down at the table he hadn't touched his cards. He had his arm on the table as he stared down at him with stone-cold eyes.

"What's the problem, Jotaro? Hurry and check your hand so you can make a decision whether you'll change or fold." D'Arby said.

"Hey, Jotaro?" Avdol questioned.

"Is something wrong?" Hikari asked. Jotaro's cool expression remained unwavering. "No, it's fine. These cards will do." He said. Everyone was surprised by hearing the tall delinquent's declaration. "So sorry, come again? There must be some confusion, perhaps I misheard you. I could've sworn I heard you say these cards will do." D'Arby said.

"No, you heard right. I'm fine with these cards. I'll play the round with this hand." Jotaro declared. "Obviously!" D'Arby yelled, hitting the table. "What I'm trying to ask is do you intend to play those cards without so much as glancing at them."

"These cards will do." Jotaro said, simple as that. He almost found it amusing to see D'Arby start to lose his calm demeanour. Almost. "Enough subterfuge! Answer me! How can you play a round with any sort of confidence if you don't even look at the cards in your hand?!" D'Arby yelled, standing up from his chair.

Jotaro ignored D'Arby and turned his attention towards Avdol. "Need a favour. You in?" Jotaro asked. "Favour? Of course, but answer something first. Why are you hellbent on not looking at your cards?" Avdol asked.

D'Arby's fist slammed on the table, getting more angrier by the second. "Damn it, Jotaro! I demand that you answer me!" Jotaro conversed with Avdol, ignoring D'Arby. Once he was done, he pulled out two stacks of white chips. "Let's see now, raised you another two. And while I'm at it, I'll throw in Avdol's soul." Jotaro said.

"What?!" D'Arby yelled.

"I admit, you're an impressive opponent, D'Arby. Sure, you're no match for our Stands physically, but under pressure, you can be amazingly calm and clever. Sufficient to say, I'm not much in terms of being a gambler. It be easy for you to read me like a book. So I can never defeat someone like you," Avdol said. "But I have the utmost confidence in Jotaro. I don't know why he won't look at his cards, but that's not of my concern. If he asks for my soul, I won't hesitate to put my life on the life. My soul's in Jotaro's, more than capable, hands." Avdol said.

"So that's how we're playing this." D'Arby said.

Avdol grabbed a chair and he sat down next to Polnareff's and Joseph's bodies. Hikari gave him a worried glance before turning back to the game.

"It's become apparent that the two of you have succumbed to the pressure of our little game. You there, I believe you owe another card, hurry and deal me." D'Arby commanded the boy.

"Y-yes sir...." The boy stammered as he delt him one card. As D'Arby was looking over his hand, he took a quick glance at the boy. The latter hung his head so to keep his little smirk hidden from the others. *'I've delt just as you asked, Master D'Arby. His hand is worthless. There's no doubt about it. My skills as a dealer never fail. You've won, I know you have.'* The boy thought.

'Jotaro's under the assumption the boy has nothing to do with this. But little does he know, everyone in this cafe and with inside of this place works for me. Even the bartender and those men. No matter what, I can't fail. As my directive was to make sure Jotaro's hand is weak. Still, not looking at the cards was a bold move. He caught me by surprise, albeit briefly.' D'Arby thought. Surely it was half-development bluff Jotaro

made right on the spot. How dare he try to bluff against a master gambler like him. Does the pathetic fool think he'll lie down and fold?

"Ha, very well. If that's your game, I'll match you with six of Polnareff's. And..." D'Arby slid the rest of Joseph's chips over too. Spicing up the pot. "I'll raise you Joestar's chips." D'Arby then pushes over the chips Jotaro had previously lost. "What do you think? Fifteen chips total!" Now, this greatly affected the rest of the crusaders.

"What! Hold on a minute! That's not fair! How can you raise your ante when Jotaro doesn't have any more chips!?" Avdol said.

"He's out of chips you say? There's an easy way to fix that." D'Arby said.

"What do you mean?" Avdol asked again.

D'Arby pulled out a pen and paper and said, "Rectifying your chip conundrum is simple. As long as my Stand has a written contract. Once the deal is done, it'll have carte blanche to take us all."

"And exactly how's soul are you talking about?!" Avdol angrily shouted.

"Kakyoin's in the hospital. Why don't you simply bet his soul? And while I'm at it," His paused as his eyes travelled to the girl standing beside Jotaro. He spread an evil smirk and said, "Bet the soul of your little girlfriend over there along with him."

"What?!" Avdol shouted in shocked while Hikari let out a frightful gasp at his sudden demands. This is what D'Arby wanted. He wants to see Jotaro panic. *'Panic, fool... Show me your doubt and fear. Let me see you lose that cool composure. How dare he try to bluff me? After I'm finished with him, that poker face will be a contorted ball of anguish and misery.'* D'Arby thought.

Jotaro looked at Hikari, getting worried about how she's taking all this. He saw her shake for a moment before taking in a breath. Once she relaxed, Hikari locked her eyes with him and gave a bright smile

and nod. She wasn't afraid. *'Go for it.'* Her eyes told him. Jotaro gave a subtle nod before turning to the gambler. "Sounds like a plan." Jotaro pulled out twelve blank chips. "I'll see your bet with Kakyoin's and Hikari's soul." He said. D'Arby had a stunned look on his face, not expecting this from the delinquent.

Star Platinum appeared for a split second and suddenly there was a cigarette in Jotaro's mouth. "Wait, Jotaro, you can't! Betting a man's soul without his knowledge is so uncouth!" Avdol cried as Jotaro wrote on the paper saying that he agrees to surrender the soul of his friend Kakyoin in the event that he'll lose. "Well, it is kind of selfish." Jotaro said as he crossed his arms. A flash of Star Platinum and a flicker of light appeared and the cigarette lit up for the green-eyed Kujo. D'Arby seemed to notice that almost immediately when Jotaro blew out some smoke.

"Hey, Jotaro! Did you just do?!" D'Arby shouted.

"What did I just do? What do you mean by that?" Jotaro asked.

"You lit a cigare-!" D'Arby shouted, standing up from his chair but bit back his words with a growl. "What's wrong with you? Not feeling well or something?" Jotaro asked him, still as cool as ever.

'Importunate, why is he so confident?! Could he have... Could he have used Star Platinum to swap the cards without my knowing?!' D'Arby thought. D'Arby had his mouth agape, staring at the young Joestar. He stared into his eyes seeing a fierce fire ignite behind them. D'Arby got a chilling feeling from him, a feeling he hadn't felt in years. The boy who was dealing the cards started to breathe heavily and sweat. He looked over at D'Arby, who looked away from the boy.

'Ugh, stupid brat! What are you thinking?! Don't look at me with that worried grimace! If Jotaro finds out you work for me, I'll murder you!' D'Arby thought. However, he wasn't fairing better himself. He held his cards, but he too began to sweat and breathe heavily. When you combine poker and gambling, it slowly starts to take a drastic toll on your mental state. *'Compose yourself. I have four kings. The only hands that could beat me are four aces, a straight flush, or a joker lead five of a kind.'*

In order for Jotaro to obtain any of those hands, he would have to switch all five cards. A challenge indeed. With Star Platinum's speed, there's a chance he could've switched a card. But five? Could he really do that, right under his nose? No, that was impossible! *'There's no way I could've missed him replacing all five! I'm the great D'Arby, the king of games, master at the art of gambling! I've had enough of this Jotaro! Your time has come! He lit that cigarette to psych me out, so now I know he's bluffing!'* D'Arby's eyes widened in shock and nearly breaks down when he notices that Jotaro is now suddenly sipping a cocktail without him having noticed.

"You're kidding me?! You got a trick too?! When did you have the chance to-?! You bastard, how dare you make fun of me?! Let's finish this! My hand is unbeata-!" D'Arby shouted as he was about to throw down his cards when Jotaro cut him off. "Hold it." Jotaro set his drink and cigarette down as he starts to say, "Sorry. But I feel that my luck is beginning to slip." His eyes then went over to Hikari and gestured for her to come close. "Hikari. Mind coming here for a second?"

Hikari blinked in confusion and did what he asked. "Sure. Did you want something?" She asked him. Without giving her an answer, Jotaro quickly reached out, grabbing her arm. Pull her down and had her over his lap. Once he's got her right where he wanted her, Jotaro keeps a firm grip on her wrist, placed a hand on the back of her head, and gave her an excitable kiss.

"MMMH?!" Hikari gasped out as everyone was absolutely shocked at what they were seeing. Hikari felt her face flush, extremely embarrassed that he was doing this in front of everyone and she tried to struggle out of Jotaro's hold. Jotaro took advantage of Hikari's gasp and slipped his tongue right in. Deepening the kiss. Hikari instantly froze and felt all of her senses drifting away. His tongue dancing along with hers in a sensual display of passion. Hikari never been kissed like this before...and she was beginning to enjoy it. Just as Hikari was about to give in to this new sensation, Jotaro broke the kiss and lifted her off him. "Thanks, Hikari. I really needed that." Jotaro said.

"Y-...y-yeah... Uh, h-h-happy....to help... W-why...there two of you?" Hikari was so lightheaded and saw the world spinning before her.

She stumbled a bit before losing all feeling in her legs. She would've collapsed if Avdol hadn't caught her. "Hikari! Pull yourself together!" He cried out as she stared out into the distance with a dreamlike expression on her face.

"Ah, now that I feel my luck coming back to me, I have to ask you something," Jotaro said, turning his attention back towards the gambler. "Why're you jumping the gun when I haven't raised the pot yet?" He asked. Making Avdol and the Dealer Boy gasp in shock. D'Arby was once again taken back by the delinquent's confidence. "R-R-R-R-R-R-R-R-R-R-R-R-R-R-R-R-Raise the pot?!" D'Arby strumbled out. "No, you don't have anything to raise it with!"

SLAM

D'Arby was cut off when Jotaro slammed six more chips onto the table. "That's where you're wrong. I'll raise you with my mother's soul." Jotaro tells him as he smokes his cigarette. "WHAT?!" D'Arby shouts in shock. His mother's soul!?! Why would he-!? Avdol seemed to have the same thought as he stared at Jotaro as if he had gone completely insane. "Are you out of your mind?! Jotaro, why would you bet your mother's soul?!" He shouts. This new information snapped Hikari from her trance and said, "Wait, what?"

Jotaro slams his hand on the table and rose from his seat. Glaring at the shaking Gambler. "The entire reason I came to Egypt in the first place was to save my mother, so if I end up losing here, she'll die anyway. She won't mind if I bet her soul. So then, D'Arby, for your sake, I hope you have something to bet that matches my mother's soul. I know, for your ante, I want you to tell me the secret of Dio's Stand!" D'Arby let out a fearful yell as he fell right out of his seat and started in shocked at the delinquent. D'Arby started to take more rapid deep breaths as sweat started dripped down his brow.

This wasn't taking a toll on just him. Avdol was getting panicky too. He knows, judging from D'Arby's reaction, he does in fact know Dio's secret. Unfortunately for him, however, Dio doesn't take treason lightly. If D'Arby tells them the information they want to know, then he's as good as dead.

'Jotaro... if you're confident enough to bet your mother's soul, you're sure

your hand will win, aren't you? You wouldn't let us down, would you? You got the winning right?! Jotaro?!' Avdol screamed in his thoughts.

D'Arby was hyperventilating harder, each breath he took in was ragged as he tried to get air into his lungs. Jotaro looked so confident like he couldn't lose. Jotaro spits out his cigarette and shouts at him with an intense glare. "Come on, are you gonna call my bluff or fold?! Decision time, spit it out already!! D'Arby!!"

D'Arby started to shake uncontrollably as his mouth opened but no words came out. He crumpled the cards in his hands as he struggles to stand up and begins to laugh like a maniac. *'I'll say it...'* He steadily got up and used the table to support himself as he swayed back and forth. The dealer boy and Avdol were having an immense trouble breathing. Hikari went to Jotaro and held his arm. "JoJo, if this is a bluff, then you can't take it this far!" She told him.

"I'll say it, damn it..!!" D'Arby shouts as he slams his fists against the table. *'I'll say it! I'm the world's greatest gambler, I can do this! I'll call!'* He crushed the cards in his hand as he continued to shake and sweat. He opened his mouth ready to call, but no matter what he did, the words refused to come out. *'Call, call, call, call, call, call, call, call, call, call... I'm going to call!!'* As he tried to call he looked into Jotaro's eyes and the words kept getting stuck in his throat. As D'Arby tried to speak his hair started to turn stark white. "C-C-C-C-C-C-C-C-"

'I can't do it! I'm petrified! I'm too terrified to say the words!! I can't b-breath...!!' D'Arby's eyes rolled in the back of his head, and then he went completely still. "That's unbelievable..! His eyes rolled into the back of his head!" Avdol said. The little boy jumped and yelped, "How is possible for someone to faint when they're on their feet!?"

"He's completely lost it. The pressure was too much." Jotaro said.

"I feel kinda sorry for him." Hikari said softly. D'Arby's body fell over knocking the table over in the process. Polnareff's and Joseph's chip fell to the floor. Within a matter of seconds, their souls appeared and went back into their rightful bodies. "Mr. Joestar and Polnareff's souls are returning to their bodies! Thank heavens." Avdol says.

"Mentally he's already forfeited the game. Deep down he knew he had

lost, that's why the souls were released." Jotaro said. Hikari and Avdol looked down and were shocked to see D'Arby's crumpled cards. "F-Four kings?! Are you telling me he had for kings all along?!" Avdol asked. Hikari turned to the tilted table and asked, "JoJo? Sweetie, what kind of cards did you have to make you so confident?"

Hikari picked up his cards and flipped the cards over revealing them to everyone. Her's and Avdol's eyes widen as the little boy gasped and fell over a look of disbelief on his face. "Like I thought..." He said. Avdol looked like he was about to faint, and Hikari did faint. Landing safely in Jotaro's arms. Jotaro's cards were eight of diamonds, six of spades, ten of hearts, ace of hearts, and jack of clubs. ABSOLUTELY WORTHLESS CARDS!!

"YOUR HAND WAS SHIT! ABSOLUTE SHIT!" The boy shouted.

"Even with Star Platinum's incredible speed, he wouldn't have been able to swap cards in front of an expert gambler like D'Arby. It's a good thing my bluff and intimidation worked so well, but such a worthless hand. Good grief, had I known it was this crappy, I would've freaked." Jotaro says.

"What?! What do you mean you would've freaked?! Jotaro, don't tell me that you bet our souls on that worthless hand!?" Avdol shouted at him. D'Arby started to laugh uncontrollably clearly losing his mind. As he did so his book of poker chips souls opened up and all the souls were released going back to their bodies.

"Come on, everyone! Let's play a game of mahjong! Backgammon is a lot of fun too! Or we can play a game of dice, even though I don't have any!!" D'Arby gleefully laughs like an idiot. At this point, consider D'Arby of the Osiris Stand, officially retired. "I doubt that we'll able to pry Dio's secret out of him in this state." Avdol says.

"I don't think it's fair to leave him like this. I'm just going to calm him down for a bit." Hikari says as she kneels down beside D'Arby and hovers her hand over his forehead. Soundless Voice appears and hovers her hand as well, sending the calming gentle blue energy onto him. Within moments, D'Arby stopped laughing and looked more relaxed, entering a peaceful sleep.

"That's true. He was a formidable opponent. It's humbling to admit this, but he almost took us all out single-handedly. The guy was a force to be reckoned with." Jotaro said.

"Ugh, I feel like death warmed over." Polnareff said.

"Well, I guess we can't be the heroes in every episode." Joseph says. As the group walked out of the restaurant Iggy reappeared hopping into Hikari arms. Jotaro draped an arm over Hikari's shoulder and the golden-haired girl smiled at him. Then she recalled what he did, and blushed madly. She looked at him and puffed her cheeks. "You were such a meanie, you know that? Why . did you have to do something like that?" She asked him.

Jotaro wasn't the slightest bit apologetic and he send a smirk her way. "Hmph. I was lying when I said I felt some of my luck slipping. I needed a positive source of energy to give me a boost." He said. Hikari let out a soft, "Hm" as she turned away. "W-well, I'm happy that I was able to help. B-but...next time, mind giving me a little warning...? A-and I...wouldn't mind...i-if you want to try that again...when we're alone." She said softly, her face turning all shades of red. Jotaro chuckled as he lifted her head and pressed his lips against hers.

Chapter 47: Hol Horse and Mondatta, part 1

One day. It would be one day before our heroes will be able to reach Cairo and ultimately find where Dio's hiding. Hol Horse, with extreme caution, enters DIO's mansion and carefully walks in the darkness. "Shit, it's dark in here, can't see a damn thing. Where the hell is that bastard anyway?" Hol Horse says to himself before reaching into his pocket and pulling out his lighter. Igniting it so it could light up the place. He grumbles in annoyance as he looked around the still darkened mansion.

"It's the middle of the day and I still have to feel my way around this hovel. This had better be worth it." He says as he lit his cigarette. "Okay... If I remember correctly I'll find Dio over in that room." Hol Horse started to walk through the endless void of darkness when his foot had hit something. He looked down and was shocked when he stumbled upon three drained corpses of young women. "Disgusting..! This little lady must be one of Dio's leftovers. Damned broads just throw themselves at the guy, like having their blood drained in the lastest bedroom craze. The whole thing's nutty if you asked me. Though girls do tend to go for the bad boys. Well...except for one."

Hol Horse didn't know too much about it. But from what he had learned on his own was that these kinds of women were the kind Dio hated. There was one woman, ONE, in this entire world, or maybe even in a lifetime, that Dio desired more than anything else. He even had multiple paintings of her which he had created himself. A gorgeous young woman with vibrant red hair and piercing emerald eyes, often wearing a black dress. What disturbed Hol Horse was that he had once witnessed Dio using his own blood to paint her hair and he quickly realised just how much the Vampire was obsessed with her. His "darling, precious rose" as he puts it.

"But forget about that, I've never seen such gold in my life. How'd he get all this?" Hol Horse asked himself as his eyes gazed over the mountains of gold and treasures laid around the mansion. "Seems like this guy can have and do just about anything." He said as he continued his way, flicking his lighter off when he reaches the next

room, careful not to touch the hundreds of spiderwebs that littered the room. It is only when Hol Horse reaches the library that he suddenly hears Dio's voice.

"Hol Horse... What is it?" He asked. The cowboy frantically looked around, trying to find where exactly the voice was coming from. Only for him to freeze in fear when he spotted Dio just above him, lazily searching for a book up on the higher shelves. "It's... Master...Dio..." Fear quickly stirred itself within Hol Horse's soul. He gripped his heart as he breathed heavily. Dio silently floats down to ground level, not sparing a glance at the man behind him as he searches for a good read.

'Son of bitch..! What is this..?! Just looking at him is enough to send chills down my spine. Keep it together Hol Horse, don't let him spook ya! He's nothing to lose your cool over. Yeah, he's not even that much stronger than you.' Hol Horse told himself.

"I'll ask you again, did you want something, Hol Horse?" Dio asked him. He may have sounded calm, but one can *feel* the impatience in his tone. Knowing he has to answer quickly, Hol Horse nervously makes his report about Mariah, Carrie, Alessi, and Ramses's defeat at the hands of the Crusaders.

"Uh, well, yes actually. There's something I thought you want to know. I've received intel that two of the nine great Gods, Mariah and Alessi, as well as Carrie and Ramses, have been put out of commission." He said.

"And your point is?" Dio asks as he blew off some dust of a book. Uninterested by the report.

"Well...! There's more. We've got trouble coming. Turns out Joestar and his gang will arrive in Cairo tomorrow and only three of the nine Gods are left." Hol Horse tells him. "It seems you've misunderstood my questioned. I want to know what you're going to do, Hol Horse." Dio says as he turns around to face him. Hol Horse slightly panicked as he took a step back away from him.

"You seem to be caught rather off guard. I simply wish to know when you're going to kill them, Hol Horse. While it's true you pledge your

allegiance to me, you have yet to adequately prove yourself in battle." Dio tells him as he stepped closer towards the gunman with his arms raised and positioned to grab hold of his neck. "In this day and age, any simpleton can deliver information. Twice you failed me. And here you are crawling back."

Hol Horse couldn't move. He was petrified. His breathing became irregular and sporadic that he could do nothing as Dio moved his hands closer. Although it may seems Dio is preparing to execute him, the Vampire simply takes his cigarette from his lips and burns his two index fingers. As he gives back the cigarette, Dio presented them to Hol Horse.

"You couldn't know this, but my body once belong to a man by the name of Jonathan Joestar. Jonathan was the grandfather of Joseph Joestar. Look closely, notice how the left finger heals at a slower rate than the right? The left side of this body is weak." Dio tells him as he takes another book off the shelve. "Which proves that it doesn't completely belong to me yet and that I am not yet immortal. I am ill-equipped to fight a battle with Joestar and his friends." He says as he sat down in his chair and opened the book on a random page.

"Now then, if there is nothing else, run along and destroy my enemies on my behalf. Failure will most assuredly result in your untimely demise. One more thing...the little girl that's among them? Invite her here. I like to have a word with her." Dio told him, giving him one final chance to defeat Jotaro's group. Hol Horse, while despite his body shaking with absolute terror, felt anger over Dio's callousness. *'You're barking up the wrong tree, hos! As if threats are gonna make me roll over and do whatever you want. On your behalf, my ass! I'm no fool, I'm smart enough to throw in with whoever's strongest.'* Hol Horse's hand twitches as he quietly walks up behind the Vampire.

'Everything I've said has been lip service, I'd never swear my loyalty to you with the cost of my soul! Rat bastard, you're not so tough, are ya?! You're wide open, guess having another person's body attached to your head has made you go soft. This is perfect, I don't have to fight Joseph and the other four, now that I've got Dio in my crosshairs.' Hol Horse gathers enough courage to summon his Emperor and held it at the back of Dio's head.

'It be a hell of a lot easier to blow his head smithereens right here and now. If I do, his treasures mine for the taking. This'll be a piece of cake, he doesn't know Emperor's aimed point-blank at his skull. I can finish him off and he'll be none the wiser. Just one pull of the trigger and this nightmare will be over. After all, Emperor was made for close combat carnage! I can do this! I can do this!'

"Is there a problem? You seem to be hesitating." Dio says.

Hol Horse cocked the gun. *'Eat lead shitbag! I'm about to splatter your brains all over the floor,* ***Mister Dio****!'* He shouts in his mind as he prepares to shoot him right there and now. But then Dio asked him, "Are you positive you want to go through with shooting me?" Hol Horse's eyes widened. Before he could pull the trigger, Dio had suddenly vanished into thin air. Hol Horse had no idea on how the hell he did that before he heard his voice behind him.

"Fascinating. As you prepared to fire, you're breathing was relaxed. You didn't even perspire. You were composed, very impressive Hol Horse." Dio says, praising Hol Horse for his spirit and reiterates his expectations for the gunman. He gave a low chuckle as he walked away. Leaving Hol Horse in a frozen state. Once he was gone, the reality of the situation finally occurred to him and he broke into a sweat.

"This doesn't make a lick of sense! I didn't even see him move. There's no way in hell he could've crept up behind me without breaking a single one of those spider webs. Fast or not, he shouldn't been able to sneak up to my rear without me noticing something. Was that the...power of Dio's Stand? The power of The World..? 'Ill-equipped'?! Yeah, right!" Finally seeing the gulf in power between them, Hol Horse swears to heed DIO's command. He drops to his knees and lets out a breath. "I...I finally understand Master Dio. I've got no choice but to pledge my eternal loyalty to you. You've got me beat."

*****Later*****

After a quick plane ride, Hol Horse returns from Aswan and arrives in Cairo International Airport with a trunk in hand. He meant it when he said he would heed Dio's command, and he was going in this with all seriousness. He exited the airport and was about to enter his taxi

when two men showed up and tried to take his ride. "Whoops, snooze ya lose, buddy!" A man with a mohawk laughed as he opened the passenger side door. "I hate to break it to you cowboy but it looks like this is our cab now! Hehehehe! No hard feelings?" A man with a moustache laughed.

Hol Horse growled under his breath as the mohawk man stepped up to him. "Huh? Don't tell me you're gonna start crying like a baby?!" He smirked. Hol Horse summons Emperor and shoots the mohawk's ear. As he screamed in pain and his friend in utter shock, Hol Horse throws his trunk in the car and climbed inside, telling the driver to straight to a hotel. During the car ride, Hol Horse glances down at the trunk and leans down to it. "I'm gonna open up this suitcase and let you out. Unless you want some grade-A pain, I suggest you keep calm. We clear?" He said.

"Huh? Did you say something just now, sir?" The driver asked him.

"If I did, it sure the hell wasn't to you! Now shut up and drive the cab!" Hol Horse demanded him.

"Y-yes, sir."

Hol Horse turned his attention back to the suitcase and opened it up to reveal a tied up Mondatta. As it turns out, Hol Horse had kidnapped the boy and essentially was forcing him to fight alongside him. "Cut it out. You know, if you weren't making such a damn racket, I wouldn't have to hogtie you and put you on the plane like a piece of luggage." Hol Horse said as he gripped the boy's jacket.

"Don't be a baby, Mondatta. Your brother's got another month in the hospital thanks to that bomb, so you and I are partners. Now make sure those big ears are listening cause here's are we're gonna do. We're gonna use your book of premonitions and my assassin gun to take out Jotaro, Joseph and the rest of those S.O.B's. Got that Mondatta!?" He shouted. Mondatta quickly nodded his head.

"I get that we haven't known each other long but from what I've gathered, you're afraid of just anyone that's not your brother, Zenyatta. But don't you think this is the perfect chance to avenge the guy? You don't want to be a yellow-belly coward forever right, that's

no good." Hol Horse told him. "I'm out of options too! We've got no choice but to fight. Time for us to get our revenge Mondatta. I'm gonna let you loose now but you have to swear to me you won't carry on with all that infernal hollering." Once again, Mondatta rapidly nods his head. Convinced to team up with him to combine their Stand abilities and assassinate the Joestars.

"See that, son? I'm not so bad, now try to settle down. I don't need ya getting sick on me." He says as he unties the kid and held him up. "Cause, believe it or not, I'm on your side in this whole mess. So don't you worry, just relax for now."

"I'm Mondatta! This is Hol Horse, he's mean and I don't like him!" Tohth narrated. *"Hmph!"* Hol Horse went. *"While Mondatta was sleeping, Hol Horse tied him up and stuffed him in a trunk. Mondatta was taken from his brother, Zenyatta. He was sad. But even though Mondatta was scared out of his mind, he wanted to avenge his brother, so he decided to work up his courage and become partners with Hol Horse."*

Hol Horse and Mondatta soon found themselves in a desert in the outskirts of town. Before doing anything, Hol Horse first wanted to do a test on Tohth's power. So as he read from the book, Mondatta was cowering from him beneath a small shrub.

"Oh come on! You won't even get near me? Well, I guess you're trying, which is all I can ask for at this point. And by the way, I got to know does your Stand really predict the future or is that just some cockamamie rumour? If that was all just a tall tale, then I brought you here for nothing. I mean, even with it your brother got blown to high heaven." Hol Horse said.

With receiving no answer and Mondatta shivering like a spineless coward, Hol Horse yelled, "Which is it, kid?! Are you a fraud?!" As soon as he asked that, his blue eyes looked down and saw that a new comic had appeared on book. It depicts them meeting a very beautiful woman and Hol Horse jumping up and kicked her in the neck, which shocked the cowboy to no end. Afterwards, it tells him that the woman was overjoyed by the kick and awarded Hol Horse with her jewels, making the two rich.

"What the hell is this crap?!" Hol Horse shouted as he stomped his

way over to the boy. Shocked at this outrageous prediction. "You must think I was born last night! You call this a prediction Mondatta?! There's just no way! This crap has to be made up or something."

"I-I-I'm telling the truth. My Stand Tohth...y-you just have to trust in its prophecies. Th-th-th-they're 100..! They're 100% right every time." Mondatta told him.

"They're right 100%, you trying to pull the wool over my eyes?!" Hol Horse shouted at him. "There's no way some lady's gonna give me her jewels after jump kicking her in the neck! You'd have to be off your rocker to do something like that! Hm?" The cowboy stops his yelling as he caught sight a passing woman, a beautiful one at that, walking with a large, bulky bodyguard at her side.

That was the first part of the prediction. Hol Horse turns back to the boy and says, "Listen, Mondatta... I'm proud to say I'm a gentleman and a proper gentleman at that! Cause of that I've got girls all over the world. I might tell a white lie now and again, but I'd never haul off and hit one! I respect all the ladies. The beauties, the plain ones and even the ugly ones! There's no way you're prediction will ever come to pass! Come hell or high water, I swear I would ever hit a woman! She could pay me every dime, nickel and quarter she had, I still wouldn't put my hands on her!"

"I-it's 100% true...yes." Mondatta says. Insisting that what will come to pass with happen. He strongly believes in his Stand and he needs Hol Horse to trust in it as well. And he needs to do it fast, the woman was getting further away. Hol Horse kept a close eye on her and once she was at a good distance away, he grabbed Mondatta by the collar and proudly proclaimed that his prediction was wrong. But he might've spoken too soon because when he turned back to the woman, something had taken over his body because Hol Horse had dropped the kid and was now running towards the woman.

Still shocked by the absurdity of Mondatta's prediction, Hol Horse obliges and kicks the passing woman at the back of her neck, knocking her to the ground. "AUGH! WHO THE HELL ARE YOU?!" Her bodyguard screamed as he grabbed his gun, ready to shoot the cowboy but stopped when they both saw something dead inside the

woman's shawl.

"What in the-? Th-there was a scorpion in your shawl." The bodyguard said as he took the dead scorpion into his hands. "This things's sting is a death sentence." "What?!" The woman gasped in shock as she looked at the insect, leaving Hol Horse baffled by what was going on. The woman joyfully smiled at him as she walked towards him. "You spotted that wretched creature before it had a chance to crawl into my clothes." She said.

"If you hadn't killed it, she would've been stung for sure." Her bodyguard told him. Hol Horse was still shellshocked by what was happening right now, turns to Mondatta for answers. All the boy did was look at him. He knew. What he foretold was becoming a reality.

"You saved my life. Oh please, let me repay you. Would my necklace be a sufficient reward, it's yours." She told him as she removed her diamond necklace and gave it to her saviour. After the grateful woman gives him a diamond, Hol Horse is fully convinced of Tohth's ability. "Boy, this is my lucky day! Mondatta and I are practically invincible! We'll be the unstoppable duo!"

*****Meanwhile, with the Joestar group*****

Finding the building that they were looking for proved to be much more harder than the group thought. They asked nearly everyone that crossed their path but so far they came up empty. The group came upon a man who was repairing a roof and stopped to ask him, in hopes that a man who worked on buildings would be able to help them find the building in the photo. Polnareff climbed up the man's ladder asking him if he had known what building was in the photo.

"I don't think I'm going to be able to help you, folks. It's been my job to repair rooftops in Cairo for around forty years now, and I can't say that I've ever seen a place like this. From the looks of the building's design, the thing was built over a hundred years ago, give or take. If I had to take a guess based on the picture, I'd say you'd find it somewhere south from here. The buildings in Cairo get older and older the farther south you travel. I'm sorry, I don't have more to go on sonny." The man said before handing the photo back to Polnareff.

"No, don't worry about it. Sorry to bother." Polnareff gave his thanks before going down the ladder. Giving his friends the news. After that Joseph made a phone call to check up on Holly and the news wasn't good.

"I decided to make a call to Japan and my daughter's condition is much worse. She's lost virtually all of her strength. At best she has three or four more days left." Joseph said. Polnareff and Avdol gasped at the dreadful news while Hikari let out a small gasp covering her mouth as she looked away. Jotaro clenched his fist tightly at his side. They were running out of time. They had to find Dio before it was too late. "I can almost feel it... It's like Dio's right on top of us. I bet anything that he's hiding somewhere close by. But where could he be? And how do we find him?" Joseph said.

Hikari looked up at Jotaro, who had his head down and his eyes were covered by his hat. Although he didn't show it Hikari could tell he was worried about his mother's condition. She slowly grabbed Jotaro's hand and when he didn't pull away she gave it a reassuring squeeze. Jotaro didn't look at Hikari, but she smiled softly when she felt him squeeze back.

"We should get moving. We'll talk to everyone here until we find him" Avdol said.

Joseph nodded his head. "We've come this far. We have to keep going." With that, the group set out and searched for the next person with any information about the building. Even so, almost every person the spoke to have either said no, never seen it or have any recollection about it. While they walked through town, they had no idea they were being stalked by Hol Horse and Mondatta. The cowboy hid behind a corner while the boy hid underneath a crate.

"Been a long time coming, but it's time for our grand reunion. I'm getting sick of those faces. I never thought they get so close to Master Dio's mansion, but they're on a collision course for his backyard. And by the way, listen Mondatta!" Hol Horse shouts as he kicks the crate off the kid. Mondatta let out a small scream before he scurried back to the box like a scared, little rodent.

"We need to chat about your latest prediction. You sure it's one

hundred percent foolproof?" Hol Horse asked as he walked over and lifted the crate to talk to him. He had looked at the newest prediction and he found it to be just as absurd as the last one. "It's more than a little whacky, they're not dumb enough to fall for this."

"B-b-b-b-but, my premonition-." Mondatta began to say before Hol Horse slammed the box down on him.

"'My premonition are always one hundred accurate.' Is that what you were gonna say?" Hol Horse asked him.

"Well...th-they are, yes." Mondatta told them.

"Come on! You really expect me to buy this load of bologna?!" Hol Horse shouted as he read the comic book. Even looking at it, he couldn't believe it.

"We found them!" Shouted Hol Horse. "Joseph. Jotaro. Hikari. Polnareff and Avdol! Darn it!" Hol Horse fumed. "They're a hop, skip, and a jump away from Master Dio's manor. Those nosey buffoons will each get a bullet between the eyes." Hol Horse's mind was full of violent thoughts. "You're gonna pay for my brother!" Mondatta was beside himself with anger, but despite the pair wanting immediate payback, Hol Horse couldn't use his gun, the Emperor, in the market. "Now Hol Horse," Mondatta instructed. "Stick your fingers all the way up Polnareff's nose and then we'll win! They're out cold from losing all that blood, lucky you Hol Horse, this is your chance to finish them off for good!"

"Like hell, I'm gonna by that!! This is your big premonition?! Sticking my callous fingers up Polnareff's bogger infested nose, the hell do you take me for?! Well, speak Mondatta?!" Hol Horse shouted at him. "The part about killing them sounds good to me, but the rest of it, you better not be planning anything funny, boy! I mean, come on! Even if I supposed to stick my fingers up Polnareff's nose, I'd have to somehow get close enough to him to do it." He says as he summons his Emperor into his hands.

"Instead of all that skulduggery, I think we should go with a direct approach and put a bullet in them with Emperor. What do you say?"

"Y-y-you're not gonna be able to fire a bullet, yes. E-e-even though

you tried firing your Stand, fate wouldn't let you, yes." Mondatta told him. "You have to trust me, yes. I know from personal experience if you try to go against the comic, you'll suffer the consequences. It's fate I tell you, it's one hundred percent up to the whims of fate, yes."

"Hang on, your brother followed the comic and nearly died!" Hol Horse replied. Suffer the consequences? Zenyatta followed the comic's prediction to the letter and got blown up as a result, seems he already suffered the consequences despite that fact.

"M-my brother was trying to save himself but he foolishly disguised himself as Jotaro without thinking, yes. If he had trusted what he read and not disguised himself, then the real Jotaro would've been blown up, yes. The premonition itself was correct, yes." Mondatta explained to the cowboy.

Hol Horse growled in annoyance. "Then what now?!" He shouted as he peeked around the corner and gasped when he saw only four figures walking away. "Wait, where did Polnareff go?! Hey kid, Polnareff left the herd! Find out where he went!" He demanded. But Mondatta let out an 'eep!" and quickly hid underneath the crate. Unfortunately, his Stand was still peeking out from under it.

Hol Horse's eye widened. If Mondatta reacted that quickly then that would mean-. The cowboy froze in place when he felt the touch of cool steel pressed against his throat. "Don't you move. Unless you'd like to be lanced." Polnareff told him.

"But...! How the hell did you-?!" Hol Horse began to say. He tried to fight back and summon his Emperor but Silver Chariot had anticipated that and was fast enough to strike him in the back and pin the cowboy against the wall. Hol Horse coughed up blood as Polnareff gripped his wrist. "Imbécile. What exactly did you think you were trying to pull just now? If you know what's good for you, keep your hands where I can see them." Polnareff then grabbed Hol Horse and got him into a hold. He gripped his shoulder and held his arm tightly behind his back.

"I thought I noticed someone stalking us like a desperate starving hyena, and wouldn't you know, I was lucky enough to stumble across our old friend Hol Horse. It looks like you're still trying to kill us

which means you haven't learned your lesson yet!" Polnareff says as he tightens his hold on him. "Say, thanks for all fun back at India. You're very lucky Avdol survived our run-in, cause if he hadn't, you, my friend, would already be dead.

Chapter 48: Hol Horse and Mondatta, part 2

"You here alone, Hol Horse. No way, a coward like you wouldn't come by himself." Polnareff says as he searches around for any sign of Hol Horse's partner. "I'm sure he's hiding out nearby right? Well, where's your partner?!" Polnareff demanded him.

'Crap! On the upside though, he hasn't noticed Mondatta yet! I still have a chance.' Hol Horse thought to himself. But that bit of hope he had ended up going up in flames when he gazed down at the crate, seeing Mondatta's fingers and his Stand peeking out from beneath it. *'Shit! He's gonna see the book and his fingers..!'*

"On your own, you're not much of a threat Hol Horse but I'm well aware you have a special talent for picking allies. If you found someone to work with like before, that could make you a dangerous obstacle. Tell me, where did your partner go? Out with it, where's the other Stand user?!" Polnareff shouted.

'Your fingers..! Mondatta, hide your fingers! If he gets wise to where you are, it's all over!' Hol Horse thought to himself. Sweating buckets as he prayed for the kid to hide his fingers. All the while Mondatta was hoping for Hol Horse to have faith in his Stand's ability and follow through with the prediction by sticking his fingers up Polnareff's nose. Eventually, Polnareff took notice him when he spotted a hand reacting to a bug that was crawling on the ground.

The rest of the Joestar crew were calling out to Polnareff and but were getting concern as to why he wasn't responding to them. Worried that something had happened, they proceeded to make their way over. Hol Horse was panicking now. What should he do?! If Polnareff finds Mondatta, if the other's see him, then it's all over for him and he's sure to be killed. Without having much of a choice, Hol Horse acted upon what Tohth predicted. "Hey Polnareff, did you find the person tailing us?" Joseph called out.

"Say something." Avdol said.

"Avdol and the others.... Will be here soon!" Polnareff shouted at the cowboy. Hol Horse may have shoved his fingers up Polnareff's nose but he has no idea how to follow it up. What's worse, Joseph, Jotaro, Hikari, and Avdol are closing in on his position. Hol Horse looked behind the corner and thought about what he should do. Seeing that his attention was diverted, Polnareff pulled his head back and summoned Silver Chariot to fight but was met with a gun pointed directly at his face. Hol Horse may have had Polnareff under wraps but there was still the others to deal with. What should he do?! He needed to think of something and fast.

Eventually, the others turn the corner and found Polnareff leaning against the wall nonchalantly with a wide smile and his arms crossed. Alone.

"Hang on. You've been here the entire time? What's wrong, did you find someone following us or not?" Avdol asked him. "Well...uh..." Polnareff said, nervously. It was a bit hard to keep a straight face when you have a gun pressed against your head. Before the others showed up, Hol Horse had managed to hold Polnareff at point-blank range with Emperor and thus hides in a corner behind him. *'This is getting uglier by the second! They've backed me into a corner! According to that fool comic book, I was supposed to get my big chance after I've stuck my fingers up Polnareff's nose! But everything has gone south and I'm about to be in a world of trouble!'* Hol Horse thought to himself.

"Is everything alright Mr. Polnareff?" Hikari asked him.

"Uh, of course." Polnareff said.

'Well, now I've really stepped in it. If Avdol finds me, I'm as good as dead! I think I'm gonna cry!! Had I known something like this was gonna happen, I would've just blown them away from a distance. Argh, Mondatta! This is all your fault you know that?! That fool Polnareff's sword would've had nothing on my gun! Damn it!' Hol Horse thought.

"Polnareff," Avdol said, making Hol Horse flinch a bit. He grinds the barrel of his gun against Polnareff's head. *'You waiting for an invitation?! Tell them to scram! Because I swear to you Polnareff, if I'm found out, I'm taking you down with me.'*

"I... I was wrong, no one was tailing us. Guess it was just my imagination." Polnareff tells them.

"I see. And is there any particular reason you're nonchalantly standing in the corner like that?" Avdol questioned. His question caught Polnareff off-guard and his breath was caught in his throat. Hol Horse then began to jab his gun on his head as he angrily whispered, "Tell them you wanted to find a place to take a leak. Do it! Or I'll put a bullet in your head."

"Oh! I had to take a whizz and couldn't find a toilet so...what can you?" Polnareff said as he began to laugh nervously.

"Are you serious?" Avdol said, appalled by his answer.

"Come on you were peeing in the street? Even after all this time, your lack of shame amazes me." Joseph says as Polnareff continues to smile and laugh.

'For the love of-! Stop jabbing that stupid gun into my head! Wait! I may have found a way out of this. I'll give them a single and hope to God they'll figure it out.' Polnareff thought to himself. After swallowing down his nervousness, Polnareff tries to tip off the others by pointing his tongue behind him but no one understands what he is doing.

'Look where my tongue is pointing! Seriously, people, I'm trying to give you a sign! Look behind me!!' Polnareff thought.

The others simply looked at him with confusion. What the hell was he doing? *'Behind me, damn it! Look! Be! Hind! Me!!'* Polnareff thought. While that was going on, Hol Horse was getting a little suspicious at how quiet things had gotten. *'Hm? Shit! Why'd they stopped talking?!'* He thought.

"Well, as you can see, there's nothing strange going on here, so you can go on ahead." Polnareff told them with a false tone of cheeriness.

"Hm? Alright." Avdol says as the others prepared to leave. Polnareff was internally screaming inside. No, they can't leave! *'I was lying!! How are you not catching on?! My tongue! Look at my tongue! He's right behind me! Please don't leave!!'*

"Are you sure you're okay? You're making a creepy face. Something wrong with your tongue?" Joseph asked him.

"No. That's not it. He's trying to tell us that there's something behind-." Avdol began to say when he quickly realised that he had said that out loud.

'Shut your mouth!' Polnareff shouted in thought.

"You mean-." Joseph said.

'Damn it, Polnareff, you lowdown dirty son of a-!' Hol Horse thought as he furiously puts the gun on to Polnareff's head really hard. *'You were clueing 'em in! You've pissed me off for the last time! I've had just about enough of you!! Now die!!'* He goes to pull the trigger but, due to the irritation his nose has suffered, Polnareff sneezes. Exposing the gunman to the others. "What the-?!"

"What's HE doing here?" Avdol gasps. Immediately recognising the cowboy as the one who had shot him back in India. " W-Why?! You idiot! You had to sneeze?!" Hol Horse shouted. Polnareff quickly calls for Silver Chariot and knocked Hol Horse out breaking some jars and spilling some olive oil all over the road. "Everyone, watch out! Hol Horse is back, and he's got a friend hiding under the crate, so be careful!" Polnareff shouted, warning his friends.

'Blast it! This can't be happening! He sneezed because I went and jammed my fingers up his nose! Damn, damn!! If Polnareff hadn't sneezed, at the very least, I could have gotten rid of him for good! I should have known better than to team up with the likes of you, Mondatta! Now they're gonna kill me! This is all happening because of that blasted premonition.' Hol Horse looked up and gasps when he sees that the Joestar group was surrounding him. *'Now I'm doomed!'*

While the Joestar Group surrounds him, a truck was coming forth and the driver just so happened to the same man that Hol Horse had shot earlier. "Hey, bro, you seeing what I'm seeing? It looks like that jackass that picked a fight with us." The man's friend said as he pointed him out. Once the man laid his eyes on the cowboy, his blood began to boil and rage overtook him. "That's him, all right. I'll never forget the face of the bastard that blew my ear off! I'll run him

over like a piece of roadkill!" Angry, the man tries to drive his truck into him, but the olive oil causes his truck to skid out of control.

"What?!" Avdol shouted when it happened.

SCREEEECH!!!! BOOOOM!!!!

The truck skid out of control and crash into the wall AND the Joestar Group. Hol Horse looked on amazed at the scene before him. A truck had come seemingly out of nowhere and took out Jotaro, Hikari, Joseph, Avdol, and Polnareff. Just like Mondatta's prediction had said. "S-Seriously? It all happened so fast. They didn't have a chance to whip out their stands and stop the truck from running 'em down. My fingers went up his nose, and the prediction came true." Hol Horse said as a huge smile spread on his face. "I can't believe this! I got all five of 'em at once!"

Mondatta popped his head out from under the box and said, "It's fate. My premonitions are always right. However, it's too soon for you to finish them off. We must wait for the next prediction to be revealed, yes."

"Okay!" Hol Horse agreed. Boingo opened his book and read, "Hooray! The chance to kill them had arrived! But watch out! Let's hide and see what happens first."

"It's too soon to get close to 'em! Three of em' already passed out, but that Jotaro and Hikari' are both still awake! They're gonna get up any second now." Hol Horse in the book said. Hol Horse and Mondatta hid behind a corner as they see what they just read come true. Starting to stand up in the rubble, Jotaro struggled to stand up blood coming from his mouth and forehead. He bent down and with extreme care, help Hikari up. The girl had blood running down the side of her head and had a cut on her arm. Hikari let out a small whimper of pain as she held onto Jotaro for support.

"Jotaro was hit head by the truck like Joseph and the others were. I'm guessing he must've protected the girl before the truck hit them. That was a close, if we've tried creeping up to him, there's a chance he could've laid us out!" Hol Horse said. Jotaro used the crashed truck to help support himself as he used Star Platinum to push the truck on to

its side and pulled himself and his angel out of the wreckage.

When they were out, Hikari had told something to Jotaro and got out of his hold to go check on the rest of the group. As Hikari checked up on them Jotaro scanned the area with Star Platinum looking for Hol Horse. "Great, he's lookin' for me. Probably wonderin' why I split instead of blowin' his head clear off when I thought he was down for the count. The girl's there too, I can't hit a woman." Hol Horse said.

Hikari used Soundless Voice to pull Avdol, Polnareff, and Joseph away from the wreckage and started to heal their wounds. "We are gonna be able to beat those yahoos, right? We've made it this far, after all. I have to win no matter what it takes! You got that?! Are you with me Mondatta?!" Hol Horse said.

"Yeah...." Mondatta said.

"We're so close, I can taste it! Mondatta, it's time take these guys out once and for all! So what's our next move? You've proven that your comic's predictions are one hundred percent accurate! I was wrong but I believe in you now and I'll do whatever I must! Need me to stick my fingers up somethin' I will! Need me to eat crap I'll do it without a second thought! I have to win this fight, no matter what!" As Hol Horse talked another prediction appeared in Mondatta's book.

"Th-Th-There it is! It's here!" Mondatta shouted as he held up his book. "I-It finally appeared, yes! It's...the final prediction!"

"What?!"

"The time has arrived! Hol Horse's next attack will be his last! While waiting to strike, Hol Horse came across two plumbers repairing drain pipes. He saw the perfect opportunity to win and paid them to open one of the pipes! If Hol Horse were to fire every last one of his bullets into that pipe exactly as the clock struck twelve noon...." Hol Horse and Mondatta's reading was interrupted by two men. Two men who were working on drain pipes."Hey, check that out! Looks like there was a car accident around the corner." One of them said. Who cares about that? Let's hurry and finish this thing. Here, hold this pipe for me."

Hol Horse stared intently at the piping and his eyes followed the metal tubes seeing where they would lead to. "Wha-...what's exactly gonna happen if I fire my gun into that pipe, huh?!" Hol Horse stared down at Mondatta, who was too nervous to answer. "Come on turn the damn page would ya?! I know I fire my gun into the pipe but what happens after that?!"

Mondatta let out a shriek but quickly turned the page. "...once they're fired, the bullets go through the pipe and out the other end! KABOOM! Hol Horse's bullets hit their mark and fly straight through Jotaro's skull! Right smack in the middle of his forehead! Kyaa! Hikari falls over onto Jotaro's body scared!"

"Yes, yes!" Mondatta said with a wide smile on his face. "It's finally happening, yes! Our time's come, yes! I've been waiting for this since my brother's accident, yes!" Mondatta started to laugh aggressively staring down at his book.

"That's great Mondatta!" Hol Horse said as he looked down at the book. "I mean, it looks great, but, hold on a sec." He grabbed the book from Boingo flipping through pages. "Let's make sure we give a thorough once-over so we don't get our bacon cooked." He stopped on the previous prediction which showed Jotaro's head split in half. "Wha-?! What's happening on this page?! Hey, this the prediction from when your brother tried to wipe out Jotaro! But in the end, your brother was the one who got himself blown up."

Mondatta took his book back and told the cowboy, "Yeah but...my brother transformed himself into Jotaro to without giving it any thought. If he hadn't, the prediction would've come true, yes. B-but that's not going to happen to us because you and I can't transform ourselves, yes."

"Oh...yeah, you're right!" Hol Horse said. "I don't have changing powers! So I couldn't pretend to be Jotaro if I wanted to! Wait, so does that mean-?!"

"It does indeed, yes!" Mondatta stated. "At last I can avenge my brother, yes! There's absolutely no way to misinterpret this prophecy, yes! All. you have to is shoot your bullets into this pipe, and Jotaro will meet his maker, YES!!" Hol Horse let out a laugh but stopped

when he realized something. "HM? Let's back up a bit. It gave us a specific time to do it, right?. It's got to be done by the stroke of noon?" Hol Horse checked his wristwatch and gasped. "HUH?! Hey, your magic prediction comic book neglected to mention we only have two minutes left before twelve o'clock!"

"D-Don't panic! All you have to do is aim your gun and fire, yes!" Mondatta said as he followed after Hol Horse dragging himself across the ground as he kept himself half-hidden underneath the crate. "You've more than enough time, yes! Just believe in fate, it'll work itself out!"

"Yeah, I know, I know! It's one hundred percent! I believe you, I really do, but...." Hol Horse got into his thoughts as he started to sweat with panic and started to sprint over to the pipes. *'We're down to the wire and time's against us! I've gotta haul ass!'* He stopped in front of the workers and yelled, "You there, worker guy, listen up! This is a matter of life and death!" The men looked a Hol Horse, and he pointed down at one of the pipes. "I need one of you to open that pipe on the double!" The men stared at Hol Horse his request still not registering to them. "Just do it alright!" Hol Horse shouted at them.

One of the men finally spoke up. "Hey, who exactly do you think you're barking orders?"

"Who do you think you are, pal? Take a hike." Hol Horse summoned his stand and pointed it at the men. "Open the pipe! Or you can die!"

"Hol Horse, you should know that ordinary people don't have the ability to see your Stand, yes." Mondatta told Hol Horse, his words making Hol Horse gape as he realized his threat meant nothing to the men. "According to the premonition in the comic, you're supposed to pay the workers, yes."

Hol Horse glanced over his shoulder at Mondatta. "Huh? Pay them?" Hol Horse looked at his watch and his panicking got even more frantic. "Only a minute an' ten seconds left before showtime!" He looked back at the workers and said, "Alright, alright! Sorry about the attitude! I'll pay you to open the pipe but you have to do it now, please!"

"Now you're gonna pay us? Weirdo. Why would you give us money to open the pipe?" One of the workers asked.

"Does it really matter? Hand over what you got."

Hol Horse quickly reached into his pocket. "Yeah, o-okay...." He searched through his pockets but found nothing. He patted all over his person but found no money. "Yo, what's the hold up man?" The workers looked impatient staring at Hol Horse. Hol Horse pulled out the lining of his pockets showing nothing in them. "I'm flat broke! No, that's right, I left my wallet at the hotel!"

"What's with this guy?"

"Mondatta!" Hol Horse jumped in front of the small boy. "Remember the money I gave to you just in case you got lost? Well, I need you to give it back to me, so fork it over now, Mondatta!"

"Right, let's see!" Mondatta dug into his Jean pockets as Hol Horse continued to freak out. "Crap! We've only got forty seconds left! Move your ass!" Hol Horse yelled. Mondatta finally found the coin purse and pulled it out. "I-I don't know if this is enough but go ahead and take it-AAH." Mondatta's leg caught the edge of his crate, and he fell over dropping the coin purse. The purse hits the ground and the change flies everywhere causing Hol Horse to scream.

"Hey, I think I just saw one of them roll off roll behind the bricks." Hol Horse was taken out his shock when he saw the workers picking up the change from the ground examining the money. "They're just coins but they're a lot of them. Nice."

"Must be at least twenty pounds! Hey man, watch your feet, you're stepping on one."

"YAAAAAAAAH! Pick up the damn coins later! You can have them all okay?!" Hol Horse screamed. An elder woman came onto the scene carrying a tray with two cups on them. "Here you go, boys. It's getting close to noon. I made you boys some tea so take a load off and have some lunch."

"Sounds good to me."

"Listen, granny, I found them first so get lost!" Hol Horse hollered. Everyone seemed to ignore Hol Horse as the older woman handed the two workers the tea. "Thank you very much, ma'am." Hol Horse lifted up a large chunk of asphalt holding it over his head in a threatening manner. "Put 'em down!! I told ya to hurry up an' open the pipe! If you don't I'll crack your skulls!" The men looked scared along with woman as Hol Horse threatened them.

"JoJo, I finished with the others. Now let me heal your wounds, sweet pea." Hikari said. Jotaro nodded his head and crouched down so Hikari could reach his head wound. She wiped the blood from his face and proceed to heal his wounds. As Jotaro knelt down allowing Hikari to treat him, his head was in perfect lining of the pipe.

After being threatened the men quickly opened the pipe for Hol Horse.

"There, it's open!"

"Move it!" Hol Horse yelled as he summoned his Stand. He shot several rounds into the pipe yelling, "Now die Jotaro! I won! Just like the prediction said, I shot the cocky bastard at the stroke of noon! Go get him!" The bullet whizzed through the pipe heading for their target, which was Jotaro's head. Hol Horse and Boingo watched anxiously as Hikari patched up Jotaro.

"Almost done. The others just have some minor scrapes and bruises, and they should wake up soon. I'm so relieved that no one got anything that was life-threatening." Hikari said with a smile. Jotaro kept his head still as Hikari finished up dressing his injuries. "Your arm..." He said as he placed a hand near her cut. Hikari quickly shook her head. "Oh, no. It's just a scratch that's all." The tall delinquent was still in the perfect position for Hol Horse's bullets to hit him.

"I won! This is really gonna happen! Jotaro's right in front of that pipe!" Hol Horse exclaimed. Hikari smiled as she finally finished up. Suddenly something grabbed onto Hikari's ankle making the girl squeal and fall forward clinging to Jotaro. "Kyyaaa!" As she rammed into Jotaro he fell backwards Hikari on top of him. As the two fell Hol Horse's bullets whizzed by overhead missing its target completely.

"WHAT?!" Mondatta and Hol Horse screamed.

Jotaro helped Hikari sit up, and she looked behind her seeing what had grabbed her ankle. "Mr. Polnareff! You scared me!" Hikari said.

"Sorry about that Hikari." Polnareff said sheepishly rubbing the back of his head. Hikari let out a breath as she smiled. "At least you're awake and okay, that's what's important." Hikari said.

Hol Horse stared mouth agape. "But...how's it possible..? My bullets missed!"

Mondatta looked just as stunned as Hol Horse when the blonde man grabbed the front of his shirt lifting him up off the ground. "WHAT?! THE?! HELL?! Are you trying to pull one over on me?! What the hell is going on around here?!" Hol Horse started to shake the poor boy back and forth. "I have no idea, yes! Like I said, m-my predictions always come true, it's fate! I can't believe it, not once since I started using my Stand, have my predictions ever been wrong!" Mondatta cried out.

"Well, clearly there's a first time for everything cause they're still alive!" Hol Horse pointed over at the group where Joseph and Avdol finally woke up joining the rest. "Not a single bullet hit its mark! It's safe to say your prediction was totally wrong! Damn you!" Before Hol Horse could say anything else a car drove by the windows down allowing passerby's to hear the radio. "Thanks for joining us for today's broadcast, be sure to tune in next time. Now for the twelve o'clock news."

"Huh?" Mondatta and Hol Horse looked confused as the car drove on. Hol Horse whipped his head around staring at the large clock tower in the distance. "What the hell?! There's no way in hell it's just now noon?" He yelled dropping Mondatta on the ground. He looked down at this watch and his face went pale. "I know what happened... m-my watch is... My watch is fast! And that means I ended up firing off the bullets before it was time! But now it is noon!" He reached down for Mondatta's book and began flipping through it. "What's that mean for us, huh?! Tell me! What the hell's gonna happen to us now that we've gone off script?!"

Mondatta looked up nervously as he saw Hol Horse's bullets turn and whiz back. "No, it can't be..." The boy looked scared at the bullets new pathway was him and Hol Horse. Hol Horse was too busy looking in Mondatta's book to even notice. "But where did we go off track? It said the bullets will go right through Jotaro's forehead at the stroke at noon!" Hol Horse said. "Hol Horse! The bullets are-!" Mondatta was practically speechless as the bullets got closer.

"Come on! All I need is what's gonna happen next!" Hol Horse soon got his answer when his bullets shot through Mondatta's book and hit him right in the face. "AAAAHHH!"

"Hey. Tell me I'm not the only one who heard that ear-piercing scream." Polnareff said.

"I'm not clear on the details, but there's something fishy going on here. But the biggest concern is this truck. I think we better get out of here before the cops start showing up. Let's move men." Joseph said.

"But before we go, I wanna know where Hol Horse ran off to?" Polnareff questioned.

"He's got a point. Where did he go anyway?" Hikari asked.

"I don't know. He disappeared for some reason." Jotaro said. As he turned around something splashed on his face. Dirty water spewed from the drainage pipe. "Hey, if you don't get away from that pipe, you're going to get soaking wet. You should try to be more careful." Avdol said.

"That sewage pipe water is filthy. Here JoJo." Hikari said handing Jotaro a handkerchief. As the group left the area several policemen arrived along with an ambulance. They loaded a man onto the stretcher as he had blood dripping down his body.

"Is he dead?"

"No, but he's critical. I couldn't even begin to tell you what transpired here today. They looked him over and it seems as though the bullet went into his forehead and out the top of his head. One centimetre lower and he would've been a goner. Oof...gotta say that is one lucky

man." Mondatta watched as Hol Horse was loaded into the ambulance and driven away.

"In the end, it seems my prediction was right. Which means this was Hol Horse's fate all along." Mondatta's book still had the bullet hole in it going right through the picture of Jotaro's forehead. "Jotaro is really something else. How lucky can one person be? Both my brother and Hol Horse were defeated by fate. At this point, we Stand users are wasting our time. Master Dio's the only one who can defeat him." Mondatta says as he looked up at the great blue sky. "You know what Zenyatta? Hol Horse, that big buffoon of a man, taught me that revenge is nothing more than massive joke. So...I'm going to forget about Jotaro. I have a new path in life, I'll use my Stand's powers to help as many people as I can. I'll use them to bring happiness to everyone. Maybe people will start to like us, and just maybe our future will be brighter." Mondatta looked at the crate he was hiding under and kicked it away with a satisfied smile.

"I'm tired of being afraid. Today's the last day I spent under a box, cowering from everyone. I learned a lot from this fight, more than I thought I could. I'm coming home now, brother! I'm coming home to Aswan to join you!" Mondatta looked happy, overjoyed with the change of heart he had developed, as he was about to walk away...that is until the crate he kicked came back down landing on a certain dog's head. "Oh my gosh, I am so sorry! I kicked it without thinking!" Mondatta said as he ran over, kneeling next to the dog. "I didn't mean to hit you, please forgive me. Hold on, this dog...he looks familiar." Fear started to wash over Mondatta's face. "I'm pretty sure I've seen him before. But where..?" The dog turned around revealing a very pissed off Iggy.

"There's no way! It can't be!" Iggy lunged forward, teeth out, casing Mondatta to scream.

"Hey, now that I think about, where'd our dumbass dog go?" Polnareff questioned.

"You talking about Iggy? I'm sure he's scrounging around for food somewhere." Joseph said.

"I've said from the beginning he wouldn't help us when we needed

him." Avdol said.

He should've known it wouldn't be so simple. If people could change that easily, life wouldn't be so hard. So as fate would have it, Mondatta joined Hol Horse in the Horse in the hospital. Only now he was meeker than ever before.

Ba-tum-tss!

Hol Horse and Mondatta are officially retired from the battle.

Chapter 49: A Fateful Reunion. Arriving at Dio's Mansion

"Haa...goodness it's so hot." Hikari sighed while waving her hand in her face. The Egyptian sun beat down heavily on Hikari as she took out a handkerchief wiping the sweat from her forehead. Though she considered it might be worse when she thought about that Sun Stand. That was horrible. Suddenly she felt something cold pressed against her cheek and she jolted from the sudden touch. She touched her cheek as her sapphire eyes trailed up the arm that held the bottle of water and Hikari smiled seeing who held it. "Thank you very much, JoJo." Hikari thanked him, taking the bottle and happily drinking it.

"Jotaro! Hikari!" The two teens turned their heads when their names were called. "Let's go!" Joseph called out. Jotaro and Hikari followed after Joseph and Avdol, but there was no Polnareff. Hikari looked around but didn't spot the eccentric Frenchman. "Where's Mr. Polnareff? Oh dear, I hope he hasn't got into too much trouble." Hikari said worriedly.

******

She was right to worry. Polnareff seemed to attract unwanted attention to himself. Right now Hikari was left confused as she saw Polnareff sitting on the ground trying to quickly scoot away from another man who appeared to be a beggar. The man started to yell at Polnareff, and he retaliated by yelling back. This continued until another man appeared on the scene then handed Polnareff some money before walking off. This caused the beggar to once again yell at Polnareff.

"Hey! Polnareff!" Avdol yelled out. "Don't just sit there with your mouth agape! Give that money to him immediately." Polnareff looked confused before looking back at the man. "Oh, I get what's going on here. He's a beggar."

"You'll have to forgive my friend's obliviousness." Avdol said, apologized to the man. "He's not accustomed to the rules of this city."

"Why didn't you tell me you were a beggar in the first place?" Polnareff said facing the man.

"It's called having a shtick, you numbnuts. People around here as a mute beggar!" The Beggar said.

"There's something known as a beggars' association here." Avdol said.

"Beggar's Association?" Hikari questioned, confused on what that is. Does something like that exist? Apparently, it does. "Beggars have their own areas where they're paid to do nothing but sit around and beg all day. While it may seem strange to us, the rules they put in place helped keep everything running smoothly." Avdol explained.

"Get out..." Polnareff said looking bewildered.

"Yes, and that exchange from earlier has hurt my pride! I wonder if I make more money by disguising myself as a foreign beggar. The hobos, they are a-changing." The Beggar then stood up and faced the group. "Oh, by the way, I thought I recognise you from somewhere. If I'm not mistaken, you're Avdol the Fortune-teller. Way I hear it, you got spooked and fled to Japan. Apparently, someone was looking to kill you."

"I'd rather discuss us needing a favour from the one who knows everything there is to know about this area. You'll be well compensated." Avdol reached into his jacket and pulled out the photo. Avdol handed the man the photo and said, "It's imperative that we find the building as quickly as possible, we're running out of time."

The Beggar examined the photos for a few minutes, then with a flourish of his hand, he grabbed his cloak and ripped it off revealing a very nice and stylish suit underneath it. The Beggar put on a fedora hat completing the outfit. "I've done enough work for one day." He then walked over to a rather expensive looking car. "You gents have my word that I'll find the mansion in three hours. Just sit tight." Hikari and Polnareff looked the most confused out of the group as the man got into his car and drove off.

"That was...um...unexpected." Hikari said. "Wait...where's Iggy?"

******

The Joestar Group have been waiting around for the wealthy beggar for a good while now. But that's all they can do for the time being. Polnareff puffed out smoke before crushing his cigarette on the ground. "Come on, give it to me straight, Avdol. Do you honestly believe that guy has any chance of finding Dio's mansion?" Polnareff asked.

"I certainly hope so because there's no one left in this city who can. No one knows Cairo's complex maze of streets better than him. Try and have some faith." Avdol said.

"Faith is something I'm quickly running out of. We've been looking around this God-forsaken city for three days with no luck. I highly doubt that some beggar will find the mansion in three hours." Polnareff said.

"You're starting to sound like a broken record, Polnareff. You can at least try to keep a level head." Avdol told him.

"Listen up, we're all on edge right now. Until our friend gets back all we can do is try talking to the locals." Joseph said.

"Oh, brother... And to make matters worse, we haven't seen Iggy all day. Where the hell did that stupid mutt run off to? He better not be lost." Polnareff said, annoyed.

"For as long as I've known him, Iggy's always been somewhat of a loner. So I'm sure he's just wandering around somewhere, killing time before coming back home." Joseph said.

Polnareff groaned. "I used to think all dogs lit up and wag their tails when they saw humans. How'd we get stuck with that little cynic?"

"It'll be okay. I know how it may seem but I'm sure we'll find Dio's mansion before day's end. I know we will." Hikari says with a hopeful smile.

******

The Crusaders have been waiting for the entire day. The wealthy

beggar hadn't come back and . the sun was getting close to set. Hikari's hope had faltered a bit. Oh no..! What if something happened to him. Joseph took out his pocket watch for the time and said to his team, "Alright, the sun is about to set."

"Didn't shades say three hours? Guess that cocky beggar had a bit more trouble finding Dio's mansion than he thought. Can't say I was expecting this to happen though. Right, Avdol?" Polnareff asked the Egyptian man.

"I have a bad feeling. Maybe it's better if he doesn't find that accursed mansion." Avdol said, confusing his friends. "You see... Maybe he hasn't come back...because he *did* find it." Hikari's heart sank to her stomach at this. She knew exactly what Avdol meant by that, and it scared her. Joseph and Jotaro also caught on what Avdol meant.

"What are you saying?" Polnareff asked.

"It didn't occur to me until a moment ago, but a Stand user is likely to be guarding Dio's lair. We may have put that beggar's life in grave danger if he hasn't already been killed." Avdol said.

"What? Are you serious?" Polnareff questioned.

"This is awful..." Hikari said. Without any options left to do, the group left and found a nearby hotel and to bed, hoping to continue the search in the morning. They checked in and gone into their respective rooms. Dressed in her pink pyjamas, Hikari sat by the window, silently staring out into the city while Jotaro took a shower. During that time, Hikari recalled everything that had happened. From the moment when things changed to boarding that plane to now. So much has changed, so much has happened, and now she had begun to realise it. Or perhaps, she'd always noticed, but choose to set it aside for now.

To think she and Jotaro were just normal kids. Just average high school students where the only things they had to worry about was the next exam and career interviews. She knew. She knew it would be dangerous. She knew there were going to be people who were going to kill them to keep them away from Dio. She had been so scared and felt that she might hold the others back. But she

continued to press on and go with them, every step of the way. Because she wanted to help them as best she could. So she can finally find her own courage and confidence. Just like him.

Hikari would be, though she couldn't even if her life depended on it, lying if she said she hadn't thought about the days before all this. Before they went on this insane, bizarre adventure. She wished that they could just go back home and go back to being normal students. The days were things seemed simpler and easy to understand. Where she and Jotaro spent their days as the best of friends.

Hikari gave a small smile. Best friends... Haha. Well, look at them now. This journey wasn't all that bad.

Though this journey had been ANYTHING but easy, there were some good things that came out of it. For her and her friends. For starters, she had gotten to see the world and experience so many things. Met wonderful people. Gained amazing friends. Achieved her goal to gain confidence and courage. And above all, she had fallen in love with her best friend. She had already loved to that kind, courageous boy who saved from those bullies. But now she deeply loved the man who stuck by her and made her feel safe and protected. And he loved her too.

Her thoughts were interrupted when a familiar voice said, "You got that look on your face. What's on your mind?" Hikari giggled as she turned to see her beloved. "Nothing too much, I was just-AAAHH! I'm so sorry!" The girl let out a cry and quickly looked away. Her face was crimson red. Jotaro stood at the bathroom's doorway with just his pants on and a towel hung over his shoulders.

"What are you apologising for?" Jotaro asked as he stepped into the room, slightly amused by the golden-haired girl's reaction. Hikari made sure to keep her eyes shut tight and made sure not to look at him until he gave the word. "I-i-it's because...well...I didn't mean t-to look. I thought you were f-fully dressed when you were done. I'm sorry, I shouldn't have assumed." She stammers.

Jotaro couldn't help but chuckle at her. "I'm not angry. And it's not like I'm completely naked, you're fine. It's not a big deal." He says as he walks over to her. She mumbles another apology and something

about letting her know when he's "decent". Jotaro shakes his head in amusement. His little angel. The personification of innocence. He wraps his arms around the very embarrassed girl and kisses the top of her head.

"Hikari, you do know that we're together, right? You don't need to look so mortified. I'm not angry. You can look anytime you want." He tells her, causing the golden-haired girl to blush even redder. Jotaro didn't think that it was possible for a human's face to turn that red. Hikari had to be defying biology or something at the moment. Hikari cracked open an eye and let out a sigh. He had a point. They *were* a couple...so it's natural to see him like this wasn't it? She slowly opened her eyes and turned her head to look at his smiling face. Hikari was calming down a bit until she made the mistake of looking down.

What the-?! Was his body chiselled out of marble or something? How is she just now noticing how muscular and strongly-built he actually was? Hikari blushed again and turned her gaze away. Going back to the previous subject, Jotaro asked her, "What's going on through your mind?"

"I... I was just thinking about how much things have changed. Both our lives and us as a person. I don't think any of us could've expected this." Hikari said with a small smile.

"Yeah...I get it. It's been a pain in the ass, but it's almost over. This will end soon, don't worry about it." Jotaro tells her as he brushed away her bangs. He blinked when he saw Hikari's expression become crestfallen. "What is it?" He asked.

Hikari held him tightly as she said, "Having this mission be over isn't what I'm worried about. It's... I can't stop thinking if any of us will make it out of this together. I'm terrified...that our friends...or even you...won't be able to survive against Dio."

"Hikari..." Jotaro.

"I know there's no way to know for sure...and I know we have to be extremely careful and form a plan, take precaution and make whatever sacrifices we have to...but..." Hikari said. Tears threaten to

fall from her eyes. She had ready to fight alongside them and stop Dio once and for all. She was ready to help to save Holly's life and possibly the whole world in the process. But now that they were so close to finding him...and having come this far to get to him. Hikari has no way in knowing what the end result is going to be for them.

"We don't know anything about Dio's Stand or what it can do... Fighting his assassins were one thing but he's on a whole other level. We don't know just how strong he really is. I'm scared. I had wished...that we could go back and forget all this ever happened. I'm sorry if that sounds selfish of me." She said.

Jotaro pulled away to kiss her on the lips. Hikari was about to return it but Jotaro pulled away to tell her, "I love you, Hikari... You can never be selfish, you were just being honest. That's all...it's okay. I promise you we're all going to make it out of this alive together. I may be a bastard but I'm never going to leave you all alone. I'll always protect you." Once Jotaro said that to Hikari, she began to cry, but in a good way. Neither of them had any way of knowing what will happen once they find Dio. But the least they can do is have faith and trust in themselves and their friends that they WILL see this through to the end as one. "JoJo...thank you. You're right." Hikari then kisses Jotaro back. "I love you too, Jotaro. I'm yours, and I always will be"

Whatever will happen. Whatever WILL happen, Hikari made it a point to see it through. Once morning comes, she had to be brave and gather all the strength and knowledge she had gained over the course of this journey. She won't be afraid anymore. Moments later, the lights were turned off and our beloved couple settled into bed with Jotaro holds Hikari in his arms while she laid her head on his chest. Falling asleep to the sound of his heartbeat.

Jotaro stayed for a bit longer, watching over his little angel sleep peacefully. She wasn't wrong. She was right to worry about Dio and his Stand. He's by far going to be the strongest, and most dangerous opponent they've ever faced. But come hell or high water if Dio or any other jackass tries to take her away from him, they would be dead before they even had a chance to blink. Jotaro then placed a kiss on her forehead before allowing himself to surrender to sleep.

The next morning, the group was now back on the streets of Cairo searching for Dio's mansion, when Polnareff brought up the canine member that was still missing from their group. "Damn that mangy mutt! Where the hell did he run off to? He's got to stop pulling stunts like this." Polnareff complained.

"I'm starting to get worried, he's been gone for a while." Joseph said.

"That lousy flea-bag" Polnareff said. Jotaro tuned most of the conversation out when he sensed something. He quickly turned around looking down an empty street. Everyone else stopped too looking back at Jotaro. Seeing his grandson not move Joseph spoke up. "Jotaro, what's a matter?" Jotaro continued to stare down the empty street, unmoving.

"There must be someone following us again." Avdol said.

"Another enemy?" Hikari asked.

"Not quite. But I thought I heard a voice. Like someone's calling out to us." Jotaro stated.

"A voice?" Joseph pondered. Everyone continued to stare down the street when a small scuffling noise directed their attention to an alleyway. The sound of soft footsteps hobbling down the alleyway echoed. A grunt sounded and out from around the corner came Iggy, missing one of his legs. The Boston Terrier groaned as he walked with his missing leg but managed to keep himself steady as he made his way to the group.

"It's Iggy!" Avdol shouted.

"Oh my goodness! The poor thing!!" Hikari cried out. "Iggy!" Much to everyone's surprise Polnareff was the first one to run over to the battered dog. "What on earth happened?" Avdol questioned.

"Look at that he's got injuries all over his body!" Joseph said.

"Hey! Iggy's missing his front leg too!" Polnareff pointed out. Hikari quickly went to her knees and scooped the injured dog in her arms, cradling him gently. "Oh, you poor, sweet thing. You must be in so pain, don't worry I got you." Hikari told him as Soundless Voice

appeared and began to heal Iggy of his injuries and numbing the pain of his missing leg.

"You think he got run over by a car?" Joseph questioned.

"He is not the kind of dog that gets into car accidents." Avdol sated. He looked down at the dog and asked, "You were attacked by the enemy, weren't you?" Joseph knelt down beside Hikari and examined him of his injuries before they faded away. "What's this? It looks as though someone treated his wounds. I have to say they did a great job."

"But it wasn't Iggy that I heard." Jotaro said as he looked up. "Whoever was calling out to us...was definitely human." Pairs of footsteps echoed before a voice spoke up. "Iggy did have a run-in with the enemy. When we found him, he was half-dead in the arms of a boy." Everyone, minus Jotaro, started to gape at the two figures standing before them. "So the Speedwagon Foundation doctor saw to his wounds." The woman of the two told them. "They did the same... for my eyes." The sun reflected off the male figure's black sunglasses.

"It's you guys! You're finally back!" Polnareff shouted. The figures stepped forward, hand in hand, smirking as the young man took off his sunglasses, revealing the one and only Noriaki Kakyoin with Nemuru Fujioka at his side. "It's Kakyoin! Nemuru!!" The cherry red-haired teen smiled. His eyes had two small scars raking over them, but other than that he looked as good as new. Polnareff ran forward laughing wrapping his friends in a hug. "Good to see you guys, Kakyoin! Nemuru! How's it going?!"

"Nemuru! Kakyoin! I'm so happy you're back!" Hikari said as she ran in for a hug too. Nemuru returned the hug in full, happy to see her best friend again. "Kakyoin, tell me how are your eyes treating you?" Avdol asked.

Kakyoin nodded. "I'm glad your all safe."

"We've missed you, pal!" Joseph said with a laugh. "So, they were able to treat you?"

"Yeah, Nemuru and I are ready for action. While it's true that I'll have

a few scars, my eyesight is back to normal." Kakyoin tells them with a smile as he and Nemuru smiled at each other. The dark-purple haired girl had a faint blush on her face, but luckily nobody noticed. "We're all really glad to hear that." Joseph said. Kakyoin smiled and grasped hands with Jotaro. Jotaro smiled back nodding his head. After the team had their warming reunion was finished, Iggy let out a loud bark and jumped out of Hikari's arms.

"Where do you think you're going, Iggy?" Joseph questioned. Kakyoin put his sunglasses back on and said, "He may have been quite indifferent towards humans and Stands in the past, but now it looks like he's trying to lead us somewhere."

"We're not aware of all the details surrounding his encounter with the enemy Stand, but, judging from his resolve, this is about revenge." Nemuru said.

"Maybe, but that still doesn't explain where he's taking us." Joseph said as he started to follow the dog and everyone followed too. Jotaro pulled Hikari close to him, the girl wrapping her arms around one of Jotaro's.

****

The group walked down the street following Iggy. A tow truck drove by pulling a crushed car which caught Joseph's attention. "I recognise that car! It's the same fancy ride the beggar was driving. C-could this wreckage mean that he-?!" Joseph said.

"But how? What's strong enough to tear a hole through a car like a piece of wet newspaper?" Polnareff observed. Iggy let out a low growl as he stared at the car.

"It would as though I was right to be concerned about him. He should have never been involved." Avdol said.

"It is possible this is the handiwork of the Stand user Iggy fought earlier?" Joseph questioned.

"All signs seem to point to that being the case." Avdol said. Iggy continued on and everyone followed. As they walked the group could

feel a dark presence filled the air. It was as if the air turned stale and darkness loomed over them. The further they walked the heavier the presence got as if some unknown power was trying to force them back. Joseph looked shaken as he registered the power. "I know where he's going. This feeling... it's all too familiar to me." Joseph said. "This aura is pure, unmitigated evil!"

Iggy stopped before a large mansion, the one mansion that the group had been searching for. Dio's Mansion. Everyone glared at the building as an incredible yet dark power radiated from it.

"It's... the mansion from the picture!" Avdol shouted.

"We've arrived." Jotaro said.

"Iggy, you were able to find it by yourself?" Polnareff questioned.

Everyone had determined looks on their faces. Their journey was long and treacherous, but they finally reached their goal. What played before Jotaro and the others was sinister than anything they've previously faced. They would soon look upon the source of their predicament, and the very embodiment of evil. The path that had lead them here was long and arduous. Foreign lands shrouded in mystery and treacherous Stand-using assassins met them at every step. Each battle was a struggle for survival, where the wrong move would spell out certain death. They were tears. Laughter. Sadness. Rage. Love. And Joy. The journey had affected them all. Now nearly fifty days had passed since the team departed Japan on their quest to save the life of Jotaro's mother, Holly. Everything lead to this, the time had come to defeat Dio and end the hundred-year curse inflicting the Joestar family.

Joseph was determined to save his daughter Holly, and nothing and no one was going to stand in his way!

Kakyoin vowed to remain resolute. He would defeat Dio, not only to save Holly but to overcome his own weakness! He would protect Nemuru no matter the cost!

Nemuru swore to make Dio pay for the nightmarish hell her and her parents were forced to endure! She would save her mother and

finally achieve her sense of peace once again, and she knew she would not go in alone!

Avdol was steadfast in his conviction, considering it his personal duty to root out evil wherever it lurked!

Polnareff was determined to make the tyrant Dio suffer for turning him into a puppet and forcing him to betray his own principles!

Iggy's spirit was untameable! He knew his life of turmoil could be traced back to a single man and was intent on making sure the bastard faced his wrath!

Hikari's heart, though pure and gentle, was strong and brave! Courage coursing through her veins! No longer would she remain silent and let Dio to continue with his evil! She vowed to be her team's strongest, unbreakable shield.

And so!

"In other words, if we beat the shit out of Dio in there, this damn nightmare will be over once and for all." Jotaro said. Iggy let out an angry-filled growl. "That's right, and the scent of evil confirms that he's here. He's hiding inside the mansion like the coward he is!" Joseph shouts.

"It's hard to believe, but..." Avdol said.

"We finally reached the end of this hellacious journey." Polnareff said.

"Let's fight with everything we got." Hikari said.

"Well, what the hell are we just standing here for?" Nemuru question as she glares at the building.

"Alright men, you ready?!" Joseph asked. Everyone gave a valiant response, and without a second of hesitation, the group stepped forth. Ready to finish a century-old feud.

However, they now must fight, not only against Dio, but the remaining four unknown Stand users that lurked inside the building. Will our Stardust Crusaders survive? Who will be left standing once

the battle is over?

Chapter 50: D'Arby the Player, Part 1

The gate to Dio's mansion was open giving the group a full view of the courtyard. Joseph led the way as they cautiously stepped onto the enemy's territory. Iggy glanced over at the door and already got a bad feeling. This wasn't like this the first time he was here. He knew that something was up. *"The gate's open as if they're invitin' us in. This is totally different from the situation yesterday."* Iggy thought to himself.

"Now that I think about it, if I can sense Dio, then it stands to reason he has the ability to sense us too." Joseph said. That's right. Since Dio had his grandfather's body, Joseph can sense anyone with Joestar blood. "If we try to enter the mansion guns blazing, no doubt we'll be playing right into the enemy's hands. Before we do anything, we need to think of a strategy." He tells the group.

That's when Iggy began to growl in a threatening tone as he kept on staring at the door, and it grew louder and louder. Hikari took notice and keeled down to the Boston Terrier. "What's wrong Iggy?" Suddenly a door to the mansion opened by itself, catching everyone off guard. Joseph was the one who freaked out the most. "Careful, the door's opening! Everyone, on guard!" The door opened fully giving everyone a full view of an empty dark hallway. Knowing that they'd have to enter to proceed on the group approached the door keeping their guards on high alert.

Polnareff peered inside the door looking down a long dark corridor. He shivered looking inside not seeing an end to the dark hallway. "Check it out. What's with this weird corridor..? It must go on forever. This can't be real, right? It has to be some sort of trick or illusion." The Frenchman says, totally unnerved by the sight of the endless hallway. "Listen, Polnareff, no matter what don't go through the door." Joseph glared into the empty hallway. "Dio's probably got a couple more Stand users waiting in the wings to fight us." Polnareff gasped when something moved at out of the darkness of the hallway. "Hey! Something's coming this way!"

A tall figure floated down the corridor towards the group. "Wait, is

that guy floating?! Is he a Stand user or what?" Polnareff worriedly gasped. The man stopped right before the threshold of the doorway looking right at the group. His face seemed oddly familiar. The man wore a head wrap and a pair of earrings shaped into the letters T and D. He has green beehive hair that is segmented and protrudes upwards and hazel eyes. He wears a bluish vest over a black shirt with a double-layered heart symbol in the chest area, white pants, and brown shoes. He has parallel bars tattooed on his nose, chin, and forehead.

The man gave a formal bow, putting a hand on his chest. "Master Joestar. Welcome to our abode. We've been expecting you, sir. I am the resident butler of the mansion." He says. Polnareff pointed at the man and shouted, "I don't know who you are, but you're definitely not normal!"

"Polnareff, stop it!" Joseph shouted at him, but it was too late.

"I'm gonna make short work of you!" He summoned Silver Chariot. The man reacted by throwing a playing card at the Stand. The card was sliced in half by Silver Chariots sword. Jotaro caught one of the halves of it. "Another playing card?" He was reminded of the cocky, cheating gambler he took down. The floating man looked at the group and introduced himself. "Master Joestar, welcome to our abode. We've been expecting you. How rude of me. I am the resident butler of the mansion. You may call me, Telence T. D'Arby."

That name shocked the others, minus Kakyoin and Nemuru. "D'Arby, huh?" Jotaro questioned. "Yes. I am the Younger D'Arby. It might interest you to know the D'Arby whom you've defeated upon your arrival was...my older brother." D'Arby had a dark look as he focused on Jotaro.

"So I take it you're here to avenge your brother's defeat?" Avdol asked. D'Arby gave a humph and smirked. Levitating to the side of the hall. "No, not at all. Such a thing is beneath me. I would've assumed my brother would share his motto with you. 'It is the deceived, not the deceiver, who holds the blame'. I, too, live by this adage. My brother lost, so he's the wrongdoer. I harbour no ill-will toward any of you. My brother is my brother and I am me, two different individuals. You see, my brother and I were born ten years

apart and, while I did look up to him to a certain extent, he and I are of different generations. My brother tried to win via old-fashioned deception, but this method is only useful against those who are outdated or inexperienced. Master Dio realised this sad truth as well, which is why he kept me by his side as his personal butler." D'Arby finished talking and finally noticed the strained looks on everyone's faces.

"Hm? Forgive me, is something the matter? Here is my offer to you; If you wish to fight me, then I invite you to enter the manor." D'Arby tells them.

"Stay on guard, he's even more conniving than his brother." Avdol warns the group.

Jotaro pointed at D'Arby and commanded, "There's no time for games, take us to Dio right now." D'Arby's arm moved and a second hand followed behind it. "Jotaro, stay on your guard! He's up to something!" Joseph yelled. D'Arby's Stand formed behind him. His Stand, hailing from the Egyptian pantheon, is Atum. Atum resembles a humanoid robot with Telence's athletic build and is decorated with heart motifs on its body. On its face are Telence's initials, along with what appears to resemble a breathing apparatus. The apparatus has two nozzles that periodically spray out steam. It has a white body with purple/pink hearts decorations and black articulations. It was rare for an enemy to show their Stand right upfront.

"Hey, guys, he just brought out his Stand." Polnareff said as he pointed at the freakish thing.

"It's been a while since we've seen one." Joseph said.

"Indeed, his Stand is physically showing itself." Avdol said.

"I'll let you decide. Who shall be my first opponent?" D'Arby asks them.

"As if we listen to you! Jotaro, take this weirdo down!" Polnareff shouted. Without saying a word, Jotaro stepped into the mansion bringing out Star Platinum. "Let's see...I'll wager that Star Platinum's first attack will... be with his left arm." D'Arby declared. Jotaro was

taken aback by the proclamation. "Oh, and it'll be a punch. How much will you care to bet?"

"Forget this! Which arm doesn't matter, one punch will finish it! Get him! Let him have it already, Jotaro!" Polnareff yelled.

"**Ora!**" Star Platinum punched with its right fist aiming for Atum, but the enemy Stand effortlessly dodged the attack. Shocking the Crusaders. "What?! He was able to dodge it!" Joseph shouted.

"B-but how could he dodge Star Platinum?" Hikari gasped.

"His speed is insane!" Polnareff said.

"Impossible...!" Avdol said.

Atum grabbed Star Platinum's arm as if it was examining it. D'Arby gave a mocking laugh and said, "Well, that's a bit of bad luck. Regrettably, it appears as though I've lost the bet. Like my brother, I also enjoy a round of gambling but luck is never on my side." Atum then tightens its grip on Star Platinum's arm, causing both Stand and user to grunt in pain. "Allow me to take you to a wonderful world to apologise." A gigantic hole appeared on the floor and Atum pulled Star Platinum into it bringing Jotaro in the hole too.

"Damn it, it was all subterfuge!!" Avdol shouted.

"JoJo!!" Hikari cried out.

"Jotaro!" Nemuru, Joseph, and Kakyoin all used their Stand's to grab onto Jotaro to prevent him from falling into the hole. "He's falling into the abyss! We have to get him out of there!" The three Stand users strained, trying to pull Jotaro out but the force of the vortex was too strong. D'Arby's face appeared in front of the three surprising them. "Have it your way. The more the merrier and all that." D'Arby grabbed them and pulls them into the hole too.

"Mr. Joestar! Nemuru! Kakyoin! NO!" Polnareff shouted. He had to be held back by Avdol as he reached out for the three. "It's too dangerous for us to follow!" Avdol shouted.

"Avdol, can you hear me?" Joseph called out. "If you don't hear from

us in ten minutes, torched the mansion! Do you understand me?! Burn it to the ground, Avdol!"

"JoJo!!" Hikari cried, falling to her knees as she and the others watched helplessly as the void began to shrink, disappearing from existence. "Hikari!" She heard her beloved calling out to her. "Avdol! Polnareff! You two better keep her safe! Don't let ANYONE lay a hand on her, got it?!" That the last thing the heard before their connection was severed.

****

The small group found themselves standing in the middle of some darkened world before light and colour began to shine. A sun began to rise over the horizon, breaking through the dark. Jotaro, Joseph, Kakyoin and Nemuru then found themselves on a strange island in the middle of the sea, said island in the middle of which a bunch of TV sets and a game console rested upon a table. It was also a little unsettling that the sky was pink.

"Is this an illusion? Are we still above ground or are we under?" Joseph pondered. Water lapped up on the shore soaking everyone's feet. Joseph stepped back stepping on a sea urchin as some crabs scuttled by. "If this is stuff really an illusion, they've got water down. This stuff feels so real. What the hell is this guy trying to accomplish here?"

"Hahaha...." Everyone quickly looked behind them to see D'Arby standing at a table. The table had a video game system set up on it. "Old man. Kakyoin. Nemuru. See if you can figure out his ability. His Stand, it knew without a doubt that I would throw a right-handed punch. Do you know why? If we can't figure it out soon, we're gonna lose. No doubt."

D'Arby stepped forward, offering the four a drink. "Would you care to wet your whistle? They're real, and I assure you they're not poisoned. Cross my heart and hoped to die." Safe to say... No one took him up on the offer.

"Just answer this, are we inside the mansion?" Joseph asked.

"Yes, of course." D'Arby answered.

"Where in the mansion are we?" Joseph asked.

"I can't tell you that." D'Arby responded. Joseph fired off more questions not getting any straight answers from D'Arby. Although he did make it clear for them to pursue Dio they'd have to defeat him. That obnoxious, gentlemanly demeanour is beginning to wear thin the group's nerve. Joseph simply suggested that they all bomb rush him. With four against one, the odds were in their favour. But D'Arby turned the tables on them when he opened a small armoire showing his collection.

Nemuru gasped seeing various realistic yet disturbing dolls inside the cabinet. Horrible moaning echoed out of each doll. "Oh, God....!" Nemuru gasped. "Much like my brother, I'm what you might call a humble collector of sorts. My... Thinking about it, all collectors must yearn to share their treasures for that moment of praise." D'Arby smiled presenting the dolls.

"He's...out of his mind." Jotaro said.

"Why dolls? What could he possibly be doing with these toys?!" Kakyoin questioned, feeling unnerved by the sight of these horrific abominations.

"I don't think I wanna know! Remember, this guy is D'Arby's brother, so I'm guessing those aren't ordinary dolls." Joseph tells them. Just as he said that one of the dolls began to shake uncontrollably until one of her eyes twitched causing Nemuru to flinch at the sight of it and grab onto Kakyoin's arm. This was freaking her out. It got even worse as the doll's eyes started to tear up. "D-D'Arby....." The doll moaned out. "Talk to me. Please, talk. Why won't you talk to me? D'Arby...talk to me!" All of the dolls started to moan out louder. Moving around, but trapped where they sat. Many of them crying out for help. Screaming that they were lonely.

"Oh my God!"

"They're alive! How is that even possible?!" Kakyoin exclaimed.

"Bastard. You took their souls!" Jotaro said.

"Obviously, making dolls is my hobby but, of course, ordinary Doll-Makers cannot imbue their handiwork with human souls. I suppose I may be giving too much away, but that's my Stand's ability. Comparatively, My brother's collection of simple coins made of souls is rather uninspired. With my collection, you can play dress-up and have actual chats. Let me show you." D'Arby said as he picked up a doll dressed in a blue dress. The doll seemed to cry happy tears, now that she had finally gained D'Arby's attention. "This little showstopper is named, Sonia. She can wax poetic about her passionate love stories. Such exquisite skin. Anyone would be proud to own her."

He then gestured to another doll that was dressed like a doctor and said, "Dr. Elliott is a serial killer with a victim count of eight. He'll tell you all about the patients he's exterminated. I made the glasses and stethoscope myself." Then D'Arby got a wide smile on his face and looked excited as he dug into the cabinet. "Ah, I nearly forgot! I like for you to meet Tatsuhiko. This one's a game expert from Japan. This brilliant young man was a formidable opponent with an IQ of 190." D'Arby smirked as he presented the doll to the others. "Let me tell you, it wasn't easy beating this little guy and stealing his soul." As D'Arby held the doll Tatshukio cried out, clearly scared of the sick doll-collector.

"You're just as messed in the head in your brother. Actually, you're more sadistic than your brother ever was." Joseph said, narrowing his eyes. "I hate to see what your parents were like."

Kakyoin turned his head away and said, "I'm out of patience with this sociopath's puppet show. He makes me sick."

D'Arby turned around to put the dolls back and closed the cabinet as he said, "By the way, I'm fairly certain you learn this when you fought my brother, but the human soul can be a rather mysterious entity. The moment a person admits defeat, their inner spirit dies and the soul loses all vitality. At that moment," D'Arby turns to face the group as he slams the cabinet shut. "I have the power to rip the soul from the body, and that's the fundamental mechanism of our Stands!"

"I've heard enough! Show and Tell is over! We're going to beat you to

a bloody pulp and get the hell out of here!" Joseph yelled summoning Hermit Purple. Kakyoin, Jotaro, and Nemuru summoned their Stand's too, ready to attack. D'Arby didn't look scared and he smirked. "But first, listen to what I have to say! Surely the fact that you're under my control hasn't escaped your notice! Jotaro, as I recall, you were quite shocked when I knew exactly which arm you were going to attack me with, and from where I'm standing, it seems you still haven't figure it out. You were shaken by my prowess and I was able to give your soul a little lovetap. What did you think I did when I touched your soul?" Jotaro gasped and gripped his arm. He pulled up the sleeve of his jacket showing a hand gripped tightly onto his forearm.

"Jotaro! Your arm!"

"Wha-?! What the-?!"

"The hell did you do to his arm?!"

"I've done nothing but imbed Atum's hand inside Jotaro's soul." D'Arby announced. "I could crush your right arm with a thought and in doing so make Master Dio very happy. But if I did, I wouldn't be able to defend myself against Kakyoin, Nemuru and Joseph, and would most certainly perish. Now we wouldn't want that to happen, would we lady and gentlemen?" D'Arby turned away and began walking towards the table. "So here's a suggestion. Everyone, let's play a game with our souls as collateral."

"What?!" Joseph shouted at him.

"If you defeat me, I solemnly swear to release Jotaro's arm." D'Arby tells them.

"Ugh, good grief. So, according to you, I'm already under your control?" Jotaro said. "Well, I have news for you D'Arby, you're gonna regret picking a fight with me and my friends! Let's end this!"

"Yes, yes, your righteous anger is all well and good, but I'd rather hear you say the words, I'll bet my soul on this game. By the way, I have another request if you'd indulge me." D'Arby looked around the group. "Kakyoin. You shall be my first opponent."

Nemuru's eyes widen in shock. Out of anyone of them, she had expected D'Arby to choose her or at the very least Jotaro consider he DID beat his older brother. But not Kakyoin. Anyone but him. She growled and quickly stepped in front of him. "You stay away from him." Nemuru said.

"Hey, what are you talking about? Your fight is with me buddy, so don't try to pass the buck to Kakyoin." Jotaro declared.

"You and Mr. Joestar are family. But Kakyoin is decidedly not. I prefer Kakyoin not back out of our arrangement and attack me with his Stands after I've taken both of your souls due to lack of familial attachment." D'Arby said. His eyes shifted towards the young girl and smirked. "Afterwards...I'll be taking you on next."

Nemuru glared daggers at the man. No way. She's not letting Kakyoin anywhere near this creep. She has to go in Kakyoin's place. *'He talks like he's already won. But he's got everything so planned out. How many steps ahead of us is he?'* Nemuru thought.

"I'm sick of this arrogant prick. He thinks this challenge is going to be a walk in the park for him!" Joseph shouted.

Kakyoin stepped forward and said, "Very well. If that's what you want then I will be your first opponent."

"Say what?"

"Kakyoin!"

"No, Kakyoin! I'll go!"

"It's okay. I'm really not too concerned." Kakyoin reassured. "I've probably played more videogames than anyone else here." He walked over to the table picking up a game cartridge. "I officially accept your challenge and choose F-Mega as our game. And I'll wager my soul!"

"Very good!" D'Arby said, smiling.

"Kakyoin, don't!"

"There's no need for you to take this guy on first!"

"I have to do this. We still don't have a grasp on that spirit hand. It could hinder your gameplay ability." Kakyoin says, unwavering in his determination to take down older man. "D'Arby! Do I have your guarantee that you'll release Jotaro from your Stand's power if you lose the game?" Kakyoin inquired. D'Arby didn't answer but walked over to his doll cabinet. He reached into the bottom of it and what he pulled out caused the group's eyes to widen. Nemuru gasped covering her mouth seeing a doll replica of Kakyoin.

Joseph put the game cartridge in the console then checked the system with his Stand. He found no signs of it being rigged. "The T.V., console and game cartages are all good. As far as I could tell, this is just an ordinary set up." Joseph said. D'Arby pulled out his chair sitting down. "I keep trying to tell you that I'm not a cheater like my brother. If you're ready, let's begin."

Kakyoin removed his sunglasses and was about to sit down, but Nemuru halted him by grabbing his hand. She pulled him away from the table and held on to his arms. "Kakyoin, listen to me. You can't fight this creep. He's a twisted and arrogant psychopath who's more than likely going to use whatever he knows to win against you." Kakyoin gave her a small smile as he turned his gaze to glare at D'Arby.

"I understand how you're feeling, but I know what I'm getting into. I'm not gonna let his guy psyche me out. Just trust me. Trust me to do this." Kakyoin says as he places his hands on her shoulders and leaned in close. "Don't worry, I can take care of myself." Nemuru stared deeply into his lavender-eyes for a moment before letting out a sigh. She was worried about him. They had just gotten into this whole 'dating' thing but Nemuru felt so protective of him. She didn't want to lose him in any way. But...he was right. She had to trust him. "Alright. Just please be careful."

"I will." Kakyoin said, placing a soft kiss on her forehead, never minding that Joseph and Jotaro might be looking at them, which they were, and he walking away to face D'Arby. "Let's do it." He sat down at the table and picked up a game controller, pressing the start button.

"F-Mega!"

Joseph, Nemuru, and Jotaro stood behind Kakyoin as the game started up.

"Select your car."

"Go ahead and select your vehicle." D'Arby says.

"Right." Kakyoin said.

Kakyoin chose car no.28 while D'Arby chose car no.15. "So you've decided to with no.28. I suppose I'll be no.15 as my birthday is January fifth." D'Arby said, trying to make idle conversation but Kakyoin just scoffed at the man. "We can begin at your leisure." D'Arby said. He summoned his Stand that helps to hold the game controller with him.

"Enough with the courtesies. Start the game already!" Kakyoin said as he also summoned Hierophant Green. The game loaded up the track and the cars appeared at the starting line.

"Race start in... Five!"

As the game counted down, Kakyoin quickly took notice of D'Arby rapidly pressing down on the gas button.

'He's button massing the accelerator at an incredible speed! He's going for a turbo start!' Kakyoin thought.

"Three! Two!"

'Damn! I don't have time to try the same tactic, he'll take the lead! What am I going to do now?!'

"One! Start!"

D'Arby's car took off the turbo boost giving his car a high acceleration launching him quickly into first place. Kakyoin was able to get his car to catch up but as it was about to pass D'Arby swerved his car blocking Kakyoin. "What? He just cut me off." Kakyoin said. D'Arby smirked and let out a chuckle. *'As long as I'm in the lead he can't beat me and I've made it impossible for him to pass.'* D'Arby thought to himself. "It's unfortunate, I know but the simple truth is I never make

a mistake during a race! Victory will be mine, Kakyoin!" D'Arby may believe that if he just kept blocking Kakyoin, he'd win no problem. But Kakyoin wasn't giving up that easy.

Using Hierophant Green Kakyoin rapidly pressed the control pad int a circular motion. The fast-paced motion caused his car to spin around rapidly like a top. "What the?!" Kakyoin's car hit D'Arby's, knocking no.15 off to the side and into the wall. "Kakyoin, you've played this game before, haven't you?" D'Arby asked.

Kakyoin smirked. "I'd rather not reveal that."

"Yes!" Joseph cheered, throwing his fist into the air. "This is your chance, Kakyoin! Get your machine back on the course and start kicking this bastard's ass!" As the players began to re-enter the course, D'Arby considered the possibility that this may prove to be a challenge for him. *'What technique! One doesn't simply get those skills by playing videogames! Damn it all! I've never could've imaged that someone, as measured as Kakyoin, would make such a bold move!'* D'Arby thought. The cars started back up and they both used the turbo boost this time, making them tied.

"Yeah, that's the way to do it! Neck in neck!" Joseph boasted.

"No, look carefully Old man, Kakyoin's at the edge." Jotaro said. "When it comes to those turns, he's in a major disadvantage." Nemuru looked at Jotaro with shock before turning her attention towards the screen. *'He's right. Because of that move, Kakyoin ended up on the outside. If they hit a curve side by side... Come on Kakyoin, you can do this.'* Nemuru thought.

"355 km/h. Now it's 358. And now 360. Three seconds until the first turn, but there's no way I can make it going this fast! I'm entering a turn at full speed! Two! One!" As the cars took the corner D'Arby almost pushed Kakyoin off the track but fortunately, he was able to keep his car steady at its high speed and they both made the curve at the same time.

"You seeing this?! Those two are hitting the turn in the exact same way! It's too close to call!" Joseph shouted.

"You've intrigued me, Kakyoin! With your soul on the line, you've conquered your fear and become the picture of unwavering resolve! I dare say you'll make a worthy addition to my collection. All that's left for me to win." D'Arby says with a smirk. Nemuru shivered as she thought about those creepy dolls. The boys were right...this D'Arby was most likely the worst of the two. Nemuru placed a hand on Kakyoin's shoulder to show that he's got her full support.

Kakyoin thought to himself, *'So, I've conquered my fears, have I? Hahahaha, why thank you. It's been a long road... Six months ago, I had the unfortunate experience of meeting your master, Dio. I was terrified when he implanted one of his flesh buds in my brain.'* Back then, it was supposed to be a simple family trip to Egypt. His parents trying to bring out a real smile to their son's face. He knew his parents wanted him to be happy and he did appreciate their efforts. It was just supposed to be a normal vacation. Until that unholy demon came into his life. He didn't see it coming.

His whole body was shaking uncontrollably as he stared at the Vampiric menace before him. His dear parents were left unconscious on the ground as thorns and roses grew all around them. That day was the most terrifying, reassuring and humiliating moment of Kakyoin's life. His memory of that day are as clear as ever. He remembers the horror I felt in my soul as I faced that monster.

His legs wouldn't move. Every hair on his body stood on end. It's like he was frozen! That's when he realised it, he was helpless. Completely at his mercy. The mere sight of Dio was enough to turn Kakyoin's own body against itself! His stomach was in knots! He was so close to vomiting, he could taste bile at the back of his throat! Dio gazed down at him, and, as if tenderly calming a frightened child, he said,

"Easy, Kakyoin." The highschool students jolted where he stood as he suddenly heard Dio's voice right behind him. Dio leaned close and placed a hand on his shoulder. Whispering close into his ear. "There is nothing for you to be afraid of. Let's be friends...shall we?"

He still curses himself. He heard his words and... *Kakyoin, unexpectedly, even to himself, gave a smile and let out a laugh.* And he felt all of his anxiety melt away. He was completely and utterly

relieved. He thought, he still has a chance to live. Kakyoin stood there. With a wide smile on his face as let Dio imbed that flesh bud through his skull.

'It was humiliating, I'll never forgive him for what he did! And I'll never forgive myself for submitting to that batard's will! My weakness will forever be my greatest failure. Jotaro and Hikari saved me from that hell, which is why I've come on this journey! I will never again allow myself to be such a coward and that, D'Arby, is I'm able to fight you even with my very soul on the line.' Determined to erase the dishonour of having been brainwashed, Kakyoin was steadfast to win this race.

Chapter 51: D'Arby the Player, Part 2

The cars stayed neck and neck, even at the second curve Kakyoin was able to keep them side by side, and again at the third curve. Joseph kept cheering in the background and Nemuru was honestly pondering how he was related to Jotaro. The older man was so loud and rowdy. With Jotaro, he was stoic and quiet, giving this bad boy aloof aura, he never acted like Joseph at all. Nemuru briefly thought about Hikari's weird taste in men.

"All right! It's the fifth corner! They're back in sync! Look, they're turning in the same speed!" Joseph cheered.

"Damn you, Kakyoin. Damn you!" D'Arby cursed.

"The sixth corner is coming up fast!" Joseph said.

'If I'm not mistaken, the speed tunnel comes right after turn six. If you enter that tunnel you're granted a boost that can double your max speed to 850 km/h. I have to make sure I get to that tunnel!' D'Arby thought.

'But the thing is, the tunnel's only wide enough for one car.' Kakyoin thought, thinking the same thing.

"This isn't good! If they try to enter the tunnel side by side, one of them is gonna crash! It's the sixth turn and they're still neck in neck!" Joseph shouted. D'Arby and Kakyoin's cars rammed into each other, trying to push the other out the way to reach the tunnel first. "There it is! I see the tunnel! Kakyoin, push him out of the way!" Joseph said.

"Haven't you realized it yet, Kakyoin. You don't have the power to push me aside? If you don't believe me, why not glance at your handy-dandy power meter." At D'Arby's words, everyone looked at the screen. Kakyoin's power was a good chunk less than the gaming master. "Kakyoin, you have less power than he does!" Joseph said.

"But how?!" Nemuru asked.

"You've used up your power when you spun around and blocked me back at the beginning of the race. That wasn't the best move on your part. I bet you're regretting that decision now!" D'Arby proclaimed as he gave a giddy smiled as he pressed the excel button and pushed Kakyoin out the way.

"So close. Two seconds till the tunnel." D'Arby says.

"You're gonna crash! You can let this fool have the lead, get behind him to avoid crashing right now!" Joseph said.

"I can't do that! If he makes it to the tunnel first, my chances of winning go to absolute zero." Kakyoin said.

'There's only one way Kakyoin can get into that tunnel. It's risky, but it's the only option he has.' Nemuru thought.

"One second left till victory." D'Arby says. Thinking fast, Kakyoin quickly pressed the control pad and, using the shove from D'Arby's car, he was able to tilt his car upwards and it was able to enter the tunnel at the same time as D'Arby's car driving on the ceiling of the tunnel. "How absurd! You're riding the tunnel walls?!" D'Arby shouted.

'He did it!' Nemuru thought with a smile.

"Yes, you've got this in the bag, Kakyoin! Just hang on a little bit further and victory will be ours! Now push him aside!" Jotaro cheered, pumping his arms. "Quiet, I'm concentrating!" D'Arby yelled. Joseph blinked then laughed, looking at D'Arby. But the laughter stopped when they noticed that D'Arby was slamming against Kakyoin's car. "Watch out, he's slamming you!" Joseph shouts. Kakyoin gritted his teeth as he tried to stay on course.

'It makes no difference to me if I lose some power, my only concern is getting around that turn faster than Kakyoin! Even if it's by a hundredth of a second! Just one-one thousandth of a millimetre ahead!' D'Arby thought in anger. Very soon, the cars enter the shortcut's most dangerous area. When D'Arby and Kakyoin kept driving through the tunnel, they entered the part of the tunnel where the radar went off so they couldn't see the cars in the darkness of the tunnel.

"Hey, what's going on here?! Can't see the cars!" Joseph shouted.

"From here on out, we have to get through the tunnel in almost absolute darkness." Kakyoin told him.

"What?!"

"The problem is my radar will be completely useless. At worse, they are eight turns, a land mine, and a cannon attack waiting to put us through our paces up ahead. This area will remain dark until we make it out, one mistake and I'll slam into the wall. But fortunately for us, I already know exactly where each turn is. D'Arby knows too." Kakyoin said. The suspense rises in the air as the three watched the players somehow manoeuvre within the shroud of darkness.

It irked Joseph the most as he had no idea who was in the lead or where they're at. He quickly got his answer when Kakyoin and D'Arby suddenly began to count down to something. They shouted, "Cannon attack!" and moved their cars out of the way once the cannon launched its blast. For a brief moment, the blast lit up the tunnel and the gang saw that Kakyoin was running slightly behind. Once they made through the cannon's attack, they were nearing fast towards the exit. The cars shot out of the tunnel flying into the air, but Kakyoin was a tad behind D'Arby.

"Damn it, D'Arby was able to take the lead! He's ahead by a full car length!" Joseph shouted.

"Looks like I win!" D'Arby smirked while Kakyoin glared at him.

"No! You have less power left than me, D'Arby!" Kakyoin said, not ready to give up just yet! D'Arby looked at the screen and Kakyoin was right. "The fact of the matter is, I still have more speed than you D'Arby! You're in for it now!" Determined to win, Kakyoin pressed the control pad going for his spin move again. The car spun and hit D'Arby's knocking the other car off the course before it touches back down.

"I can't believe what I'm seeing! Kakyoin had enough power to spin his car around and knock D'Arby's car clear out the racetrack! He used his speed to his advantage! He's out of there!" Joseph said.

Kakyoin's car landed safely on the track as D'Arby's flew off. "You did it!" Joseph cheered.

"The weaker car loses in a collision. Giving up power to ram me will prove to be a costly mistake. Instead of gloating, you should've paid more attention to my plan to stay behind and knock you off course with a spin attack." Kakyoin told him. Kakyoin has accomplished his plan. However, instead of looking sombre, or even angry at his loss, D'Arby smirked and said, "So you say. But the same could also be said of you. Losing power was not an accident. You're so self-righteous, in your hubris you didn't realise I planned for you to knock my car off course! Everything rests on this! Look closely, you see where my car is headed?!"

Everyone turned back to the screen and were shocked to see D'Arby's car landed much further ahead of the course. "Impossible!" Kakyoin said.

"Yes. Ordinarily, even in one's top speed, a move like the one I just did usually would result in the crash. You wouldn't make it by jumping over the curves, but it's another story completely if you're catapulted over them! All I needed was your help!" D'Arby said.

"No...."

"From the moment we left the tunnel, my plan was to get you to hit me was sacrificing my power. That said, I think it's time we continued our race. Don't you?" D'Arby asked with a smirked.

Kakyoin had a stunned look on his face and Jotaro knew exactly what that meant. "Don't let this guy get to you, Kakyoin! Stay focused!" Jotaro shouted. "NO! Don't you dare take him!!" Nemuru shouted as she held Kakyoin tightly, trying helplessly to protect him from D'Arby's power.

But... It was too late.

At this revelation, Kakyoin subconsciously recognizes defeat. Atum appeared behind Kakyoin ad pulled his soul right out of his body. Kakyoin's body fell limp in Nemuru's arms as his soul was pulled into the doll. "Kakyoin!!" "No!!"

"There, now his soul belongs to me. The poor fool admitted defeat. He finally realised that it was pointless to continue racing. Still, I must say, you Kakyoin are the first opponent to ever make me perspire like this. Given its source material, this doll will make a most exquisite addition to my growing collection. He was the very first opponent to muster up the courage to conquer his fears and resist cracking under such colossal pressure." D'Arby said, smiling. Holding the doll close to him. "I will treasure his good company, always."

Joseph and Jotaro glared at D'Arby while Nemuru's body shook with unyielding rage. Before Nemuru set Kakyoin down and bared her teeth at the gaming master. She let out a feral growl as she transformed her Stand into a snake and wrapped it rightly around D'Arby. Preparing to snap his bones in half. "You little shit! You have five seconds to let him go before I snap your spine in half!" Nemuru shouted at him.

"Nemuru!"

"Damn it, call back your Stand!"

Jotaro and Joseph grabbed hold of the dark-purple girl, preventing her from doing any damage to D'Arby. The hazel-eyed man simply gave a gave them a stern stare and wasn't fazed by Nemuru's threat. "Careful. It would be in the best interest of all involved for you to keep your emotions in check. Harming me is out of the question." He said. "You see, dying is something I simply can't do if you want your friend back. Slipping on a banana peel and hitting my head. Choking on gum, or even suffering a heart attack from the shock of popping a bag of popcorn. If any of those things sent me to heaven, Kakyoin's soul would go to."

Nemuru took in a sharp breath and stared with concerned-filled eyes at the Kakyoin doll. As much as she wanted to kill him, she can't risk putting Kakyoin in danger. Nemuru clenched her fist before going limp in Jotaro's arms as she called back her Stand, releasing D'Arby from her grip. D'Arby smirked at them and walked over, sitting Kakyoin's doll on a pullout table from the doll cabinet. Jotaro looked down at Nemuru. Despite hanging her head, he could tell that she was both enrage and saddened over Kakyoin. He could tell that she

genuinely cares about him and, understanding how she feels, Jotaro let her go and walked over to the game table, sitting down on a chair.

"What the-?! Hey, Jotaro, wait!" Joseph said as he sat Kakyoin's body in another chair.

"The hell are you doing?" Nemuru asked.

"What's this?" D'Arby said, surprised.

"Hey, Jotaro! Why the hell are you sitting down? We should be kicking Geppetto's ass! I'll play him next!" Joseph said.

"Old man, have you ever actually played any of these games? If not, the odds wouldn't be in your favour." Jotaro tells him. Joseph opened his mouth to retort but quickly shut up and backed away, proving his grandson's point. Joseph had never played a single video game before so if he were to play against D'Arby he was sure to lose. "Stay out of it, Old man. This isn't your average game of Gin rummy after all." Jotaro told him. Nemuru walked over to Jotaro and simply said, "Kick his ass, Jotaro. And make him squirm." Jotaro gave her a solid nod and reached over to pick up a baseball game. "We're playing baseball. That's the game I choose, to settle this once and for all." He told D'Arby. "As collateral, I'll bet my soul."

"Alright, then I will like to bet Kakyoin's soul." D'Arby says. Jotaro felt something strange and pulled up his sleeve to look at his arm to find the spirit's hand gone. "My Stand, Atum, has released your arm. You may thank me at your leisure, now that Kakyoin's soul is in my collection, there's no longer reason for me to keep your arm in my Stand's clutches. And sufficient to say, I'd be in a bit of a disadvantage if I faced you with my Stand one-handed. I'm well aware of your Star Platinum's incredible speed and precision." D'Arby said, smirking as Jotaro tossed him the game.

"Hahaha, really. Out of all the games you could've chosen to play... Hahahaha, it's unfortunate for you that we're playing my speciality." D'arby says.

"D'Arby! Just you wait, the moment Jotaro wipes the floor with you, I'll throttle the life out of your pompous ass." Joseph declared.

"Hey, get in line Mr. Joestar! If anyone's going to choke him it's gonna be me." Nemuru said.

Once their threats have been made, D'Arby put the game cartridge in and the game started up.

"Oh! That's Baseball!"

Joseph summoned his Hermit Purple and used to once again to check over the game and the console for any sign of tampering. But as before, there was nothing to suggest it. "Doesn't look like he's tampered with this game either. You're good to go." Joseph tells them.

"Before we begin, you'll need to pick your team." D'Arby said.

Jotaro looked at the options and chose the team on the top. "Jaguars."

"Yes, I see. You decided to go with a team that's a strong offence, eh? And two with a batting average over 400. If that's how you're going to play it, I'll choose the Red Dragons." D'Arby says as he chose his team. "Offence or defence. Go on take your pick."

"Offence."

D'Arby smirked holding up a stylus pencil. "In that case, the Jaguars will bat first. Next, you can begin designing your own payers by drawing their faces on the screen. This handsome devil is Star Platinum." With amazing skill, D'Arby drew Star Platinum and Atum as the players for the teams. After both players choose their teams, the game begins.

"Now that we've gotten the preparations out of the way, play ball?"

"Jaguars vs. Red Dragons! Play Ball!"

D'Arby's #15 stepped up to pitch, while Jotaro's #7 stepped up to bat.

"I've chosen #15 as my pitcher. January 5 is my birthday you know." D'Arby said. Attempting to make small talk, but as expected, Jotaro

ignored him. "Now, here we go." D'Arby says.

"The pitcher is winding up. The first pitch."

#15 pulled its arm back and before the ball left its hand #7 swung his bat way too soon.

"What!"

"Strike!"

D'Arby, Nemuru and Joseph looked stunned. "Uh, hey, I don't get it. What's wrong? That was a pretty amateur move back there. It's great that you swung the bat and all but it was...before he even threw the ball!" Joseph asked puzzled. "You swung the bat before the ball even left the pitcher's hand!" Jotaro ignored his grandfather and kept pressing the swing button on the game controller. "Jotaro, what are you even doing?" Nemuru asked. "Hey! What's this all about? There's no need for you to practice your swing is there? Hang on...Jotaro is this...the very first time you've ever played this? In fact, have you ever played a video game in your life?" Joseph said.

Jotaro stayed silent, keeping his full attention on the screen in front of him. "You answer me Jotaro!" Joseph shouted. "Relax. I already know how to play baseball. I'll figure it out the game controls as I go." Jotaro stated. This caught D'Arby's attention. "W-What are you saying?!" Joseph yelled.

"In case you haven't noticed your time is totally off!" Nemuru shouted at him. "Your swings are pathetic! Quit bullshitting, this is your first time playing isn't it?!" D'Arby watched the interaction in studying the situation. #15 setup for its second pitch. This time Jotaro swung after the ball was caught in the catcher's mitt.

"Strike Two!"

"And now you're actually swinging the bat after the catcher has caught the ball! You don't know what you're doing!! Damn it, Jotaro, I was right!! You don't know a video game from a hole in the ground!" Joseph shouted.

"You're starting to piss me off...!" Nemuru said through grit teeth.

"Strike Three! Batter out!"

Nemuru let out a growl and grabbed the front of Jotaro's jacket. "Are you trying to pick a fight with me, you asshole?! Get serious, damn it!!" She yelled. Joseph, just as furious as she was, shouted, "Jotaro, it's time to get serious! Stop trying to act cool and use your blasted head! You bet your soul on this game so if you think you can back out due to lack of experience, think again!"

Jotaro had a small smirk come to his lips and said, "Good grief. This is the worst pep talk I've ever heard. You should be more encouraging. Try something like, 'It's only the first inning. You can still make a comeback'."

"Say what?!"

"What the hell's going through that head of yours? You can't possibly rely solely on Star Platinum's reflexes to win this game, can you?! Think about it, you don't know the first thing about video games, how are you supposed to beat him?!" Joseph shouted at him. Jotaro doesn't respond and lowers his head, his hat hiding his eyes. Joseph took Jotaro in his grip and began to shake him. "What's your plan Jotaro?! Answer me, damn it! Do you have a way to beat this weirdo or not?!"

D'Arby watched, resting his elbow on the table putting his chin on his fist in a relaxed position. "Jotaro. Listen, if your strategy is to trick by pretending to be an amateur, let me inform you and it isn't going to work. I'd never foolish enough to let my guard down. Even if you were a helpless child, it wouldn't happen. A soul is at stake." He tells the emerald-eyed delinquent.

'He's so smug, but his policy of always keeping your guard up is a good one.' Nemuru shifted her gaze to Jotaro. *'You better not screw this up Jotaro or I swear to God...'*

"Old man. Nemuru." Jotaro called out the two's name, making them look at him. "Since you wanted to know, I don't have a plan." He then pointed over at D'Arby. "However, if I did have one, the only thing it would involve would be knocking the nose straight off the face of this condescending, over-inflated, douchebag of a prick taking up space

behind me. All I care about is getting Kakyoin's soul back. I'll do whatever it takes."

D'Arby didn't seem fazed by Jotaro's words as he said, "You talk a big game, but it's still the top of the first inning and you have one out. The match is far from over and since you haven't played before you should now that if you fall more than eleven points behind, you lose." Jotaro just looked at D'Arby and held up his controller. He pressed one of the buttons and his next batter stepped up.

"Second batter, #3."

D'Arby managed to strike #3 out without any trouble. "Damn, he's getting even worse! That time he swung the bat over 40 centimetres above the ball, how's he so bad?!" Joseph looked extremely nervous as Jotaro's next batter stepped up and in less than a minute Jotaro already had two strikes against him.

'It's all over... Jotaro's no match for someone like D'Arby. This massacre is like being forced to watch a group of high school baseball champs go head-to-head with kids from the knitting club! It's pathetic!' Joseph thought to himself.

"Strike one! Strike two!"

'This is pissing me off so much! What the hell Jotaro?! Are you even trying at this point?!' Nemuru thought.

D'Arby sat in his seat with a smirk, but it faded when he glanced over that the delinquent. He thought Jotaro was just pretending to be an amateur but it seems that to be the case. He really is a beginner, this is too easy. Like a judo pro can gauge his opponent's skills by simply looking at the way he wears his gi, D'Arby can read him like a book. And chapter 1 is called, 'Jotaro, the video game novice'. Nevertheless, D'Arby refuses to let his guard down. He's fully aware of the weakness of every batter in this game. He pushes the arrow keys of his controller and had it aimed.

'Next will be a low pitch to the outside. I'll throw my best pitch, the foreseen fastball and strike him out!' D'Arby had seemed confident as he prepares for his next pitch. "It's the first inning. Two outs, two strikes,

and no fouls. Here comes my next pitch." He says.

"Go right ahead." Jotaro confidently said. "I've pretty much gotten the hang of batting with the controller." As D'Arby pressed the pitch button a stunned look came on his face. The many unsettling thoughts flew into D'Arby's head right now were unexplainable. *'Wait, what did he just say? I must 've heard him wrong. What does he mean, 'got the hang of it'? Surely, he could've have... What is he talking about? What does he mean?'* D'Arby thought.

Hahahaha... Poor, foolish D'Arby. If only he had known. If there was one thing Jotaro was good at it was messing with someone's head. He was strong physically and mentally. Jotaro's batter swung and the ball connected with the bat and, with a loud crack, the ball was sent soaring.

"What?!" D'Arby shouted while standing up.

"Jotaro!" Joseph cheered.

"Alright. I'm really starting to enjoy this game." Jotaro said.

"The hell?! It's still going!" Nemuru shout in disbelief. She was right as the ball continued to fly through the air and over the walls of the stadium. *'It doesn't just make sense. What does he mean "Got the hang of it"? "Got the hang of it"?! "GOT THE HANG OF IT"?!'* D'Arby thought.

"He-! He did it! I don't know how, but he did! Hahahaha!" Joseph said as he let out a thunderous laugh.

"Home Run!"

Jaguars 1-0 Red Dragons.

"Homerun! It's a homerun! Hahaha!" Joseph chanted while laughing. D'Arby slammed a hand on the table pointing a finger at Jotaro. "Jotaro! Damn you!" Haha, well, well, Jotaro had lit a fire under D'Arby, has he? The enemy Stand user was trembling, most likely from nerves and anger. "Jotaro! Did I really hear you correctly? Say something!! It sounded like you've pretty much gotten the hang of batting!!" Jotaro just gave D'Arby a side glance and said, "I don't feel like repeating myself."

D'Arby gritted his teeth staring at Jotaro. *'He was a beginner when we started this game and yet, he's claiming to have learned proper swinging technique in only eight pitches! Jotaro Kujo has all the speed and dexterity of Star Platinum. Now I know why Master Dio finds him to be problematic and why my brother lost!'* He picked up his controller then smirked. *'Interesting, I couldn't have asked for a more fitting opponent. But as naturally gifted as you may be, you made a critical mistake by revealing your talents so early in the game. A mistake that will cost you dearly.'*

"Let's resume the game, Jotaro." D'Arby chuckled as he pitched and Jotaro hit a second home run, again and again. "Yes, he did it! That's my boy, another homerun right out of the park!" Joseph grinned. "Talk about a comeback! Four runs in the first inning!"

"I can't believe I'm saying this but it looks like you've got this game in the bag Jotaro. Keep it up and we'll be out of here in no time!" Nemuru said with a bright smile.

"Hey, D'Arby," Joseph called out as he walked over to D'Arby getting close to the younger man's face. "You'll just ignore me, but I'll say it anyway because I'm a nice guy. I'm giving you an out, all you have to do is to return Kakyoin's soul and take us to Dio of your own volition if you corporate, no harm will befall you."

D'Arby doesn't say anything or even look at Joseph, instead, he set down his game controller. "For all his faults, my brother was a master gambler, he made conning into an art form. You'd think his younger brother would be perfect to practice on, but you'd be wrong. He never asked me to play one game of poker. No, I was never asked to play any games of the gambling persuasion. Any guesses why?"

When nobody spoke to answer, D'Arby continued. "When I was fifteen, I caught my brother putting his oh-so predictable moves on my girlfriend. He was ten years older, but I beat him to a bloody pulp."

'What a loving brother relationship.' Nemuru sarcastically thought, trying very hard not to roll her eyes.

"I broke his ribs and proceeded to kick him until he spat blood. The last thing my brother said to me was how sorry he was. Any idea

why?" D'Arby smirked as he spoke.

"Would you please cut to the chase already?" Joseph questioned, getting a bit annoyed.

"Even as kids, my brother had the good sense to realise that he'd never have what it took to beat me. The reason for that is about to become abundantly clear." D'Arby said, pointed at the trio. "At this moment, you have a false sense of confidence due to the home run you hit. But deep down, you feel a sense of unease not unlike what my brother felt. My prowess is beginning to worry you, isn't it? Right now, you're coming to a daunting conclusion about the game's outcome, aren't you Jotaro?"

Joseph stepped forward, shouting, "What the hell are you talking about?"

"Changing pitchers!" D'Arby declared. "#15 is out and #77 is in. #77 is a power pitcher with a max pitch speed of 165 km/h! Also, I'll tell you the pitch I'll throw. #77 will throw a forkball and he'll throw right down the middle."

"What the hell?! Why would he declare what he's throwing?!" Joseph exclaimed.

"A forkball is about to come barrelling down centre, but will you believe me or not?" D'Arby asked.

"Jotaro, he's just spouting nonsense to shake your confidence. Do yourself a favour and ignore everything he says!" Joseph told his young grandson.

"Throw it, D'Arby." Jotaro said.

"Will you believe or will you doubt?" D'Arby smirked as he pitched the ball. Jotaro's batter swung at the ball headed straight down the middle. The ball didn't drop like a normal forkball and continued straight. Since Jotaro swung for a forkball the bat just grazed the ball sending it right into the mitt of one of the infielders.

"Out! First inning, three outs! Change!"

The teams change positions, now Jotaro was on pitching field.

"Idiot, how could you?! Leave it to a rookie for something like that! I can't believe you swung for a forkball!" Joseph yelled. D'Arby simply smirked the delinquent's way. Jotaro then pointed at D'Arby and said, "No. He had already seen through me and knew I would swing, expecting a forkball, so he switched it up to fastball. But he has a point, though. Something has been gnawing at me ever since we've stepped foot in this mansion. I'm not sure how, but he knew Star Platinum would throw a right punch during in our earlier skirmish."

"What, impossible! Are you trying to tell me that he can read your mind?" Joseph asked, gaping. "No offence Jotaro, but that's crazy talk."

"Oh would you look at that, it's my turn to bat." D'Arby said. The players changed places and D'Arby was up to bat. The character pointed its bat to the outfield, D'Arby declaring that he was going to hit a home run. "This is going to be a home run! Keep your eye on the birdie as I'll be hitting it into the left-field bleachers." D'Arby laughed.

Jotaro looked up Joseph and asked him, "Old man. Are you absolutely sure the game and console haven't been tampered with?"

"Yeah, I'm positive it's clean. And that's not all, I haven't seen him make a single funny move either." Joseph confirmed.

"Then that means D'Arby's Stand does more than just take souls," Nemuru concluded.

Chapter 52: The Mist of Emptiness, Vanilla Ice, Part 1

'This'll be my target.' Jotaro aimed his pitcher so the throw would hit the batter. *'Now I'll get to the bottom of this.'* He thought to himself.

'Has he lost his mind?! He's gonna hit the batter on purpose?!' Joseph thought.

"And where might you be aiming now Jotaro? An inside pitch? Will you throw it high? Or low perhaps? Or maybe you're planning some kind of underhanded trick. Well?" D'Arby questioned him. Jotaro stayed silent as he pressed the button and the pitcher tossed the ball. The ball flew to the batter, but D'Arby's batter stepped back as soon as the ball left the pitcher's hand.

"What the?! He pulled back when Jotaro threw the ball!"

'If he moved back...' Nemuru thought. *'That means-!'*

D'Arby's batter swung and hit the ball. "He...predicted it! He...knew exactly what would happen! But how?! There's no way he could've seen that pitch coming unless he read Jotaro's mind!" Joseph yelled.

"Home run!"

D'Arby smirked as the game lit up from his home run. "Hmph. That's one run." He said. "Damn this bastard!" Joseph yelled. They faced all kinds of opponents on this journey, but never one who could read their minds. If he really can read minds, then it doesn't matter how clever they think they are. They won't stand a snowball's chance in hell. So...what's Jotaro going to do now?

D'Arby chuckled darkly as his next batter stepped up to declare another homerun. "Let's see. An outside pitch? Or maybe you're going to aim low. Or something in the vein of a fastball." He chuckled. Jotaro setup for the next pitch placing it on the right corner of the pitching square. The character threw the ball and just like before D'Arby hit it out of the park.

"Four to two." D'Arby smirked. This wasn't good at all for our heroes. A person's body language in the surrounding environment go a long way toward helping predict an opponent's next move...but there's no way to do it perfectly! And yet, his Stand predicts Jotaro's pitch with 100% accuracy. And technology he's NOT cheating. Another pitch and the score went from four to three. Just how in the hell are they going to stop him from reading their minds?

"At this rate, I'll be in the lead in no time. Now, what's next? An inside pitch, a fastball, a high pitch, or maybe a curveball. What's up your sleeve?" D'Arby asked, taunting Jotaro when the muscled teen took off his hat so it blocked his face's view from D'Arby.

"Your hat..." Joseph said. D'Arby scoffed and looked away. "You idiot. Do you honestly take me for a cheat like my ne'er-do-wellbrother?" He asked.

"Jotaro, you've got it wrong. Hiding your face is useless." Joseph scolded. "I don't know what he's doing, but he's not watching the reflection of the screen in your eyes. I get that it's hard not to go there now, but there's no way he can see what you're pressing or what pitch you're choosing. Trust me, I've been watching him the entire time. That's not what's been going on here."

"I only took off my hat because I'm sweating. No other reason." Jotaro

stated.

"Could you throw your next pitch sometime this year?" D'Arby said, waving around his controller. Jotaro looked down at the screen and said, "But I'm not going to be sweating anymore. I'll tell you my next pitch. I'm throwing a high outside fastball."

"You're joking!!" D'Arby exclaimed.

Joseph and Nemuru were just as surprised as D'Arby was. "Jotaro, do you hear what you're saying right now?!" Joseph shouted as he grabbed his grandson's shoulder. "Of course, I do. Finally starting to lose your hearing Old man? Obviously, I just told him my next pitch. A high outside fastball, that's how I'm gonna win." Jotaro declared as he gave a sharp look to Joseph. Joseph was somewhat taken aback by this and took two steps back, giving his grandson an unreadable stare.

*'This is getting crazy. I've never seen Jotaro be **this** serious in a while. I don't know what he's planning...but whatever it is...it's all we've got to hope for right now.'* Nemuru thought.

Jotaro set his sights on D'Arby. The tense atmosphere building as the men stared each other down. "Will you believe me or will you doubt me?" Jotaro said with a slight smirk, throwing his words right back at him. D'Arby scoffed at Jotaro. "You're not too bright are you?" D'Arby activates his Stand, and through its eyes, see right into his soul and mind. D'Arby's Stand, Atum, peers into a person soul the same way a thermal imager detects an object's radiation. Say what you will, the soul can not lie. Regardless of what it is, by analysing a person soul, D'Arby can see the answer to any yes or no question. Right or left? High or low? Outside or inside? Fastball or curveball. His Stand's perception is infallible.

'Will your pitch be a high outside fastball? Yes or no?' D'Arby thought as he uses his Stand to get the answer.

"Yes! Yes! Yes! Yes! Yes! Yes! Yes!"Jotaro's soul said.

'Well looks like Jotaro's telling the truth after all. He's really going to pitch a high outside fastball. What's he up to? It's true that he beat my brother

by bluffing but he's a fool if he thinks the same tired tactic would work with me.' D'Arby thought. Confident that the game will go in his favour.

"Here it comes." Jotaro said. The pitcher threw the ball and D'Arby smiled wide. "For your sake, I hope you haven't forgotten that you'll lose the game if you fall eleven runs behind." D'Arby continued to hold his wide smile as the ball flew towards his character but then at the last second the ball changed directions. "What's that-?! A curve?! Impossible, I thought he was going for a high outside fastball!" His batter hit the ball but it only went to the infield where Jotaro's avatar easily caught it and threw it to first getting an out. D'Arby's smile was completely gone, a mixed look of fear and surprise was now plastered across his face.

'Th-there's just no way! Everything about him said he was going to throw a high outside fastball! His soul can't lie! No one's can! Not a zen master, not even my brother! And he's the world's greatest conman!!' D'Arby thought.

"Holy hell, I had no idea how you did that, but way to go Jotaro!" Nemuru cheered for the tall delinquent. Jotaro looked to be calm as ever as he prepared for his next pitch. "Next up is another high outside fastball." He said.

As D'Arby started to sweat he used his Stand to look at Jotaro's soul.

"Yes! Yes! Yes! Yes!"

'What the hell?! He's telling the truth!' He thought. "Jotaro, you have the gall to cheat your way to victory?" He looked at Jotaro for a second then gasped.

"I do! I do! I do! I do! I do!"

"What?!" D'Arby exclaimed. *'He actually is cheating?!'* Jotaro threw his second pitch and it was a forkball low to the inside. D'Arby hit the ball but it barely had any power and Jotaro's character easily caught it getting a second out. D'Arby growled standing up pointing at Jotaro. "You must've cheated! Admit it, you bastard! You clearly tampered with the console!"

"No! No! No! No! No! No!"

SeeingJotaro's soul read No surprising D'Arby. *'What?! He's telling the truth!'* The videogaming gambler started breathing heavily. "I know that you're cheating me, you have to be! Would you just come clean already?!" D'Arby shouted. His breathing got even heavier as he received no answer from Jotaro's soul. *'No response...! Damn it, that's right! I only have use of my power if I ask him a yes or no question!'*

"Judging from your scared expression, your power requires a yes or no question. It's like your brother used to say, 'This is just a dance of deception where the loser cries first.'" Jotaro said. D'Arby scowled at him, sweat now running down his face. "A dance, eh? So this is nothing but a game to you?! How dare you?! Are you taking me for a fool?! Have you any idea who you're speaking to?!" D'Arby shouted, losing his composure. "Jotaro, pitch the ball! I'll figure out your little trick and take your soul as my prize!"

Jotaro was unfazed by his yelling and picked up the controller. "Alright. Let's continue. For my next pitch, I'll throw a high outside fastball." D'Arby viewed Jotaro's soul and saw no signs of lying.

"Yes! Yes! Yes! Yes! Yes! Yes!"

'Once again his soul says he's telling the truth! He's really going to pitch a high outside fastball! I've had about as much of this as I can take! This ends now!! I'll figure out how you're cheating if it's the last thing I'll do!' D'Arby thought, enraged at this sudden turn of events.

The pitch wind up.

"Yes! Yes! Yes! Yes! Yes!"

'So Jotaro hasn't changed his mind. He's still deadset on throwing that infernal pitch!'

The ball was tossed.

'It's coming!'

"Yes! Yes! Yes! Yes!"

'So far it's still a fastball, and his soul is saying yes!'

D'Arby's batter moved to hit the ball but at the last second, it quickly changed direction and turned into a forkball.

"What?! It's a different pitch now!!" D'Arby shouted.

"Yes! Yes! Yes!"

"Out! That's three outs! Change!"

Nemuru and Joseph let out a breath once that was all over, but D'Arby's breathing had now become raged and shallow like a man who was running a marathon. His facial expression was that of terror and confusion. *'I don't get it! Why can't I figure out how he's cheating?! Jotaro's soul kept saying he'd throw a fastball, but at the last second, it curved into a forkball! This doesn't make any sense! How..?! How is this wretch deceiving me?!'*

"You're gonna lose this game, D'Arby." Jotaro declared. "Shut your mouth!" D'Arby shouted, standing up. "Come on, tell me why you removed your stupid hat" He swatted the hat off the table as he kept on shouting. "I'm more perceptive than you think! I know you've been cheating ever since you took it off! Now move, I wanna check your station and controller!" Jotaro silently complied and got up from his seat, walking over to get his hat as D'Arby checked over his station.

But as Jotaro dusted off his hat, D'Arby found nothing out of the ordinary when checking. "There's nothing here! Damn you! How did you do it?! It must have something to do with that hat of yours! Isn't that right?!" D'Arby shouted, pointing at Jotaro.

"No! No! No! No!" Jotaro's soul screamed No over and over making D'Arby gasp. "There be evidence around here somewhere!" He shouts. **"No! No! No! No!"** Once again Jotaro's soul shouted No and D'Arby's freaking out got more frantic. "I get it! You're using Star Platinum to cheat, aren't you?!"

"No! No! No! No!"

D'Arby slammed his hands on the table in anger and shouted, "Just admit it! You're doing something!"

"Yes! Yes! Yes! Yes! Yes! Yes!" This time Jotaro's soul answered Yes. D'Arby breathed heavily as he started to look like his older brother when he passed out. *'Argh! Damn it! Damn it!! I can clearly read Jotaro's thoughts! Which means my Stand's power is still working as it should, so how could his mind say one thing but his body do another?!'*

"Hey, you guys are you seeing this? Looks like he's losing his youthful glow." Joseph pointed out. "He definitely doesn't look like a guy in his twenties anymore."

"D'Arby, it's your turn to pitch so hurry. We don't have all day." Jotaro said.

"It's four to three. With only a one-point difference, I might still have a chance." D'Arby says. *'I am a videogame genius, I can't lose! I am a videogame genius, I can't lose! I've won every game I've ever played, I'm invincible! A videogame expert is an expert at life! Do you think you can shake my confidence so easily?!'* D'Arby didn't move for a while and he stayed hunched over breathing heavy. When he finally moved and pitched Jotaro got a home run. D'Arby looked broken inside as he stared at the screen, the man started to tilt to the side looking like he was about to collapse. At that moment Kakyoin's soul was released from the doll and returned to his body.

"I-it can't be! I accidentally released his soul from the doll!" D'Arby yelled. Joseph leaned over to the redhead checking on him. "Look, his soul's returned to his body, he's regaining consciousness!" Joseph said happily. "Kakyoin?" Nemuru said as she quickly ran over to him and pulled him into her arms. D'Arby panicked and started to frantically wave his arms. "N-No! I didn't! I never once admitted defeat! It was an accident! I didn't mean to release his soul from the doll!"

Jotaro stood up setting down his controller and said, "But the thing is you did release his soul. You know what that means, your soul admitted defeat and it's game over." As Jotaro walked away from the table something glowing on his controller caught D'Arby's eye. D'Arby ran over to the controller studying it. "Hold on, this... is Joseph's Stand! It was wrapped around the controller the entire time!" He followed Hermit Purple looking over at Joseph.

Joseph looked down and noticed his Stand was still out. "Oh, whoops.

I guess I forgot to put this away."

"How...could something so stupid....?! No, you mean it was Joseph?! He was the cheater all along?! Damn it, Jotaro's telling the truth. He really wasn't controlling it, it was you Joseph Joestar!!" D'Arby shouted. The latter pointed at himself with a perplex expression and both of their souls answered.

"Yes! Yes! Yes! Yes!"

"That's right, good boy. Too bad, you're not your brother. Because if you were you would've figured it out a long time ago." Jotaro said. D'Arby fell to his knees looking utterly defeated.

"By the way Old man, you're pretty clever. I didn't expect you to catch on to my ideas as quickly as you did." Jotaro said.

"Well, of course, I did, my boy! I could read you like a book! You are my grandson after all." Joseph said with a cheeky grin.

"Jesus, you two are insane bastards you know that?" Nemuru says with a smile as she held Kakyoin. Guess this is how the Joestar family does things. As insane and abnormal as they are, they always know exactly how to achieve their goals. Oh well, they were still awesome to be around with. Her dark-purple eyes glanced over at the pitiful man on the ground and, while she would love to strangle him for what he did to her man, she decided to the Joseph and Jotaro deal with him.

"Damn... Joseph was controlling things from behind..."

"Before I forget," Joseph says as he and Jotaro turned to face D'Arby with a menacing look. "What to do with you, you button-mashing jerk."

"Oh shit!" D'Arby screamed. "Please, mercy, I beg you! I've already given you back Kakyoin's soul, haven't I?! It's like they say, 'No harm, no foul'!" He said as he got on all fours in a beggar's position. "We're good? Right? Right? Right?"

"If you want to know whether I'll forgive you, why don't you just do what you do best and read my mind?" Jotaro asked him.

"**No! No! No! No! No!**" D'Arby screams getting the answer he did not want.

"Answer this. Will I hit you with my right fist or decide to deck you with my left? I'd love to know." Jotaro said.

"Well, since you're asking, you'll use... your right one?" D'Arby pleaded.

"**No! No! No! No! No!**"

"Then... your left?"

"**No! No! No! No! No!**"

"You're... not gonna use both, are you?" D'Arby squealed in fear.

"**Yes! Yes! Yes! Yes! YES!**"

"Are you going to do the "Ora Ora" thing?!"

"YES! YES! YES! OH MY GOD!" Joseph said, annoyed as he facepalms at this idiot's questioning. Star Platinum attacked pummeling D'Arby. "**ORAOROAORAOROAORAOROAORAORA!!!**" D'Arby Younger, unable to recover, is officially out of commission. "**ORA!**" D'Arby flew into the sky, but he didn't go far since the sky was an intricately painted ceiling. He crashed through the painted wall giving the group an exit. "How about that, we broke through some sort of wall." Joseph pointed out. "That's our ticket out of here. Jotaro. Kakyoin. Nemuru."

"Good grief."

****

Meanwhile, as all of this was going on, while Dio was resting in his chamber, his last, and most loyal, servant reports to him. He kneels outside his room as he speaks, "Forgive me for disturbing you. But

your excellence, as I'm sure you are aware, Joestar and his comrades have just infiltrated the manor. Regrettably, I must also inform you that D'Arby's been defeated." He stayed where he was, still and in total silence for a few moments before Dio spoke up.

"Oh? But D'Arby was a genius. How could one as gifted as D'Arby fail me? Come, I like to hear your thoughts. You may enter, Cool Ice." He says. The man, Cool Ice, slowly stood up as he obediently obeys Dio's. "As you wish." Cool Ice was a very tall, muscular man with wavy, brown with lighter brown streak, collarbone-length hair and magenta eyes. He wears a pair of metallic, purple heart-shaped earrings, and a light purple headpiece carrying a heart crossing his forehead.

His outfit consists of a dark, leather-tailed, open black waistcoat on top of a blue long-sleeved leotard. Across his right shoulder is a metallic strap connected to a large heart over his right breast and the letters "VI". There is a smaller heart at the base of his abdomen, secured by a band around his waist acting as a belt. Bare-legged, he wears dark, mid-calf-high boots.

When he entered Dio's room, he was sitting upon his bed reading a rather large book, Cool Ice immediately kneeled before him once Dio spoke.

"Always remember this; Whatever the obstacle, whatever the danger, the Joestars are prepared to sacrifice their lives in order to save their family." Dio says as he picks up a glass filled with blood. "Kakyoin, and the other four. What were their names again? Ah yes, I believe it's Avdol, Hikari, Nemuru, and Polnareff. They're willing to surrender their lives for the eradication of yours truly. They believe fleeing from me is somehow the same as running from themselves. Fools, one and all. Nonetheless, the fools find strength in this misguided belief. D'Arby swore his undying loyalty but unfortunately, he was not prepared to actually die on my behalf. Which is why at the edge of glory, victory slips through his fingers. For the rest of eternity, D'Arby will remain in ignorance. Ice, have a look at the scar on my neck."

Dio brushed his hair to the side and Cool Ice lifted his head to see the scar that decorated around his master's neck.

"Jonathan Joestar's body is still rejecting me. But I need the blood of one more soul before this body truly becomes mine and once that happens, the wound will heal. Ice, will you offer me the crimson vigour coursing through your veins?" Dio asks him.

With no hesitation whatsoever, Cool Ice said, "Yes, it'd be an honour." He then summons his monstrous demon of a Stand behind him. His Stand, Cream, It appears as an exceptionally tall, skull-faced humanoid monster with a mask akin to a dark blue executioner's cowl, a white body and yellow eyes. Two protruding horns are also visible on the mask, and much like Atum, has heart-shaped motifs on its body. Cool Ice sets up a pot for Dio and tells him, "What is mine is yours!" Cool Ice willingly obeyed Dio's command and had his Stand decapitates him with nothing more than a mere chop to the neck. Blood burst out like geyser as it stained the floors while his body held the pot as it fills up with blood for Dio to consume. The blond-haired Vampire simply sits on his bed as he takes a sip from his glass and Cool Ice's body becomes limp and falls over.

Dio sets down his items and got up. Walking over to Cool Ice's body, satisfied of his servant's devotion towards him. "Ah, you beheaded yourself. Most splendid, but Cool Ice, I cannot accept the blood of such a loyal servant. My wound shall be healed, but it will be with the blood of another." Dio says as he slits open his wrist and pours his blood between Cool Ice's severed head and body. "For now, you must live. So awaken and be reborn. Your steadfast resolve shall secure your victory over those who would impose me."

Dio heals his wrists and within seconds, Cool Ice was resurrected. But not as a man, this time he was reborn as a creature of the night. A Vampire. "I shall not fail you, my lord." Cool Ice says as he gets back up, holding his newly attached neck.

"No weapon can surpass one's own body. You are ready, Cool Ice. Now go, and attend to our unwanted guests but bring that little girl to me." Dio orders him, expecting great results after seeing his devotion as he walks away.

"I swear, Lord Dio, I will not let you down. You have my word, I'll destroy them all." Cool Ice says as he strangely gets himself eaten by Cream, which in turn eats itself until it completely disappears and

rushes out of the room, making a hole in the door. "Well, I sincerely hope that, for your sake, your next victim into the void will be one of the Joestars and not my boudoir." Dio says.

****

"The ten minutes he gave us are up. I know Mr. Joestar ordered us to set the mansion on fire, but I say we go, we have to find them." Avdol said.

"Agreed." Polnareff says. He turned to face the golden-haired girl, who was understandably worried for the others, and told her, "Let's go in Hikari. Stike close to us, and you'll be safe." Hikari looked up at him, then gaze back down at the floor where her Jotaro and friends had been taken. She had been worrying herself to death over them and she needed to know if they were safe or not. A part of her wished that they would be able to find them before they encountered Dio. But the latter were to happen..... Hikari shook her head to removed the negative, grim thoughts and took a deep breath. "Yes. O-okay." She says as she and Polnareff took a step towards inside before Avdol stops them.

"Polnareff. Hikari. Before we proceed, there's something I need to tell you. Listen well, if you lose your way, get injured or can't go on, I won't come to your rescue. Make sure you both understand that." Avdol told them. "Same for you, Iggy." Avdol was fully aware that he may sound heartless but they were in Dio's mansion. The stakes are now too high for them to save each other in case of danger and that they must fend for themselves from this point on. Hikari looked at him with shock. What was he saying? Why was he saying this? He's saying that if one of them gets to be some kind of liability, they'll be left behind. The very thing Hikari has always been afraid of becoming.

"But... Mr. Avdol... That's just...." Hikari said with a broken voice. Avdol took notice of the sadness in the young girl's eyes and sighs. Aw, now she's making this hard for him to say. Hikari was a

kindhearted girl who would always try to do good for others. Asking her to leave someone behind to fend for themselves has to be the most painful and difficult thing for her to do. As much as he wanted to give her some reassurance, he knows that she has to be strong and understand.

He walked over to her and gently placed his hands on her shoulders. "I know that might sound cruel, but remember the reason we're here is to defeat Dio once and all. And of course, the same rules must apply to me as well. If I'm injured or separated from you, you have to promise me that you won't attempt to save me. Above all else, you must think of your own safety. We can't let ourselves get killed trying to save one another. There's too much at stake."

A cold moment of silence befell them as Avdol's words slowly sink in. As cruel and heartless as it may be, they knew that he was right. The stakes were high and there's no way they can't take any risks once they enter the mansion. They had to understand. Hikari closed her eyes as tears fell. She gave a nod and, just above a whisper, said, "I understand." Polnareff also nodded and said, "Oui. That's how it goes then." He walked over to them and the trio gathered into a small group hug. "If we get out of this alive, you're treating us to one hell of a meal." Polnareff said.

"I'll treat all three of you." Avdol said with a smile as Iggy smirked of. Hikari smiled as well as she held them as tightly as she could. She tried not to feel scared right now...but all she could do was pray that her friends will survive. "Alright, let's go!" Polnareff said. Once their promise was made, the small team entered the mansion. "Do your thing Silver Chariot!" The Knight in shining armour was brought forth and he carefully tapped the floor with his blade. Just in case that D'Arby had set a trap for them. When it appeared to be safe, the group head on right in and they shortly arrived at an eldritch hall full of labyrinthine stairways and bridges.

Hikari held her arms as she tried to suppress a shiver. Something didn't feel right. Just by looking down the hall, she sensed that something dangerous lurking through the darkness. She sensed that it was there, waiting for them. Waiting for the perfect chance to kill them. But she has no idea what it was or how she knew. She gripped at her chest as she stared out into the never-ending labyrinth. She

didn't feel pain...but she felt the brush of cold air.

"Hey Avdol, what do we do now? This place looks like it goes on forever." Polnareff says.

"I know Mr. Joestar told us to set the mansion on fire, but setting this immense labyrinth ablaze would end up putting us all in danger. So instead," Avdol took a step forward and brought Magician's Red and the fire-wielding Stand conjures a radar of magical flames. Polnareff, Hikari, and Iggy stared at it in both awe and confusion as it floats ahead of them. "These flames detect lifeforms. They can sense anything alive, detecting even cutaneous respiration and mynute movements. These flames can also sense a Stand's energy so we'll let them lead the way." Avdol explains as they followed the magical flames.

"Any particular reason there six flames?" Polnareff asked him.

"There's one for each direction as well as for above and below. If there's anything hidden within fifteen meters, regardless of its size, the flame will detect its presence and alert us immediately." Avdol says as his flames then travelled down a set of stairs. "Mr. Joestar and the others were pulled below us. Let's head down." And they walked down the steps, the flames suddenly reacted, already detecting an enemy, making everyone stop immediately.

"The flames are picking up on something! Apparently it's in front of us to the left!" Avdol said.

"What is?" Polnareff asked.

"But where's he hiding?" Hikari asked. They looked towards the direction the flames were pointing but found nothing. No one was there and there wasn't anything out of the ordinary. But fortunately for them, Iggy sniffs him out. *"The Fool!"* He shouts as he summons his Stand. The Fool rushed towards one of the pillars and slashes at him, creating a single claw mark on it. Much to the surprise of the others, the crack broke through the pillar and out bursts a man. Screaming as blood poured from the sizable wound on his chest.

He was a small stocky man with pointy prominent ears, a small nose,

and closed eyes, but a large mouth. He wore a vest buttoned on the sides on which are shoulder pads, dark trousers, and dark shoes, gloves, a metallic necklace, and a conical hat. He fell out of the pillar and collapsed onto the ground.

"What the hell?! Who's this guy supposed to be?!" Polnareff questioned.

Avdol looked up and let out a gasp. "Look, do you see what's happening?!" The others looked around them and saw that the whole labyrinth was morphing out of reality. Disappearing and the place had become a normal-looking manor. "The maze disappeared. But how did it...?" Hikari asked as she and the others looked down at the man.

"I'm willing to bet the power of this man's Stand created the illusion of the maze. It dissipated as soon as Iggy slashed him." Avdol said.

His name, Billie Jean. The power of his Stand was illusions. And his fate, instant defeat.

"The mansion is back to normal, so we averted at least one potential crisis. And the flames don't seem to be sensing any danger." Avdol says. Hikari let out a small sigh of relief as she and the others walked on ahead. But that's when Avdol suddenly sees a message carved out on a pillar.

'He who reads this carving and turn back shall....' Avdol was suddenly filled with fear and adrenaline when he moved his hand to read the rest of the message. It stated that they will die shortly. Hikari suddenly stopped in her tracks when and tightly gripped at her chest. She shook uncontrollably as if she were splashed with cold water. It was that feeling again. That...thing! It was here! Right behind them!! Right behind-!

'The flames don't sense a thing...and Iggy hasn't picked up on anything either.' Avdol slowly turned his head and was shocked to see the Executionator Stand. 'My God! What IS that abomination?! Impossible! Neither my flames nor Iggy could sense it! Where did it come from?!' Avdol had no time to think and had just reacted. "POLNAREFF, IGGY, HIKARI, YOU HAVE TO GET OUT OF HERE

NOW!"

"MR. AVDOL!!!"

Chapter 53: The Mist of Emptiness, Vanilla Ice, Part 2

'He who reads this carving and turn back shall....' Avdol was suddenly filled with fear and adrenaline when he moved his hand to read the rest of the message. It stated that they will die shortly. Hikari suddenly stopped in her tracks when and tightly gripped at her chest. She shook uncontrollably as if she were splashed with cold water. It was that feeling again. That...thing! It was here! Right behind them!! Right behind-!

'The flames don't sense a thing...and Iggy hasn't picked up on anything either.' Avdol slowly turned his head and was shocked to see the Executionator Stand hovering right behind him. *'My God! What IS that abomination?! Impossible! Neither my flames nor Iggy could sense it! Where did it come from?!'* Avdol had no time to think. No time to breath. His body had just reacted. "POLNAREFF, IGGY, HIKARI, YOU HAVE TO GET OUT OF HERE NOW!"

"MR. AVDOL!!!"

The moment Avdol shoved his friends to the ground a bright white light suddenly flashed out. Engulfing the room in its blinding light. Along with a very haunting sound. Polnareff and Iggy were thrown

across the room, bewildered at what just happened Polnareff sat up. He was about to ask what happened, only for his eyes to widen in shock when he only sees a torn clump of Avdol's overcoat and his severed arm, and that both he and Hikari missing. "Hey, where are you, Avdol?! Hikari?! The hell?! Wha-what was that thing?! Where did it-?!" Polnareff shouted.

Everything happened way too fast for him to even process it. That...thing...! He only caught a glimpse of it but he had no idea what it was. But what made him panic the most was, not only the thing he thought he saw which he was sure was lurking around somewhere but the fact that he couldn't see his friends anywhere. The torn fabric of Avdol's overcoat and arm and Hikari vanishing into thin air sent Polnareff into a panic. "Hey! Avdol! Where did you go?! Avdol! Hikari! Where are you?! AVDOL!! COME OUT AVDOL!! HIKARI, SAY SOMETHING!!!" He screamed and cried out for his friends but he received no response.

What did responded to him was a portal to a void-like dimension, appeared before him. Cream appeared from the portal, bringing out its upper body out from its mouth. Just seeing the horrific beast sent Polnareff into even more of a panic. "What the hell is that thing?!" He shouts. "Where did it come from?! Weren't Avdol's flame supposed to be able to sense anything?! Hey, Iggy! Couldn't your nose pick up on this thing?! Answer me!!" Iggy couldn't even look at him. Iggy breathed heavily as he was just as terrified by Cream's presence as Polnareff was.

"Avdol! Hikari! Where are you?!" Polnareff shouted. "Where the hell you'd go?!" Cream got its arms out and grabbed hold of Avdol's severed arm. Cool Ice's voice echoed through the void as he told the Frenchman. "Avdol...has been reduced to nothingness." He says as he picks up Avdol's arm. "Beyond my jaws lies an endless void. A dark dimension which harbours things even I do not fully comprehend. The girl has no doubt run off, leaving you behind. Your ally is dead, but fret not as you will soon join him. You are arrogant enough to believe you could defeat Lord Dio. Therefore you must be punished." Cool Ice says as Cream devours Avdol's arm.

Polnareff's eyes widen in shock and fear from Cool Ice's words and seeing the Vampire himself appearing withing Cream's mouth. "One

by one, each of you shall fall in line as I scattered your atomic fragments across the deepest recesses of the void." He declared. Iggy stared at both Stand and user in complete fear. Now that he was seeing him, Iggy knew that the man is dangerous and pure bloodthirsty.

"No, you're lying. It's impossible...! There's no way you killed Avdol...! There's no way Hikari would **ever** leave a person behind...! HOW DARE YOU LIE TO ME?!?!" Polnareff shouts in anger as he prepares to fight Vanilla Ice. An enraged Polnareff sends out Silver Chariot to attack Cool Ice, the shining knight appearing right behind the executioner Stand, catching Cool Ice off guard. *'Wh-what?! I never would've imagine Polnareff's Stand could attack this swiftly from so far away! An amazing feat to be sure.'* Cool Ice thought.

"Over here! I want you to look at me when I kill you!" Polnareff shouts as he unleashes a fury of strikes. He struck Cool Ice with rapid strikes and had managed to get him in the shoulder, but the Cool Ice then quickly disappears to avoid most of Silver Chariot's flurry of thrusts, leaving the Frenchman screaming in utter rage.

****

The other half of the Joestar Group had escaped that stupid "island" of D'Arby and, with the help of Joseph's lighter, found themselves in some kind of wine cellar. Before they could move or speak up they suddenly felt strong tremors coming from above them. "Alright, now I'm sure something fishy's going on. Ever since we escaped the mirage, I've heard the sounds of a battle." Joseph said.

"Blast it! Avdol, Polnareff and Hikari are up there!" Kakyoin shouted.

"Crap, they must be in trouble!" Nemuru said.

"Hikari..." Jotaro said before running through the cellar with the others following close behind. He has trust in Avdol and Polnareff to keep her safe, but with how strong those tremors were, he has to find her. God knows what kind of enemy they were facing right now.

****

Back on the upper floors, in an effort to hit his foe, Silver Chariot began to recklessly strike at nearly everything in sight. Mindlessly swinging its sword around in an attempt to hit his foe. Panting heavily as he soon knows that his enemy had vanished, Polnareff says, "Damn that guy! I know I hit the bastard but it wasn't enough to kill him! He just swallowed himself again so he could hide in that abyss. Damn that guy and his Stand!" Meanwhile, Iggy was stuck in place, shaking in fear at what he had witnessed. Soon Polnareff's rage turned to agonising sorrow as he fell back and leaned against the pillar behind him.

'Avdol... How could you do that? How could you break the one rule you gave us...?' Polnareff thought. Avdol was the one who had them promise that once they entered the mansion that if one of them is injured or gets separated, they won't attempt to save the other. Above all else, they must think of their own safety. But then...why did?!

"POLNAREFF, IGGY, HIKARI, YOU HAVE TO GET OUT OF HERE NOW!"

Why did Avdol go back on that promise? *'You told us we had to watch our own backs! That you wouldn't save us even if we were in danger! You liar!! You've been meddling in other people's business ever since we've set foot in India!!'* Polnareff thought in sorrow as he mourns for his fallen friend. "Damn it Avdol! Why couldn't you just leave me alone and mind your own freaking business?!" Polnareff shouted. His thoughts then went to that sweet, angelic girl who's still missing.

While Avdol breaking the promise they each made was painful, Polnareff adamantly refuses to believe that Hikari would **ever** leave someone behind and let them fend for themself. Polnareff knows that she is around somewhere, hiding from Cool Ice. He has to find her! He wouldn't forgive himself if anything happened to her. As Polnareff fell to his knees, he narrowly avoids Cream which disintegrates a pillar. Which scared him and Iggy shitless.

'If I hadn't ducked, I'd be a dead man right now. It's like fate is telling me to carry on. This must be Avdol's way of knocking some sense into me.' Polnareff thought to himself. He was forcibly pulled out of his thoughts when loud, humming-like sounds echoed through the room. Polnareff and Iggy looked at and an invisible sphere was rolling

around. Devouring any and everything in its path. When it starts heading towards them, Iggy tried to fight back and summons The Fool! The Fool let out a growl and leap forward to attack only to be reduced back into sand when the sphere made contact with it. Seeing this, Polnareff scooped Iggy into his arms and jumped out of the way.

Realizing that Cream has turned into an invincible and invisible ball of destruction that's flying after them, Polnareff and Iggy have no choice but to flee. "It's way too dangerous in here! Let's get moving!" Polnareff shouts as he and Iggy got out of there as fast as they could. They ran into another portion of the mansion and Polnareff quickly shut the door behind them, locked it and barricaded it with a nearby couch and cabinet. Knowing this wasn't going to last very long, Polnareff and Iggy sprinted away from the door as the invisible ball of destruction barrels through.

"Come on Iggy! We have to make it upstairs!!" Polnareff shouts. "Don't fall behind!" They ran up the stairs, narrowly avoiding another attack from Cream, and kept on running down the hallway as Cream chases after them. As they were running they quickly spotting the front door, the light from the sun inviting them a form of sanctuary away from the evil of the mansion. "Look up ahead! It's the exit, we're almost there!" Polnareff shouted. Iggy sees the exit and is thoroughly relieved to see it. Finally a way out! All they need to do is get through that door, exit the mansion and get the hell out of this nightmare!

"But I won't just turn tail and run away!" Polnareff suddenly says with Iggy looking up at him as if he was crazy. "Avdol sacrificed himself for us and I'll repay that debt no matter what! He believed we had the power to put an end to Dio once and for all! I can't betray his faith in us by letting him down. If we leave now, there's a high chance that Hikari is going to face that monster alone! I won't leave her alone in this nightmare!" Iggy stares up at him with both shock and awe before glancing back at the door. "I refuse to take the easy way out like some common coward! I'm gonna see this fight through to the bitter end! The only place I'm running to is Dio's shadow den!!" Iggy was speechless at his powerful words. And as they sank in, those words roused his fighting spirit and both of them go to the second floor instead.

Though they had no way of knowing, Polnareff and Iggy were extremely lucky that they didn't go through that door. Even if they did, did you truly think they get out alive? Because they ran up the stairs instead, they've just avoided Cream which was posted right at the entrance. "I expected him to dash out the door. Pity." Cool Ice chuckles as half of his body emerges from Cream's mouth while blood spills from his wound. "Impressive. He managed to hit. It seems Polnareff's mental fortitude gives him the ability to conquer his fears in the face of imminent death you will soon be joining Avdol. Rest assured. Your strength pales in comparison to the harbinger of death that is my Stand."

Still determined to fight, Polnareff has still no idea how to beat the enemy Stand as the run through another hallway. *'If what he says is true, his Stand's jaws are the gateway to an alternate dimension. A dark, unimaginable abyss. One that allows him to move through our realm without leaving any trace of himself! But how does he do it?! And how the heck am I supposed to beat him?!'* Polnareff thought as he and Iggy run up another set of stairs and arriving at an art gallery but they quickly stop in their tracks when they saw a gaping hole on the floor, meaning Cool Ice is here.

"Oh no, no!! He's cut us off!" Polnareff shouts as he and Iggy brought their Stands. "He's nearby! But where exactly?! Iggy, I need you to watch my back and don't worry I'll do the same for you." Polnareff says as he kneels to the floor and Iggy climbing up his arm and stood on his shoulder. Covering each other's back. They stayed perfectly still and on edge. Their senses were sharp as they looked for any sign of suspicious movements and/or sounds. But the unnerving silence was much worse.

'Okay, if he wants to reach us than he's gotta have to come out of that other realm. This is good, he has to come out from the dark beyond at some point. When he does, I'll take my chance and attack with everything I've got!' Polnareff thought as he clenched his fist and stood back up on . his feet and he shouts, "Alright, come at me, you demented pinball!! I'll slice you in two! Now, I'm pissed off so my Chariot's even faster! I may have lost Avdol and Hikari, but it'll be a cold day in hell before I let you get away!" Even with this declaration, Polnareff was still on edge and stayed on high alert.

As they waited for Cool Ice, they didn't know that Cream was slowly morphing underneath Polnareff's left foot. The Frenchman notices it but was too late. Cream grew in size and he summoned Silver Chariot to attack. Silver Chariot tried to strike, but after a flash of light, Cool Ice vanishes and takes half of Polnareff's left foot. He screamed in pain as he collapsed to the ground, holding his foot as Cream hovered above them. "Now you can't run away. I got your foot so that you can't hide anymore." Cool Ice told him.

Iggy glared at him and sent The Fool after him. Baring its teeth as it charges towards him. Cream quickly moves to the side and The Fool crashes against the was reduced to sand. Cream moves to attack the now crippled Polnareff, but he powers through the pain and summons Silver Chariot, sending a fury of rapid thrust. Despite leaving Polnareff unable to run, his Stand Silver Chariot still represents enough danger to force Cool Ice back into hiding. In his fury, Polnareff causes as much destruction as he can to the room.

The destruction he caused send powerful tremors throughout the entire mansion having it be heard by Dio and the rest of the Joestar Group. Dio stayed relax on his bed, reading his book as the chaos erupted from down below. "Mr. Joestar, a brawl's underway!" Kakyoin says.

"What the hell's going on up there?!" Nemuru asked.

"Avdol. Polnareff and Chiara. Sounds like they came in after us and wound up getting themselves into a fight. Come on, you three! We have to find them ASAP!" Joseph shouts as he as the others ran down the hall.

Eventually, the dust settles and Cool Ice comes out of hiding. Overlooking the destruction Polnareff caused and finding the intruders gone. "You've managed to hide amid the chaos, Polnareff. How futile. You couldn't have gone far with that injury which means you're hiding beneath the rubble." Cool Ice says, his head peeking out from Cream's mouth. "By now, you must've realised you're helpless against me. You shall meet your end by my hand. Now then, where could you be, Polnareff?"

"That's quite the ruckus, Cool Ice." A familiar voice said. The latter's

eyes widened and he turned to see his master, Dio coming from upstairs. Immediately rushing to his side, Cool Ice emerges from Cream's mouth and he tells his master, "Please be careful, my lord! I believe Polnareff and that four-legged rodent are still hiding nearby. Allow me to handle the situation. You mustn't trouble yourself with such nonsense, Master. Do not worry I shall bring the girl to your chambers soon enough." Cool Ice stood protectively in front of Dio in the case Polnareff and Iggy decided to attack.

While his back was turned, Dio raised his arm and prepares to attack Cool Ice. Bits of sand falls from his finger. In reality, this wasn't Dio at all. Instead, this "Dio" is a clone made of sand made by Iggy while he and Polnareff hide in the staircase thanks to The Fool's ability. As the two quietly come out from their hiding spot, Polnareff thinks to himself, *'A fake Dio made from The Fool. We got him. You'd think I'd feel guilty about attacking from behind like a coward. And you'd wrong! Because you pulled the same shit on Avdol! This is the death you deserve! Now Iggy, crucify him! Make him pay for what he did! End his life in the same merciless he did Avdol's! Send him straight to hell!'*

Iggy let out a small growl and he tries to attack Cool Ice from behind, however, unfortunately, Vanilla Ice turns back and Cream slices away the fake Dio's arm. Shocking Polnareff and Iggy as they came out from the stairs. "You're kidding! He knows! But how?!" Polnareff asked in disbelief.

"Because the windows to my left are letting in the light from the sun. Lord Dio would never enter this room during the day." Cool Ice tells him as his rage steadily grows within him. "You'll suffer a thousand deaths for your deception."

Iggy's clone tried to attack Cool Ice but the Vampire had enough of their games and sinks back inside Cream. It destroys the Dio copy and it rushing towards them caused the two to scatter. Iggy attempted to run but trip over a broken piece of a pillar. After the initial attack, Cool Ice singles out Iggy and stares down at the Boston Terrier with anger and malice. "I made a vow to Lord Dio that I will kill you, interlopers. He had entrusted me to eliminate you. Lord Dio is a man of his word, he would never descend to the second floor for any reason!"

'NO! He's gonna kill Iggy! He's about to be swallowed by the abyss!' Polnareff thought.

"Now die you filthy, pathetic dog! Your incorrigible ruse forced me to destroy Lord Dio's likeness!!" Cool Ice shouted in rage as he delivered a hard, solid punch to Iggy's muzzle, sending the dog colliding against the wall across the room. Polnareff was momentarily surprised that Cool Ice didn't use his Stand's void and hit him with his fist. Cool Ice jumped out from Cream's mouth and stomped his way over to Iggy. "Do you know what you've done? I don't care if it **was** a fake, you forced me to destroy a figure in the form of Lord Dio. And you must answer for that crime! Your life is mine now!! I will kick you to death!!" Cool Ice shouts in rage as he proceeds to violently beat him up for making him strike at DIO's image.

"THIS WHOLE MESS, IT'S ALL YOUR FAULT! THIS IS WHAT HAPPENS TO THOSE WHO ANGER ME!! HAVE YOU LEARN LESSON YET?! HOW BOUT IT?! IS THIS BETTER?! TELL ME, IS IT?! IS IT?! IS IT?!" Cool Ice screams as he continued to kick Iggy with all of his strength.

"Stop it! Leave him alone!!" Polnareff shouts at Cool Ice as he struggles to get up to save him. But the wound from his foot prevents him from moving. *'It's like Cool Ice's brain has melted! Is he really batshit because he destroyed some pile of sand that looked like Dio?! From over here, his soul is the murky abyss. It's a bottomless blackhole that obliterates any and everything that gets in its way!'*

Cool Ice gave Iggy a few more violent kicks before he bared his fangs and glaring down at the dog. "I was warned about the humans! Lord Dio said the resolve in their hearts must never be underestimated! But you, you're just a flea-bitten stray!! You never know resolve and you certainly know nothing of pride!!" He shouts. Iggy laid on the floor, profusely bleeding out as he breathed heavily. Even so, Iggy's charm continued to shine despite his current situation. He looked up at Cool Ice and gave a cocky grin. Seeing him grin at him like sent Cool Ice even more into a violent rage. He was about to kick once more when suddenly a light blue bubble engulfed Iggy. Protecting him from Cool Ice's kick. "What?!" He shouts. Polnareff stared at the bubble in shock as well. "Th...That colour... That sphere..!" He said as Polnareff was put in a much more larger one.

Rapid footsteps echoed through the room as their saviour rushes down the art gallery. Cool Ice was distracted by the sphere long enough for a pair of hands to slam themselves against his sides. Cool Ice looked down and was shocked. "You!" Sapphire eyes stared at him with a fire glowing behind them. "**Stardust Moon Pulse!**" A pure white energy blasted out of her hands and sent Cool Ice flying across the room. Hikari didn't turn back but she did shout out, "Mr. Avdol, now!"

"Right!!" A familiar voice said as Polnareff was even more shocked. The Egyptian fortune-teller appeared, clutching his right arm, as he summoned forth his firey Stand. "Magician's Red!" The firebird screeched out, ready to fight as it sent a streak of flames. Cool Ice grit his teeth in anger as he barely manages to avoid Avdol's flames and dives back into Cream's mouth, vanishing into thin air. When he did, Cream's turned back into the invisible sphere of destruction. When it flew towards them, the trio quickly jumped away.

They turned back but found it to be gone, for now. Soundless Voice went and bring the injured Iggy back to their side and into Hikari's arms. While Hikari and Avdol pressed their backs against one another, Polnareff was still shocked at what was happening. Hikari had attacked Cool Ice directly and Avdol was still alive. However, he did he that the right sleeve of his coat was stained with blood and his right arm missing. "Hikari...Avdol...?! Wha-?! How are earth are you still here?! How did you both survive against Cool Ice?"

"Sorry Polnareff, but there's no time for us to explain right now. We need to find out where exactly Cool Ice is." Avdol says as his brown eyes looked throughout the entire room. Polnareff was so confused but he was right and put his head back into the game. "Right, our plan to trick him might have fallen through but Iggy's sand might've just saved us. Thanks to him, I think I've found a way to find the bastard." Polnareff says as he used scattered sand around the room to located Cool Ice. The team huddled close as they waited for any sign of Cream. That's when they caught sight of the outline of a floating spherical ball, silently gliding through the dust.

'There he is...' Avdol thought.

'How are we going to get him when he's inside his Stand?' Hikari

questioned as she heals Iggy's wounds.

'Guess his Stand's power is a double-edged sword. When you move, your Stand has no choice but to absorb everything in your path. So choke on a mouthful of this and get over here, you piece of shit!' Polnareff thought with a smirk as the sphere slowly starts to get closer to them. Cream emerges from the invisible sphere and opens its mouth for Cool Ice to see. But was ambushed by Polnareff when he gets stabbed in the mouth.

"Bullseye, yeah!! Eat that!" Polnareff shouted. "Well would you look at that, we've found your weakness Cool Ice. Any attempt to pinpoint my location leaves you vulnerable. Which is probably a tad inconvenience since you can't see us without emerging from your dimension."

"Nice work, Mr. Polnareff." Hakari praised him

"It's over Cool Ice. Time for you to burn in hell!" Avdol shouts as Magician's Red rushed towards and prepares to end Cool Ice's life once and for all. However, much to Avdol's, Polnareff and Hikari's horror, Cool Ice glares down at them and continues to live. Cream grabs hold of Silver Chariot's neck, squeezing it tightly making its user cough of blood. What's going on?! Polnareff skewered his throat and brain stem, how is he still alive?! Cream then grabs Silver Chariot's arm and Cool Ice says, "I cannot die! My mission is far too important to feel any pain! I will not rest until I kill you! I'll swallow Iggy, the Joestars and anyone who gets in my way! Only after your deaths will I allow myself to die!" Cream tightens his grip on Chariot's arm and almost breaks it. Polnareff screams as Cream nearly bringing his arm closer inside the void of Cream's mouth.

Luckily Hikari launched another one of her attack to force Cream to let Polnareff go. Polnareff tries to attack again but Cream caught the blade as it stabbed through his hand and breaks it in half. Hikari and Avdol try to attack Cream but it kept on disappearing and reappearing in the random places. It goes to attack the golden-haired girl but she used one of her shields to deflect it, sending it crashing through the wall. Letting in the sunlight.

"This is bad...! How are we going to beat him now?" Hikari

questioned the others.

"It's impossible to attack him when he's hidden in the abyss if we so much as touch that thing, it'll swallow us whole!" Polnareff said. No sooner as he spoke their Stands jumped out of the way when another hole broke the wall. The three Stands jumped around, avoiding the sphere as it looks as if to absorb the building at random. As insane as it was, it's still clever. Cool Ice knows full well that the others will go after him if shows himself, so he's blindly attacking to prevent them from fighting back. They called back their Stands for their own safety and tried to think of a strategy to beat him somehow.

But to make matters worse, they see Cream making circles around the room which gradually shrink. Thus they realize that the enemy is trying to sweep the room to eventually reach them. He's got them right where he wants them. There's no way they can fight him like this. They can run, but Polnareff's foot might slow them down. They can somehow manage to hang on until the others arrive, but they had arrived ten minutes before them. There's also the possibility that they're in a battle of their own. Which leaves their third option: Neither of them will be able to dodge the attack. Life is an absolute bitch!

Hikari's eyes followed the sphere in sheer horror as she tried to think of a way to beat Cool Ice. They can't die here, if they do, then Jotaro and the others won't have a chance to fight against him. What should they do?! What **can** they do?! Suddenly Avdol's words rang in her head if they are injured or get lost then the rest must leave them behind. If it were just Polnareff, Avdol and Iggy, then they must have a chance to escape and reunite with the others. Her shields may be strong enough to hold him off long enough for them to escape.

Hikari jumped back when the sphere shot out mere inches in front of her. Cool Ice was getting closer. She looked down at Iggy, who was more or less healed of his injury and gave him a gentle hug. It's now or never, she must get her friends to safety. Even if she must sacrifice her life to do so.

****

After exiting the wine cellar and making through several hallways,

the group made their way deeper into the mansion. Neither of them liked the vibe they got from the mansion. It was a beautiful place but its overbearing ominous aura made the once beautiful mansion dark and scary.

As they came across a hallway they discovered clear signs of a battle. The floors and walls were riddled with giant holes. The holes were rather off-putting because they were perfectly circular and all the same size. Chunks of concrete littered the floor as the group studied the derby.

Joseph walked over to a wall that had one of the perfectly circular holes in it. "This room looks like it was on the receiving end of a tornado. I don't understand how this hole could be perfectly spherical. What...is going on?"

Kakyoin looked through the hole and said, "I'm not sure but the destruction spreads into the other room too."

"It's safe to say Avdol and the others made contact with the enemy. Here we go! Break down this door Jotaro, we're going in!" Joseph told his grandson.

"Rodger." Jotaro says as he summoned Star Platinum and with an "**Ora!**" easily broke the door. Getting closer to the rest of their comrades.

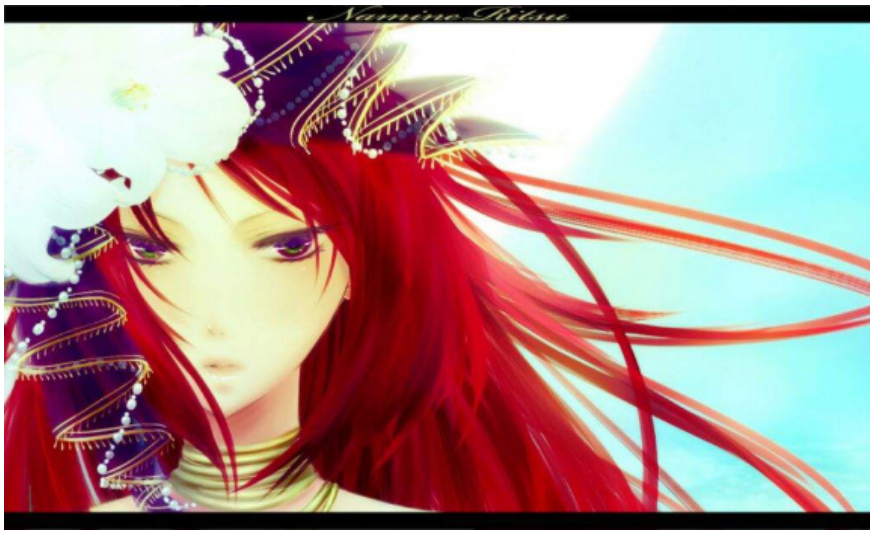
****

"**Stardust Moon Pulse!**" Hikari shouts as she launches her attack towards Cool Ice. She purposely missed so that the attack blasted through the floor, stopping Cream from going around the room. After she placed Iggy in Avdol's arm, Hikari then had Soundless Voice engulf the others in her bubble shield before flinging them to the exit. "Hikari?!" Avdol and Polnareff shouted in shock.

"Mr. Avdol! Mr. Polnareff! Find JoJo and the others! You have to warn them of this guy! I'll hold him off for you! Just run, I'll be fine!" She shouts after them as they exited the art gallery. Leaving her alone with the demon. She quickly whirled around as soon as she heard heavy breathing behind her. Cool Ice looked a little worse for wear as

he stared at her with soulless blank eyes. Hikari's heart was racing, but she remained strong as she steeled herself to fight.

Chapter 54: The Mist of Emptiness, Vanilla Ice, Part 3



"The blood that stains my body is Avdol's handiwork. Not Polnareff's." Cool Ice says as he breathed heavily. Hikari was a bit confused at what he was saying but she decided to not think too much of it. "My plan was to eradicate the others simultaneously, but due to yours and Avdol's intervention, Polnareff's demise was postponed. Anyone else would've instinctively. Saved himself over risking life and limb to come to the aid of an oblivious comrade. That alone makes him responsible for my injuries." Cool Ice then solemnly declares.

He stares at Hikari with soulless, but rage-fuelled, eyes. He found it somewhat admirable that despite her being alone to face him, she was still able to look at him with courage in those eyes. Soundless Voice appeared beside her, forming a ball of energy between her palms. "Don't fool yourself. Do you honestly believe you can handle me by yourself?" Cool Ice asked her.

"Maybe. I might not be able to defeat you, but at least I can hold you off until my friends get here. I'm not scared of you. And I'm not afraid to lay down my life if it means to defeat your master." Hikari tells him. Cool Ice narrows his eyes at her. Dio had told them not to

underestimate the Joestar Group's resolve and told him to bring her to his chamber. But now that he was actually looking at her, he couldn't help but think of how much of an idiot she was. He didn't understand why Dio wanted this particular girl. She didn't seem to be that strong. Nor was there anything remotely interesting about her but it wasn't his place to questioned him. After all, all Dio told him was to bring her to him. He hadn't said anything about NOT hurting her.

"I'm not sure why Lord Dio would want you, but I'll see though my mission without fail!" Cool Ice yelled as he rushed towards her. "What'd he say?" Hikari asked herself. Soundless Voice disbanded her attack and quickly pulled up a shield. Cool Ice and Cream struck her shield but instead of having the attack being bounced at him, it instead held him in place. When he wasn't inside Cream's abyss, Cool Ice was surprisingly slow. "**Silent Moon Pulse!**" Hikari cried out as Soundless Voice pressed her hands against Cool Ice's throat and the blast sent him flying across the room.

The blast held enough for Cool Ice's neck to break. However, even though she was aware of that, Hikari knew that if he could survive with his brain stem being severed, he most certainly survive a broken neck. He wasn't going to stay down for long, so she had to think of a plan and fast. She turned back to the way she shoved Avdol, Polnareff and Iggy at. She prayed that she had managed to get them to a safe distance away and that they'll meet up with the others soon.

'Alright. I probably have at least a few minutes before Cool Ice gets back up again. What should I do now? He can't be a normal man, can he? No...no normal man could ever survive the injuries he gained.' Hikari thought to herself as she carefully walked around Cool Ice's body.

As she tried to think of a plan, a thought suddenly came to her. She turned her head towards the hole-riddled wall and gazed at the streaks of light that was seeping through. The light from outside. Cool Ice's survival against those critical wounds. And the creature that Dio is... Hikari let out a soft gasp as she realised what Cool Ice really was. As the realisation came to her, Cool Ice silently stands back up and summons Cream. He was prepared to attack her but then Hikari said, "Now I get it. I know what you are now."

Cool Ice let out a roar and was about to absorb a part of her so she won't be able to run. But Hikari had already sensed him behind so and thwarting the attack from behind as Soundless Voice appeared and launched her attack on the evil Vampire henchman. Cool Ice crashed against the wall, creating a huge crater before jumping back on his feet. He jumped in the air and tried to attack again, and when he did, Hikari saw the fangs in his mouth. So she was right about him.

Hikari summoned her Full Moon shield and stopped him. Soundless Voice created her attack and threw it like a frisbee at him. Causing Cool Ice to bounce off the ceiling before colliding with the ground. Cool Ice sat up, growling and glaring daggers at the girl. She was becoming more trouble than she was worth. "I know what you are now. You're like Dio, aren't you? He must've transformed you, right?" Hikari questioned. Cool Ice let out a roar as he charges at her again but Hikari was already ready for him.

Hikari notices a door beside her and had Soundless Voice destroy it, letting the sunlight come in. Cool Ice rushes at her, aiming to strike her with his fist but unfortunately for him once his arm makes contact with the sunlight it instantly gets destroyed by reducing it to ash. Of course, Cool Ice was shocked by the sudden destruction of his arm and staggers back. "Wha...What the hell is this?! What's happening to me?!"

Hikari stares up at Cool Ice with a sense of sympathy and gently says, "I'm sorry. But it seems that your master had turned you without you realising it. He gave you his blood, didn't he? He never told you you've turned into a vampire?" Cool Ice held his arm as he looked at her with anger and disbelief. "You **are** like Dio now. A monster."

"You bastard!!" Cool Ice screamed as he tries to run towards her but his leg got caught by the sun's rays and it disintegrates into dust. "Since your only feeling it now, the change must've started after Mr. Polnareff struck you. I feel sorry for you Cool Ice. You made a vow to protect your lord and master, and this is what he did to repay you. No one deserves this kind of fate. Please...just stop fighting. Things will only get worse for you."

"YOU'RE NOT GOING TO DEFEAT ME!" Cool Ice screams in rage at

her. He made a vow. He promised Lord Dio that he will kill the Joestar Group and bring this girl to him! He won't die until he fulfils his mission! Hikari looked at him with sad eyes and turned her gaze away. "Sleep now. You've done enough." She says as Soundless Voice appeared behind him and pushes Cool Ice into the light headfirst and turns him into dust. Hikari let out a breath once she knows that it was over. For now. Cool Ice must be the last one for them to fight before facing against Dio.

Ah! Right! Dio's still around here somewhere. "I have to find JoJo and the others." Hikari says as she proceeds to leave the art gallery only to stop when she heard a low chuckling that seems to echo throughout the room. "Hahahaha. My, wasn't that quite the spectacle? You've certainly surprised me."

A cold chill went down Hikari's spin when the voice spoke. She quickly looked around but found no one. "All this time I had believed you were just a harmless little flower, but I knew that a woman loved by the Joestar is unpredictable." Hikari heart raced as she quickly realised exactly who this was. But why was he here?! The sun was still out! Why was he here?! She had to get out of here and find the others. There's no way she can fight him on her own. Hikari tried to get away but ended up running into his arms. "AAAH-!" Her screams were silenced.

****

Meanwhile, in Japan. It's been 43 days since JoJo and the others began their journey to Egypt. Despite Joseph telling her there was no need to worry or head out, Lily and Rosas, along with Han, who is a member of the Speedwagon Foundation and came to greet them at the airport, arrived in Tokyo to pay a visit to Holly. Lily figured Joseph was going to either scold her or yell at her for going to Japan even though he told her not too. But...well... eh, whatever he'll get over it.

As they drove down the streets, Lily glanced out the window and smiles brightly. "Rosas, stop the car for a bit. I want to get out." She says. The car stops and Rosas notices that they parked in front of soba noodle restaurant. "Madam Joestar, I don't mean to overstep, but is now really the best time to stop at a soba stand?" Rosas asked.

"And why not? I haven't been to Japan in a while. I like to get a quick bite before visiting my little girl." Lily tells him as she steps out of the car with Rosas quickly following after her. "Please Madam, you mustn't! Places such as these are for common businessmen, ladies of your pedigree should only dine at fine restaurants. I'm begging you, Madam, don't go in there!"

"Oh lighten up Rosas. Places like these remind me of my younger days running in the streets of Italy." Lily tells him as she takes out her video camera and takes as many pictures of the local landscape as possible. Briefly thinking about getting some souvenirs to send to Ceaser and Pheobe before heading inside the soba restaurant, happy as a bird while Rosas lets out a sigh.

"Mr. Rosas," Han says as he gets out of the car, wanting to speak with him in private. "Judging by the Madam's cavalier attitude, I take it you've not told her about Holly's condition?" He asked. Rosas was taken aback by his question but knows that he was right. Lily peeked her head outside and calls out to him. "Hey Rosas, are you coming inside or not?"

"O-oh, uh, I'm right behind you Madam." Rosas nervously tells her. Lily spread a smile as she ducks back inside the restaurant. With her inside, Rosas turns back to Han with worry and fear plastered on his face. "No. I haven't uttered a single word. As far as she knows her daughter is battling a severe case of pneumonia. I've worked for the Joestar family for the past thirty years. As for Ms. Holly, I've known her since she was a little girl in grade school. Believe me, I know that I have to tell her the truth but... I just don't have the heart. Even coming to Japan hasn't given me the courage."

Han was sympathetic with him but he strongly believes to tell Lily the truth as time was quickly running out for Holly. "Holly doesn't have long. If she's not saved, she'll likely die within the next few days. Would you prefer that **I** told Madam Joestar, sir?" He asked.

"No, thank you. But I've made my bed with the falses I've told the Madam and now I have to lie in it. Have to be the one to inform her." Rosas said, with Han nodding his head in understanding. "Tell me, are you absolutely sure the curse afflicting Ms. Holly would be lifted if Dio is killed?"

"I am. Dio's demise will end this, trust me." Han tells him. "Holly's body is reacting to energy from something known as a Stand. But only people with said Stands can observe the phenomenon. Put simply, Dio's dark energy is slowly destroying her but Madam cannot see the Stands. Instead, she'll have to witness to her only daughter in the throes of death. She must know. The time for secrets is over."

"Yes. Yes, you're right." Rosas says.

"You're still out here Rosas? Instead of sulking around come have some of this curry udon, it's delicious." Lily tells him with a smile as she held her bowl of curry noodles. Rosas looked at her for a brief moment as he turned back to Han. He gave him a firm nod and Rosas turns back to her with a serious, yet solemn look before walking up to her. "Please, listen Madam. There is something that I need to tell-."

"Nice, a vending machine. Rosas, would you like something to drink from here?" Lily asked him, interrupting him as she places down her bowl and going to the drink dispenser. Rosas goes to her side and tries again to tell her the truth about Holly. "Madam, please listen to me!" Rosas suddenly yelled in an almost desperate tone. Lily looks back at him with a surprised expression. "What is it?"

"Well, uh...it's about Ms. Holly..." Rosas began. He was going to do it. He was going to tell her the truth. Yes, there was a high chance she was going to rip off his arm and beat him with it, but he has to tell her before they arrive at the Kujo estate. Lily was listening to Rosas but then her attention was caught by some Japanese thug-looking man. But it wasn't the man who caught her attention, it was the suit he was wearing. She recognised it to the design of that famous fashion designer, Kagami Dorotéa. "Well, guess even thugs can learn how to dress, hahaha! Though I definitely wouldn't pick that floral print." Lily laughs as she took out her camera. When the thug took notice of her, he immediately gets angry and yells in her face.

"What the hell you doing lady?! Who gave you permission to videotape me, huh?!" He yelled. Rosas nearly had a panic attack and immediately tries to get the Joestar matriarch back inside the car for the man's safety. "Please Madam, get in the car." Rosas tells her as he grabbed hold of her shoulders. Lily looks at him before shrugging her shoulders and complying. "Alright." She said.

Unfortunately, that didn't sit well with the thug and stomps his way over to the small group. "Come back here damn it! We're not done! I'll be taking that camera from you before you leave!" He shouts as he grabs a fistful of Lily's collared shirt. "Who do you think you are, you're just a damn foreign hag! You're lookin' to see some blood today you rich bitch, huh?!" He shouts.

Lily's eyes widen and Rosas turned as pale as a ghost. Oh no...he just anger the beast within. The thug was left momentarily confused when the Italian woman began to lowly chuckle. "What the hell are you laughing at, you old hag?!" He shouts once more but then he flinches when Lily gives him a wicked smile. "An old hag, you say?" She questioned.

Lily grabs the thug's wrist and twisted it around, breaking it. As the thug yowls in pain Lily yells, "How this for an old hag, you sack of poorly packaged horseshit?!" Lily gives the thug a solid punch to the jaw before kicking him square in the ribs, sending him crashing against the vending machines. Breaking it and knocking the thug unconscious. Rosas and Han were left speechless and moderately terrified as Lily takes several deep breaths before relaxing and smiling brightly. "Ah, I feel better. Alright, I've had enough. Let's get going you two." Lily says as goes back into the car. "Yes, ma'am!" Rosas and Han said as they got inside and drove off.

As they resumed their way towards the Kujo estate, Rosas continues to worry himself to death about Holly and Lily's reaction to the truth of what's going on. *'I couldn't do it. I couldn't tell her Ms. Holly only has a few days left. It would break her heart, and that's the last thing I would ever want to do.'* Rosas thought to himself. The rest of the car ride was quiet. No one made any attempt to speak up and they were getting close to the Kujo household. Rosas's hands clenched at the steering wheel so tightly that his knuckles turned white and he internally panics at how to tell Lily. But in the end, he didn't have to.

"It's okay. I know there's something you want to tell me. You don't need to pretend anymore, I'm well aware of what's troubling you, Rosas. My daughter's life is in grave danger, isn't it?" Lily inquired as she stared out the window. Rosas's eyes widen as he and Han stares back at her with complete shock. Rosas hit the brakes as soon as the reached the Kujo's estates front door. The men stared at the blonde-

haired woman as they wondered how in the world she knew about Holly.

Lily solemnly looks back at them as she says, "I called Holly from New York a few times. She put on a brave face and pretended to be cheerful and lively. She tried her best to convince me it was only a mild cold. Whenever Joseph phoned, he would tell me his business trip kept him very busy, that I had nothing to worry about. But I knew they were keeping something wrong important from me. Deep down I knew something terrible was happening to my daughter and husband." Lily then began to think of the happier times when she and her family were together.

Her first time meeting Joseph. Their wedding. Formally meeting his grandmother Viola. Having a beautiful child. Though the events that lead to that happiness had been nothing but hell, Lily was grateful for everything that's happened in her life. Even forgiving her parents for what they've done to her once she had Holly, despite them being on non-speaking terms. It's because of these events and memories that Lily was able to read in more than what her child and husband have been telling her.

"I've been married to Joseph for fifty years now, and my sweet Holly is my own flesh and blood. I never pressed them for more information because I was afraid of what they'd say. I've wanted nothing more than to see my precious daughter, but the thought of what I find here was almost too much." Lily tells them.

"You know this much, so you also have the right to know the rest. As it stands your daughter has a few days left to live. That's why Mr. Joestar and the others went to Egypt, to end the source of her illness. But there's been no news for a while." Han says to her.

"Please... Can you find it in your heart to forgive me for not telling you?" Rosas sadly asked her, guilty for not saying anything sooner. "There was nothing we can do for Ms. Holly so I wanted to spare you from the pain but I was wrong! I should've told you! It was cruel of me not too."

Lily sit upright and gave her butler a sharp look. "I don't want to hear any more of that foolishness Rosas!" She said, surprising the men. "No

matter how grim things seem, there's still one thing we can do for Holly." With that, Lily gets out of the car and walks straight into the Kujo estate with Rosas following close behind. There was one thing she can do for her child. Something that Joseph had given her when they battled together. It was the one thing that help gave her the courage to keep on fighting. Despite her grief, Lily comes to her daughter's aide and gazes at her by the doorway.

Her child, who would always so bright and so strong, now looked so pale and weak. Holly opens her eyes and smiles weakly when she saw her mother at the doorway. "Hi, sweet girl." Lily said with a small smile as she walks over to her, kneeling and giving her the biggest hug. Holly wraps her arms around her mother and said, "I'm so glad...you're here." Rosas stood out of sight, stiff as a board as he recalled Lily's words.

"Listen to me very carefully, Rosas. Right now, the one thing we can do for my daughter is have faith. I don't understand everything that's happening, but here's what I ***do*** *know. Joseph and my grandson Jotaro, are putting their lives on the line in the hope of saving Holly. And I believe they will find a way to do just that. He's never failed me. Not once, in the fifty years, I have known him, he's kept every promise he's made since the two of us met in New York! Once he's made up his mind to do something, nothing in this world can stop him."*

Lily pulled away, just a bit, to give Holly a reassuring look as she gently caresses her hair in a soothing motion. She smiles down at her daughter as she says, "Rest and believe in Jotaro and your father. You'll be better before you know it and our family will be together once again."

"Thank you, mama." Holly says with a weak smile.

Rosas took off his hat and began to cry. "Madam Joestar! Ms Holly! Please hang in there!" He sobbed as both women trust Joseph and Jotaro to solve whatever problem has arisen.

****

With a sudden jolt, Hikari woke up and found herself in a dark, cold room. She quickly got back up and got into a defensive position.

Where was she? Was she still inside the mansion? If so, which part of the mansion was she? ...And where was *he* hiding? She flinched when she suddenly heard something striking a match and whirled around to see a lit candle just a few feet away from her. Still keeping her guard up, Hikari cautiously walked over to the candle.

He must've captured her for a reason. Why else would he just show up to her like that? Hikari didn't know what he wanted with her, and quite frankly, she didn't want to know. She picked up the candle and used it to see where she was. It looked to be a bedroom. One that was surrounded by tarps covering most of the walls and tables and chairs. Curiosity got the better of her and Hikari went to the nearest one and pulled the tarp to the side. She discovered one of them to be a painting of a very beautiful woman that was recently made. She had fair skin, vibrant red hair and the most enchanting emerald eyes she's ever seen. ...No, wait a sec... That wasn't right. Hikari did feel like she'd seen those eyes somewhere.

That's when a certain smell went up her nose. Hikari covered her nose once the sent of metallic rust sank in. Ugh, what is that smell? She looked back at the painting and her eyes went to the woman's hair. Her eyes widened in shock and Hikari carefully reached up to brush her finger against's it. When she took her finger back, Hikari realised that it was blood. Blood had been used to paint the woman's red hair.

Hikari looked back at the other tarps and took them off one by one to reveal even more paintings. After the sixteenth tarp, her heart sank as every painting she found held nothing but the woman. Every. Single. One. And in every one of them, blood had used for her hair. Just who was this woman? Why were so many of her? Hikari stepped back from the paintings and her back hit a desk, which knocked over a book.

She knelt to pick it up but her eyes caught something unusual written in it. "The...plan to attain "Heaven"?" She said quietly to herself. Before she could read it any further, a very familiar voice asked, "Humans are so beautifully fragile, don't you think?" Hikari dropped the book and whirled around and let out a frighten gasped when she saw Dio standing there within the darkness. She didn't know how or why, but she knew that he was smiling at her. And it wasn't a

pleasant one at that either.

Play music here

"Wh...what do you want from me?" Hikari asked as she went on the defensive. Dio chuckled at her as he quietly strolls over to one of the many paintings. Picking one up and caressing the woman's face. "Sometimes I wonder, what a tragedy it is to love something ephemeral." He says.

Hikari blinked in confusion. What was he talking about? Love? Was he talking about that woman there? Hikari swallows her uneasiness and carefully asked, "Th..that woman... Are you saying...that you love her?"

Dio's smile, as he continued to stare at the beautiful woman, turned more sinister and lustfully. He had said before that he didn't. That he merely wanted to have her as his own. But when the thought came to him that had been stolen from him, taking out from his grasp, he then began to think that if he did claim her, Dio was almost certain that, with time, he would come to love her. "I do. More than you might think. More than **they** might think." He said. "You may not know who this woman was or know what she means to me...but let's say that this woman had lit a fire inside my heart that will never be extinguished." He places down the painting before he continued.

"Before, a hundred years ago, there was a time when divine beings walked among mortals, tempering their heavenly glows inside a body made of flesh and bones. And their wings glamoured so intricately that only a chosen few could see. A chosen few who was loved so dearly by the angels. That angel of roses was this woman here, but it wasn't me that she had chosen to love...! Instead she was taken by a member of the Joestars!" Dio yelled at the top of his lungs. Hikari flinched back. Hearing the anger, hate and venom that dripped from his words.

"That man, though he was the one of the only few who I hold deep respect for, was nothing but a mere mortal, while she was something else. Something holy, something divine, Something angelic. And she could've been mine!! I'd be ten times the man Jonathan was! And though her body and bones have been reduced to ash...I know I can

still have her. She will be mine forevermore." Dio says as turns to face the sapphire-eyed girl. "And she'll need a body to come back to.

A cold shiver ran through Hikari's body. She didn't know what was going on, but she had to get out of here and fast. Without looking away, Hikari tried to find the door that leads to the outside of this room and find Jotaro and the others. She has to get to them and tell them that she has found DIo. But before she could, the Vampiric demon suddenly appears before her. Gripping at her neck tightly as his gold staring directly into her soul.

"You are loved by the Joestar. And while your "beauty" pales in comparison to my gorgeous rose, you'll still be the perfect vessel for her once you're dead. She'll live on as you, and in return causing the greatest despair. Jotaro will lose the one he loves and Jonathan will be ripped away from her in the afterlife! I will finally obtain what is rightfully mine!!" Dio shouts with a sadistic smile of his face as he begins to strangle Hikari. He has been playing this for hundreds of years now, he's thought of every detail to gain ultimate power and have Viola all to himself in the process! All he needs to do is to kill this girl, kill the Joestar family and carry out the rest of his plan.

Hikari's tears began to flow. How the pain hurt so much. Dio's claw-like nails dug into her skin as blood began to pour slowly. Hikari could barely keep her eyes opened. Dio couldn't help licking lips as he watched the woman in his grasp slowly become vulnerable and in danger. How he wished to see Viola in the same state. Dio bared his teeth in a gleeful grin as Hikari passed out in his grasp, her skin whitening as his nails starved in her body and blood being spilt rapidly. He squeezed her neck tighter; a few more seconds and she would be nothing more than a lovely corpse for his rose to inhabit.

'Just a few more seco...' Dio thought to himself before Soundless Voice suddenly appeared in front of him. "Got ya." She said, Hikari's voice speaking through her. Soundless Voice slammed her hands against Dio's chest and unleashed her attack on him. Dio hadn't expected this and he flew across the room, crashing against his many paintings as Soundless Voice helps her master by getting out of the room as quickly as possible.

Dio laid there, unmoving as a smile crept onto his lips. He then

started to chuckle to himself. The women of the Joestars never ceased to amaze him. He'll let her go for now. There's still plenty of time before he'll get her again. He's waited a hundred years, what's another day?

Chapter 55: DIO's World, Part 1

With the new opening, the rest of the Joestar group took off running down the hallways. As they ran, unbeknownst to them, however, they were being listened on by another Vampire named Nukesaku who had his ear pressed down on the ground, hearing their footsteps. He was a small, pale-skinned male vampire. He has long, unkempt black hair, purple eyes and wears a dark jumpsuit over which he sports an assorted vest and boots, a loincloth, multiple ringlets on the wrists and ankles, and an animal print taqiyah.

He chuckles to himself as he begins to gloat over being the last survivor. "That Cool Ice, Billie Jean, even D'Arby Younger. Hahahaha...I knew they were nothing but incompetent fools." Nukesaku says as he lifted himself off the ground and jumped onto the ceiling. Laughing and smiling to himself. "Heheheheehe-hahaha!! I shouldn't laugh but knowing they got what they deserve feels so satisfying!! That's what the fools get for calling me a loser! But at least now we know I wasn't one after all!"

"Don't be absurd. You can't possibly defeat the Joestars using that pathetic power." Cool Ice says.

"Out of the way, loser." D'Arby tells him.

"Hey, but that's not fair! I want a chance to fight them too!" Nukesaku called out to them, practically begging them to take him with them.

"You're merely an ordinary Vampire." Cool Ice said.

"You best stay out of our way or we might end up killing you." Billie Jean said, holding back a laugh.

"Do try to behave yourself, loser." D'Arby says as he and the others walked away, leaving him behind.

Nukesaku growls in anger at that memory. "I'll be the one who

finishes off Jotaro!" He shouts as he jumps off the ceiling to initiate his plan.

The group came across a stairway and didn't hesitate running up the long flight of steps. Once they reached the top Kakyoin immediately stopped putting his arm up to stop the group from continuing. "Stop! There's something up ahead to the right!" A door to the room was slightly ajar. Everyone grew tense as they felt a presence approach. Heavy breathing could be heard as a young woman appeared in the doorway. She wore simple earrings, a light dress, and a stylish belt. Her face was flushed, and she appeared terrified as she leaned against the door.

"A woman."

The woman's eyes got big, and she let out a shrill shriek of terror. "Please have mercy on me! I'm begging you, don't suck my blood! Anything but that!" The woman started to cry as she shakily approached the group. "I swear I'll do whatever you want! Just let me live, that's all I'm asking!" She cried as she fell to her knees.

"Hey, easy now. You need to calm down." Joseph said.

"I won't run away anymore! You can trust me! Please have mercy!" The woman cried.

"Just breath." Joseph tells her. "We aren't Dio's minions, and were certainly not Vampires! We're the good guys! So just calm down and let us help you!" The woman abruptly stopped crying and looked up at them with hope. "You're good guys? G-good guys, you're...really not those evil Vampires? You're actually going to help me get away from here?"

Jotaro approached the woman. "That's right. We're good." He says. The woman gave a grateful smile and dove at Jotaro, she didn't even get close to the tall teen when she was met with a fist to the face by Star Platinum and the woman flew back. Some of her teeth flew out her mouth as blood gushed from her lips and nose. "Real good at punching evil in the face." Jotaro said as the woman crashes through the door and landed on the ground with a heavy thud.

"If you still want help, we'll be happy to oblige. We'll help by sending you a one-way trip to hell! Sound good, Kakyoin? Nemuru." Joseph said. The two teens gave a firm nod in agreement. The woman twitched before flipping over revealing a Nukesaku's face on the back of her head. "H-how?! Damn it!! Tell me!! How?! How?! How did you figure it out!? My power is impossible to crack!" The vampire yelled.

"Would this power have anything to do with the face of a woman on the back of your head?" Kakyoin questioned. Nemuru had a closed-eyed smile on her face as she placed her hands on her hips. "For future reference, when you flip your head you should make sure your hands match too, you dumbass."

The woman part of the Vampire looked down at "her" hands to see that they were indeed the wrong way, whereas with a normal person the thumbs pointed outwards when the palms were turned up, but "hers" were facing inwards. "Shit, you're right! I never noticed! I'm an idiot!" The Vampire exclaimed as he turned his arms properly. "No, you're a loser." Jotaro tells him as he approaches the idiotic Vampire. "Now where's Dio's room? Out with it." Jotaro demanded.

"Jotaro, try not to knock him unconscious. He can take us to Dio." Kakyoin said. "He's right. Let's wait till after he guides us to Dio's room, then we can kick him while he's down." Nemuru suggested. The moronic Vampire clenched his teeth and stood up, glaring at the tall delinquent. "How dare you! Don't you call me that! You're just like those others guys, so you'll meet the same fate!" He opened his mouth wide revealing his fangs and jumped at Jotaro. "I'll kill you! Lord Dio's powers made me immortal! And I'll use all of it to rip you to pieces!" The Vampire aimed his jaws at Jotaro, but instead of biting into human flesh, Nukesaku found himself biting into Star Platinum's arm.

"So unless I heard wrong, you just said you were an immortal. So you're a Vampire like Dio. In which case, I can use as a practice dummy for when I fight against the real thing." Jotaro says.

"Oh my God." Joseph gasped.

"ORAORAORAORAORAORAORAORAORAORAORA ORA!" Next came Star Platinum with a series of "ORA's!" using the vampire

as the practice dummy that he is and the vampire flew back, breaking several columns. He landed bloody and bruised on the ground. Jotaro went over to him. Grabbing him by his suit and observed the Vampires painfully swollen face. "So you really are immortal. Vampire or not, we can still rip you into little pieces and scatter them around the room." Jotaro said. "Well, are you taking us to Dio or not? The sun is about to set."

"Okay..." The Vampire weakly spoke. "But can I at least ask you one thing...?"

"Hm?"

"How the hell did you know the other Stand users used to call me 'loser'?"

Jotaro sighed. "Ugh man, good grief."

****

Meanwhile.

"I've got to hand it to him. Dio's got some pretty nice curtains." Polnareff says as he patches up his and Iggy's injuries on the stairs leading that seems to be leading to a tower. "Once we're done here, we have to find Hikari. I can't believe she would do something so reckless. I fear that she might be rudding off of us." Avdol said.

"By the way, speaking of which, what the hell happened? What happened to the both of you once Cool Ice appeared?" Polnareff asked him, taking a glance at the fortune-teller's missing arm. Avdol let out a sigh and a sad smile. "I'm aware that I went back on our word, and I'm sorry for that. But the very moment I pushed you and Iggy out of the way, Hikari had somehow used both her shield and attack to create that flash of light. She used that time to save me before Cool Ice could kill me. I'm extremely grateful to her. It's because of her I was able to escape at the cost of my arm. We had to go into hiding after that. Hikari had to use up every ounce of power to heal me." Avdol then gave a small laugh. "That girl is rather stubborn in her own way. We should've known her heart was too honest and pure to leave anyone to fend for themselves."

Polnareff let out a laugh of his own. "Heh-heh. Yeah...you have to give her credit. That was pretty ballsy of her to just eject from the room like that. Hahaha...but seriously we have to find her. Jotaro's going to have our asses if he finds out."

"Agreed." Avdol says. Iggy giving a small smirk of his own. *"That kid sure is gutsy. Stupid, and a bubblehead, but gutsy. She's alright in my book."* He thought.

"Alright." Polnareff says as he tightens the makeshifts around his foot. "Now, I can run and even jump around if I need to. It still hurts a bit, but now's not the time to worry about a little pain." He and the others were about to head up the stairs when they suddenly notice a presence and sees Dio up the stairs. Dio dons on an orange jacket with a tight black tank-top underneath, as well as orange chaps with an exposed crotch. On his head is a green heart-adorned circlet to match his knee guards. He also wears a necklace covering his neck scar and green heart motifs above his feet and on his pant legs. He wears orange pants with suspenders, clogs, shiny cuffs on both wrists, and green heart-shaped knee guards.

"Ah, greetings Polnareff. Avdol. What a pleasant surprise." Dio said with a smug grin on his face.

"Dio. ...At last." Polnareff says as he and the others readied themselves to fight.

"You've finally come out. Dio." Avdol says.

Dio let out a laugh as he gives the trio a slow clap. "A job well done Polnareff. You've managed to avenge your sister. But what's most impressive is that you also found the time to track me down." The Vampire said, congratulates Polnareff for having made it this far from the Far East and having avenged his sister. But condescendingly.

"Heh, I'll gladly kill you to celebrate. But I think we should start with this first." Polnareff says as he grabs one of Dio's torn white curtains and purposely spits blood on it. Dio narrows his eyes at that but still lets out a chuckle. "I'll give you a chance to rethink. Descend now and, not only will you live, you'll be able to serve me again." He says to Polnareff. "Or you can choose to rise forth, however, you'd be

ascending to your doom."

"Polnareff, you mustn't listen to him." Avdol tells his friend.

The Frenchmen gave a cold stare at the Vampire. Naturally, Polnareff goes up to confront DIO. "When the two of us first met, fear consumed me like a curse. It gave your evil carte blanche to manipulate me like a puppet. That fear was the beginning of a futile existence with no end in sight. It was a fate worse than death. A wretched life devoid of any desire other than doing your bidding. But that fear has been eradicated, leaving only the burning will to fight. I've spent 45 days travelling with Mr. Joestar and the others, and in honour of those who've shed blood and tears on that journey, I'll never fear you again."

Dio licked his lips in anticipation. "My, aren't we confident? Climb these stairs and put that bravado to the test." Dio tells him. Polnareff, Avdol and Iggy gave each other a firm nod as they took one step towards the Vampiric demon. But then, the latter surprisingly compliments them. "Quite the interesting decision." He chuckled. "You've all backed down after all. Is that your clever way of telling me you want your former lives back?" Confused at what he was saying, the others looked down and found themselves down the stairs. Shocked, they tried to go up but again, found themselves back at the bottom of the steps.

"What in the hell?! But we went up the stairs, I'm sure! What happened?!" Polnareff questioned in disbelief.

"Problem? You all seem to be shaking? But why is that? Could the winds of fear have extinguished your burning resolve? Perhaps the only steps you took were in your mind and in actuality fear overrode your consciousness, wrestling control from your brain. Causing you to descend down the stairs." Dio says, psych the others up by implying their subconscious fear of him.

"This is impossible..! I'm positive we've just walked up those stairs!" Avdol shouts out. The trio tried once again to run up to get to Dio, but seconds later, they were right back at the bottom. None of them could understand it. What was happening? How was this happening?! Wait... Is he doing this with his Stand? No...it can't be...! The last of

the tarot deck...! Dio's Stand is, The World?!

'What are we supposed to do now?' Polnareff questions as he stares up at Dio in shock. Polnareff and the others felt all the hairs on their bodies stand up on end as they stood before Dio. For some reason no matter what they did he couldn't seem to approach the evil lord.

"I'm curious, Polnareff. Avdol. Have you ever wondered what human the human soul desires most? Peace of mind. Subconsciously, all humans wish to overcome their fears. They seek fame, money, and dominance over others. All to obtain a sense of everlasting security." Dio tells them as he walked over to sit upon a throne chair that had suddenly appeared. "What a farce. They create bonds as a means of self-preservation. They say they wish to help others, purely for the sake of love and justice...but it's only to settle their feeble minds. Humanity's greatest desire is to latch on to serenity. So why? Why refuse to serve me? What greater serenity is there? Return to me and all I speak of will be yours. You don't want to challenge me, there's just no point running headlong into a meaningless death. You deserve much more."

Polnareff and the others breathed heavily as Dio stares down at them with those cold, golden eyes of his. His words were calm, soothing, and captivating. Slowly, but effectively trying to manipulate them into coming to him and become his mindless servants. No way...! They can't let him win! They can't let him draw them in!

"You're a talented Stand user. It would be a shame to kill you. Turn your backs on Joestar and live as my right hand. I promise you unending peace starting now." Dio tells them.

They have to resist! They can't let his words burrow in their heads. This monster has caused too much pain and suffering to be taken seriously like this! Refusing to submit, Polnareff shouts out, "Cut the bullshit, Dio! We've already stared death in the eye!" When Polnareff jumped up the stairs, Avdol and Iggy looked up at him with awe and followed him. His honour was an inspiration. "And we'll gladly do it again if helps uncover your Stand's abilities!" He shouts as they all summons their respective Stands and charges towards Dio.

"Hm. How disappointing." Dio says with a smirk before rising from

his chair with The World fully materializing behind him in response. "Time to meet your end!" The World was a humanoid Stand. The World is tall and has a very muscular build with grey skin and brown eyes, and clad in yellow armour. It bears a striking resemblance to Dio in terms of clothing. It wears a yellow headpiece covering its face to below the place of its nose, slanting at a steep angle from the base of its forehead to a peak situated above the rear of its head by about half its height, leaving the face of an inverted triangle visible to the front; somewhat similar to the Red Crown of Lower Egypt.

It wears small, simple twin diving cylinders on its back, connecting via short, twin-ridged cables to the rear of its mask; perhaps secured by thick, ridged or puffed straps running from the rear of its waist over both its shoulders to its front. The back of both its hands bears the shape of a simple clock face. Its chin, the base of its abdomen, its crotch and its knees are topped by light green heart shapes. Plates on its shins, its footwear bears curved, sharply-pointed toes, similar to those of Dio's outfit.

"So that's your stand, The World? Bring it!" Polnareff challenged.

"MUDA MUDA MUDA MUDA MUDA MUDA MUDA MUDA MUDA MUDA!" Dio shouts.

However, before the Stands could gain a chance to clash, the room suddenly begins to shake, then the wall exploded inward shining some sunlight into the darkroom. Dio pulled back, staying out of the sun's rays. Four figures stood in the hole of the wall, making Polnareff smile. "It's...Mr. Joestar!"

Joseph smirked. "There's no need to worry, Polnareff!" Dio smirked down at the group below before levitating and disappearing deeper into the mansion.

"Dio!"

"That was Dio! After him!" Joseph yelled running up the stairs. Jotaro and the others running close behind. "We have to tell you something first!" Polnareff shouted, getting everyone's attention. "It was only out for a moment or two but we saw him use his Stand." Avdol tells them.

"Well, we didn't actually see it, but we did feel it in a manner of speaking. It's complicated but here's the long and short of it. We were heading up the stairs to beat the life of that bastard when suddenly we were back where we started. Believe me, I know what I'm saying doesn't make any sense at all." Polnareff said.

"I can't wrap my head around what happened either. It felt like I was going insane. I'm sure he wasn't using a simple trick like hypnosis or super speed. It was something strange and terrifying." Avdol added. The group stayed silent for a moment until Jotaro spoke up. "What happened to your arm, Avdol? And where the hell is Hikari?"

The others looked at Avdol and were horrified when they saw he was missing an arm! Iggy looked worse for wear but he was still standing as best he could. What in the hell happened to them? And where **is** Hikari?! The thought of her being lost and alone in this Godforsaken mansion terrified them to no end.

Avdol and Iggy grit their teeth as the Frenchman's eyes started to water up, and he looked down. "We encountered a very dangerous enemy on our way here... We fought as hard as we could but to save us...Hikari forced us to leave while she took care of him herself... We have no idea where she is or what happened to her!" Nemuru let out a soft cry, covering her mouth and clenching her fist to her heart. The rest of the group was just as struck as Nemuru, all trying to process the sudden onset of vexation.

"Is that so...." Joseph whispered.

"We should go. Look Mr. Joestar, the sun is setting. We need to try to find Hikari quickly and hurry." Kakyoin said.

"Yeah, you're right." Joseph says. The cherry-redhead was right. As much as the missing light of their group was a dreadful thing, they can't waste time standing around in fear for her as long as Dio was alive. All they could do is hope that when they do see her again, she'll be alive and well. Kakyoin took out a large sack and dropped it on the ground. A shriek came from the sack as it hit the ground. "Alright, out with it! What's waiting for us upstairs?"

Nukesaku poked his head out the top of the sack. "The..the towers.

There's also another room at the top! It's where Lord Dio dwells during the day." He tells them.

"Is there any other staircase to the tower?" Kakyoin asked.

Nukesaku frantically shook his head. "N-No, this is the only set of stairs that leads there."

"In that case, lead the way shitbag." Nemuru demanded him as he takes him out of the sack and shoves him ahead. Before they could move further, Avdol spoke up. He had told them to go one ahead without him or Iggy. He said that with one arm, and with Iggy's ribs broken, there was no way they could fight in their state. They would only get in the way. Despite wanting to argue against it, the others knew that he was right. So, with one last salute, the group went in separate ways. Avdol and Iggy head on to get outside while the rest, with Nukesaku as their, albeit reluctant, guide, continue to go further in the mansion. They made their way up the stairs to the top of the tower where Dio hides away from the sun. About halfway up, the group suddenly stops, quickly turning around. "Do any of you sense that?" Joseph asked as he and the others looked at the darkened portion of the steps.

"Yeah..."

"Looks like someone's following us." Kakyoin says.

The Joestar Group kept their eyes locked on within the dark, and almost flinched when they way a ball of light that appeared to be getting closer. "It's an enemy!" Polnareff shouts. Jotaro narrows his eyes and Star Platinum rushed out to give their new enemy a beating when Star Platinum immediately froze when he got face-to-face with Soundless Voice. With the light coming from her hands, everyone was quick to recognise her.

"It's Soundless Voice!" Avdol said, smiling.

"Yes, that must that-!" Polnareff said excitedly when Soundless Voice began to shed tears and give a relief smile. She faded once a certain golden-haired girl came into view. She wiped the tears from her face when she saw them. Thank goodness she found them. She had been

so worried about them.

"Hikari!" Everyone called out in joy and relief. Jotaro immediately broke through them and ran towards her. "JoJo..." Hikari managed to say before she was pulled into his arms. Hikari smiled as she wrapped her arms around him, holding him tightly. "I'm so happy all of you are safe." Hikari whispered. Jotaro stayed silent but held Hikari tighter, allowing the girl to snuggle into his chest. Everyone smiled at the lovely scene.

Jotaro pulled away just a bit and cupped her beautiful face. Grateful to God or whoever rules this universe that she was still alive. "Are you hurt?" He asked. Hikari shook her head, still smiling. "No, no. I'm okay. Are you hurt?" She asked him as he held one of his hands.

"Who cares?"

"I do." Hikari said as she placed a soft kiss on Jotaro's cheek. However, that wasn't going to cut it for him. Jotaro pulled a surprised Hikari into a powerful kiss. Hikari's cheeks were a perfect cherry pink as Jotaro kissed her, feeling all of his emotions for her in the affectionate activity. They say actions speak louder than words and Jotaro was indeed a man of action. The couple broke their kiss and that's when Jotaro's eyes looked down, he became shocked when he saw bandages wrapped around her neck. Faint spots of blood seep through them. "What happened?" He asked.

Hikari was initially confused at what he meant but quickly knew as she reached for her neck. That's right, she had almost forgotten. It amazed her that she had almost forgotten the way it felt to have Dio's nail's burrow themselves into her neck. Draining her. Hikari held a crestfallen look as she simply said, "Dio." That was all he needed. Jotaro grit his teeth in anger. As if Dio hadn't pissed him off enough already. The tall delinquent took her hand and the group resumed their way up the stairs until eventually, they made it.

The room was completely dark the only source of light coming from a few lit candles. There was a light fog gracing the ground. In the centre of the room was a large coffin, Dio's Coffin. Joseph looked at Jotaro and the two men nodded to each other. Star Platinum came out and punched a hole in the boarded-up windows letting sunlight

pour in the room.

Nukesaku screamed, falling back and scooting as far away from the sun's rays. "So that's him...." Joseph said. "The two of us have never met, but I've known about this monster for longer than I care to remember." *'How could I not know this fiend? The thought of him has been burned into my mind ever since the day I was born!'* The same can be said for Jotaro. They hoped this day would never come. That they never had to face Dio. But as Joestars, they knew they'd eventually have to destroy him.

'I have no regrets. I can on this journey on my own free will. So I can live with whatever happens from here on out.' Kakyoin thought. Subconsciously reaching over to take in Nemuru's hand. The dark-purple haired girl kept her eyes on the coffin but still laced her fingers with Kakyoin's. *'It's just about over. I've made it this far, and I'm sure as well am never going to back down now. Mother...I know you're here somewhere. Don't worry, once Dio's gone, I'll come save you.'* She thought.

'I've never seen things more clearly. It's like a light of clarity has washed over me. My friends are that light while Dio is darkness. My body may be broken and battered, but the fear has vanished. Virtue and light has purified my soul.' Polnareff thought.

'This is it.' Hikari thought. *'We can end this, rid the world of a great evil and save Ms. Holly.'*

"We'll attack the moment Dio steps out of the coffin. Stay at the ready. We don't know what tricks he has up his sleeves." Joseph advised. The group spread out around the coffin. "It's time, loser! Open the coffin!" Joseph ordered. Nimrod squealed and turned to Dio's coffin in a jerking motion. "W-w-whatever happens L-Lord Dio, you have to know, I've never betrayed you!" Nukesaku took shaky steps towards Dio's coffin. "I only led these degenerates here because I knew you have the power to easily dispose of them! As certain as a man wetting himself when pissing into the wind, you're victory is assured, you are all-powerful! Please don't be angry with me!"

"Enough of the grovelling!! Open the damn coffin!" Joseph yelled.

"Please, I'm begging you! Give these bastards and bitches a cruel and horrifying end! Lord Dio!!" Nukesaku put his hands on the coffin lid and started opening it.

"Get ready everyone." Joseph says Nukesaku had opened the coffin up wide enough for all to see. Hikari gasped when the coffin fully opened, only to reveal Nukesaku inside. The vampire's jaw was completely broken and his body has been cut to pieces. "Why...?" Nukesaku gasped. "I don't know what's going on. How'd I get in here?! I was just...opening the coffin!!" It was somewhat hard to make out what he was saying since his jaw had been practically ripped off.

"What the hell?! How did he-?! My eyes were locked on loser-boy the entire time!" Joseph shouted. "Did anyone else see him get in the coffin! Wait... Did someone put him in there without us knowing?!"

"No, I was watching him just like you were! He's opening the coffin one second and the next he's inside it!" Polnareff exclaimed.

"I-It's like he was teleported inside in the blink of an eye." Hikari said.

"Polnareff's right! But I don't believe it's a mind trick, and it's not super speed either!" Kakyoin said.

"We're in trouble. We're in big trouble!" Nemuru shouted.

"Good grief, is he playing games with us?!" Jotaro said.

Suddenly a powerful presence overtook the room, and it was out to kill them! "Get out of here!" Joseph shouted. Hikari felt a large arm wrap around her waist, and she was lifted off the ground. Jotaro carried Hikari with him as he and the rest of the guys dived out of the tower through the window. "Damn you!" Polnareff cursed, not moving.

"What are you doing!? Come on!!" Joseph summoned Hermit Purple and wrapped it around Polnareff's neck, dragging the silver-haired man out the window. "Let me go!" The group was now in a free fall, Hikari hadn't realized how tall the tower had been. She held on tight to Jotaro as the group continued to descend.

"Okay, what was that feeling back there?! The ominous presence it was giving off was far more powerful than our group has ever encountered before! It was like knowing a bulldozer is coming after you just from the sound of its roaring engine!" Kakyoin exclaimed.

"The energy was so strong. I felt like I couldn't breathe with how dark and powerful it was in there! And I'm the master of darkness!" Nemuru said.

"Yeah, I sensed it too! That insane lust to kill us! It felt like somebody shoving an icicle up my ass! If we hadn't escaped when we did, whatever that was would've killed us for sure!" Joseph said.

As the group got closer to the ground, they brought out their Stand's grabbing the edge of the building. Hikari was still held close against Jotaro, his grip tight on her not letting her drop. They climbed onto a roof catching their breath trying to shake off the terror that they had just felt. "Damn it! Just look at the sun!" Joseph cursed watching the sun barely peeking over the horizon. "It's almost gone below the horizon!"

"Dio will have the advantage in the dark." Kakyoin said.

"Hang on. Come again?! Please don't tell me you guys are planning to run away and hide until dawn!" Polnareff pointed at Joseph. "Listen to me, Mr. Joestar! I'm finishing this! There's no way I'm packing up and heading for the hills!"

"You're right. We have to see this through to the end." Kakyoin added.

"Yeah, so am I." Nemuru said.

Hikari looked worried. It would be a smart idea to simply wait Dio out, but who knows where the vampire might run off to, or he might not run off at all. With free rein of the city, he could easily locate and hunt down the group one by one. In the end, if they were able to survive hiding out till sunrise, there's a chance that Holly won't last till the next sunrise.

"I want to get this over with as much as you do, but the tide of battle

has turned. While not up close, we've faced his Stand, The World, but we still have no idea what it's powers are. We're fighting blind here! Think of it this way, it's like mountain climbing without knowing the route. If we try to fight Dio right now, we'll all die. That fact is as inevitable as burping after knocking back a couple of colas! Dio would be a fool not to come racing after us. But he only has until sunrise to kill us! In the meantime, we need to learn the extent of his Stand's power and find a way to put him down! If we can just hold out until then-!" Joseph said.

"No way! I'm not going back on my word!" Polnareff shouted. "Avdol, Iggy, and Hikari suffered because of my weakness! I have to kill Dio! I'll go to hell and back to do it, but what I won't do is run away from my obligations!!" Polnareff took off running.

"No, come back Polnareff!"

"Forget it. He's not gonna listen." Jotaro said.

"Jotaro, what do you think we should do now?" Kakyoin asked.

"He went down there to fight Dio. As we retreat, we'll also be fighting him. Which means, we'll be attacking from both sides at once." Jotaro tells them.

Chapter 56: DIO's World, Part 2

The sun had completely set and Hikari was anxious having the feeling that someone was constantly watching her, it had to be Dio. The group, minus Polnareff, had to be on constant alert for who knows when Dio will strike. The five decided to split up. Joseph with Kakyoin and Nemuru and Jotaro with Hikari. Hikari was extremely nervous, she's been doing well so far holding her own, but Dio's mere presence shook her to her very core. That incident when he captured still haunted her. She shudders to wonder of what exactly would have happened to her if she hadn't got away.

A large hand was placed on her shoulder and Hikari looked up meeting Jotaro's eyes. She was rather surprised when Jotaro bent down placing his forehead on her's. He didn't say anything, but he didn't have to, Jotaro's actions always spoke louder than his words. Hikari could hear what Jotaro was trying to tell her.

"No matter what, I'll protect you."

Jotaro pulled away from Hikari, and she had calmed down a significant amount. "Thank you, JoJo." She said with a kind smile. Jotaro nodded his head than two continued with their other mission.

****

"Hey, buddy. Let us by this truck off ya. What do you say?" Joseph asked.

"The hell is wrong with you?! This baby's my bread and butter, no way I'd-...It's all yours." The man initially should but happily obliged once Joseph gave him a stack of cash. Once the truck became theirs, Joseph and Kakyoin hopped inside and started the engine while Nemuru took the bed of the truck. "Buckle up Kakyoin, Nemuru." Joseph says as they drove down the streets. Watching them, peaked from the top of the tower, Dio stood still for a while a dark gaze on his face, he smirks to himself as he then took off into the night sky.

Polnareff was crouched behind a tall bush, lurking near Dio's mansion. He had been watching him and he vowed to put in end to the Vampire Lord once and for all. Polnareff stood up about to run after him when suddenly, "Hold it Polnareff." Jotaro said, grabbed his shoulder. Causing the Frenchman to turn around. "I had them let you go because convincing stubborn guys like you is a pain in the ass. But the old man, Kakyoin and Nemuru insisted we'd stay close to watch your back. So here we are." Polnareff smiled, knowing full well that Jotaro and Hikari stayed on their own accord. "Jotaro. Hikari."

Jotaro gave a small smile back and Hikari giggled. "Oh, good grief."

****

They've been driving down the streets for a few minutes now, but even with the distance they made, Dio's presence still weighs heavy on their shoulders. Joseph looked at the rearview mirror and tells his friends, "I still sense Dio's sinister bloodlust. Its presence is overwhelming..! He's coming for us. You can bet your ass he's on our trail."

"Are you saying that Dio somehow knows our precise location?" Kakyoin asked.

"I wouldn't put it past him." Nemuru said.

"Not quite. He stole the body of my grandfather, Jonathan Joestar. I

can sense his body but I can't tell if he's nearby or far away. I have a general feeling but I don't know exactly where he is." Joseph explains to them. "It's like when we got to Cairo and, while I knew he was here, I couldn't pinpoint his lair. Lucky for us, the same thing goes for Dio. All he knows is that we're nearby but he's unable to tell the difference between us. And he probably doesn't know we've separated, which is good for now."

"Maybe... But I hope all of us makes it out of this." Nemuru says.

****

Now that they had Polnareff, the three needed a ride. Jotaro quickly located a motorcycle ripe for the taking. Polnareff went to and grabbed at the wires. He tried to hotwire it to start up the engine but it wasn't working much to the Frenchman's annoyance. Being the cool guy he was Jotaro simply gave the motorized vehicle a swift kick to the side and it started up immediately. Using Star Platinum, Jotaro broke the chain tethering the bike to a telephone pole then got on.

Hikari and Polnareff stood off to the side watching Jotaro, slightly awed by his actions. Well, Polnareff was awed Hikari was pondering how the world Jotaro thought all three of them were going to fit on that motorcycle. Her thoughts were answered when Jotaro grabbed her around the waist and pulled her on the motorcycle sitting in front of him sidesaddle style. Jotaro then turned to Polnareff and said, "Okay, it's running. Hurry up and get on Polnareff."

"O-Oh yeah." Polnareff said, getting on the back. Hikari was pushed closer to Jotaro and nestled into his chest. As Jotaro drove off she had to hold on tight wrapping her arms the best she could around his torso, so she wouldn't fall off, well she knew Jotaro would never let her fall, and she also had Soundless Voice to catch her.

****

After driving for what felt like hours, Nemuru looked back and saw a car, which was covered with blood speeding its way towards them. Nemuru didn't need to know who was in that car. She banged on the window and shouted, "He's here!" Joseph and Kakyoin looked and saw the car for themselves.

As Dio catches up to Joseph's truck, Kakyoin immediately summon Hierophant Green to attack him. The emerald robotic Stand flew towards the car and stopped when the spotted Dio in the backseat. The Vampire was slightly surprised to see him. "Take this Dio! Emerald Splash!" Kakyoin shouts as he launches his attack.

However, it wasn't going to be that simple.

Dio calmly sits in his seat as the emerald's flew towards him. He smiled he chose one of the green jewels and flicked it. Sending it ricocheting the others, missing him entirely as it broke through the door. "Unbelievable! He deflected my attack with a flick of a finger! He barely moved!! But how do you like this?!" Kakyoin yelled as he shot out his Emerald Splash, but it was more concentrated. He fired, but Dio was still so calm. With a simple wave of his hand, he redirected the emeralds to shoot up through the car's ceiling.

"He even dodge the concentrated splash?! Damn it!!" Kakyoin shouts. Before he could even think to move, The World had suddenly appeared before him. Catching him off guard. "When did he bring out his Stand?! How could I have missed that?!" Kakyoin shouts.

When The World moved to attack, Hierophant Green quickly brought up his arms to defend himself. "AAUGH!!" He yelled out when The World sucker-punched him. The force behind that punch was enough to send him flying, crashing through several street signs and a street lamp.

"Well, that's a shame, he's too far away now." Dio says to himself. "My punch seems to have thrown him out of The World's range." The signs and lamp that the Stands were knocked through across the road but Dio's driver, who had become insane because of him, managed to avoid them.

"Kakyoin! You stupid idiot, are you okay?!" Nemuru shouted, worry in her voice as Kakyoin was breathing heavily once he called back his Stand. Kakyoin had only gotten a glimpse of it, but The World seemed to be much powerful than he had expected. "Be careful, Kakyoin! You were way too close to it!" Joseph scolded him.

"Please...forgive me... I didn't mean..." Kakyoin panted as blood trails

down his face and hands. As Kakyoin looked at his bloodstained hands he thought, *'It was only a few months when Dio asked if I was really going to vomit out of fear. That monster had the audacity to tell me I should relax..!'* He clenched his hands in anger. *'Bastard! Never again! I'll never lose to you again!'*

"Kakyoin? Are you alright Love? Did you catch a glimpse of The World?" Nemuru asked him.

"Yes, I saw it when I attacked Dio from 10 meters away. If I've gotten any closer, I would've been done for." Kakyoin says. "But we know one thing for certain, his Stand holds a power more horrific than we could've ever imagined. However, we know two things about it. First, his Stand doesn't have the reach of my Hierophant Green, your Shadow Mist or your Hermit Purple. It's a close-range power Stand like Star Platinum and a range of about 10 meters. Second, it attacked with his fists so it doesn't use projectile weapons like bullets. That being said, if we can sneak up on him and get within range, we just might have a chance of finishing him off."

"We have to figure out his secret. Even so, we have to excise extreme caution when approaching this bastard." Joseph tells him.

Nemuru looked back to see if Dio was still chasing them only for her to be confused when she saw that car's been pulled over and left on a divider. *'Hold on, why'd his car suddenly stop?'* She thought. She blinked and right there was her answer. Her eyes widened in shock as she yelled, "Watch out!" The men couldn't react in time as the corpse of Dio's driver was suddenly thrown at them, making the truck serve out of control before crashing into a fiery explosion. When Vampire smiles to himself as he calmly walks over to the crash site. He rips the door open, expecting to see the mangled up corpses of his enemies, only to find them gone.

Hmm, how curious. As Dio began to ponder, he looked up and smirks when he sees that Joseph, Nemuru and Kakyoin have already fled to the roofs of Cairo. The games were just beginning and Dio hated for things to be over so quickly. One must find entertainment somehow. As soon as their feet touched the rooftop, Nemuru asks her boyfriend, "Kakyoin, do you have a plan for us to get to him?"

"I understand now." Kakyoin says as he removes his sunglasses. "I know now how to uncover the secret of Dio's Stand."

"What?!" Joseph shouted in near disbelief. Now then, because of the onslaught Dio had made against them on the ground, Kakyoin, Nemuru and Joseph are forced to go to the roofs of Cairo to flee from DIO. The trio swung from rooftop to rooftop with the help of their respective Stands with DIO close behind. As they swung through the streets of Egypt, the lavender-eyed teen glances down at his Hierophant Green.

For Noriaki Kakyoin, Hierophant Green served as a poignant reminder of a time long past.

"It's Noriaki. He doesn't attempt to socialise with the other children. It's not that he's disliked per-say, he's just...seems a bit too reserved. As his teacher, I am very concerned." The teacher says as he spoke with Kakyoin's mother. He had called her over to discuss the difficulties the young boy seemed to have on interacting with his classmates.

Kakyoin's mother had listened to him very closely and while she understood what he was saying, and while she ***does*** *care and love her child very much like any mother should, she knew there wasn't much she could say. "I'm ashamed to say it but... I'm afraid I don't understand it either." She told him. Kakyoin was standing out in the hallway, listening to their conversation. About him.*

Kakyoin had always had the same thoughts. Life is full of interactions where we meet all sorts of people. But how often do those meetings involve deeper thinking? How often do we make genuine human connections? All of his classmates have address books, filled with their friends' names. Each of them must have a book of fifty...no...a hundred names. His mother has his father, and his father has his mother.

'But I have no one.' *Kakyoin was sure that even rock stars and t.v. celebrities have tens of thousands of friends.* ***'But I have no one.'*** *Kakyoin believed that he'll never have any friends. No one will ever understand him. It's because... He's the only one who could see Hierophant Green. How was he supposed to truly relate to someone if they couldn't see the real him? It's impossible.*

That's how he used to think about life until he met Joseph. Jotaro. Hikari. Polnareff. Avdol. And most importantly, Nemuru. Whenever he thought about Avdol and Hikari it makes the hairs on the back of his neck stand on end. Perhaps it's because they were the first to ever treat him like a friend. He and his friends were on a journey to defeat Dio, and while it may have been a short-lived they've understood him better than anyone.

Kakyoin swung to the top of a clocktower, surveying the whole city of Cairo. Looking at Hierophant Green was a revelation for him. *'I'll make Hierophant Green invisible to everyone like it used to be. I'll use its invisibility to my advantage and reveal Dio's secret before finishing him off for good!'* Determined to make Dio reveal his power, Kakyoin plans to use Hierophant's original ability.

****

"Hey, Jotaro!" Polnareff pointed to the left and Jotaro veered the motorcycle towards a car accident. A truck was on fire and lodged halfway through a wall. A few feet away another car laid decimated, covered in blood looking as if the roof had been ripped off. "The truck is completely totalled!" Polnareff said.

"What could've happened?" Hikari asked.

Jotaro looked up at the building the truck was embedded in and shouted, "Up there!" Hikari and Polnareff looked up towards the building's roof but saw nothing. "I can sense the old man and Dio racing across the rooftops." Jotaro claimed. Before the three could continue their pursuit a large crash was heard. Then a few seconds they spotted Joseph using Hermit Purple to swing across rooftops and hot on his trail was Dio.

****

While Jotaro, Hikari and Polnareff find the car crash, Dio lands on a rooftop and sees Joseph, Nemuru and Kakyoin alone on a nearby building. He smirks to himself as he says, "I've only dealt with Kakyoin, Nemuru and Joseph so far. Interesting. They're attempting to strike from both sides. Which means Jotaro and Polnareff must be waiting in the wings to attack me from behind." He chuckled. How futile, he mused as he hops down to another building. As soon as his

feet inched closer to the rooftop he had triggered a trap.

He was caught off guard by the unexpected **Emerald Splash** that was shot from below. Dio knocked them away and jumped up to avoid them. "This is-," Dio said before he felt something on his back. His eyes slightly widened the **Emerald Splash** were now shooting from above. "It's Kakyoin's Hierophant Green!" Dio shouted. When he jumps to avoid it, Dio again triggers another string and is soon shot from several directions.

"He turned it into a web?!" Dio questioned as he kicked away some the jewels as one shot through his shoulder. That's when his eyes widen when he sees the full truth of what Kakyoin had done with his Stand. Hierophant Green has deployed itself into a net of strings covering the entire area and trapping Dio within. Kakyoin reveals himself and confronts the Vampiric menace while Joseph and Nemuru observed from another building. However, Nemuru was planning to protect her beloved if anything were to happen. After all, it's not just shadows that she can manipulate, Nemuru has full control on darkness itself.

"Anything that touches this web is instantly fired upon. And you're surrounded for 20 meters on all sides. You're done, Dio. I've snared you and your Stand, and I can sense your every move." Kakyoin declared. Dio didn't look to worry and just smirked. Joseph and Nemuru watched on with worry. Whatever Kakyoin had planned, it better work. "NOW DIE! **Twenty-Meter Radius! Emerald Splash!!**" He shouted as he launches his ultimate attack.

"You're a fool, Kakyoin. With my Stand, I have the ability to rule the world! What can you do in the face of such overwhelming power?!" Dio taunted him with an arrogant smirk.

'Alright! Here it comes!' Kakyoin thought.

The very second 20-meter Emerald Splash approach Dio, the Vampire summons his Stand. "Behold, The World!!" He shouts. The emeralds made contact, creating a huge explosion. He got him! But...Kakyoin's eyes widened in shock as he is instantly sent flying, trails of blood spurted from his body as he crashes into a water tank with a very loud thud. Much to Joseph's and Nemuru's horror.

"Kakyoin!!" Joseph shouted.

The red-haired teen was in deep, agonising pain. He couldn't move. He couldn't speak. He just laid there was water flowed around him, he could feel his blood being drained from his body. *'I don't understand... What just happened? Did he...really hit me? I can't even move a single finger. I can't speak either. It must've been a fatal blow.'* Kakyoin thought. His eyes travelled to the clocktower despite his vision spinning and getting blurry. *'It's 5:15...which means that it's midnight back in Japan. I wonder what mom and dad are doing right now...knowing them, I'm sure they're sound asleep.'* Kakyoin had left on this journey without telling his parents. And as a result, they had no idea where he was. Day after day, they've been worrying themselves to death over their son. They were under the belief that he had run away...and that they were to blame for it. No doubt they were still waiting for their boy to come back home.

'I'm sorry for worrying you...' Despite his brief moment of reflection, Noriaki Kakyoin's last thoughts were not of his parents. His mind shifted and honed in on the question weighing heaviest on his mind. He had to find an answer...before nothingness took hold.

'I should be to instantly sense any movement within Hierophant Green's web. But somehow Dio managed to destroy the entire web, in a blink of an eye. And it wasn't one strand at a time. It was instantaneous. Not even a split second difference. How did he shatter a 20-meter radius area all at once? How...? There wasn't even a slight delay.' Kakyoin tried his hardest to remember what had happened. He swore his Emerald Splash had made contact with Dio...he was sure that it... Wait a minute...did he...did he just disappear for a moment there? *'What's his secret? Damn it...'* Kakyoin thought as he felt his life starting to fade.

"Kakyoin!!" Joseph shouted.

"NNNNNNNOOOOOOOOO!!!!!" Nemuru screamed out in total despair. What in the hell just happened?! What happened to him?! Nemuru couldn't think properly as she instantly got up on her feet and just rushed to his side.

"Shit! I've had enough of this!! Hermit Purple-!" Joseph shouted as he shot out his arm to save Kakyoin when he suddenly felt the dark

presence behind him. He whirled around and saw Dio hovering above him. "You're next on the chopping block Joseph." Dio says as he pulled down his top to reveal the scar on his neck. "In order for Jonathan's body to become mine completely, I must drink the blood of a Joestar and I think now's as good a time as any to partake."

"**DIO!!**" Joseph roared in anger.

"Kakyoin!! Kakyoin, come on! Look at me! I'm right here!" Nemuru shouts, tears rapidly flowing down her face as she panics at what to do. Obviously, she has to get him to Hikari, but how was she supposed to move him?! He was practically embedded into the water tank. She has to think! She has to get him help before it was too late. "Please just stay with me..! I'll figure out something! Just stay with me!" She cried.

'How did he destroy them all without the slightest delay in time..?' Wait... *'Time... Time... Time... The time!'* Kakyoin eyes slightly widen when he had finally understood Dio's power. *'That's it. Something as outlandish as that doesn't seem possible..! But there's no other explanation!'* He thought as he gazes at both Nemuru and Joseph. *'I have to find a way to tell the others..! They need to know the truth behind such a terrifying ability. If I can't tell Mr. Joestar or Nemuru what I've learned... The friends... and the beautiful girl I've come to love...are going to die.'*

"You're gonna pay for what you've done! Just you wait, I'm taking that body back in the name of Granny Viola!" Joseph vowed. It was all because of him! It was all because of the monster in front of him that his beloved grandmother had suffered irreversible pain for fifty years! It was he who stole away her happiness! He murdered the love of her life and killed his father! But now, Joseph was going to make certain that Dio pays for the torture he caused his family. Dio's smirk widened at the mere mention of his gorgeous rose.

"Viola... Ah, yes, that exotic and fiery creature of a woman... Hahahaha! Nonsense. I'm going to drink your blood then eliminate you vermin." Dio tells him. Why take the body back for her for? Once Dio brings Viola back, she won't be needing it. She'll have him to keep her company. He'll be everything she'll ever need and more.

Nemuru's eyes widened in horror when she saw faded, blurry form of

Hierophant Green beginning to launch another attack. "Kakyoin...? What are you doing...?" She asked weakly. Kakyoin tried to keep his concentration on this one last thing. He was to let them know. He kept his eyes locked on the target and was about to fire when suddenly he vomited out blood and his Stand feel into a pool of liquid.

"Kakyoin! Please, stop it! I don't know what you're thinking but stop it! Please...! I'm begging you...!! Save your strength, don't you leave me!!" Nemuru said, bawling as she pleaded him to stay awake. "You're everything I have left!" She's wasting time, she has to get him out of here! Nemuru grabbed hold of him and tried to pull him out of the water tank. "Now Joseph Joestar, DIE!!" Dio shouts as he rushed in to attack Joseph. Kakyoin's eyes widen with determination and, using the last of his strength, he fires a final **Emerald Splash** into the clock tower, destroying it. "That...was my final Emerald Splash....make it count." He said, weakly.

"What...?" Nemuru asked in confusion. Joseph had heard him and was also confused.

"But why? That attack was utterly pointless. Well, I suppose you're now just a dying hero longing to make his mark on the world." Dio said with a slight scoff.

'As if! Kakyoin wouldn't waste the time he has left with some meaningless attack. Why'd he go after the clock? Was it some kind of sign? Was he trying to tell me something?!' Joseph thought. Understands that there is a hidden message.

'It's a message... I don't have the strength to give you another... Mr. Joestar...Nemuru...you have to decipher it. You have to let...the others know....'

Nemuru finally pulled Kakyoin out of the water tanker and collapsed to her knees. She held him so tightly, that if she were to let him go for even a second he'll disappear in an instant. "Kakyoin...! Kakyoin, I've got you! Don't worry, I'll get you help! I'm not going to let you die!!" Nemuru told him, her tears falling on his face. Nemuru summons Shadow Mist and she immediately moves them away from there. She needed to find Hikari or a hospital or something!!

Anything! Anything or anyone who can save him!

Kakyoin's eyes fell upon her. His heart broke in half. He considered just how unfair life can be... He had finally found friends who truly understand him. He had conquered his weaknesses and fears. He had fallen in love with an amazing girl he'd ever met...and there he was...going to leave them behind. He wished he could at least move his arms...just so he can bring Nemuru close to him. Embrace her. Take in her warmth and hold her... Tell her how much he loves her...just one more time.

At this moment, a vision flashed before his eyes. He saw him and Nemuru going to school together being in a proper relationship. He saw them studying. Eating launch. Going on dates. Him introducing her to his parents...no doubt they would love her too. He saw them heading towards the future together. He saw himself proposing her under the light of the full moon while they had a small candle-lit dinner. He saw them getting married, maybe even having a kid or two with the years to come. He could almost see it. Just him, and Nemuru, happy together. And for a small moment, he saw a tiny baby with his hair and Nemuru's soft purple eyes.

"Nemuru..." Kakyoin softly said. He gave her the kindest, most adoring smile as he faintly whispers to her, "...I love you... I am yours...yours and yours alone." Before closing his eyes.

"KAKYOIN!!!!"

Chapter 57: DIO's World, Part 3

"Hermit Purple!!" A furious Joseph shouts as he entangles Dio in his thorny vines. He was going to make him pay! He was going to make him pay for what he did to Kakyoin! "Now, take this! Hamon of the sun!!" He tried to infuse his Hamon with Hermit Purple to obliterate Dio, but before it could even touch him, the Vampire spread a sadistic grin. "You old fool! Out of all the Stands I've seen yours is the weakest!!" He shouts as Vampire easily rips the vines apart. Seeing this, Joseph has no choice but to flee again.

"No, you don't!" Dio shouts as he takes chase again. While Joseph jumps from roof to roof, trying to gain a safe distance from him, Joseph tries to understand Kakyoin's hint. *'Kakyoin, why did you destroy the clock earlier? Wait, you were trying to send me a message weren't you?! But how does it relate to the clocktower?'* He thought as he swung through the street of Cairo, passing by the others just a few feet away.

"That was Mr. Joestar! And Dio's closing in!" Polnareff shouts. "Where the hell are Kakyoin and Nemuru?!"

"I don't see them anywhere. Oh no, had something happened to

them?" Hikari asked, fearfully.

'Could that be it Kakyoin? Did you figure out the secret of his Stand's ability in your dying moments?' Joseph thought to himself as he tried to decipher the message Kakyoin had managed to leave behind for him. He destroyed the clock with **Emerald Splash**, but he aimed for the hands. ...Which stopped the clock... Joseph's eyes widen in realisation as he finally understood it. Kakyoin has "stopped the clock". "No way!" Joseph shouted. "That's impossible!! Dio's Stand has to the power to... Stop time whenever Dio commands it too!!"

*"NOW DIE! **Twenty-Meter Radius! Emerald Splash!!**" Kakyoin shouted as he launches his ultimate attack.*

The very second 20-meter Emerald Splash approach Dio, the Vampire summons his Stand. "Behold, The World!!" He shouts.

In that instant, time had stopped all around him. The emeralds froze in place, and Kakyoin and his friends stood still, glaring at him with those determined eyes. Hahaha, such fools. Dio freely moved through the frozen time and easily avoiding all the Emerald Splashes while making its way out of the barrier before getting close to the vermin who dared to attack him. He smirked as he said, "Now witness the power of The World. That's right, I've caused time to stop for you which means you won't see or feel any of this. Now die, Kakyoin!!"

The World moved in and delivered Kakyoin a fatal punch through the abdomen during the time stop. Kakyoin's expression didn't falter in the slightest. He still looked so confident and brave. Not realising he was about to die. "In a way you're lucky. You won't know what happened here, only that your dying." Dio says as he turns to the others. His smirk widens when he took a glance to Nemuru as kicks Kakyoin away like he was nothing. He couldn't wait to see how she'll react. He knew that the reason she can all this way here was to save her mother. Hahahahahaha....!! Such idiocy, had she honestly believed that he won't let that shrew go even if she had done what he asked? How he can't wait to inform her that her mother's been dead for quite some time now.

"I understand now Kakyoin! That's what you were trying to tell me in your message! I'm not going to waste this chance!" With this realization in mind, Joseph tries to think of a plan. Freezing time is

bad enough but Dio being able to move around too is a deadly combo! This is unbelievable! Joseph fears that his team may not have what it takes to beat it! *'Just calm down. Calm down and think. I don't know the meaning of the word 'panic'. There has to be a way to beat him and if anyone could find it, it's me!'*

Joseph turned back and stopped on a nearby building when he noticed that Dio was gone. Only him to feel a cold chill run down his spine when he felt Dio's presence behind him. He swiftly turned around just in time to see The World going in for the punch. However, his fist stopped with mere inches from his face. Seeing this, Joseph quickly jumped back away from him. He gave is trademark smirk and said, "Say, what's the matter? Aren't you gonna hit me Dio, or don't you care about drinking my blood anymore?"

"You're running Hamon through your body to protect yourself. Quite the strategy." Dio told him. Joseph's smirked dropped. "You've wrapped your body with Hermit Purple but you infused it with Hamon like a cloak of high voltage wires. Very clever, a geriatric genius."

"Well, it seems I'm not the only clever one." Joseph says as he pulled down his shirt to reveal Hermit Purple wrapped around him with Hamon coursing through them. "It's just you said. I'm been using this little trick to protect myself. But thanks to Kakyoin's message, I've learned something about your Stand. Dio, you can bring time to a standstill, but there's a limit to the amount of time you can use that power! Only three to four seconds I say. If you can do it for a longer period than that, instead of chasing around town all night, you would've wiped us all out back at the mansion! Tracking us down tells me everything that I need to know."

"So you've finally figured it out, that's an impressive accomplishment. Ha, congratulations." Dio said. Despite Joseph telling and exposing Dio's limits in his time-stopping abilities, Dio remains supremely confident.

Joseph clenches his fist in anger and he glared at Vampiric demon with such hatred and shouted, "You should congratulate Kakyoin! He gave his life to give us a fighting chance!"

"So what, am I supposed to care?! It doesn't matter if you know my Stand's ability! What can your pathetic Hamon do against my power?!" Dio shouted, his grin still wide on his lips.

"Hermit Purple! And Hamon!" Joseph shouted as he unleashed the thorns coaxed with Hamon, determined to end him. "Idiot! I can kill you with or without going through your Hamon!" Dio shouted, he was faster and he easily overpowered Joseph. The World punched through a chimney and used the debris to make Joseph fall into the streets.

****

Hikari sat anxiously on a rooftop watching the streets below. Her, Jotaro, and Polnareff had all split up. Jotaro would go after Joseph and Dio while Polnareff and Hikari waited in the shadows to strike. Since Dio will be so focused on the Joestar's it would leave the perfect opportunity for Polnareff and Hikari to sneak attack Dio.

Hikari spotted Jotaro finally catching up to Joseph. The older man was wounded laying on the ground. "It's Jotaro! Stay back! You have to stay far away from me!" Joseph yelled at him. This was dangerous! He had to protect his grandson from getting into Dio's range. Hikari had to hold breath as she watched Dio descended from another rooftop.

"Jotaro. What good timing. But he's staying outside of my Stand's range, so Joseph goes first." Dio says in a matter-of-fact tone.

"Jotaro! Dio's Stand, The World, gives him the ability to control time! Whatever you do, stay out of it ra-!"

"Once more, The World!" Dio shouts as he brought time to a halt and lands safely on his feet, making his way towards the elder Joestar. When he began using this power, Dio was only able to freeze time for a blink of an eye. That said, as his neck began the process of healing, he found that he can stop time for two seconds, maybe three. Now he can stop time for five seconds, then again time has stopped. So from his perspective, it only feels like five seconds.

Dio walked over to Joseph's side and smirks. "Soon I'll be able to stop

time for a minute, than an hour, and later as long as I desire. How amusing. I'll have the ability to stop time to my heart's content!" Dio raised his hand and was about to chop off Joseph's head but stops when he realised that Joseph was still protected.

"Oh, I almost forgot. He's covered himself with Hamon for protection. A hundred years ago, Hamon was a concern, now thanks to The World it's little more than an irritation." Dio says as he pulled out a knife. "MUDA MUDA MUDA MUDA MUDA MUDA MUDA MUDA MUDA MUDA MUD MUDA! MUDA!" Dio shouts, throwing the knife at Joseph. Freezing in place as it was perfectly directed for his throat.

"Joseph, grandson of Jonathan, you're demise is at hand." Dio said. He turned to see Jotaro, standing a bit away, looking so confused. Unaware at what was happening. Dio's plans to destroy the Joestar bloodline is coming around as smoothly as he had hoped. "One second left... Zero."

Time resumes.

Hikari gasped as in a blink of an eye Dio was in between Joseph and Jotaro. Joseph had let out a scream as a knife was sticking out of his throat. "Old man!" Jotaro called out as he tried to run over to him but then Joseph struggled to lift his hand to stop him. His Hermit Purple, and Hamon sparking in and out of existence. "Run...away...! Get...out of here...Jo...taro! Don't...even...try to fight. Please...keep...your...distance. Stay...far away from him. He's....invincible."

Hikari gasped, covering her mouth as she saw the light leave Joseph Joestar's eyes and Hermit Purple crumbling into ashes. His hand fell limply to the ground and tears started to quickly fall from her eyes. Jotaro gave Dio a cold, murderous stare as the Vampire stood there with a smug look on his face. "Come now, don't worry. At least he's joining Kakyoin, regardless if Nemuru finds aid. Polnareff and Hikari must be hiding around here somewhere. Though, I guess it doesn't matter." Dio pointed at Jotaro. "You're next, Jotaro. Time to die."

Jotaro clenched his fist tightly glaring fiercely at Dio. "Damn you! Dio!" He shouts as he makes his way over to the demon in front of him. "Oh? So you still want to fight? It would appear pig-headedness

runs in the family. How ungrateful can you be? You're blatantly ignoring your grandfather's wishes, even after he gave his life to tell you about the power The World! Surly his pathetic pleas warranted a bit of consideration!"

"I have to move closer if I want to beat your sorry ass to a pulp." Jotaro tells him as he continued to walk towards Dio.

"Really? Okay then, by all means, come closer." Dio challenges as he begins to walk towards Jotaro. Once they were in swinging distance, "**ORA!**" Star Platinum struck but The World appeared kicking the Stand in the leg. Jotaro's pant leg ripped and the skin underneath was bleeding. "You'll have to be faster! My Stand is more powerful than any other. Even without The World's tremendous power and speed, it would outclass your pitiful Star Platinum." Dio smirked.

"Your Stand has a lot in common with my Star Platinum." Jotaro stated.

Hikari did her best to listen to Dio and Jotaro. "A lot in common with Star Platinum..." Hikari's eyes widened. "Does that mean!?"

"We're not long-range fighters, but we have incredible power and precision." Jotaro tells Dio.

"If I'm being honest, I've always had a desire to see how much stronger The World is compared with Star Platinum. But, it seems pointless to compare them now." Dio said.

"Wait, are you serious? All you did was give me a lovetap on the leg and you ripped my ¥20,000 pants." Jotaro said.

"For the life of me, I can't figure out why you Joestars are so stubborn." Dio says with a shrug of his shoulders and threw his hands up in a carefree manner. "Fine, I shall accept your cheap provocation, let our comparison resume." Amused to see such recklessness, Dio decides to play with Jotaro and enters in a contest of strength between Star Platinum and The World. But even as the two Stands begin to clash, they demonstrated that they are physically even when they exchange flurries of punches.

Hikari continued to watch as the two Stand's started to go one on one. It really did seem like Star Platinum was no match for The World, the golden Stand matching Jotaro's punch for punch. A cut appeared on Dio's cheek showing that Star Platinum was able to land a hit but the cut immediately healed as if had never appeared. Hikari was tense and worried as she watched the two battle. She wanted to help, but she promised Jotaro that she would keep her distance and lay in waiting until he gave her the signal. Hikari kept her distance, roof jumping with Soundless Voice as she followed Dio and Jotaro.

The clash between Jotaro Kujo and Dio continues. As The World and Star Platinum exchange blows, their users begin to emit so much power that they start to float. Dio smirked as The World moved past Star Platinum's hit and punched him in the face, causing blood to be spit from Jotaro's mouth. "Hahahaha, it seems I was right about The World's speed and power exceeding that of Star Platinum. So there's nothing left to do but bring this game to an end." Dio chuckled as Jotaro let out a rage-filled roar.

"It should've been done ages ago but I'll finally be rid of you Joestars once and for all!" Dio declared. "Using the power of my Stand, I will send all into oblivion! Now The World will stop time itself!" A satisfied Dio brings out his Stand and stops time once again. He grins as he meets a frozen Jotaro and Star Platinum. He glides towards the tall delinquent as he says, "Jotaro, you're exasperating family line is just moments away from being eradicated. My hundred-year struggle with the Joestars ends with you. Begone!" He raised his hand and prepares to kill Jotaro in that instant, when suddenly-!

A finger twitched.

Dio immediately froze as he stared at Jotaro with shock. What was that? Was he seeing things? Had he just imagined it? Dio kept his eyes locked on Jotaro's hand and, with anger and annoyance, grit his teeth and jumped back when he saw Jotaro's finger briefly twitches in the stopped time.

"He moved his finger! But how?! What's going on?! He shouldn't be able to think let alone move! Wait... there's no way. Is his power...the same as...The World's?" Dio then becomes initially very distraught as he stares at Jotaro's twitching fingers and began to realize Jotaro's

words he said moments earlier might be true.

"Your Stand has a lot in common with my Star Platinum."

"Did he mean The World and Star Platinum are the same type of Stand?" Dio questioned as he looks at Jotaro's cold stare. "Damn it. Can you see me right now? Are you consciously moving or is it an involuntary twitch?" Dio asked, narrowing his eyes at the bulky teen. "Okay, time's up."

When Hikari looked up, time had unfroze. Dio was behind Jotaro and the vampire looked shook, a glare on his face, meaning Jotaro had done something. Hikari noticed that Dio was a man who thought himself to be far superior to any other creature that roamed this earth. So for Jotaro to show any form of power greater than Dio's clearly rattled the vampire.

"Jotaro, could you see me?" Dio questioned. Jotaro gave no response as he simply gave the Vampire a look, causing Dio to grow angrier. "Must I repeat, I asked you could follow my movements!" Dio shouted.

"See what? You're not making sense. Need to have your eyes checked, Dio?" Jotaro asked before using Star Platinum to take off. Dio immediately pursed Jotaro. Hikari got out Soundless Voice and started to roof jump again chasing after the two but at the same time keeping a safe distance.

"Just you wait! You can't run forever! Seeing me isn't going to do you any good when time is standing still!" Dio shouts at him. "If your Stand does bare similarities to mine, prove it! I want to see just how much we have in common!" Yes...it's been six months since Dio began to grasp the art of stopping time. To test The World's speed and power, he commanded Nukesaku to aim point-blank right at his back. And for a moment, it looked as though time itself had stood still. Dio thought for sure he was hallucinating. It seemed like the vision a boxer has when his opponent's punches linger in midair. That second felt like an eternity.

But he wasn't simply imagining things. Dio's Stand was actually able to move between the hovering bullets that were suspended in time

and it could grasp them, much to the astonishment to even Dio himself.

"Yes, Lord Dio! You are well on your way to being the master of time! The next step is willing yourself to move through the realm of frozen time. It must happen as naturally breathing or as nonchalantly as snapping a pencil between your mighty fingers. You must think of it as completely ordinary. The most important thing is having faith in yourself. It's imperative that you find the mental fortitude to steel your mind! You are the one true ruler of this world! Controlling time should be second nature to you!" Enyaba had told him once before.

Then one day, he senses the wheels of time and The World interlock at long last. Like a ray of clarity dispersing the shadows in his mind, a revelation befell him. "I was Dio and my destiny was to surpass all living things! Including Stand users! I can stop time for five seconds and the time limit keeps extending by the day! Now Jotaro, you're about to experience just how weak you are!! Time to make good on my promise! The World, grind to a halt!"

Stopping time once more, Dio cautiously approaches Jotaro, seeing both his hand and arm twitch. He stops, keeping a good distance between them and moved his hand towards him. When he did, Jotaro's hang began twitching. Dio looked on for a moment before he burst into laughter. He removes the magnet he has on his person and held it in front of Jotaro. His hand twitched and let go of the magnet letting it connect with the one on him. Both magnets were on the same side, giving the illusion that Jotaro could actually move.

"I see you planted a magnet. Must've been when we were exchanging blows. It looks like a wallet magnet or one picked from a pocket planner." Dio says with a laugh. "I have to admit, you had me fooled. You're a clever boy indeed. But if you have to resort to doing trick like that it only proves that you can't move while time is standing still! You've only postponed the inevitable by a few seconds, this is the end! DIE, JOTARO!"

As DIO moved in for the killing blow, Jotaro, having lured DIO into a false sense of security, moved Star Platinum through the frozen time and landing a powerful punch through The World's abdomen. Indicating the magnets to be a red herring. Unfortunately, Jotaro was

only able to move for a second before time took hold of him again. "How...the... He's moving! What nerve..! Although he could only do it briefly. The magnet wasn't meant to make me think he could move...it was made to make me think he couldn't! Damn it, it was a trap to design to lure me in and I fell for it!"

"The key is believing your power is completely ordinary!"

"Disgusting! To think that my domain could be invaded! And by one of the Joestars no less! It's infuriating!" Dio shouts. Time had begun and Hikari saw Dio fly away from Jotaro, a trail of blood following him. Hikari smiled and give a small "Yes!". She knew Jotaro would come up with something. As JoJo had said The World and Star Platinum were similar Stand's, Hikari wasn't surprised Jotaro took that factor and used it to turn the tables on Dio.

Dio was sent flying and crashing into a jewellery store, a large shard of glass hacked off his leg, and scaring the clerk within. Jotaro fell but managed to catch himself on a book store's sign. "I was able to move for a second there. That's a good sign. Even so, that's not much, it would only give me enough time for a single punch." Jotaro said.

Dio stiffly sat up and looked over at the trembling woman behind a counter. "You there, woman. How about you make yourself useful and fetch me my leg?" The clerk was shaking as she stared at him and his severed leg in utter terror. "Bring it here this instant! Imagine you're a flight attendant bringing caviar to a passenger in first-class if it gets you here faster!" Dio shouted.

When Jotaro landed back on the ground, the Vampire walked back out of the shop holding the woman by the neck draining her of all her blood. His wounds immediately healed as if Jotaro hadn't even touched him.

"Well, that's good to know. Seems I'll have to blow your head off to do any significant damage. Bastard, you've already siphoned off enough energy to heal yourself. It's like that gaping hole I opened in your gut was never even there."

Dio smirks as he stopped time again. As he resumed it he noticed that Jotaro's eyes were looking up at him as he stood above a street sign.

"You're eyes followed even while time was frozen. Which confirms that you can see my movements, isn't that right Jotaro?" Dio asked.

"Nervous yet, sweetheart?" Jotaro questioned.

"Not at all. Kakyoin did you quite the favour. Because of his brilliant mind, he was able to correctly deduce The World's secret and because he passed that knowledge along you figured out that I could stop mind at will and worked until you learned how to do it yourself." Dio says. Stopping time to move and resuming again. Like before Jotaro had moved and saw him standing on top of another building.

"Then again, you haven't had as much training as I have, so I'm curious to know exactly how long you can move while time is frozen? Two seconds, or maybe three. Or perhaps you can move five seconds like me but you're pretending you can't to gain some kind of advantage. Clever." Dio said, chuckling at the young Joestar. "Which is it?"

'This isn't good. I could probably move longer if I was able to get some practice in. But as it stands, the best I can do is a second.' Jotaro thought to himself. But he can't let Dio know that. If he were to find out, it'll only get worse from here on out. Jotaro tried to hide the fact that he can only briefly move for a moment, but then DIO devises a plan to make this irrelevant.

"If I was forced to make a guess, I'd say you could only move for a second. Be that as it may, you've still managed to infiltrate my world, only a fool would risk approaching you now and though I'm many things a fool wouldn't be considered one of them. While it's achingly clear that my advantage over you is overwhelming, I've still devised a way to execute you! So regardless of how long you can move in my world, you'll never escape your demise! Dio shouted. Hikari, along with Jotaro, froze when Dio reveals his hands and belt full of knives.

"You're white as a sheet. Do these bring back memories?" Dio smirked flashing his knives. "Do they remind you that you're going to die a death even more horrific than your pathetic grandfather?!"

'Screw this bastard! How the hell does he come up with this kind of shit? I need to be careful.' Worried, Jotaro tries to jump to safety but it was

futile.

"Haha, there's no escape! The World!" Dio stops time while he's in mid-air. "Five seconds left!" With no way to escape, Jotaro sees The World throwing dozens of knives from all sides. "Do you think your Star Platinum can deflect all of the knives once time resumes? If I were a betting man, I'd give that plan a one in million chance of working. Four seconds!" The World threw in even more knives. "Hahahaha!! It must be terrifying to stare death in the face and be helpless to stop it! Only three seconds remain." Dio says as he tossed three more knives his way.

Jotaro summoned Star Platinum as he was able to block several knives in frozen time but eventually froze up again. Nevertheless, Jotaro still glared at the Vampire. "You're down to two seconds. Are you telling me that's the best you've got? Hahaha, that's just more evidence of your ineptitude in the presence of one such as myself. One second left to go." Dio says as he glided himself to sit on a nearby chimney to watch the spectacle unfold. "Zero."

Hikari gasped as dozens of knives appeared around Jotaro. Star Platinum knocked most of them away but six knives made it through. One in each shoulder, three in his chest and one on his leg. "It's over." Dio smirked triumphantly pulling out one more knife. "But one can never be too careful." The World threw the knife at Jotaro and Star Platinum tried to deflect it but the knife embedded itself in the direct centre of Jotaro's head.

"Now to be perfectly honest, I'm relieved I was able to do away with you so quickly, Jotaro." Dio said. "I have to say, I never would've thought that you would have the power to infiltrate my perfect world." Jotaro fell to the ground blood pouring from his wounds. "Now let's see, a fitting analogy would be the automobile. Useful machines until the roads become clogged with them all." Jotaro hit the ground, crushing the asphalt beneath his heavy body. Onlookers gasped and some screamed seeing the large teen crash into the sidewalk, no one helped, and they all took off running.

"Sorry, but the mantle of the master of time is reserved for me alone."

Jotaro laid still for a moment on the ground then turned his head.

"Oh, good grief. He thrown enough knives or what? I mean he turned my favourite uniform into Swiss cheese." Jotaro lifted up his shirt peering inside. Covering his skin was layers of magazines. Anticipating such an attack, Jotaro stuffed his jacket and hat with magazines, thus preventing his body and head from actually getting injured. But he still had been stabbed deeply in his arms and right leg.

'Well, I'm glad I decided to stuff my clothes with magazines. I figured it was only a matter of time before he tried throwing weapons, but I didn't expect that many. My best bet right now is to play possum and wait for a chance to take Dio by surprise. Since he can regenerate, I've got to bash his brains in or else he'll never die.' Jotaro thought. Quickly playing dead as Dio approaches, and the Vampire is aware of the resilience of the Joestar.

"I believe I'll do one more check for good measure. The Joestars have a way of coming back from the dead and there's a chance Jotaro's putting on this death act. I need to make sure he's gone. For good. I'll use this," Dio says, picking up a street sign ripping it out of the ground. "To severe that troublesome head of his!" Wielding it like a halberd; DIO prepares to decapitate Jotaro. "It's time for you to die!" Dio shouts as he lunges towards the delinquent. "Jotaro!"

!

Two figure descended from above. Dio was surprised when Polnareff and Nemuru appeared with their respective Stands out and ready. Moving quickly Silver Chariot attacked stabbing Dio in head right above his right eye and Shadow Mist morphed into a wolf and locked her jaws around Dio's neck.

"The only one dying here is you!"

"I'LL KILL YOU! I'LL FUCKING KILL YOU!!!"

As quickly as the two appeared, Dio stops time once more. He drops the street sign and looked incredibly annoyed. "Time has stopped. Let's get a good look at your face." He says as he easily unskewers himself from Silver Chariot's blade and slid out of Shadow Mist's jaws. He turned around and wasn't surprised. "I see, it's Polnareff and

Nemuru." Dio landed each a strong punch to the side, easily swathes them aside like they were nothing more than insects. "And now time will resume." When time started up again, Polnareff and Nemuru were sent flying into a building.

"What a shame, Polnareff. Nemuru. You were so close but dropped the ball. If either of you have lunged with more force behind your attack, you could've eviscerated my brain beyond the point of regeneration." Dio tells them. The wounds on Dio's head and neck immediately sealed up.

"You...bastard! It's not...over yet." Polnareff choked out before going limp in the pile of rubble alongside the dark-purple haired girl. "When will you all accept that you cannot kill me? You are nothing more than pawns, destined to be put in check." Dio picked up the street sign again and walked towards the fallen Polnareff and Nemuru. "Your death brings about the end of the Joestars tragic Egyptian journey."

Jotaro watched trying to quickly come up with a plan. If he continued to play dead then Polnareff and Nemuru would end up dead. But if he moved then he'd lose his only trump card against Dio. There was another move he could perform, but he really didn't want to have to do this. Jotaro's hand moved slightly forming a hand sign. A pair of sapphire eyes widened catching the small hand signal. Dio lifted up the sign preparing to swing it down and take out Polnareff permanently. "Enjoy your journey to the afterlife!"

"**Silent Moon Pulse!**" Dio jumped away as a ball of energy shot out from the roof above. It hit the ground and the impact created a huge explosion of dust that quickly covered the area. Dio growled letting out a curse trying to fan away the massive dust storm. When the large cloud of dust finally dissipated Polnareff and Nemuru were gone.

"Damn it! Where did they go?! It had to be that girl Hikari! She used her Stand's power to create a smokescreen then grabbed them." Dio continued to glare but a smirk came to his face. "But no matter, Polnareff and Nemuru are both down for the count and that small girl won't be able to defend against me. I'll just track them down and put a final end to the Joestar group."

Jotaro cursed in his mind. Now Dio was going to go after his angel, that was something he was trying to avoid altogether. He had no choice and needed to draw Dio's attention away from going after Hikari.

Chapter 58: DIO's World, Part 4

Hikari struggled to get Polnareff and Nemuru to a safe place. Soundless Voice was strong but it was a Stand build for healing and protecting, not for strength. She was trying her best to hold back her fear, especially if Dio decided to pursue her and her friends. That smokescreen from her attack should give them a short time to hide but once it dissipates, he'd be able to track down the two, especially with her friends bleeding like they were. If that was the case then Hikari needed to quickly heal them and put them in a safe hiding spot.

Locating a small park area Hikari placed Polnareff and Nemuru to rest underneath a tall tree. She leaned them against the tree and put her healing abilities to the max. Using all the power she had to, not only to stop their bleeding but to also try to heal the internal damages they no doubt had. Hikari wasn't sure how much she could do about that, but she knew that Polnareff and Nemuru would need a hospital soon.

After exhausting her power, Hikari nearly fell over and began to pant. No, not yet. She wasn't done. Hikari brought out Soundless Voice and created a shield to place them inside to best protect them

and help mask their scent. Hikari prayed that this would be good enough until they got rid of Dio.

Dio glared staring at Jotaro's body. His hand had twitched putting Dio on edge. Luckily Jotaro's plan worked and Dio's attention was solely vested on him meaning that he wasn't going to go after Hikari. Now all he had to do was play dead well enough to get the drop on Dio.

"Damn you Jotaro... Was he alive all along, at the very least he seems to be coming to." The sound of guns cocking was heard behind Dio and two officers stood behind the tall Vampire pointing their guns at Dio's head. "Hold it! This is the police!" "You try anything funny and we will shoot! Slowly put your hands in the air!"

Dio simply smirked amused by the men thinking that they had any chance against him. Dio disappeared then reappeared behind the officers. He punched one away then grabbed the second one by the neck sinking his fingers deep into the man's flesh. "Ah, what impeccable timing." Dio said as he held the officer up pointing at Jotaro. "If you wouldn't mind, there's somebody I'd like for you to shoot. Do you see that man lying on the ground? Shoot his leg or torso." The man struggled as his hand slowly lifted, Dio controlled the officer like a puppet.

"That's right. Line up the shot and let the bullet fly." The gun fired hitting Jotaro in the side of his torso, but his body did not move. Dio dropped the officer letting him fall limply to the ground. "I thought I heard Jotaro make a sound a moment ago, but I guess my mind was playing tricks on me." Dio said.

Star Platinum was truly an amazing Stand having caught the bullet just as it pierced Jotaro's jacket, making it appear that he had been shot. *'Could he be anymore demented? He's at least lost interest in my angel, but now that his attention back on me, he's even more suspicious. He's not gonna rest until he's sure I'm dead. Things just got a lot harder.'* Dio continued to study Jotaro's body from afar. "I know, why don't we check his breathing?" Dio strained his ears to hear the faintest sound of Jotaro's breathing but heard nothing. "No luck. He's not breathing." The fact that Jotaro wasn't breathing didn't seem to satisfy Dio.

"But there's no way to hide his heartbeat." He pressed his ear against the ground. Jotaro did the only thing he could and used Star Platinum to grab his heart to stop it from beating. He struggled to hold on as Dio listened for his heartbeat. *'Shit, this hurts! If I blackout, everything we been through will have been for nothing! Dying because I used my own Stand to stop my heart. It'd be ironic, in a morbid kind of way.'* After 5 more agonizing seconds, Dio finally lifted his head off the ground.

"And sure enough there's no heartbeat. What do you know, I suppose the thought of him being alive was just figment of my imagination." Dio says as he walked over and picked up the fallen street sign for the third time. "Though stranger things have happened, so I should still probably lop off his head to be sure. That's not a problem is it?" Star Platinum re-grabbed Jotaro's heart shaking it to restart the organ. Blood started to quickly pump through Jotaro's veins. Dio swung the stop sign down and it crashed right onto Jotaro's head!

Or would have appeared so.

"What?!"

Star Platinum had appeared bending the sign so it couldn't chop Jotaro's head off. Then it went in for the punch. "I have to stop time again! The World!" That didn't work and Star Platinum's fist connected with Dio's head. "I've got to hand it to you, you really put me through Hell back there. You're not stopping time or leaving with your skull intact, got it?!" Jotaro yelled as Star Platinum landed a strong blow directly into Dio's head and shattered a part of his skull, damaging the left hemisphere of his brain severely.

"No! This can't be happening to me!!"

"**ORA!**" Dio's skull was crushed in, and he was sent flying and crashing into a stoned staircase, screaming. "Took long enough, but I finally got to run my fist straight through his demented skull. But that walking cesspool lived at the bottom of the sea for over a century. I can't be sure that attack killed him, it's a bit too early to take a victory lap." Jotaro said. Looking to his left he found a couple of buckets and he had gotten an idea on what to do next.

Dio sat up from the crater, clutching his severally bleeding head as he seethes in pure anger towards the Joestar who dared to hurt him this way! How dare he?! How dare he wound him?! The Joestars...The Joestars have been nothing but a thorn of his side for centuries, he must kill them all! Every last one! "I will annihilate you...!" Dio growled. Blood was pouring from his head and when he tried to get up, he fell to the ground. He couldn't move his legs. They were shaking uncontrollably and he couldn't control them at all. The great deal of damage to his head weakened him.

"What the hell...? I can't move..! Jotaro, what did you do to me?! I don't have control over my legs, I can't even stand!" Dio shouts as he let out a sickly cough. "Augh, my head! The pain is unbearable! I think I'm going to vomit, this can't be happening to me!! I'm the pinnacle of perfection!!" He actually damaged his brain and paralysed his legs! Shit, shit, shit!! He's got to find a way out of here!! Dio visible started to panic when a bucket of liquid was dumped on him. Jotaro stood above him holding a, now empty, bucket.

"I doused you with gasoline, so you can't hide. Normally I would hate to kick a guy when he's down on his luck, but...with you, I don't give a dame. You hurt friends and killed countless innocent bystanders. So don't expect any mercy." Jotaro pulled out his lighter and flicked it drawing a small flame forth, preparing to burn him alive. But, instead of becoming fearful, Dio started to maniacally laugh lifting the upper half of his body.

"Come forth! The World!" Dio yells as a taxi passes nearby. With time frozen, Dio began to crawl away while simultaneously employing The World's time stop to assist him in distancing himself from Jotaro, pulled himself behind it. He latched onto the bumper and allowed time to start again. When time unfroze, Jotaro discovers that Dio had clawed his way to the car and latched onto it trying to make a clean getaway until his legs had time to heal.

"While he had his ear to the ground he was also listening for any nearby cars. Clever, but," Jotaro says as he pulled out one of Dio's knife. "Bastard's not getting away that easily!" He used Star Platinum to throw the knife into one of the tires of the car. The car swerved knocking Dio off. The vampire lord struggled still trying to escape. He crawled his way over to a manhole and slowly lifted the cover off

it but was met with the face of Jotaro.

"And where do you think you're going? We've got unfinished business." Jotaro said. Dio let out a breath of shock as Jotaro lifted himself out of the manhole and stood above the Vampiric monster. Dio loathed the fact that a Joestar was standing above him like was superior to him! Dio lifted himself as he pulled out a knife. "The World, free-!" Dio tried to stop time again but was violently pummelled away by Star Platinum. **"ORA! ORA ORA ORA ORA ORA ORA ORA ORA ORA ORA ORA ORA!"** Dio was sent flying back his body riddled with holes, but he was smirking.

"ORA! ORA ORA ORA ORA ORA ORA ORA ORA ORA ORA ORA ORA!"

Hikari looked up from what she was doing having heard the familiar war cry of Jotaro's Stand. Her eyes got wide as she saw a figure covered in blood flying towards her. "You fell for it, Jotaro! Now my victory is all but assured! Once again my genius has triumphed over you! Doesn't this street look familiar?!" Before Hikari could react Dio's body crashed right before her, and she was sent flying back from the impact.

"This street... What have I done?"

Hikari screamed. "Mr. Joestar!"

"You failed. This was my escape route to your grandfather, and now his blood is mine!" Dio stood up from Joseph's body fully recovered, no wounds visible. "Dio, you dead!" Dio seemed as if he had been renewed. His aura had almost doubled in power just from the small amount of blood he had taken from Joseph. However, the old man's blood allows him to not only fully recover, but also completely synch his body with that of Jonathan Joestar.

Dio nears his physical peak after draining Joseph Joestar's blood. His appearance now was similar to how he was before, minus the jacket and the heart-shaped headband that was destroyed by Star Platinum's attacks. He now sports a deranged and homicidal look. His hair is now dishevelled and mostly oriented upwards, his eyes were a menacing shade of magenta, while his lips are darker and seem

adorned with lipstick.

"Just as I thought, Joseph's blood suits me well. It's like it was meant to be mine from the very beginning! It's far more intense than anything I've ever felt before! This sensation is absolutely incredible!!" Hikari almost got sick as she watched Dio cackle with absolute insanity and claw at his own flesh to show off his new advanced regenerative powers.

"A century ago this body belonged to Jonathan Joestar and now these hands have feasted on the blood of his grandson, Joseph! But it was you, Jotaro, who so thoughtfully lead me here! Your ancestor must be rolling in his grave! You Joestars have always been a nuisance, so I think the time has come to put you self-righteous cretins in your proper place beneath my boot! In the end, Jotaro, it would appear that the Joestar's destiny is to facilitate my ascension to perfection!" Dio laughed maniacally as Jotaro stared him down. Hikari was on her hands and knees digging her fingers into the ground as tears slowly fell down her cheeks.

"Why you...." Jotaro growled as he stomped his way over to the demon that haunts his family line. He plans to rip the bastard limb from limb, Joseph's soul suddenly rose to the sky, appearing before Jotaro while Dio laughed like the maniac he had become.

"Old man..."

"You have to stay calm. From here on, no matter what Dio does to me, keep your cool. Focus. Tempting as it may be, never allow yourself to succumb to anger. Don't worry about my fate Jotaro, I've accepted that it was meant to be." Joseph tells him.

"Wait a sec...? That's his...soul? But how..?" Jotaro questioned.

"Kakyoin deciphered the mystery of Dio's Stand, and I imparted that knowledge to you. Had we attack Dio together before learning his secret, he would've been able easily kill all of us. You now have the ability to move while time is frozen, but you only have two or three seconds. Make sure you use that time wisely. Remember what I told you Jotaro, you mustn't lose your head. If you lose control it'll only backfire, keep your emotions in check when you face off with Dio." Joseph says with a smile

before he began to fade away. *"Jotaro... It's been quite the journey, eh, my boy? An unforgettable adventure. Call me crazy, but our time together was a lot of fun. More fun than I've had in a long time."* Joseph's spirit said as he then ascends into the sky. Disappearing.

"That was real, right?" Jotaro asked himself.

"Hey! What are you looking at, Jotaro?!" Dio shouted as he lifted his hand to bring it down to Joseph's chest to drain the man of all of his life, but Joseph's body was being protected by a shield that had formed out of nowhere. "L-Leave Mr. Joestar a-alone!" Dio clicked his tongue in mild annoyance, seeing Hikari had used her Stand to create a shield and wrapped it around Joseph, bringing it back to her. Swallowing her fear and sadness, Hikari stood up, Soundless Voice appearing next to her, ready for battle.

"**Silent Moon Pulse!**" Soundless Voice rushed Dio and shot out her hands, launching the ball of energy but Dio easily swatted it away with his hand, sending it destroying a part of the street. Dio smirked in amusement. "Do you, little Hikari, really think you can defeat I, Dio? You are nothing but a pawn for me to use to bring my rose back to me, and right now you're nothing but a mere insect in my way. And do you know what I do to insects in my way?"

Hikari didn't even have time to take a breath when Dio disappeared and reappeared behind her, stomping on her back crushing her into the pavement beneath. "I squash them!" Dio had a sadistic smirk on his face as he brought his foot down stomping on Hikari's body. "AAAAAUUGGGGHHH!!"

"Hikari!" Jotaro called out. "Haha! No one can stand against the great Dio!" Dio laughed. Hikari choked with tears in her eyes as blood leaked out of her mouth. She was sure that most of her ribs had been broken. She gasped for air. She couldn't breathe. Her heart was going wild. Her lungs were on fire. Her injury...is was getting back with a vengeance.

Jotaro took a step forward to run at the two but stopped when Dio reached down grabbing Hikari by her hair, yanking her up. "See this Jotaro. See what happens when you try to stand against me." Blood slowly dripped down the left side of Hikari's face blinding her in the

left eye. Dio put a hand under her chin forcing her to look up. "Haaa, maybe I won't kill her. Yer. She is an enchanting piece. When I kill you Jotaro, I will be taking this one back with me. She'll help me in bringing my Viola back to me...and don't worry, this one will continue to exist. Expect her soul won't be the same."

Dio grinned wildly as he tossed away Hikari like she was nothing and went over to Joseph's body. Jotaro's and Hikari's eyes went wide when Dio grabbed Joseph's body digging his hands into the man's chest. He started to absorb the rest of the blood left into Joseph's body leaving nothing but an empty husk.

"You...Bastard!!" Jotaro growled.

"He's been sucked dry." Dio laughed. "J-JoJo... My dearest...don't," Hikari whispered weakly as he started sprinting towards Dio.

"I know you said to keep my emotions in check but screw that! He just crossed the line!" A furious Jotaro shouts as he begins to charge directly at Dio. "There's not a person on the planet who can stay calm after seeing that!!"

"This is fight as come to an end."

Hikari had never been in this much pain before. Not even Carrie and her Viking's Wrath wasn't this sever. As she laid on the pavement watching Jotaro and Dio fight in the sky. She tried to pick herself up but the sharp pain in her ribs and chest was too much. She had to remain conscious and remain hopeful that Jotaro would be able to defeat Dio. She spotted Dio knocking Jotaro out the sky and send him flying out of her field of vision.

"J... JoJo....." Hikari's vision slowly started to go black, but she couldn't pass out. Not while her beloved Jotaro was still in trouble.

****

The two clash mid-air as Dio freezes time. "The World! Bring time to a halt!" Dio screams out as time froze around him. "One second. Two seconds. And three seconds! Now four!" He counted the seconds as he moves closer to Jotaro. The tall delinquent raised his Stand's arms,

ready to defend himself. Dio narrowed his eyes as the two locked on in battle. They exchanged heated blows but one came in and broke The World's hand in half. "**ORA ORA ORA ORA ORA ORA ORA!!**" Star Platinum delivered a flurry of punches and knocked Dio back, but he was still counting.

"Five seconds! Interesting! Six seconds. My, my." He says. Jotaro's eyes widen as Dio's hand restores itself to normal. "This makes seven seconds! My power grows exponentially! I can stop time for even longer! But as for you Jotaro, you wasted the opportunity you had to move. Gambling on getting me two seconds before time resumed was all for not. What a miscalculation!" Dio says. The giddiness and overwhelming power he felt in his being was almost too much to take! It was intoxicating, he felt he could sing. "I feel so marvellous I could serenade the world! The moment I've dreamed off for so long is finally upon us! Eight seconds have passed! I've been an immortal being for an entire century."

Dio's insanity was visible on a complete scale: Dio was overjoyed to have completely fused with Jonathan's body and being at full power, that while declaring he was experiencing the greatest high, he delightfully drills his index finger into his skull. "But never in my wildest dreams could I have imagined I'd feel something this exhilarating! The blood of the Joestars courses through my veins! The blood of the Joestars courses through my veins!!"

'Damn it, I guess you were right, after all, old man. My stupid temper got me in a shitton of trouble. For Christ's sake! No, this isn't the end! He still hasn't faced the full force of my rage!' Jotaro thought in anger as he tried to force his body to move. Dio went to Jotaro's side, smiling maniacally as he tells him, "Nine seconds total! That's how long my power lasted just now! Yes... Perhaps nine seconds is the new extent of my Stand's extraordinary power!"

'You bastard...!!'

"**HHHAAAAUUUUUGGHHHH!!!**" Tormenting an immobilized Jotaro, Dio uses his extended nine seconds to send a rapid fury of punches, breaking more than a few bones and send him flying. "Now to unleash all of my Stand's power! Jotaro weren't you mumbling something about being angry?! IS THIS ALL THE POWER YOU

POSSESS?! **MUDA MUDA MUDA MUDA MUDA MUDA MUDA MUDA MUDA! MUDA!!**" The World constantly pummel him and send him flying onto a bridge.

"And now I shall administer the killing blow! Here it is, my final dance with time! Nine more seconds that's all you have left! Prepare to die. The World!" Dio shouted. He stopped time, declaring that his next time stop will be the last one. The Vampire chuckles to himself as he stared down at the helpless, immobile Jotaro. "One second." Dio vanished. But Jotaro still heard his voice. "Two seconds. Three seconds."

Jotaro couldn't figure out Dio had suddenly vanished amidst the standstill.

"Four seconds."

But he pushed the thoughts out of his mind. No matter what sinister plot Dio was hatching. No matter what unholy tact he attempted to unleashed. Jotaro had only two seconds to respond. Only two seconds to drive Star Platinum's fist into Dio, once and for all.

"Five seconds."

'I've had just about enough of this neon vampire. The next time I see that Goddamn face of his, I'm gonna freaking lose it, and beat him into the ground!'

"Six seconds."

'That's right Dio. Come and get it!'

"Seven seconds."

During DIO's frozen time, he appears in the air with a giant road roller, ready to crush Jotaro. "I'M GOING TO ROLL ALL OVER YOU!" The Vampire yelled as he threw it directly at Jotaro in an attempt to kill him by crushing him underneath it.

Play music

Soshite tsudoishi STARDUST

Hyakunen me no mezame ni yobareteOtoko tachi wa mukauToki no suna wo koeru Journey

Jotaro stared at the road roller with great anger and with a growl, tries to push it back with Star Platinum. He wasn't going to let Dio win! No matter what!! "**ORA ORA ORA ORA ORA ORA ORA ORA!!**" Star Platinum yelled as he tries to punch the road roller back. But in the end, it was futile.

"It's too late! Time to die!" Dio shouts as he, alongside with The World, smashes the road roller at a rapid pace.

"**MUDA MUDA MUDA MUDA MUDA MUDA MUDA MUDA MUDA MUDA MUDA MUDA!!!!**"

"**ORA ORA ORA ORA ORA ORA ORA ORA ORA ORA ORA ORA ORA ORA ORA!!!!**" Star Platinum tried to fight back but was unable to continuously do it as DIO and The World forces it down. "**EIGHT SECONDS! WRYYYYYYYY! I'LL OBLITERATE YOU!**" And after a final punch, Jotaro is crushed beneath the steamroller. Dio stood on top of the steamroller basking in his win.

Kusari no you tsunaru karami au KARMA
Hikari de tatsu sadame

Stand up! Stand up! Stand up!
Uchi komu no wa
All right now! All right now! All right now!
Hokori no Bullet
Break you down! Break you down! Break you down!
Kobushi hanatsu seinaru VISION Stand Proud!

"Nine seconds. I did it. It's over. The World has defeated Star Platinum. My Stand is more powerful than his. I am immortal! I am everlasting! Hahahahahahaha!!!! Stand power!" Dio laughed triumphantly. "Now, there isn't controvertible proof that no one on this miserable planet is stronger than me! You loathsome humans! I shall rule over your pathetic species until the end of time! Now bow before my wisdom and power! Ten seconds! Would you look at that, I

can stop time for ten seconds! Alright, now that I've defeated Jotaro, I should inspect his lifeless body and drink his blood. That is if there's any blood left to savour." Dio went to move forward but his body seized up frozen and stiff.

Tojirareteta toki ni

Hi no hikari abiseru no wa dare daMirai nokosu kibouNagare hoshi no CRUSADERS
Kakeru no wa inochi mamoru beki ai toCARD wa kubareta

"This can't be... My body's slowing down...what's happening? N-no...it's not that I'm slowing down. For some reason, I can't move at all! I don't get it, this is impossible! I'm frozen!"

"Hey, Dio." Jotaro, very much alive, said as he appeared behind Dio. "It's been eleven seconds. I guess that's your Stand's limit, huh?"

"What?!"

"I stopped time at nine seconds and it's a good thing I did. It gave me a chance to escape. Good grief, you idiot." Jotaro pointed at Dio and proclaimed, "Here's the thing! Since your frozen like that, destroying you will only take a second!"

"Jotaro!!" Dio shouts in rage. "This...is madness! You can stop time too?! Curse you, this whole act was a ruse to waste my nine seconds wasn't it, you bastard!"

Stand up! Stand up! Stand up!
Tachi hadakaru
All right now All right now All right now
Teki wo taoshi
Break you down Break you down Break you down
Michi wo hiraku tamashii no VISION Stand Proud!

"How does it feel, Dio? Tell me? How's it feel to have your archenemy tower behind you while you stand frozen and helpless? I supposed it's a lot like holding your breath while underwater. Only someone's out to get you and your air is running out as you desperately swim for

your life." Jotaro slammed a hand down on Dio's shoulder squeezing tight. "And then, after finally reaching the surface and taking a breath you get pulled right back in. Sound familiar? But after everything you've done Dio, you're not going to get any sympathy from me."

"Ora!" Star Platinum kicked Dio's legs snapping them at the kneecap bending them at an awkward angle. "Time is about to start moving again." Jotaro says. When time unfroze Dio was sent spiralling off the bulldozer landing on the ground. His legs were now useless as they bent in the wrong direction spurting out blood. Dio started to breathe heavily both from pain and fear.

Jotaro jumped down standing before Dio. "Compassion isn't something you're never gonna get from me. I haven't gotten any kindness for your sorry, undead ass. Though I got to admit, you look pretty pathetic writhing on the ground in agony. As much as I want, killing you like this would leave a pretty bad taste in my mouth." Jotaro could hear the bones in Dio's legs snapping as the limbs tried to repair themselves. "I wonder how long it'll take for you to heal. Three seconds? Four, maybe? The very moment your legs are healed Star Platinum's headed your way to demolish you." Dio's eyes grew wide with fear not believing what was happening.

"If this were the Wild West, the hero would say "It's High Noon." Now get off the ground and draw your piece, Dio. You're getting one shot." Dio glared at Jotaro as his legs continued to twitch.

'This insignificant whelp... How dare he mock me! Though I shouldn't be surprised. Of course, you would use this opportunity to make such a human declaration!' Dio thought to himself. A smirk appeared on his lips thinking that even though Jotaro had caught him by surprise there's no way a mere human such him would be able to defeat him. *'You think like a true mortal, cursed with a fleeting life destined for obscurity. A bad taste in your mouth, you say? What, are you afraid you'll regret killing me? That reasoning is as pathetic as your species, your foolish honour will be your demise! That is where you and I differ. My vision is clear and my mind is focused on a single goal. I want to dominate. Nothing more, nothing less. That is the only thing that will bring me fulfilment! But how I go about doing that...!'* Dio thought as he screamed, "DOESN'T MATTER IN THE SLIGHTEST!" Dio slowly started to stand up, then the wound from his leg shot out a stream of

blood blinding Jotaro.

Yami no naka warau senaka wo
Sagashi ooi motomeru otoko no
Sono ashi oto REQUIEM
Sabaku ni hibiku

"There! How about a little blood in your eyes?!" Dio shouts as he summoned The World. "I win! Die!" "ORA!" Jotaro shouted. Star Platinum's fist met with The World's leg. Dio smirked as Star Platinum's fist cracked bleeding. But then the tables were turned when The World's leg started to crack. The crack spread and splintered up The World's leg spreading all across the Stand's body.

Stand up! Stand up! Stand up!
Uchi komu no wa
All right now! All right now! All right now!
Hokori no Bullet
Break you down Break you down Break you down
Kobushi hanatsu seinaru VISION Stand Proud!

Dio screamed as the same thing happened to him! His head and body crumbling apart as he finally meets his end! "WHAT THE HEEEEELL?! IT'S IMPOSSIBLE! I AM THE IMMORTAL DIO! I...AM...DIO...!!!" Dio's body exploded blowing off one of his legs, arms, and his head. And without his head, there's no regeneration for Dio.

"When the sun comes up, you'll be nothing but dust. You only made one mistake. One that got you killed. Dio, this whole thing might've ended differently, but...you went and pissed me off. Was it worth it?"

At long last. Finally...after one hundred years...Dio, and his Stand, The World, was finally dead. The Joestar family had won.

Stand up! Stand up! Stand up!
Tachi hadakaru
All right now All right now All right now
Teki wo taoshi
Break you down Break you down Break you down
Michi wo hiraku tamashii no VISION Stand Proud!

Chapter 59: The End of a Journey. The Start of a New

Jotaro quickly returned to where he had to leave Hikari. When he arrived on the scene police cars had already surrounded the place and Hikari was being placed on a gurney getting ready to be loaded into an ambulance. The side of the emergency vehicle read SpeedWagon on it. Jotaro easily pushed his way to through the crowd and the officers reaching Hikari as she was being wheeled into the Speedwagon ambulance.

Jotaro looked down at his sweet angel and tenderly brushed away her bangs. An oxygen mask had been placed over her mouth, and she gave slow yet steady breaths. She looked worse for wear, the blood had been wiped off her and the paramedics had already given her pain medication putting an IV in her arm. Hikari hadn't noticed Jotaro was next to her until he placed a gentle hand on her cheek. Tears started to well up in her eyes as she spotted Jotaro.

"J-J-JoJo...." She weakly cried. "You're here..." Jotaro gave Hikari a small smile just as relieved as she was. Hikari was put in the ambulance and Jotaro got in too. The remains of Dio's body was loaded up along with Joseph's body.

As it turned out, Avdol had gotten in contact with the Speedwagon Foundation and gave the Speed Wagon men the location of her and the others the second he and Iggy found her. The men had already gotten to Polnareff and his body was already being rushed to the nearest hospital. However, Nemuru practically demanded that she stayed by Kakyoin's side. She smiled in relief as she pressed his hand against her cheek. She was so terrified that she was going to lose him, but here he was smiling at her. Nemuru thanked God with all of her being for the miracle she was given. The love of her life was able to hold just long enough for the Speedwagon Foundation to get him and both are getting an airlifted back home for Kakyoin to get intensive treatment.

"This is Speedwagon Foundation car 2. We're travelling northbound on the Ouniel expressway and we retrieved Dio's remains. I repeat; We've retrieved Dio's remains." The driver of the ambulance said to dispatch.

"Dio's body is showing cellular activity. He must be exposed to sunlight immediately. Proceed with extreme caution." Dispatch told him.

"Rodger."

Hikari's hand was being held by Jotaro as they both looked at Joseph's shrivelled body. Hikari had been confused just like the Speedwagon men, as to why Jotaro wanted to bring Joseph's body into the ambulance. She was also unsettled laying down so close to

Dio's body.

"J-JoJo? Sweet pea....why did you bring M-Mr. Joestar's...and Dio's body in the same car?" Hikari asked.

"Because it's not over yet. Dio borrowed something from us and we need to take it back from the bastard." Jotaro proclaimed. A doctor that was keeping a close watchful eye over Dio's body looked at Jotaro confused. "I'm not following your train of thought."

"I need you to perform a blood transfusion between the two bodies." Jotaro said. Shocking the two doctors. They gasped at Jotaro's words.

"That's absurd! You want us to transfused Dio's blood into Mr. Joestar?"

"I see, you're trying to bring him back to life."

"It hasn't been all that long since Dio drained his blood. His upper was destroyed in the fight, but we'll take as much as we can. If we hurry, I think we can make it." Jotaro said. Hikari pondered Jotaro's words. It could be possible, it depends on how much oxygen Mr. Joestar's brain was not getting. But the way Dio extracted Joseph's blood it might have actually preserved Joseph's brain. So even though his brain hadn't been getting any oxygen the preservation aspects mean Joseph could still be saved.

"JoJo's right." Hikari stated. The doctors gasp, looking at the sapphire-eyed girl. "As long as Mr. Joestars b-brain is preserved and y-you can find a way to r-restart his heart."

"You heard the girl. Thanks to Dio, I've already had a bit of practice with stopping and starting hearts." Jotaro said as he summoned Star Platinum and sent the Stand's hand into Joseph's heart. The monitor Joseph's body was hooked up to started beeping.

"I hear a pulse!"

"Yes, you're right! His heart is beating!"

"We have to transfuse his blood into Mr. Joestar quickly!"

"We might just be able to pull this off!"

The doctors moved quickly draining the blood from Dio's body and into Joseph's. Within seconds Joseph's withered body slowly started to rejuvenate getting back its life and colour.

"Remarkable! Take a look at his skin! It's completely regaining all its colour! His skin is filling out!

"My God, brain activity too!"

"I don't believe it! His vitals are stable as well!"

Joseph's heartbeat started to steady and get regular. Hikari smiled as Joseph's eyes opened. He was back. He's alive.

"HIS EYES! HE OPENED HIS EYES!"

"We did it! He's back!"

"Thank goodness...." Hikari said. However, as Jotaro looked at him...something felt...off. "Old man?" Joseph smirked laughing as he sat up, ripping the wires off of the machine. "You're a damn fool, Jotaro!"

A scream got caught in Hikari's throat. "N-No way... It can't be..."

"You have got to be kidding!!" Jotaro shouted.

Joseph ripped off the oxygen mask as he stared at Jotaro with a psychotic look. "All you did was resurrect yours truly!" He proclaimed.

"Bastard!" Jotaro yelled as he brought out Star Platinum! He was not going through this again!! He swore to God, Jotaro was going to beat the living shit out of-!!

"WAIT! Calm down, Jotaro! It was a joke, I was just kidding! There's no need to get violent! I'm sorry. I was just trying to have some fun. You have my word, it's me!" To prove it, Joseph summoned Hermit Purple. "I'm Joseph Joestar. I was born September 27 in 1920. My wife's name is Lily and I collect comics as a hobby."

Jotaro gave Joseph a questionable look. "...I have a question for you. Who's the leading actress in "Tarzan the Ape Man"?

"Bo Derek!" Joseph answered.

"Okay, answer this one. Who sang "Eat It", the spoof of "Beat It"?" Jotaro asked.

"'Weird' Al Yankovic!" Joseph answered.

"Good grief... It has to be you. Who else would know pointless crap like that?" Jotaro said

Hikari let out a heavy sigh putting a hand on her chest. "M-Mr. Joestar...please...I beg of you..d-don't do something l-like that again. Please..." Joseph gave a sheepish smile while rubbing the back of his head.

"This is car 2, over! It's amazing! Mr. Joestar is back with us! He's come back from the brink of death! It's a miracle, over!!" The driver exclaimed with pure joy. Now that Joseph was back to the land of the living, there was just one last thing to do.

****

In the middle of the desert Hikari, Jotaro, and Joseph laid out Dio's body. As the sun rose and the rays touched his body the corpse burned away leaving nothing but ash, that drifted away with the wind. Finalizing the century-long struggle between the immortal monster and the Joestar Family putting to rest the combined struggles of five generations.

Hikari smiled as she was being supported by Jotaro. She smiled watching the sunrise happy that the ordeal was finally over. "It's finally over." Joseph said. "Dio took something precious from all of us. For a hundred years, he's taken whatever he wanted. His appetite for power has been insatiable."

"It's a good thing he didn't take more than we had thought." Jotaro says.

"Yeah, we're lucky that he hadn't taken things that would otherwise

never get back. The losses that we've endured on this journey stretches far as the planet itself. But thanks to their sacrifices, we're here to tell the tale and carry on." Out of all of them Kakyoin, Iggy, and Avdol had sacrificed a lot. But its thanks to them that they were able to win. They all started this journey together, and now, they finished this together.

At the airport

"So you're really going back to France, Polnareff?" Joseph asked him. "This may be a bit forward, but your family's gone. Why don't come back with me to New York?" The gang, minus Kakyoin and Nemuru, gathered in the airport to say one last goodbye to each other. Avdol was staying behind, as Egypt is his own. He was grateful that the Speedwagon Foundation was able to give him a prosthetic arm. Iggy, on the other hand, had decided to go along with Polnareff for the ride. After their fight with Cool Ice, Iggy gained respect the Frenchman and vice-versa.

Polnareff gave the elder man a kind smile and stood up to say, "Mr. Joestar, I know they're gone but France is the only home I've ever known. It's filled with memories, it's a place I must return to no matter where I go. But if you ever need anything, all you have to do is call and I'll be there in a heartbeat."

Avdol nodded. "The same applies for me as well. Whatever it may be, whether big or small, always feel free to contact me." He said. Iggy let out a bark from Polnareff's shoulder, adding his own two cents into it.

"We're gonna miss ya guys." Joseph said.

"It wasn't easy that's for damn sure. But I had a hell of a time, and I'm lucky to have been on this adventure with you guys." Polnareff said with a smile. Everyone returning it in full.

"It was a lot of fun. I've made such wonderful memories...there's no way I'll forget the time all of us spent together." Hikari said as tears swelled in her eyes.

"Remember, we're a team. And that's never gonna change." Joseph

says strongly.

"Calling all passengers for France International Airlines. Flight 92 to Paris." The woman said over the intercom. As soon as those words rang out, the Crusaders all gathered in for group hug. Polnareff looked up at his friends, tears rimmed his eyes as he smiled at them all. They've only been on this journey for a short while...but Hikari deeply loved the friends she had made and didn't want to say goodbye. However, she had hope that they will each meet again someday. As the gave a final goodbye and promising to see one another again someday, they went off in their separate ways. However, in the deepest part of Polnareff's mind, he told himself to visit Egypt again, and meet with a certain kindly woman again someday.

Back in Japan

Lily sat by her daughter's side. Watching over her as she to sleep when out of the blue, Holly opened up her eyes and sat up without any trouble. "Holly?! How are you sitting up straight all of a sudden?" She asked, but she was so relieved that her daughter was completely recovered but was also concerned about the astonished look on her face.

"I'm...feeling much better. I'm not sure how to put it into words. It's as if we could read each others minds!" Holly says, a bright smile forming on her face.

"What?"

"Mom, I can feel that they're coming home to us." Holly says as she smiled like the sun and felt tears beginning to form in her eyes. She had faith. She had always believed that they would save her. Holly threw off her blanket and ran to the doors. "Holly!" The latter threw opened the doors, letting in the sunlight and looked up at the great blue sky. "Papa and my Jotaro. They're coming home!"

Indeed, Jotaro, Hikari and Joseph are already on a plane to Tokyo. Jotaro reminisces his adventure across the world with the Commemorative Photograph he's taken with the group. He felt a small weight on him and turned to Hikari leaning against him with a

smile. He smiled down at her and reached to hold her hand. It was finally over. And there was nothing to separate them again.

****

Once out of the airport, the group caught a taxi to Jotaro's house. Joseph suggested that they all got out to celebrate. Hikari thought it'd be fun, but she wasn't sure since Ms. Holly had just escaped Dio's curse. The car pulled up to the house and all the three got out. As the car pulled off the front door to the home was flung open.

"My precious baby! My baby, you're home!" Hikari was startled when she was grabbed around gently but quickly and lifted off the ground into someone's arms. A golden and black blur passed where she had just been standing and something landed on the ground with a loud thud. Hikari had her arms around Jotaro's neck as he held her up in his arms. Resting in her boyfriend's arms Hikari looked down towards where the multicoloured projectiles had crashed.

Laid out on the ground were a man with fair skin, short golden-blond hair and wearing a blue suit and a woman with milky-white skin, long black hair that reached her waist and wearing a baby-blue, long-sleeved shirt and a long magenta skirt.

"Mother? Father?" Hikari was surprised seeing her parents suddenly sprawled out on the ground. "You're here!" Holly came sprinting out the house a large smile on her face.

"Holly!" Joseph had a huge smile on his face as he held his arms out ready to receive his daughter, but he was greatly disappointed when she bypassed her father heading right for her son.

"Holly!"

"Jotaro!" Holly was about to throw herself at her son until she noticed Hikari sitting in his arms. She had a confused look that quickly turned into an elated smile. "Oh, Jotaro." Seeing the two in such an embrace brought tears to her eyes. She just knew in her heart that the two were going to end up together and to finally see it with her own eyes brought her an immense amount of joy.

"Holly don't ignore me!" Joseph shouted. Holly simply just gushed at her son and Hikari.

"My my what excitement." Hikari looked back at the house seeing another figure come out. She was positively beautiful. She had long blonde that cascaded over her back and had semi-long bangs with one falling between her cobalt-blue eyes. She had creamy coloured skin. She wore a white-collar shirt, a pair of silk black pants and a pair of boots.

"Lily?!" Joseph shouted. Lily gave a smile and strutted out of the house heading to her grandson, completely ignoring her husband. Hikari stared at the woman with slight confusion and asked her, "U-um...excuse me, miss? I'm very sorry, but who are you?" Lily looked at Hikari for a moment before a playful smirk came upon Lily's lips, "What's this we have here? You must be Hikari. JoJo here has told me ALL about you before. I had come home here to see my daughter and hopefully her dear little boy and now I find him holding this little flower in his arms."

"You're JoJo's grandmother?" Hikari asked in amazement.

"She's in whose arms!?"

Dimitri and Kagami got off the ground, a little dirty, and immediately set their sights on their daughter and the boy holding her. While Kagami was overwhelmed with glee upon seeing them, Dimitri, on the other hand, sent Jotaro a glare his teeth grinding in anger. "Get your filthy hands off my daughter!" Kagami sent a glare at her husband's way and smack him over the head. "Oh hush up, honey! Our baby chose a good man!"

"Oh, good grief."

"And as for you, Joseph..." Lily said before swiftly turning around and punching Joseph in the face, knocking him back. Shocking Hikari and her parents, but not Holly and Jotaro. "The hell were you thinking about worrying me to death like that?! You could've told me something was wrong!" Joseph jumped right back on his feet and got into his wife's face. "Oh, get off it!! Even if I had told you, you would've still beat me down!!"

"This is Sanviento, all over again! You're so lucky I love you, Joseph!"

"Sanviento doesn't even begin with this! Great, I missed that fire in your eyes, you beautiful vixen!"

Later

After...that disbanded, Holly, Kagami and Lily all decided to throw a party in celebration for the groups return and for their victory over their greatest enemy. Though Dmitri and Kagami didn't need to know that specific part.

Hikari was now sitting at a table next to Jotaro. Around the table was her mother, father, Holly, Joseph, Lily, and the Joestar Butler Rosas. Hikari and Roses helped Holly serve tea and snacks to everyone. It was pretty obvious at this point that she was dating Jotaro, but saying it out loud to her mother and father was solidifying the relationship.

Everyone seemed happy for the couple beside one golden-haired man. Dimitri had...err, respected...and tolerated Jotaro as a child, mostly because he had become his little girl's very first friend. He was satisfied that Jotaro had remained a loyal friend over the years and looked after her. However, as the kids grew into teenagers, Dimitri's fatherly protectiveness kicked it and hoped that his daughter would never enter a relationship with a conniving delinquent.

Dimitri stood up and pointed at Jotaro. "You, Jotaro Kujo, will not be dating my little girl!"

"I wasn't asking for your permission. We're together." Jotaro replied, bring Hikari closer to him. Hikari's father let out screech grabbing at his hair. "I can't stand you! The lack of respect!" He looked at his daughter. "Sweetie, how can you like such a disrespectful punk?!" Hikari took in her father's words and blushed. "O-oh, well...there's so many that I love about him. He's extremely smart and he always protected me. He's cool and confident...and he's been there for me whenever I needed him."

Throughout the years they spent together, Jotaro made her feel special. How she felt about him, it was something different that

Hikari couldn't put into words. The main thing though whenever she just thought about Jotaro she just got this amazing feeling in her chest, no in her heart. All she had to do was listen to her heart, and she knew that Jotaro was the only one for her.

Dimitri shoved to the side and Kagami took over and smiled at the couple. She cupped her face and was trying very hard to contain the happiness she held inside. If she didn't, Kagami was going to explode. "Honey, don't listen to your brute of a father. You're a young lady with your own mind and if you want to be with this handsome devil, then go right ahead." Kagami, unlike her husband, adored Jotaro. Like Dimitri, she had respected but also loved Jotaro for being there for Hikari when no one would. It made her heart swore to see such a brave, kindhearted boy be her child's very first friend.

Unlike Dimitri, however, when the two grew older, Kagami had been secretly dreaming and hoping for the day the two of them would stop seeing each other as friends and become so much more. In her eyes, there was NO ONE more worthy of her daughter than Jotaro Kujo.

"Are you kidding me, Kagami! He's a violent, street punk! How can you allow our daughter to date him?!" Dimitri asked his wife.

"Pardon me?! Dimitri, have you forgotten the past seven years?! This "street punk" has done more for our little angel than anyone has! He's showed nothing but love, care, and respect towards her, and if you don't like then I will fight you!!" Kagami told him.

"Then it's war because I'll never accept it! You hear me, never!!"

"Holly, this tea is perfect." Lily says, completely ignoring the other couple's squabble.

Holly smiled. "Thank you, mama!"

"Are your parents always like this Chiara?" Joseph asked, looking both confused and amused by the way her parents were acting. He was, even more, amused seeing how she was reacting to them so well. Hikari noticing Joseph's perplexed expression gives him a reassuring smile. "Uh...yeah. This is normal. Mother and father are like this when I'm involved in something. B-but don't worry, they

love each other very much so they're not actually going to fight."

Kagami shoved her husband away and gave a loving look towards Jotaro. "Forget him, Jotaro. I trust that you'll take good care of my lovely little angel. After all, she's a very sweet, innocent little girl who needs a real, powerful man at her side." She declared. Jotaro simply answered the woman with a nod of his head. This answer satisfies Kagami and she gave a small fangirlish squee. "Very good. Hikari Kujo, doesn't that have a nice ring to it? AH! How about a winter wedding? I have the most perfect idea for a dress. What do you think Seiko?"

"I think a winter wedding sounds lovely!" Holly gushed.

"Ooh! Can I get in on this?" Lily asked, getting excited.

With the talk of a wedding, Dimitri looked at his darling wife like she had gone completely insane. His precious, wonderful, beautiful, innocent daughter marrying a rebellious, infuriating, pig-headed jackass like him?! Not on his life!! "There will be no wedding! Hikari is not going to be dating Jotaro, let alone marrying him!"

"Dimitri Nathaniel William Zeppeli Dorotéa! You need to learn how to respect your daughter's independence!!" Kagami shot at him. She had spent seven years watching over the young couple and she won't let anyone get between it! Even if it's her beloved husband. Lily laughed along with her daughter. "Ah, this takes me back to my younger years. Everyone is so lively just like when I first met Joseph."

Hikari giggled nervously as she watched her mother and father get into one of their squabbles. She knew her father meant well, and she knows how he can be. Eventually, he'll come around to accept their relationship. A gentle hand was placed on her shoulder and Hikari looked up meeting Lily's smiling face.

"Welcome to the family, dear."

****

It's been several months since they came back from Egypt and everything had slowly returned to normal. It was so weird going back

to a "normal" lifestyle but they managed. A few weeks, after the party, Jotaro and Hikari had been going back to school and were both surprised and happy to that Nemuru and Kakyoin had waited to meet up with them on one morning. The four friends were all ecstatic to be reunited once again.

Jotaro and Hikari told them everything that had happened and were relieved to hear the great news. Now that Dio was gone, there was nothing for them to worry about anymore. In exchanged Kakyoin and Nemuru had shared news of their own.

While Kakyoin was being treated and rested in the hospital, members of the Speedwagon Foundation had came in and informed Nemuru that they had discovered a woman's body in Dio's mansion and told her that the woman was her mother. Her blood had been drained by him. Initially, Nemuru was extremely upset by the news and cried for hours. But eventually, once she dried her tears, she gave a weak smile. Happy that, at the very least, she was taken out of that hellish place and had been given a proper burial, right next to her husband.

Once Kakyoin left the hospital, he and Nemuru went back to his house where his parents were overwhelmed with joy and hugged their son with all their might. Thankful that he was home and told him just how sorry they were for whatever it is they've done to make him run away. Kakyoin shook his head and hugged them back. Rekindling their family bond, and introducing his new girlfriend to them.

Nemuru had also received word that in her father's will, she is the sole proprietor of EVERYTHING he had left behind. House. Company and the money that came with it. Leaving her den of snakes (relatives) nothing. Though while she inherited that, Nemuru decided to move in with Kakyoin and his parents to feel that simple, loving family home life once again.

Overall, everything seemed perfect for all of them. They've gone back to school, living out life as usual, and Jotaro and Hikari have gotten much closer than before. However, there was one more test that Hikari had to get through first.

It began one morning when all four friends met up again.

"Nemuru! Kakyoin!" Hikari called out.

"Morning!" Nemuru smiled. "Good morning." Kakyoin greeted them as they began walking to school. As they began to converse, the golden-haired girl couldn't help but feel eyes glaring daggers at her back. She turned to look over her shoulder and saw Jotaro's groupie all staring at her with malice. She shivered as she remembered that when they came back, Jotaro had shouted at them to piss off and said that he and her were together. While they had backed off for the last several months, Hikari knew it was only a matter of time that they were going to confront her. Especially since... Jotaro and Kakyoin would be graduating soon. Kakyoin says he was going on to college but he was vague on the details. Jotaro, however, was planning to study in America.

The school day was slow and the glares didn't seem to stop. Hikari felt that she was being watched by a pack of wild animals. They were waiting. Waiting for her to be alone so they could strike. Hikari had calm herself and told her that she would be okay. She told herself that whatever they do, would be nothing compared to the journey she went on.

The bell rang and it was time for students to either go home, stay and study or stick around for whatever reason. Hikari packed her things and left her classroom. She promised to meet up with Jotaro by the gate as he had something he wanted to talk to her about. *'I wonder what JoJo wanted to talk to me about? Oh! Maybe he's going to surprise me with a date today! I mean he doesn't have to do that, I'm more than happy to just be with him as usual, but it'll nice too.'* Hikari thought with a blush and a loving smile.

"Hey! You!" A harsh voice called out to her. Hikari turned around and her eyes widened.

****

"Can't believe it's been months since we came back from Egypt." Kakyoin says as he and Nemuru relaxed on the school's rooftop. He laid his head on her lap as she ran her fingers through his hair. "I know what you mean. It's kind of weird walking around without assholes coming out to fight us. The snarky bimbos here don't even

count." Nemuru says.

Kakyoin let out a chuckle as he brought his hand to caress her cheek. "That's high school I guess. But it's a nice change of pace, don't you think?" He asked.

"Haha, you have a point." Nemuru says. She then looked at him and asked, "I know this might sound weird...and very forward, but...what are we going to do? You and Jotaro are graduating soon, so you'll be going off to college, right? I know we've only recently started dating, but I don't want any problems to get in the way."

"I've thought about it before. And I know that all my plans involve you." Kakyoin told with a charming smile. He laughed when he saw a blush formed on her face. "I'm planning to enter college to study business management. I want to help you run your father's company and become partners. And maybe something more in the future. Perhaps creating a family of our own?"

Nemuru was stunned by this and honestly thought he was joking. But one look on his face told her he was serious. He was planning to work with her and create a sustainable future with her in the long run. "Really? You sure you can handle that?" Nemuru asked with a teasing smile.

"After everything the two of us been through, I'd say I can handle anything." Kakyoin said with confidence. Nemuru smiled at him and reached into her pocket. "In that case, let me give you something for good luck." She said as she presented him his 'good luck charm'. He was surprised to see that she was giving him her pocket watch. He was even more so when he saw that it was fixed and working properly. He took the watch into his hands and stared at her with confusion. "You're giving me this? Why?" He asked.

"It was a present, given to my father by my mother. I didn't bother to get it fixed after Dio attack. But now that I've been free and my parents are at peace, I decided that I give to you now." Nemuru told him.

Kakyoin smiled lovingly at her and clenched the watch in his hand. "Then I promise I'll take good care of it."

"I know you will." Nemuru said. Leaning down to kiss him.

****

"Just who do think you are, huh?! Think you're better than us?!" A girl screamed as she slapped Hikari hard across the face, sending the girl falling to the floor. Jotaro's groupie surround her like a pack of wild dogs and stared her down. Her book bag was thrown to the floor, the contents of the book bag had fallen out, books, homework, study sheets, etc. The girl with the brown hair seemed to be the ring leader here, that or they were all equal in their hatred for her. Why? Because she seduced and took away the most popular boy in school, Jotaro. It was cruel in her eyes, why couldn't they see she was happy with him and he was happy with her.

"Do you think we're idiots?! We told you we wouldn't bother you if you and JoJo had stayed **FRIENDS**!! You were gone for a full month and the second you come back, you and our JoJo are **dating**?! What the hell?!" Another girl shouted as she kicked at Hikari shoulder.

"Because we're nice, we're going to give you a chance to walk away from this." The ring leader said as they watched Hikari stand up with a slight struggle. "All you to have to do is go up to JoJo and tell him that you want to break up. Break up with him and never have anything to do him again. Is that clear?" She asked.

If this was any other day. Any other time. Hikari would be shaking in fear and stare at the girls with tears in her eyes. She would stutter out her words and beg for them to stop. But today...was not that day. These types of girls have done nothing but torment and bully her just because she was best friends with Jotaro. They were jealous of her and instead of thinking of Jotaro's happiness, they felt threaten and grew hostile. She never dared to stand up to them before.

Hikari picked up her bag and calmly, but gently told them. "Something like that... I think...that decision is up to me and JoJo. I don't think we're going to break up or stop seeing each other just because you're jealous."

The girls were taken aback by this response. They expected Hikari to be a blubbering mess. On her knees. Crying and begging them to stop

and apologise for her wrongdoings. Not stare at them with those eyes. Hikari looked back at them with calming, strong, and gentle eyes. Her voice was steady and smooth. And she stood with an unfamiliar confidence. One of the girls grit their teeth and shouted, "You take that back, you bitch! We're not jealous, we're angry! We don't like you!"

"That's right! You're the one acting like JoJo belongs to you! Pisses me off! What could a girl like you possibly know about him?!"

"And what could all you know about JoJo or anyone else?" Hikari asked.

"Don't you get it! We love JoJo! We're in love with him! And that the fact that you've been able to be near him and have his attention so easily cuts us to the core!! Break up with him and never go near him again or you're going to get hurt!" The ring leader said.

Hikari stayed silent for a moment as she gives the girls a sympathetic look. "...What's his favourite colour?" She asked. The girls were confused by her question. What the hell? Before they could speak, Hikari continued.

"What's JoJo's favourite food? Musician? Athlete? Movie? Do you know what his hobbies are?" Hikari asked again. They opened their mouths to speak...but no words came out as they struggled to answer. But the fact they were struggling was more than enough.

"I'm asking you all this because, if you say you love him, then you would know what he likes...and what he doesn't. But...none of you know. I do because I've spent time with JoJo. I've spoken to him and treated him like a person first, and someone to idolise and be adored second. You all say you're in love with him, but if that were true, then you at least know one thing about him. And you would be happy and content that he had been able to love someone that isn't you. You'd be happy because he's happy. You're threatening me and hurting me because you don't like it that I'm bringing JoJo happiness. Would any of you attack each other if he had chosen you to love instead of me?"

The girls all seemed as baffled by the fact that Jotaro Kujo had

chosen HER, as anything else. It as if they couldn't comprehend why someone like him would want her for a girlfriend. "Th-that's completely different... One of us would've been a perfect match for him. You two are like oil and water! A horrible match, it'll never work out." The ring leader says.

"So it's okay for one of you to be his girlfriend but it's not alright for someone else to be? That's unfair, and I feel so sorry for all of you. You don't understand JoJo at all. I'm sorry, but I deeply love JoJo, and I will not leave him." Hikari says as she walked away from without giving them a second look. The girls didn't yell or chase after her. They were too stunned by her to do anything.

Eventually, she made it outside and met with Jotaro as planned. He smiled when he saw her and the two walked the way back home together. They walked hand in hand for a peaceful moment before Jotaro began to lead to the park. Hikari was a little curious by the sudden change in direction but she continued to smile.

"Hikari." Jotaro said.

"Yes?" She said, looking up at him.

"You know that I'm leaving for America sometime soon right?" He asked her.

"Yes, I know. And I know you're going to do great. Why do you ask?"

"Because that'll be the first time you and I are going to be apart. And I don't want to leave you with any uncertainty." Jotaro told her. Hikari was confused. Uncertainties? Like what? He was going to America to study, he's not leaving forever. Hikari knew that he was going to be okay...so why? "What do you mean JoJo?" She asked him as he leads her through the park, Hikari was surprised to find that Jotaro had taken her back to the playground. The playground where they first met.

"This is the place we first met. ....What was it you wanted to talk about JoJo?"

"Hikari. I'm leaving for America, but I want you to know that I love

you. And you're the only one I ever will love. You've been my past and my present, and now I want you to be my future. I want to be with you, always. I'll be coming back one day just for you. And when I do," Jotaro says as he takes Hikari's hand and pulled out something from his pocket. He slipped it into her delicate finger. "Will you marry me?" He asked. Hikari's eyes widened as she stared at the ring on her finger. The ring had two sapphires cut into the shape of hearts connected with one white diamond framing the right and left side of it. The band was silver.

Hikari holds her hand to her mouth as tears forms in her eyes. "Jotaro..." She said, taking a deep breath. "Yes, yes, yes! I will!" Jotaro smiled and pulls her closer to him. The two shared a passionate kiss.

Chapter 60: Wedding Bells

Four years later

Nineteen-year-old Hikari had never felt so nervous in her entire life. She placed a hand on her chest just above her beating heart trying to calm it down. She cast her gaze upwards staring back at herself in a mirror. Her makeup was perfectly done and her long golden-blonde hair had been beautifully arranged, tied back in an elegant bun with silk satin white ribbon and wore a sparkling silver tiara on her head.

"Knock knock!"

Hikari looked away from her image to see her mother along with Holly entering the room. "Hikari dear you look absolutely beautiful." Holly smiled.

"But of course. My daughter is the picture of her mother. A true beauty," Kagami stated as she flipped her long hair over her shoulder. But she was also trying to hold back her tears. Her baby was all grown up. Hikari gave a small giggle. "Thank you very much." She looked down at her lap nervously twisting her fingers together.

"Are you nervous dear?" Holly asked putting a hand on Hikari's shoulder.

"Yes.....but I've never been so happy either," Hikari said. Just then, Hikari's maid of honour, Nemuru clapped her hands getting their undivided attention. "Well, then you better swallow your nervousness and get moving. We have to get ready, you don't want to be late for your big day do you?" She asked as she held her baby boy in her arms.

"Right." Hikari said with a bright smile as she gave a wave to the toddler. The boy gave a cute little 'ah' before trying to reach for her hand. Kagami smiled as well, pulling out a white garment bag. "You're going to look absolutely divine my darling. After all, I was the one who designed your wedding dress."

"Less talking, more bustle." Nemuru said.

"Beautiful day for a wedding, huh?" Kakyoin says cheerfully, as he was standing beside Jotaro. Naturally, since he was his best man.

"Yeah, it's a bit chilly though." Jotaro replies and indeed there it was a bit cold but nothing too unbearable. Still they, Kagami, his mother, and grandparents worked hard to make this winter wedding be perfect.

"Any ideas on where are you going on your Honeymoon?" Kakyoin asks pleasantly.

"A lodge resort in Vermont. Hikari had always dreamt about going to one when we were in middle school and it has a great view of the mountain landscapes. That and it's private." He says.

Kakyoin nods. Well, that all sounded rather reasonable. Yes, a beautiful and quiet resort up in the mountains. Though Kakyoin tried to hold back his laughter as he thought that Jotaro probably just wanted privacy so that he could set about having a rather enjoyable Honeymoon with Hikari.

"I have to admit Hikari's mother, Ms. Holly and Mr. Joestar and his wife do have style." Kakyoin says as he and Jotaro looked at the scene before them. "Yeah..." Hundreds of white chairs with velvet red cushions had been placed throughout the Kujo residence. There was even a red carpet laid out over the floor with white rose petals spread across it. The beautiful sculptures made it seem like something out of a fairytale. Neither Jotaro and Kakyoin had also never seen so much food in their life. The altar looked like it had been made out of pure gold and there were red roses weaved into it.

"Are ready for this Jotaro?" Kakyoin whispers to his best friend.

"As ready as I'll ever be." Jotaro told him.

Dimitri was pacing back and forth in front of a set of doors. He was panicking internally, he knew this day would come but to see his little girl go was heartbreaking. Especially since she's marrying Jotaro.

"Father? You look more nervous than me."

Dimitri looked up and his eyes widened. Hikari was breathtaking, her wedding dress truly stunning. It was a beautiful, ball-gown style

wedding dress with the sleeves, chest and the upper part of the skirt being decorated with pretty little white vines. Hikari's large veil flowed behind her, reaches down to her feet. Clutched in her hands was her bouquet decorated with white lotuses and pink tulips. Dimitri had tears in his eyes as he gazed at his daughter. "Hikari....you look beautiful."

Hikari smiled, "Thank you, father." Dimitri walked over and grabbed Hikari's veil. "You look just like your mother on our wedding day. Just as elegant and gorgeous as she was." Hikari gave another smile trying her best to hold back her own tears. Dimitri gave his daughter a heartfelt smile before getting one more look at his beautiful girl and taking her hand.

Music started to play from the other side of the doors and Hikari could feel her heart race again.

"It's time." Hikari whispered. She stood next to her father hooking her arm with his. Hikari took a deep breath trying to calm down the fluttering butterflies that were wreaking havoc in her stomach. "Hikari, sweetie," Dimitri turned to his daughter and a had a very supportive and gentle look on his face.

Play music

"Yes, father?" Hikari asked.

"You...You're happy with him...I pray for you and Jotaro to have nothing but the best." Dimitri said.

Hikari smiled kindly at her father. She nodded and thanked him. She knew that her father would come around eventually and support her on this special day.

The doors finally opened, revealing a beautiful scenery before the gentle bride. She couldn't believe it. It was like something out from a fairytale and she was marrying her prince. Her hero. Even after all this time, Hikari never would have dared to imagine that she would be getting married like this, especially to her best friend. But as fate would have it, she and he were destined to be together. They both knew that they couldn't see each other being with any other.

Everyone stood as Dimitri walked his daughter down the aisle to a smiling Jotaro Kujo.

Four years have passed since their adventures to Egypt, and just like Hikari had matured, so did Jotaro. He was dressed in a white suit, Kakyoin and the rest of his groomsmen behind him dressed the same way. Nemuru looked her way and gave a smile and wink, causing her to giggled a bit.

Hikari couldn't hold back her smile as she reached the altar. Jotaro held his hand out to Hikari and Dimitri placed Hikari's hand in his. The father of the bride gave Jotaro a reluctant but supportive look. "You had better take good care of her." Dimitri says once he finally gets her to the alter.

"I will." Jotaro promises and smiles as he holds Hikari's hands. Jotaro and Hikari stood side by side as the priest commenced the ceremony.

"Dearly beloved, we are gathered here today to celebrate the union of Jotaro Kujo and Hikari Dorotéa. If there is anyone who has an objection to this match, speak now or forever hold your peace." The preacher begins. Jotaro sincerely hoped that there wasn't anyone who was going to protest. Upon hearing that, Jotaro's eyes sent a death glare at the audience and whoever would've spoken up quickly shut up. Smart thing to do. Unless they wanted to invoke his rage.

The preacher pauses for a moment. He was relieved to hear no objections voiced. The man breathes a sigh of relief and continues.

"Do you Hikari Dorotéa take Jotaro Kujo to be your lawfully wedded husband? To have and to hold? To love, honour, and cherish? In sickness and in health? For richer or for poor? To forsake all others and spend the rest of your days together, until death do you part?" He inquires.

"I do." Hikari says.

There was no going back now. Not that they wanted to turn back. Hell no. Hikari and Jotaro had been dreaming of this day for four years. She loved him. And he loved her. So now, they were going to spend the rest of their lives together and husband and wife. Jotaro

held her hand tightly as he looked at her. He couldn't believe how beautiful she had become even more when he last saw her. Jotaro felt lucky to have a kind and gentle woman at his side. He vowed to never let anything happen to her. He will protect her with his life.

"Do you Jotaro Kujo take Hikari Dorotéa to be your lawfully wedded wife? To have and to hold? To love, honour, and cherish? In sickness and in health? For richer or for poor? To forsake all others and spend the rest of your days together, until death do you part?" The preacher continues.

"I do." Jotaro replies.

"Then by the power vested in me, I pronounce you man and wife. You may kiss the bride." He says.

Hikari gasped as Jotaro grabbed her wrist and pulled her into him bringing them in a heated kiss. Hikari returning it in full. The crowd cheered as the couple sealed their union.